

AL. 2. 2007-244

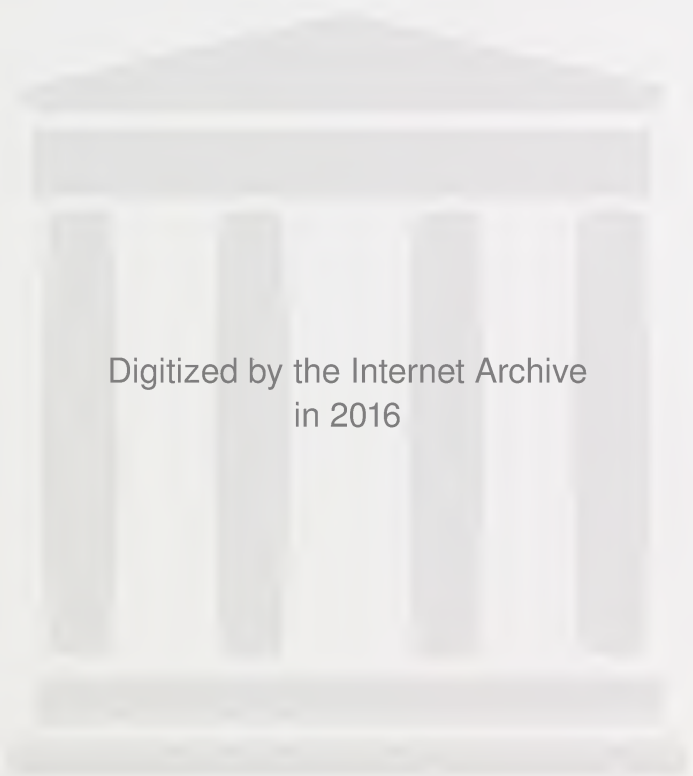
C. 2

A Higher Duty

Speakers of the Legislative Assemblies
of the North-West Territories and Alberta, 1888 – 2005



THE Centennial Series
LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY OF ALBERTA



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2016

...[I]t would seem that this Speakership ... involves a decided self-sacrifice on the part of the member who accepts it. The position has heretofore only been looked upon as an honor in the gift of the House, second only to the Prime Minister's office. It is given only to men of undoubted ability, integrity and political fairness [and] every member of the House feels it his duty to look after the interests of the Speaker's constituents, because the Speaker has assumed *a higher duty*.

"The Speakership," [Editorial—referring to the Office of the Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories], *Moose Jaw Times*, October 26, 1894, p. 4.

LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY OF ALBERTA: THE CENTENNIAL SERIES

ON BEHALF OF THE CROWN:

Lieutenant Governors of the North-West Territories and Alberta, 1869–2005

THE MANTLE OF LEADERSHIP:

Premiers of the North-West Territories and Alberta, 1897–2005

A HIGHER DUTY:

Speakers of the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories and Alberta, 1888–2005

A CENTURY OF DEMOCRACY:

Elections of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1905–2005

THE *Centennial Series*
LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY OF ALBERTA



A Higher Duty

Speakers of the Legislative Assemblies of the
North-West Territories and Alberta, 1888–2005

By

SANDRA E. PERRY, BA BEd MLIS

AND

VALERIE L. FOOTZ, BA MLIS

EDITOR AND HISTORICAL CONSULTANT

PHILIP A. MASSOLIN, BA MA PhD



Legislative Assembly of Alberta

Published under the authority of the Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

A Higher Duty: Speakers of the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories and Alberta, 1888–2005

By Sandra E. Perry and Valerie L. Footz
Editor and Historical Consultant: Philip A. Massolin
Typesetting, Cover and Book Design: Tracey L. Sales

Copyright © 2006 Legislative Assembly of Alberta

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, transmitted in any form or by any means—electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, stored in a retrieval system or otherwise—without the prior written consent of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

Library and Archives Canada Cataloguing in Publication

Perry, Sandra E.

A higher duty : speakers of the Legislative Assemblies
of the North-West Territories and Alberta, 1888-2005 / authors:
Sandra E. Perry and Valerie L. Footz ; editor and historical
consultant: Philip A. Massolin.

Includes bibliographical references and index.

ISBN 0-9689217-3-6 (bound)—ISBN 0-9689217-6-0 (leather bound).

1. Alberta. Legislative Assembly--Speakers--Biography.
2. North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly--Speakers--Biography.
3. Legislative bodies--Alberta--Presiding officers--Biography.
4. Alberta. Legislative Assembly--Rules and practice. I. Footz, Valerie
II. Massolin, Philip A. (Philip Alphonse), 1967- III. Alberta. Legislative
Assembly IV. Title. V. Title: Speakers of the Legislative Assemblies of the
North-West Territories and Alberta, 1888-2005.

JL334.S65P47 2005

328.7123'0762'0922

C2005-903341-X

Every effort has been made to trace the source of copyright material contained in this book.
The publisher will appreciate any additional information regarding rights and will rectify any errors or
omissions in future editions.



TABLE OF CONTENTS

Preface	vii
Acknowledgements	ix
Note on Sources and Scope	xiii
Background	
History of the Speakership	3
Role of the Speaker	13
Role of the Clerk	23
The Mace	31
The Chair	39
Election of the Speaker	49
Authorities	59
Parliamentary Privilege	67
Unparliamentary Language	77
Hansard	83
Broadcasting of Proceedings	91
Galleries	101
Strangers Addressing the Assembly	113
Speaker's Apparel	117
Speaker's Procession	123
Prayers	127
Speaker's Suite	133
Portraits	139
Protocol	145
History of Governance of the North-West Territories	151

Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories

Herbert Charles Wilson, 1888–1890	179
James Hamilton Ross, 1891–1892, 1892–1894	199
John Felton Betts, 1895–1898	215
William Eakin, 1899–1902	231
Archibald Beaton Gillis, 1903–1904	245

Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta

Charles Wellington Fisher, 1906–1919	261
Charles Steuart Pingle, 1920–1921	279
Oran Leo McPherson, 1922–1926	293
George Norman Johnston, 1927–1935	311
Nathan Eldon Tanner, 1936–1937	325
Peter Dawson, 1937–1963	343
Arthur Johnson Dixon, 1963–1972	363
Gerard Joseph Amerongen, 1972–1986	379
David John Carter, 1986–1993	399
Stanley Stanford Schumacher, 1993–1997	421
The Hon. Kenneth Reginald Kowalski, 1997–	437

Appendices

List of Appendices	458
--------------------------	-----

Photograph Credits	549
--------------------------	-----

Index	559
-------------	-----

PREFACE



It gives me great pleasure to dedicate this book to the people of Alberta as we together celebrate the Centennials of the Province and of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. It is my hope that you will find in the pages of this book a better understanding of how privileged we are to live in a parliamentary democracy, which permits and encourages all of us to participate in so many different ways—according to our particular talents and interests.

This volume is one in a series of four books that documents the rich history of our province and our remarkable system of governance. The individuals whose lives and careers are profiled in this volume cared profoundly about this Province and the North-West Territories from which it was born and in which its system of governance has its roots. These legislators believed in their ability to govern themselves and build a strong autonomous province within the Canadian Confederation. They wanted to contribute their energy and their talents to strengthening and defending the parliamentary process. They came from a great variety of family, ethnic and professional backgrounds. They were doctors, pharmacists, farmers, businessmen, clergymen, lawyers and teachers, but they had in common the fact that they all understood the great privilege that was theirs to serve as parliamentarians, and the additional honour that was bestowed on them when they were elected to serve as Speakers in the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories and Alberta.

I would like to take this opportunity to thank and congratulate Sandra Perry, Legislature Librarian; Valerie Footz, Project Coordinator on this project; Philip Massolin, Historian; and the fine team of librarians and researchers who developed and researched this book: Heather Close, Sherry Bell, Jody Grismer Rempel, Ronda Alberts, Stephanie Christensen, Darren Maltais, Jessica Craig, Christine Bouchier, Michelle Altheim, Eileen Cardy and Cathy Duxbury. Their dedication to the task and their thorough and scholarly research have resulted in a work of which we can all be justly proud.

On behalf of the Members of the 26th Legislature may I wish all Albertans everywhere truly enjoyable and memorable Centennial years, and may we all look forward to the promise of the even greater achievements that will come about as Alberta's second century unfolds.

Kenneth R. Kowalski
Member for Barrhead-Morinville-Westlock
Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The following individuals played very significant roles in the researching and writing of this volume, and the authors would like to give special acknowledgement to their contributions:

Heather J. Close

Staff Librarian

First researcher on the project

Historical and parliamentary research

Early drafts

Researching and writing of Background sections

Interviewer

Sharon K. Bell

Librarian and Project Researcher

Second researcher on the project

Family history and genealogical research

Drafts of family history and related sections in the biographies

Jody C. Grismer Rempel

Project Researcher

Historical and parliamentary research

Researching and drafting of Background sections and Appendices

Ronda L. Alberts

Librarian and Project Researcher

Historical and parliamentary research

Drafts of political and legislative sections in the biographies

Tracey L. Sales

Communications Consultant [Office of the Clerk]

Artistic design and direction

Book design, layout and formatting

We would also like to express our appreciation to a number of people who generously provided assistance in the preparation of this book.

Firstly, we would like to gratefully acknowledge the assistance of the Speakers themselves: Mr. Arthur J. Dixon, Mr. Gerard J. Amerongen, QC, Dr. David J. Carter, Mr. Stanley S. Schumacher, QC and the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski. They generously provided their time, reflections and knowledge. The assistance of the staff of the Office of the Speaker, Bev Alenius, Susan Purdie and Jocelyn Sywolos, is also gratefully acknowledged.

The information provided by the relatives and families of the Speakers was invaluable, and we would like to thank: Margaret Amerongen, Muriel Buller, Helen Carver, David G. Dawson, Earland M. Dawson, Brian Fisher, Marjorie Fisher, Richard J. Fisher, Donald Gillis, Barbara Krol, Donna Mort, Sara 'Isabelle' Jensen, James 'Jim' Jensen, Toni McPherson and Charles S. Pingle.

The services and resources from the following organizations and institutions were instrumental to our research: Alberta Genealogical Society, Edmonton Branch; Alberta Family History Society; Alberta Historical Society; Alton Museum; Beaton Institute; City of Edmonton Archives; City of Victoria Archives and Records Division; Edmonton Public Library; Glenbow Museum and Archives; Grand Lodge of Saskatchewan, Ancient Free & Accepted Masons; Legal Archives Society of Alberta; Moose Jaw Public Library; Museum of the Regiments Library and Archives; Ontario Genealogical Society, Ottawa Branch; Provincial Archives of Alberta; Royal Alberta Museum; University of Alberta Archives; University of Alberta Libraries; and University of Calgary Archives. We would like to thank the staff of all of these organizations and institutions for their generous assistance.

We would especially like to acknowledge the assistance of the staff of both the Saskatchewan Archives Board and the Saskatchewan Legislative Library who provided us with extensive material on the Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories.

We would like to thank the members of the Association of Parliamentary Librarians in Canada/L'Association des bibliothécaires parlementaires au Canada for their assistance in providing us with comparative information for their respective jurisdictions.

Our appreciation is extended to Dr. Alvin Finkel of Athabasca University, who reviewed early drafts of this book and provided insight and advice, and to Dr. Ronald A. Burwash of the Department of Earth and Atmospheric Science of the University of Alberta for providing information about Alberta's Mace.

The following individuals went to extraordinary lengths to provide us with information and assistance: Amanda Bahr-Evola, Maurice F. V. Doll, Dennis W. Domoney, Yvonne M. Footz, Diana Gaiger, Tim McGarger, Brian J. Perry, Donald J. Sucha, Harry M. Sanders and Ken Tingley.

Last, but certainly not least, we would like to acknowledge the assistance and support of all the Branches of the Legislative Assembly Office (LAO) in the writing and editing of this book. We would like to thank the Clerk, Dr. W. J. David McNeil and his staff, with special recognition to Tracey Sales and the Communications staff; Senior Parliamentary Counsel Robert Reynolds and Shannon Dean; House Services including Alberta Hansard: Louise Kamuchik, Vivian Loosemore, Liz Sim, Micheline Orydzuk and staff; the Financial Management and Administrative Services Branch: Bill Gano, Scott Ellis, Jacqueline Breault, Dan Dunlop, Darren Joy and staff; Human Resource Services: Cheryl Scarlett, Moyra Johnson and staff; Information Technology Services: Cheryl Scarlett, Val Rutherford, Jillian Tilley and staff; and Visitor, Ceremonial and Security Services: including the Sergeant-at-Arms Brian Hodgson, Kerri Button and staff. We would especially like to thank Alberta Hansard management and staff for the provision of transcription and proofreading services. The support of the entire staff of the Legislature Library is greatly appreciated—from those directly involved in the book's production to all of those who took on extra duties to ensure that all Library services continued to function effectively during the preparation of this volume.

Sandra E. Perry
Legislature Librarian
Edmonton, Alberta
May 31, 2005

NOTE ON SOURCES AND SCOPE

The increasing availability of resources in electronic format has had an impact on the length and depth of each biography. The advent of the publication of *Alberta Hansard* in 1972 allowed us to gain important insights into the activities of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and the rulings of the Speakers. *Scrapbook Hansard*, compiled by Legislature Library staff prior to the establishment of the official *Alberta Hansard*, was an invaluable resource supplementing the description of events recorded in the *Journals of the Legislative Assembly*. The Internet has provided an important medium for accessing online databases of digitized historical documents—newspapers, periodicals, census and genealogical records—and the research of other parliamentary libraries.

Also influencing the extent of each biography was the length of tenure in public service of each individual and the expansion of the position of Speaker to include year-round administrative duties. While this expansion was only officially recognized in 1983, it had been occurring since early in Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen's tenure (1972–1986).

Our goal has been to cite primary sources (such as the *Alberta Hansard* and the *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta*) whenever possible. However, we have used newspaper accounts, local histories, biographies and family stories to supplement and enhance the descriptions of events.

All election results were derived from *A Report on Alberta Elections 1905–1982* and the official returns, as provided by the Office of the Chief Electoral Officer or his predecessors: the Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and the Clerk of the Executive Council. There are no official returns available from the North-West Territories, and therefore all results from elections occurring prior to 1905 were compiled from the *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory*, newspaper reports, the *Canadian Parliamentary Companion* and the *Canadian Parliamentary Guide*.

Although the census has been very useful in confirming names, birth dates and birth order, it has also occasionally had limitations. Birth years had to be estimated in some instances because only ages were recorded in the census. In some cases, only the head of the household was recorded, not permitting us to verify the names of the children or specific years of birth (see, for example, the 1861 Census for the Archibald B. Gillis family). Another problem encountered was inconsistent information. Both surnames and first names were recorded variously (for example, the surname of Gillis was recorded as both 'Gillis' and 'Gillies'). Also, ages recorded on successive decennial censuses were sometimes a disproportionate number of years apart (for example, according to the

Censuses of 1881 and 1891, Archibald B. Gillis advanced 20 years in age during that 10-year period). The legibility of the handwriting of the census recorder was at times also an issue.

Based on the advice received from Senior Parliamentary Counsel, end dates of Speakers' tenures were calculated on the date of dissolution of the Legislature in the cases of Speakers Charles S. Pingle (1920–1921) and George N. Johnston (1927–1935). Dates of prorogation, as indicated in the *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories*, were used as end dates for the tenures of Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories Herbert C. Wilson (1888–1890) and Archibald B. Gillis (1903–1904). This approach was necessitated by the fact that dissolution dates were not available in either the *Journals* or the *North-West Territories Gazette*.

Source of Quotes

The authors were pleased to adopt an imaginative suggestion from book designer, Tracey Sales, to insert significant phrases or quotes into the title pages of each Speaker's biography. We feel that these add significantly to the understanding of a Speaker's character and to the book design. Brief explanations as to the context and sources of these phrases or quotes are listed below:

Wilson – with impartiality to all

In his address of thanks, the new Speaker said, "I feel that I also leave all political or partizan [*sic*] feelings, in order that I may discharge *with impartiality to all*, and to the best of my ability, the various and important duties pertaining to the high office of the Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories."

Source: North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 1st Legislature, 1st Session*, 31 October 1888, p. 8.

Ross – unique in parliamentary annals

Ross' resignation as Speaker in August 1892 and re-election as Speaker in December 1892 "was, and remains, *unique in parliamentary annals*."

Source: John Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. I (Regina: S. J. Clarke, 1924), p. 492.

Betts – real service in the upbuilding of a new country

Betts was "perhaps better known throughout the Prince Albert district than any other man" due to his service to the people of the Saskatchewan District, but he was "less conscious of the honors than of the opportunities for *real service in the upbuilding of a new country*."

Source: Norman Fergus Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II (Regina: Saskatchewan Historical Company, 1913), p. 851.

Eakin – presiding with fairness, dignity and tact

As Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, Eakin “*presided over some interesting sessions with fairness, dignity and tact.*”

Source: “William Eakin Passes Away at Saltcoats Home,” *Regina Morning Leader*, 16 March 1918, p. 15.

Gillis – custodian of a sacred trust

Gillis was a “prominent member of [the] remarkable group that taught the early settlers of the northwest that patriotism came before party, and that the elected representatives of the people were the *custodians of a sacred trust.*”

Source: Z. M. Hamilton, “Senator Gillis Among Those Who Built West,” *Regina Leader-Post*, 20 January 1940, p. 3.

Fisher – the provincial legislature, much as he shaped it

“The Alberta legislature is characterized by less false dignity and foolish ceremony than any other law-making body in Canada. It has a free and easy method of debate, with less red tape and fringe than most bodies of that kind. This has been the work of the man who had the direction of it. *The provincial legislature is much as he shaped it.*”

Source: “Death and Burial of Hon. Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature,” *Cochrane Advocate*, 8 May 1919, p. 6.

Pingle – sterling qualities and unfailing fairness

Pingle’s election as Speaker was “a recognition of his *sterling qualities and of his unfailing fairness* when dealing with political questions.”

Source: “Capt. Pingle Ex-Speaker of House Passes,” *Edmonton Journal*, 11 January 1928, p. 1.

McPherson – man of vision, thoroughly democratic

At various times throughout his life, McPherson was lauded as a ‘*man of vision*,’ ‘*thoroughly democratic*,’ and an ‘able legislator.’

Source: “O. L. McPherson,” *Western Independent* (Calgary), 19 November 1919, p. 7.

Johnston – unclouded vision of the conduct of legislative matters

George H. Webster, Member for Calgary and leader of the Liberal Party (1930-1932), stated that Johnston “had brought to the Speaker’s Throne an infinite capacity for taking pains and a clear *unclouded vision of the conduct of legislative matters.*”

Source: “Speaker is Re-Elected Unanimously,” *Edmonton Bulletin*, 30 January 1931, p. 7.

Tanner – inspired confidence

Provincial Secretary and future Premier Ernest C. Manning observed that Tanner was “an excellent Speaker. He was completely fair and scrupulously careful not to be biased to one side or the other. He *inspired confidence*. I would say he was one of our best Speakers.”

Source: Quoted in George Homer Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service* (Salt Lake City, UT: Deseret Book Co., 1982), p. 64.

Dawson – a just balance

Liberal Member for Calgary (1955–1960) and future Lieutenant Governor of Alberta (1966–1974) J. W. Grant MacEwan praised Dawson for his comprehensive knowledge of parliamentary procedure and his endeavour to “maintain *a just balance* between freedom of speech on the one hand and such restraint as might be necessary to ensure legislative progress on the other.”

Source: Grant MacEwan, *Poking Into Politics* (Edmonton: Institute of Applied Art, Ltd., 1966), p. 145.

Dixon – expediter of the business of the House

Dixon held an unassuming view of his role as Speaker, seeing himself “as an ‘*expediter*’ of *the business of the House*” and stating modestly, “I’m the servant of the House, not the master.”

Source: Laurie Mackay, *Order in the House: A Historical Account of Two Past Speakers of the Alberta Legislature* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1992), p. 2.

Amerongen – strengthening of the speakership

Amerongen left a strong personal mark on the role of the Speaker. Philip A. C. Laundry, former Clerk Assistant in the Canadian House of Commons (1983–1994) and author of several books on Parliaments of the British Commonwealth, notes that, “from the beginning [Amerongen] applied himself to the *strengthening of the speakership*.” He changed some of the traditional elements of the role in order to make the legislative process more meaningful to modern times.

Source: Philip Laundry, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth* (London: Quiller Press, 1984), p. 138.

Carter – defending the rights and privileges of parliament

This statement comes from an amalgam of Carter's view of the role of the Speaker as a "defender of parliament" and the role he played as intervener in the case of *New Brunswick Broadcasting v. Nova Scotia (Speaker)*, which affirmed the exclusive jurisdictions of provincial legislatures over the application of their inherent privileges, a decision that Carter cites as the most significant event in his tenure as Speaker.

Source: David John Carter, "Seven Years in the Speaker's Chair," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 17, no. 1 (Spring 1994): pp. 16, 17.

Schumacher – fair, consistent and honourable

Members of the Legislative Assembly were in agreement about Schumacher's suitability for the role of Speaker. Many Liberals described him as '*fair, consistent and honorable*.'

Source: Corinna Schuler, "Schumacher Ready for Speaker's Job," *Edmonton Journal*, 31 August 1993, p. A1.

Kowalski – meticulously fair, parliamentary precise

The media were impressed with Kowalski's commitment and his ability to run the Legislative Assembly in an orderly manner. *Calgary Herald* columnist Don Martin noted, "He's *meticulously fair*. He's *parliamentary precise*. He's even funny at times. The only sign of ruthlessness is his stubborn adherence to the rules of order he quotes by memory."

Source: Don Martin, "Kinder, Gentler Kowalski Runs an Orderly House," [Editorial], *Calgary Herald*, 21 June 1997, p. J5.

Conclusion

Every attempt has been made to resolve issues that have arisen during the course of our research. However, some inconsistencies remain and are outlined in the endnotes in the individual biographies. This publication is current up to and including May 31, 2005.

Valerie L. Footz
Project Coordinator
Legislature Library
Edmonton, Alberta
May 31, 2005

a higher duty



BACKGROUND



History of the Speakership

HISTORY OF THE SPEAKERSHIP

In the United Kingdom, the Office of the Speaker played a central role in the historical struggle for supremacy between the monarch and Parliament. The role of the Speaker has been intricately linked with the evolution of parliamentary democracy over many centuries. When the role came into being, the pre-eminent power in England was the Crown, and the position of Speaker was closely tied to the monarch. A precursor position, that of Presiding Officer in Parliament, was recorded as early as 1258 when Peter de Montfort* presided over England's 'Mad Parliament.'¹ The first presiding officers were described as *Parlour*, *Prolocuter* and *Procurator*.¹² The first two of these titles have roots that mean 'to speak,' providing a link to the later title of 'Speaker.'³ Initially, the monarch, not Parliament, selected the Speaker.⁴ In 1376, Sir Peter de la Mare† became the first known presiding officer to have been selected by the House from its membership.⁵ The first Speaker so named and recorded on the Rolls of Parliament was Sir Thomas Hungerford,⁸ appointed in 1377.⁶

Despite having been selected from amongst the Members in the Commons, the Speaker's primary allegiance remained with the Crown until the mid-17th century.⁷ Originally, the primary function of the Speaker was to present the claims of Parliament to the monarch and his or her advisers.⁸ During this era of subservience to the Crown, the Speaker's position was not an enviable one. Many Speakers incurred the wrath of the monarch after bringing news that displeased the Sovereign.⁹ Even in the face of such peril, successive Speakers were able to set many precedents with regard to the powers and privileges of Parliament and the role of the Speaker. In the late 1300s, for example, Sir Peter de la Mare established an important precedent that allowed errors or misrepresentations made by the Speaker to be corrected, attributing any mistakes made by the Speaker to the individual, and thus casting no aspersions on the institution of Parliament.¹⁰ Other precedents set from this period to the early 1600s included: the right of the House to approve public expenditure;¹¹ freedom of speech for Members;¹² immunity of the Members from arrest for debt or trespass;¹³ the use of the Speaker's vote, the casting vote, when necessary to break a tie;¹⁴ and right of access to the Crown.¹⁵

Over several centuries of struggle between the monarch and Parliament, the bond between the Speaker and the Crown gradually weakened. During the 17th century, the shift in the Speaker's

* Peter de Montfort belonged to a faction that opposed the Royal Court and was a member of the commission that prepared the plan of reform known as the 'Provisions of Oxford.' Supporters of Henry III (1216–1272) coined the name 'Mad Parliament' although in actuality the proceedings were very businesslike.

† *Procurator* is a Latin word meaning administrator or finance agent.

‡ Peter de la Mare, a knight of Herefordshire, served as presiding officer and Speaker during the 1300s, which included the 'Good Parliament,' so named because the Commons prevailed in refusing to grant the monarch any supplies until the grievances of the Commons had been addressed.

§ Thomas Hungerford was a knight of Wiltshire and the steward of John of Gaunt. He took on the role of Speaker while de la Mare was imprisoned and presided over what was named the 'Bad Parliament,' which reversed most of the gains made by the Good Parliament in the previous year.



allegiance from the Crown to Parliament became clear.¹⁶ The Speaker's role became more closely associated with the political power of parliamentary government, and the Speaker often held an office within the government.¹⁷ In 1642, Speaker William Lenthall* uttered one of the most eloquent and well-known descriptions of this new parliamentary allegiance. After Charles I (1625–1649) forced his way into the House of Commons and demanded the immediate arrest of five Members on charges of treason, Lenthall faced the angry King and declared:

May it please Your Majesty, I have neither eyes to see, nor tongue to speak in this place, but as the House is pleased to direct me, whose servant I am here; and I humbly beg Your Majesty's pardon that I cannot give any other answer than this to what Your Majesty is pleased to demand of me.¹⁸

This eloquent and courageous declaration summarizes the role of the Speaker as it emerged in England at this time and remains relevant to Speakers in modern Parliaments throughout the Commonwealth.

In the centuries of parliamentary government that followed Lenthall's statement, a new dimension was added to the Speaker's role. This dimension related to the non-partisan role of the Speaker in the parliamentary system; the idea that, once selected, the "Speaker should refrain from involvement in party politics either inside or outside the House."¹⁹ Arthur Onslow, Speaker of the House of Commons from 1728 to 1761,[†] is credited with raising the Office above politics by asserting the independence and impartiality of the Chair.²⁰ Onslow also contributed to the codification of contemporary procedure and the concept of the dignity of the Speaker "as inseparable from that of the House."²¹ In 1841, Liberal Speaker Charles Shaw-Lefevre[‡] was re-elected to the Chair by a Conservative majority government, thereby setting the most significant and lasting precedent of the non-partisanship of the Speaker.²² While the degree to which the Speaker establishes the independence of the Office and the manner in which this is done is still evolving and under debate, the neutrality of the Speaker is a key aspect of the position in the United Kingdom and in Canada. By the mid-19th century, the many conventions of the Office were well-established, and the era of the modern Speaker had begun.

The role of Speaker, as inherited from the United Kingdom, is essential to the Canadian parliamentary system, although distinct traditions have developed both federally and provincially. With the adoption of the *British North America Act, 1867* (*BNA Act, 1867*), the Canadian model of governance was firmly established. The Canadian style of government, parliamentary democracy, was based on the conventions of responsible government and on the system of governance in place in the United Kingdom. Included in this system, and codified in section 44 of the *BNA Act, 1867*, is the position of Speaker. Here it states, "The House of Commons on its

* William Lenthall served as Speaker on several occasions between 1640 and 1660. Although he asserted the independence of the Speaker from the Crown, he was also involved in the Restoration of the monarchy in 1660.

† Having served 33 years in total, Arthur Onslow is the longest-serving Speaker to date in the history of the Commonwealth.

‡ First elected Speaker in 1839, Charles Shaw-Lefevre was subsequently re-elected on three occasions. Upon his retirement in 1857, he was made a viscount.



first assembling after a General Election shall proceed with all practicable Speed to elect One of its Members to be Speaker."²³

Although firmly rooted in the British tradition, the Office of the Speaker in Canada evidences a degree of involvement in partisan activity that differs appreciably from that of the modern Speaker in the United Kingdom. The Speaker in both countries is expected to oversee the business of the House in an impartial manner; however, Canadian Speakers maintain their party membership and participate in partisan politics when not acting as Speaker. Once a Member of Parliament in the United Kingdom is elected Speaker, all party ties and affiliations are relinquished.²⁴ Like their federal counterparts, Speakers in Alberta refrain from attending caucus meetings while the Legislative Assembly is sitting.

In the United Kingdom, the impartiality and independence of the Office of the Speaker is further entrenched by the principle of continuity. This convention, established during the tenure of Speaker Charles Shaw-Lefevre, requires that the Speaker renounce all political affiliation upon assuming office.²⁵ Having cut all partisan ties, the Speaker does not actively campaign and stands as 'the Speaker seeking re-election.'²⁶ While the Speaker has not always run unopposed in general elections, "no Speaker seeking re-election in his constituency has ever been defeated at the polls [and] no incoming majority following a change of government has ever attempted to violate the continuity principle."²⁷ This convention has not been adopted in the Canadian parliamentary system, although it has been proposed and debated on various occasions over the years.*²⁸ Nor has this practice been adopted in Alberta; however, the distinctively long tenures of some of the province's Speakers have provided the benefit of continuity and the opportunity to develop expertise in the Office.[†]

Another key difference between British and Canadian practice relates to the nomination procedure. In the United Kingdom, it is customary for the Speaker to be nominated by Private Members, a reflection of the Speaker's role as the representative of the entire House.[‡] In contrast, Canadian Speakers have traditionally been nominated by the Prime Minister and seconded by either a Government Minister or the Leader of the Opposition.²⁹ Having the Leader of the Opposition second the Speaker's nomination is another method of emphasizing the non-partisan nature of the Speaker's role. In 1985, when the House of Commons changed its procedures to elect the Speaker by secret ballot, the nomination convention also changed. Now all Members of

* Speaker Lucien Lamoureux (1966–1974) resigned from the Liberal Party and ran as an Independent in 1968 in the Ontario constituency of Stormont-Dundas, unopposed by Liberals or Progressive Conservatives. Lamoureux subsequently won the 1972 general election as an Independent in the same constituency and was elected Speaker. Progressive Conservative Prime Minister C. Joseph 'Joe' Clark (1979–1980) nominated Lamoureux's successor, Liberal James Jerome (1974–1980), to continue as Speaker following the 1979 election of Clark's minority government. This was the first time an Opposition Member was elected Speaker of the House of Commons.

† The average tenure of all Speakers in office in the period from 1978 to 1998 in all 13 legislative assemblies in Canada was 1,185 days. The average tenure, by province, ranged from Alberta as the highest at 2,398 days (with Saskatchewan next at 1,648 days) to British Columbia as the lowest at 917 days.

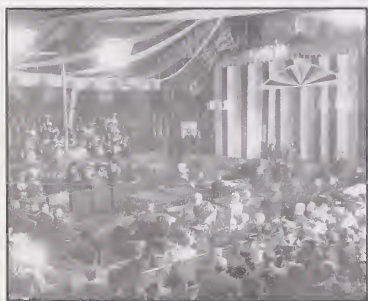
‡ The procedure for nominating and electing a Speaker was established in about 1700.

Parliament, excluding Ministers of the Crown and party leaders, are listed on the ballot unless a Member makes a written request to the Clerk that his or her name be withdrawn.³⁰

One Canadian tradition, which has no precedent in the United Kingdom, is the custom in the Canadian House of Commons of alternating between Anglophone and Francophone Speakers, reflecting Canada's two official languages. It should be noted, however, that this tradition has not prevented several Speakers from being re-elected to serve for multiple successive Parliaments, and that this practice is not followed by most provincial legislative assemblies.³¹ It has been suggested that recent changes, including the election of the Speaker by secret ballot and the simultaneous translation of proceedings into both official languages, could contribute to the demise of this tradition.³²

In Canada, the Office of the Speaker is substantially similar at the federal and provincial levels, and from one province to another.³³ Despite these similarities, it is important to realize that Alberta is a distinct political entity that does not derive its power from the federal Parliament, but is sovereign in its own areas of jurisdiction.³⁴ While the three essential functions of the Office of Speaker, those of representative, impartial arbiter and administrator, have not changed in any fundamental way since the turn of the century, various practices continue to evolve.

With respect to the nomination of the Speaker, Alberta has adhered to the approaches in the British and Canadian Houses of Commons at different points in its history. Initially, the Premier nominated a candidate. The nomination was seconded by a Government Minister. It was not until 1945 that the Leader of the Opposition first seconded the Speaker's nomination. This occurred on four occasions thereafter: in 1968, 1972, 1986 and 1989. In 1949, 1975[†] and 1979, Private Members of the Opposition seconded the nomination. Additionally, in 1975, Speaker



Opening of the First Legislature of the Province of Alberta at the Thistle Rink (March 15, 1906).

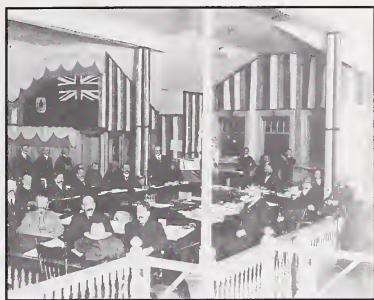
Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986) was nominated by a Government Member, rather than by the Premier, in order to more closely reflect the practice in the United Kingdom.³⁵ Private Members have nominated the Speaker on six occasions since that time. In 1983, a Private Member also seconded the nomination. Even after the introduction of election by secret ballot to Alberta in 1993, Speakers continued to be nominated by Members of the Legislative Assembly, unlike the practice in the federal Parliament, in which all eligible Members are listed on the ballot. Since 1968, the procedure in Alberta has been for a Private Member of either the governing caucus or the Opposition to take part in the nomination of the Speaker, thereby

* In New Brunswick, Canada's only officially bilingual province, there was a tradition of alternating between Anglophone and Francophone Speakers, when possible, prior to the introduction of a secret ballot in 1994. There is an ongoing tradition to elect two Deputy Speakers: one Francophone and one Anglophone.

† In 1975, the Leader of the Social Credit Party failed to win a seat, therefore no Opposition Leader was recognized at the opening of the Legislature.

emphasizing that the Speaker is a servant of the House as whole.

Since the 1970s, Alberta has developed a number of additional procedures intended to strengthen the independence of the Legislative Assembly. In May 1973, a Select Committee of the Legislative Assembly was struck "to study, simplify, update and modernize the *Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings* of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta."³⁶ The Committee noted that, "from the administrative point of view, there is a growing awareness and desire to reinforce the office and function of the Speaker, in the belief that this will also reinforce the identity and concept of 'parliament' in provincial legislatures."³⁷ One of the most significant reforms to be approved was the abolition of the right to appeal a Speaker's ruling without a substantive motion from the floor of the House, as the previous practice of appeal without notice was seen as a constant threat to the Speaker's authority.³⁸ The federal Parliament had brought in this reform in 1965, and Alberta was one of the first provinces to follow suit.³⁹



Legislative Assembly of Alberta, McKay Avenue School (May 1906). Speaker C.W. Fisher seated right rear, under window.

In 1973, an organizational support structure was established for the Legislative Assembly of Alberta to "accommodate accounts, personnel, equipment and the general administration services." This support structure would, in 1983, formally become the Legislative Assembly Office (LAO).⁴⁰ Also adopted from the 1973 Select Committee's *Report on House Rules* was the recommendation that the Legislative Assembly establish a fiscal structure to sustain the support services required by the Members. Thus the *Special Select Committee of the Legislature on Members' Services*, chaired by the Speaker, was formed.⁴¹ In general terms, the Committee provides "the broad quality framework that really relates to [services to] the Members."⁴² Currently, the mandate of this all-party Committee is to set Members' allowances and benefits as well as constituency office allowances. The Committee also approves the annual estimates of the Legislative Assembly and establishes policy on human resources, library services, information technology and financial management for the 'Speaker's department' (LAO).⁴³ In order to ensure administrative continuity during an election, the *Legislative Assembly Act* was amended in 1983 so that the Speaker continues to hold Office until the day before the next Legislature begins.⁴⁴ In

* The *Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings* were commonly referred to (and are now officially titled) the *Standing Orders*.

† The only incident of a Speaker's ruling being appealed and overturned in Alberta occurred on March 19, 1972, during the Bennett Dam controversy. On the following sitting day, Speaker Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972) received a unanimous vote of confidence, and his initial ruling was subsequently upheld.

‡ This "would include the 'Library' [established 1906], 'Hansard,' 'Sergeant-at-Arms,' 'Law Clerk,' 'Services to Members,' and 'Commonwealth Parliamentary Association.'" Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Select Committee on the Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly, *Report on House Rules*, vol. 1 (Edmonton, Legislative Assembly of Alberta: 1973), p. vi.



short, with the evolution and growth of the LAO, and the increasing complexity of modern society, the role of the Speaker has grown substantially and has incorporated a variety of additional responsibilities.

Notes

¹ Arthur Irwin Dasent and John Lane, *The Speakers of the House of Commons: From the Earliest Times to the Present Day, with a Topographical Description of Westminster at Various Epochs & A Brief Record of the Principal Constitutional Changes During Seven Centuries* (New York: John Lane Co., 1911), p. 342; Philip Laundy, *The Office of Speaker* (London: Cassell, 1964), p. 447.

² Philip Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth* (London: Quiller Press, 1984), p. 11.

³ James A. H. Murray, ed., *A New English Dictionary on Historical Principles* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1909), s.v. "Parlour," "Prolocutor," "Procurator."

⁴ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth*, p. 20.

⁵ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker*, pp. 138, 448; Dasent and Lane, *The Speakers of the House of Commons*, pp. 346–347.

⁶ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker*, pp. 139, 448; Dasent and Lane, *The Speakers of the House of Commons*, pp. 348–349.

⁷ Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), p. 256; United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Speaker*, rev. ed., FactSheet M2, Members Series (London: House of Commons Information Office, September 2003), p. 5; Gary Levy, *Speakers of the Canadian House of Commons* (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, 1996), p. 1.

⁸ Robert J. Fleming and J. Thomas Mitchinson, "The Speakership in Canada," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 6, no. 1 (Spring 1983): p. 21.

⁹ Norman W. Wilding and Philip Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, 4th rev. ed. (London: Cassell, 1972), p. 708; Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth*, p. 20.

¹⁰ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth*, p. 13.

¹¹ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker*, p. 42.

¹² Ibid., p. 35.

¹³ Ibid.

¹⁴ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth*, p. 87.

¹⁵ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker*, p. 35.

¹⁶ United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Speaker*, p. 5; Levy, *Speakers of the Canadian House of Commons*, p. 1; Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 256.

¹⁷ United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Speaker*, p. 5.

¹⁸ Ibid; Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, pp. 430–431.

¹⁹ Levy, *Speakers of the Canadian House of Commons*, p. 1.

²⁰ Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 506; Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth*, p. 42.

²¹ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth*, pp. 42–43.

²² Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 709; Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth*, p. 50; R. B. Land, “Foreword,” in “*Whose Servant I Am: Speakers of the Assemblies of the Province of Upper Canada, Canada and Ontario, 1792–1992*,” ed. Clare A. Dale (Toronto: Ontario Legislative Library, 1992), p. ii.

²³ *British North America Act, 1867* (U.K.), 30 & 31 Vict., c. 3, s. 44. Note that the name of the *British North America Act, 1867* was changed in 1982 to the *Constitution Act, 1867*. For more information, see the Glossary.

²⁴ United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Speaker*, p. 4.

²⁵ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 257.

²⁶ Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), p. 220; United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Speaker*, p. 5.

²⁷ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth*, p. 68; Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 257.

²⁸ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 258.

²⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 280.

³⁰ *Ibid.*, pp. 281–282.

³¹ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth*, p. 107; E-mail from Shayne Davies, Legislative Assembly of New Brunswick, Fredericton, 5 March 2004.

³² Levy, *Speakers of the Canadian House of Commons*, p. 5; Gary Levy, “The Evolving Speakership,” *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 21, no. 2 (Summer 1998): p. 7.

³³ Levy, “The Evolving Speakership,” p. 11.

³⁴ Robert MacGregor Dawson, W. F. Dawson, and Norman Ward, *Democratic Government in Canada*, 5th ed. (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1989), p. 94; Michael S. Whittington and Richard J. Van Loon, *Canadian Government and Politics: Institutions and Processes*, McGraw-Hill Ryerson Series in Canadian Politics (Toronto: McGraw-Hill Ryerson, 1996), p. 247.

³⁵ Gerard Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.

³⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 17th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. LXXIX, 10 May 1973, p. 165.

³⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, Select Committee on the Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly. *Report on House Rules*, vol. 1 (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1973), p. v.

³⁸ Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 711; Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Select Committee on the Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly, *Report on House Rules*, p. 11a.

³⁹ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth*, p. 137; Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 265.

⁴⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Select Committee on the Rules, *Report on House Rules*, p. vi.

⁴¹ *Ibid.*, pp. vi–vii; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 17th Legislature, 2nd Session*, 14 December 1973, p. 251.



⁴² W. J. David McNeil, Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Interview by LAO Staff, 5 February 2004.

⁴³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, "Special Standing Committee: Members' Services Committee Mandate," *Assembly Documents and Records*, [Internet], (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta), accessed 30 March 2004, available from http://www.assembly.ab.ca/adr/adr_template.aspx?type=6&page=30

⁴⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide: Information for Members on Indemnities, Benefits, Allowances, Services, House Procedure and Interparliamentary Relations* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, October 2004), s. 41; *Legislative Assembly Act*, S.A. 1983, c. L-10.1, s. 16(4).



Role of the Speaker



ROLE OF THE SPEAKER

The Speaker must fulfill a number of roles in order to discharge the duties of Office. These roles may be categorized as representative, presiding officer and administrator of the Legislative Assembly. The authority and impartiality of the position must be inherent in the decisions and actions of the Speaker.¹ The ability of the Assembly to function properly can be impaired if the Speaker is not seen to be acting in a way that is fair to all Members.² Speaker Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972) once explained that while “[t]he government has its majority to protect it; the opposition has the rules and the Speaker.”³ The Speaker is, at all times, the servant of the Assembly.⁴ After leaving Office, Speaker David J. Carter (1986–1993) reflected on his time in the Chair and noted that “[o]ne needs to be a combination of traffic controller, judge, counsellor, organizer-extraordinaire,”⁵ an apt description of the Speaker’s varied roles and responsibilities.

The Office of the Speaker “embodies the power, dignity, and honour of the House itself,” as indicated by parliamentary precedent and the *Standing Orders*.⁶ An affront “to the Speaker is an affront to the [Legislative Assembly] itself.”⁷ For this reason, the Speaker is entitled to be treated with respect at all times, and the behaviour required of Members illustrates this principle in various ways, including:

- When a Member is speaking, no one may cross between that Member and the Chair.⁸
- When the Speaker is standing, no person may exit the Assembly or make any noise or disturbance.⁹
- A Speaker’s ruling can be appealed only by a formal substantive motion in the Assembly of which notice has been given.¹⁰
- Aspersions on the character of the Speaker can be punished as a breach of privilege.¹¹

Role as Representative

As the representative of the Legislative Assembly, the Speaker is the “guardian of the rights and privileges of the House.”¹² One of the first duties of the Speaker, during the Speaker’s address at the opening of every Legislature, is to claim from the Crown the traditional rights of Parliament on behalf of the Assembly.¹³ The Speaker also represents the Assembly in its relationship with the Crown, representatives of the Crown and other outside agencies.¹⁴ For example, following the passage of legislation by the House, it is the Speaker who makes the request for Royal Assent from the Lieutenant Governor. On ceremonial occasions, the Speaker acts as the representative of and spokesperson for the Legislative Assembly and is responsible for delivering messages from the Assembly. When dignitaries, including members of the Royal Family, visit the Legislature, the Speaker receives these guests and acts as host on behalf of the Legislative Assembly.

* Large majority governments have been common throughout Alberta’s 100-year history as a province.



The Speaker serves as the president of the Alberta Branch of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association (CPA) and hence represents Alberta within this Commonwealth-wide organization.¹⁵ The Alberta Branch, formed in 1946, is one of 170 national, state, provincial and territorial branches.¹⁶ The CPA was founded in 1911 under the name 'Empire Parliamentary Association,' and included Canada among its founding members.¹⁷ In 1949, after the Second World War, the name was changed to the 'Commonwealth Parliamentary Association.'¹⁸ The CPA is a non-partisan organization that is "united by community of interest, respect for the rule of law and individual rights and freedoms, and by pursuit of the positive ideals of parliamentary democracy."¹⁹ Through increased appreciation of parliamentary traditions, members of the CPA are able to foster and improve these institutions. Members are able to share their experiences and challenges and learn from each other in the process. As the current Speaker, the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–) writes, "The CPA helps make us more aware of the larger, global context we live in so that we can make better decisions at the provincial level and in our constituencies."²⁰ All Members of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta are members of the CPA and enhance their professional development and parliamentary awareness by taking part in the Association's various conferences and activities.²¹

Role as Presiding Officer

The Speaker's role has evolved in such a way that the 'quasi-judicial function' of presiding over debates is now the most important responsibility of the Office.²² The significance of the role of the Speaker is evident in that the selection of a Speaker is the first act of the Legislative Assembly and in that, without a Speaker, House business cannot proceed. As presiding officer, it is the Speaker's responsibility to maintain order and decorum during Legislative Assembly proceedings²³ by managing debate according to rules of procedure and precedence.²⁴ It is the Speaker's duty to ensure that the Government is able to effectively carry out business in the Assembly while permitting the Opposition to seek information and express its views. Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986) has said, "As the presiding officer of the highest authority in a province, the Speaker does not in any way sit in judgment on the Assembly, the Opposition or the Government. He is still one of the ... MLAs but with the special duty of applying the rules to assist the House in getting its work done."²⁵ When presiding over the Assembly, the Speaker may take direction from both the *Standing Orders* and from practices and precedents accumulated in Alberta, in Canada and other Commonwealth jurisdictions.²⁶ During debates, the Speaker must rule on questions of procedure, as they arise.²⁷ The Speaker rules only on questions of procedure, not on legal or constitutional questions.²⁸ Should a complaint of breach of privilege be raised, the Speaker must determine if a *prima facie* case has been made that would justify such proceedings taking precedence over the regular business of the Assembly.²⁹ The Speaker takes no part in debate³⁰ and casts a vote only when necessary to break a tie, a rare occurrence in Alberta.³¹ During debate, Members cannot be heard until called upon by the Speaker, and all remarks must be addressed to the Speaker.³² When determining upon whom to

* The casting vote has been used in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta by Speakers Oran L. McPherson (1922–1926) in 1923 and Gerard J. Amerongen in 1973. The casting vote was used relatively frequently in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories due in part to the even split between the two factions in the Assembly.



call during a debate, the Speaker must arrange for both sides of a question to be heard in a reasonable rotation.³³ The Speaker decides to whom time is allotted during Oral Question Period and ensures that individual Members adhere to time limits when making speeches.³⁴ To facilitate debate, the Speaker also has the prerogative to order the withdrawal of 'strangers'[†] from the floor of the Chamber or from the galleries.³⁵

As arbiter of the Legislative Assembly, the Speaker cannot provide procedural advice based on hypothetical inquiries, although he does provide other forms of guidance to Members regarding parliamentary procedure and practice. Speaker Peter Dawson (1937–1963) once urged Members "to study the evolution of government and parliamentary procedure the way you would go about a course in mathematics or history" as he offered some special tutoring to a group of new Members.³⁶ Speaker Stanley S. Schumacher (1993–1997) first introduced formal orientation sessions for Members in 1997. This orientation involved a presentation by the Speaker on the role of the Legislative Assembly and of the individual Member; an introduction to the services provided by the Legislative Assembly Office (LAO) through its various branches; and one-on-one meetings with the Clerk and LAO branch managers.³⁷

Role as Administrator

Just as a Cabinet Minister oversees a particular government department, the Speaker is the head of administration providing for the overall direction and management of the LAO. This administrative organization is often referred to as the 'Speaker's department.' Each jurisdiction in Canada has an equivalent department whether it is called the 'Legislative Assembly Office,' 'House of Assembly Operations,' or by some other name. Similarly, the all-party Committee that oversees Legislative Assembly operations and finances, known in Alberta as the *Special Standing Committee on Members' Services*, is variously called the 'Board of Internal Economy,' 'House Services Committee' or 'Legislative Assembly Management Committee' in other jurisdictions. The Legislative Assembly Office in Alberta became an official entity when the *Legislative Assembly Act* was passed in 1983. This Act "formalize[d] a situation that ha[d] existed for some years, at least since 1973."³⁸ It is important to note that the LAO is not a government department. It provides non-partisan services to all Members and oversees the document, financial, personnel and information administration of the Legislative Assembly.

The scope of the LAO in Alberta is illustrated by the following services:³⁹

- **Office of the Clerk**—Is responsible for the processing of the daily business of the House and provides management and communications support to all branches of the LAO. The Clerk acts as a liaison at the deputy minister level with government departments and assists in coordinating Member participation in interparliamentary activities.
- **Financial Management and Administrative Services (FMAS)**—Provides full accounting services, such as budget preparation and monitoring, payment processing and financial

* In Alberta, the caucuses determine the order of questioners and submit a prioritized list to the Speaker.

† A stranger to the House is any person within the Parliamentary Precincts who is neither a Member nor an officer of the House. For more information, see the Glossary and the Background section, *Galleries*.

‡ The following descriptions are adapted from the LAO Annual Reports and LAO orientation presentations to Members.



reporting; and administrative services, such as equipment and supplies procurement, telecommunications management, constituency office lease and credit card administration. FMAS also assists with records management and handles *Freedom of Information and Protection of Privacy Act* (FOIPP) issues for the LAO.

- **Information Technology Services (ITS)**—Handles all technological issues, including the installation and support of software and hardware, remote access and network infrastructure.
- **Human Resource Services (HRS)**—Provides support to Members and staff in all matters of human resource management. This support includes contract administration, pay and benefits management, recruitment and job classification, employee relations, training and development and all issues related to occupational health and safety.
- **Legal Services (Parliamentary Counsel)**—Provides legal advice on a wide range of matters, including parliamentary procedure. These officers draft Private Members' Public Bills and Private Bills. Both Senior Parliamentary Counsel serve as Table Officers in the House and advise the Speaker on points of order and questions of privilege. They also provide the LAO with legal advice on employment and contract issues.
- **Library Services**—Provides information, news, reference and research services to the Members and their staff using the most current library and information technology. As well, Library Services provides training in the use of the electronic information services that are delivered to Members' desktops. The Library also undertakes the preservation of Alberta government and legislative documents in print and digital formats.
- **Visitor, Ceremonial and Security Services (VCSS)**—Plans and coordinates ceremonial and special events, including school and public outreach programs, as well as tours of the facilities and the production of educational and orientation materials. VCSS also maintains security in the Chamber and Parliamentary Precincts, provides security-related advice to constituency offices and manages the Alberta Legislative Assembly Page Program.
- **House Services (HS)**—Along with providing advice on parliamentary procedures, HS is responsible for the recording, transcription and publication of print and electronic versions of the official report of proceedings of the Legislative Assembly (*Alberta Hansard*), and of Legislative Committee proceedings. HS produces and maintains House records, including: *Votes and Proceedings*, *Order Paper*, *Journals*, bills, motions and other sessional publications. HS makes all the arrangements for the Legislative Assembly's Standing, Special Standing and Select Special Committee meetings. As well, HS assists with expenses, budgets, historical records and transcripts relating to committees and provides editing and proofreading services.

Over the last two decades, the LAO has developed into a “more sophisticated, responsive, professional organization.”⁴⁰ It has focused on developing capacity in the various functional areas by providing more specialized expertise and making greater use of technology to deliver its services.

The Legislature Library is a case in point in that it now concentrates to a greater degree on its primary mandate of providing intensive information services to the Members. From its inception



in 1906* to 1974, the Library was known as the Provincial Library, and functioned as a parliamentary library, a general reference library for the civil service, and, until 1963, as the Provincial Archives. In 1974, the name of the Library was changed to the Legislature Library, placing the emphasis on the Library's primary role, which is to meet the information needs of the Members of the Legislative Assembly, their staff, and later, when the Legislative Assembly Office was formally established, its staff.[†] Electronic resources have become increasingly important in providing these services. The Library's catalogue was automated in 1994, and research services are supported by customized news services and full-text online databases that are provided to Members at their desktops. Projects to archive Alberta government documents electronically and to digitize *Scrapbook Hansard* were begun early in the new millennium.



Princess Margaret visits Legislature Library (July 25, 1980). Left to right: Speaker G.J. Amerongen, Legislature Librarian D.B. McDougall and wife, Norma.

A constant challenge for the LAO has been the need to stay current with information technology. Consequently, the Information Technology Services branch was formed in 1989. One of its first initiatives was a pilot project introducing computers into constituency offices. Table Officers began using laptops in the House in 1994, and Members followed soon thereafter.⁴¹ The Clerk of the Legislative Assembly, Dr. W. J. David McNeil (1987–), explains that Alberta has “set some standards as far as ... Canadian Legislatures [go]” in that its Legislative Assembly has been “quick to adopt technology, probably more so than most of the parliaments ... and we are way ahead in terms of providing our Members, in their constituencies, with support, networking, computers, and so on.”⁴²

As the LAO has continued to grow, it has also increased its independence from government operations.⁴³ The Sergeant-at-Arms, who was previously an employee of the Solicitor General's department and whose initial responsibilities to the Legislative Assembly were sessional, became a full-time employee of the LAO in April 1987.⁴⁴ Further, in April 1991, the LAO assumed responsibility for Visitor Services from the Public Affairs Bureau.⁴⁵ In 1997, the LAO “managed its financial information independently of Alberta Treasury” for the first time.⁴⁶

Over time, in Alberta, the Speaker's responsibilities have broadened, the workload has increased, and there has been an overall trend towards strengthening the independence and authority of the Speaker.

As the work of the Legislative Assembly has expanded, the Speaker's administrative role has grown extensively and changed from a sessional into a full-time responsibility.⁴⁷ Beginning in

* The Saskatchewan Legislative Library was the successor to the North-West Territories Library as it retained the collection of the Legislative Library while Alberta received a cash payment instead, which went into general revenue.

[†] However, the Legislature Library does continue to assist government employees with their reference needs that are beyond the scope of their libraries, and to respond to general queries from the public.



1972, the average number of sitting days per year in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta more than doubled and thus further increased the Speaker's workload.* Even when the House is not in Session, the Speaker continues to represent the Legislative Assembly at various functions and by acting as host to visiting dignitaries. In addition to receiving the salary paid to all Members of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, the Speaker is paid a supplemental indemnity for taking on the added responsibilities of the Chair. Changes to the Speaker's compensation over the years have reflected the increased demands of the position. In Alberta, the Speaker's indemnity matches that of Cabinet Ministers with Portfolios,⁴⁸ a further confirmation of the Speaker's significant role in the Legislative Assembly.⁴⁹

* For more details on the length and dates of Sessions, see Appendix H.

Notes

¹ Alistair Fraser, W. F. Dawson, and John A. Holtby, *Beauchesne's Rules & Forms of the House of Commons Canada with Annotations, Comments and Precedents*, 6th ed. (Toronto: Carswell Co., 1989), p. 49, s. 168(1); Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), p. 266.

² Ronald G. Landes, *The Canadian Polity: A Comparative Introduction*, 6th ed. (Toronto: Prentice Hall, Allyn and Bacon Canada, 2002), p. 162; Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, pp. 260–261.

³ Don Truckey, "Politics Runs in Veins of Sacred Stalwart," *Calgary Herald*, 14 August 1982, p. G3.

⁴ Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, p. 48, s. 167.

⁵ David John Carter, "Seven Years in the Speaker's Chair," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 17, no. 1 (Spring 1994): p. 16.

⁶ Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, p. 49, s. 167.

⁷ Philip Laundy, "The Speaker and His Office in the Twentieth Century," in *The House of Commons in the Twentieth Century: Essays by Members of the Study of Parliament Group*, ed. Stuart Alan Walkland (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1979), p. 127.

⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Order 13(4)(a).

⁹ *Ibid.*, Standing Order 13(3).

¹⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Select Committee on the Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly, *Report on House Rules*, vol. 1 (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1973), p. 11a; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Orders 13(1)–(2).

¹¹ Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, p. 49, s. 168(1); *Legislative Assembly Act*, R.S.A. 2000, c. L-9, s. 10(2)(d).

¹² Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 248.

¹³ *Ibid.*, p. 261.



- ¹⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide: Information for Members on Indemnities, Benefits, Allowances, Services, House Procedure and Interparliamentary Relations* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, October 2004), s. 41; Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, pp. 47–48, ss. 163–164.
- ¹⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide 2004*, s. 113.
- ¹⁶ *Commonwealth Parliamentary Association: About Us*, [Internet], (London: Commonwealth Parliamentary Association), accessed 1 September 2004, available from <http://www.cpahq.org/aboutus/default.aspx>; *Commonwealth Parliamentary Association: Directory of Parliaments and Legislatures: Provincial Legislature of Alberta*, [Internet], (London: Commonwealth Parliamentary Association, updated 13 November 2003), accessed 3 March 2004, available from <http://www.cpahq.org/directory/default.aspx?orgid=48>
- ¹⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office Annual Report 2002 & 2002 Annual Report of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association—Alberta Branch* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 2003), p. 57.
- ¹⁸ *Commonwealth Parliamentary Association: FAQs*, [Internet], (London: Commonwealth Parliamentary Association), accessed 18 June 2004, available from http://www.cpahq.org/activities/_page65.aspx
- ¹⁹ Commonwealth Parliamentary Association, *Constitution*, As adopted by the General Assembly of the Association at its meeting in Cyprus on 6 September 1993, and amended at its meeting in New Zealand on 19 October 1998 (London: Commonwealth Parliamentary Association Secretariat, 1998), preamble, p. 1.
- ²⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office 1998 Annual Report & 1998 Annual Report of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association, Alberta Branch* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 1999), p. 33.
- ²¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office 1999 Annual Report & 1999 Annual Report of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association, Alberta Branch* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 2000), p. 64.
- ²² James John Guy, *How We Are Governed: The Basics of Canadian Politics and Government* (Toronto: Harcourt Brace & Co., Canada, 1995), p. 164; Gary Levy, *Speakers of the Canadian House of Commons* (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, 1996), p. 2.
- ²³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 13(1).
- ²⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide 2004*, s. 41.
- ²⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 17th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. LXXIX, 12 April 1973, pp. 124–125.
- ²⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide 2004*, s. 60.
- ²⁷ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 270.
- ²⁸ Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, p. 49, s. 168(5).
- ²⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 50, s. 172(1).
- ³⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 11(1.1); Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 267.
- ³¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 11(2); Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, pp. 268–269.
- ³² Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, p. 49, s. 168(1).
- ³³ Andrew Adonis, *Parliament Today*, 2nd ed. (Manchester: Manchester University Press, 1993), p. 85.



- ³⁴ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 248; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide 2004*, s. 81.
- ³⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Orders 14(1)–(2).
- ³⁶ Grant MacEwan, *Poking Into Politics* (Edmonton: Institute of Applied Arts, Ltd., 1966), p. 144.
- ³⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office 1997 Annual Report & 1997 Annual Report of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association, Alberta Branch* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 1998), p. 1.
- ³⁸ Neil Crawford, *White Paper Respecting the Re-Enactment of the Legislative Assembly Act* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1983), p. 8.
- ³⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Annual Report 2002*, p. 13; Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, "Orientation Presentation for Members," 2004.
- ⁴⁰ W. J. David McNeil, Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Interview by LAO Staff, 5 February 2004.
- ⁴¹ Carol Haley, "The Use of Technology in the Alberta Legislative Assembly," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 24, no. 3 (Autumn 2001): p. 2.
- ⁴² McNeil, Interview by LAO Staff, 5 February 2004.
- ⁴³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Select Committee on the Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly, *Report on House Rules*, p. viii; McNeil, Interview by LAO Staff, 5 February 2004.
- ⁴⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office Annual Report 1987* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1988), p. 11.
- ⁴⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office Annual Report 1991* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 1992), p. 15.
- ⁴⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *1997 Annual Report*, p. 1.
- ⁴⁷ Robert J. Fleming and J. Thomas Mitchinson, "The Speakership in Canada," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 6, no. 1 (Spring 1983): p. 21.
- ⁴⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide 2004*, s. 2.
- ⁴⁹ Fleming and Mitchinson, "The Speakership in Canada," p. 22.



Role of the Clerk

ROLE OF THE CLERK

A visitor to the galleries of a parliament would become quickly aware of the role of the Speaker, but the role of the Clerk is not nearly as apparent:

The work of a good clerk is hidden, and the clerks themselves are unobtrusive. But good staff at the table are as essential to making Parliament work and the Speaker an effective moderator of proceedings as is a good secretary to a board of directors, or a good director of research to a royal commission.¹

The role of the Clerk is closely tied to that of the Speaker, and consequently the two positions evolved concurrently. During the 14th century, both roles began to develop in conjunction with the English parliamentary system. The Clerk is the chief permanent officer of the Assembly, not an elected Member. The position of Clerk of the House actually predates that of the Speaker.² The word 'Clerk' derives from the Latin *clericus*, meaning a learned man.³ In England, the first Clerk, Robert de Melton, was appointed 'under-clerk of the Parliaments' in 1363, more than 10 years before Sir Thomas Hungerford was named the first official Speaker of the House of Commons.⁴ The role of the Clerk began as a 'merely mechanical recorder' and a custodian of records. Considerable learning was required, however, as there was a necessity to read, write, and most importantly, read aloud in Latin, French and English.⁵ A knowledge of the legal vocabulary of the day was also a requirement.⁶ Before the invention of printing, the Clerk was responsible for reading the Bills aloud in the Chamber, and it is from this practice that the terminology of first, second and third reading emanates.⁷ The notes taken by John Seymour, Clerk of the Commons from 1547 to 1567, are credited with becoming the first *Journals* of the House of Commons, but it was not until the 17th century that the House assumed full responsibility for their production.⁸ At that time, the *Journals* began to be used as an authority on procedure and precedence, and the Clerk's role expanded from amanuensis to expert procedural advisor to the House.⁹

Currently, in the United Kingdom, the Crown appoints the Clerk for life by letters patent.¹⁰ In Canada, the position of Clerk is not a lifetime appointment. In the federal Parliament, the Clerk is appointed by Order in Council.¹¹ In the provinces, the Clerk is appointed either by order of the Lieutenant Governor in Council or by resolution of the Assembly.¹² In Alberta, the Clerk is appointed by order of the Lieutenant Governor in Council. The first Clerks were appointed on the advice of the Executive Council.¹³

In Alberta, the Clerk of the Legislative Assembly also served as the Clerk of the Executive Council from 1935 to 1973.¹⁴ In 1935, Robert A. Andison, who had been Clerk of the Assembly since 1923, was appointed Clerk of the Executive Council, and became the first person to occupy both positions concurrently.¹⁵ This dual role reportedly led to some difficult situations. For instance, "[a]fter a provincial general or by-election, as clerk of the executive council, he would have to write a letter to himself as clerk of the assembly, to name the elected candidates."¹⁶ In 1973, the two positions were split when E. M. 'Ted' Mills was appointed Clerk of the Executive Council, and William H. MacDonald (1966–1976) continued in his capacity as Clerk of the Legislative Assembly.¹⁷ Notably, Bohdan J. D. Stefaniuk (1976–1987) was the first



Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta to be appointed upon the recommendation of the Speaker, rather than of the Executive Council.¹⁸

From 1888 to 1897, the Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories carried out the functions of a chief electoral officer, overseeing territorial elections. From 1897 to 1904



S.S. Page, Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories (1901–1905).

in the North-West Territories, and from 1905 to 1972 in Alberta, this role was filled by the Clerk of the Executive Council. Consequently, during the period from 1935 to 1972, when Robert A. Andison (1923–1955), Raymond A. A. Crevolin (1955–1966) and William H. MacDonald (1966–1976) fulfilled the roles of both Clerk of the Executive Council and Clerk of the Legislative Assembly, for a duration of almost 40 years all three roles were concurrently vested in one individual. The *Elections Statutes Amendment Act, 1972* formally transferred the responsibility of overseeing elections from the Clerk of the Executive Council to the Clerk of the Legislative Assembly.¹⁹ The period during which the Clerk of the Assembly also performed the duties of chief electoral officer was relatively brief, however, in that five years later *The Election Amendment Act, 1977* provided for the creation of the new position of Chief Electoral Officer, and the responsibility for overseeing provincial elections was transferred accordingly.²⁰

As with the Speaker, the role of the Clerk has become increasingly non-partisan over time. The Clerk does not run for election nor maintain a party affiliation. The personal views of the Clerk cannot be allowed to intrude upon the business of the Legislative Assembly.²¹ On matters of the practice and procedure of the House, the Clerk is the principal advisor to the Speaker and to all Members of the House.²² In Alberta, under the direction of the Speaker, the Clerk oversees the management of the Legislative Assembly Office (LAO). The duties and responsibilities of the Clerk are outlined in Chapter 9 of the 2003 Alberta *Standing Orders*.

In his traditional role as chief procedural advisor, the Clerk coordinates the delivery of procedural and legal advice to the Speaker, Members of the Assembly and its committees. The current Clerk of the Alberta Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Dr. W. J. David McNeil (1987–), describes this process as a ‘group effort’ of the Table Officers.²³ Currently, in Alberta, in addition to the Clerk, the Table Officers are: the Clerk Assistant and Clerk of Committees, two Senior Parliamentary Counsel and the Clerk of Journals/Table Research. It is the role of the Table Officers to provide procedural and legal advice, and the role of the Clerk “to manage the flow of that advice.”²⁴ In Alberta, the Table Officers have daily meetings with the Speaker while the House is in Session in order to prepare for that day’s sitting. They use these meetings to “keep up with what’s happening politically in Alberta and Canada and sometimes more broadly, to anticipate the kinds of issues that might be raised in Question Period and to anticipate any procedural issues that might arise [such as] questions of privilege, points of order.”²⁵ In Alberta, the Clerk also oversees the election of the Speaker.²⁶

In addition to these procedural duties, the Clerk fulfills a significant administrative role. The Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta is the ‘Deputy Minister equivalent’ of the LAO and

takes general direction from the Speaker. In this capacity, the Clerk oversees the generation, maintenance and preservation of documents for the Assembly, and directs officers and staff of the LAO. The functional areas whose officers report to the Clerk are: Communications, Financial Management and Administrative Services, House Services (including Alberta Hansard), Human Resource Services, Information Technology Services, Legal Services, Library Services, Records Management, Security Services and Visitor Services.

As the Speaker's duties have burgeoned and Members' services committees, or boards of internal economy, have been created, administrative responsibilities have increasingly devolved to the Clerk.²⁷ Ultimately, the Clerk's duties and responsibilities with respect to the direct management of Assembly support services have expanded as the administrative structure of the House has become more complex. The effective implementation and enhancement of technology to meet the needs of the Members in all spheres of their work activity has become an increasingly important function of the role of the Clerk. The challenge in the early years of the new millennium has been to ensure that all the individual technological advances are integrated in such a way as to offer seamless connectivity among the various services available to the Members and to Albertans.



Speaker P. Dawson (left) at Table in Chamber with Clerk R.A. Crevolin (April 1958).

The Clerk, under the Speaker's direction, assists in coordinating the participation of Members of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta in interparliamentary activities designed to provide a free flow of information and the exchange of ideas among parliamentarians through the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association (CPA) and other interparliamentary groups. The Speaker is the president of the Alberta Branch of the CPA while the Clerk is the secretary.²⁸ The Clerk also acts "as a liaison at the deputy minister level with government departments" and agencies on behalf of the LAO.²⁹ Lastly, it is the Clerk's "mandate to inform and educate the public on behalf of the Speaker and Members with respect to the Institution of Parliament, and to support and protect the Assembly in maintaining its traditions, rights and privileges."³⁰ As elected officials change, the Clerk, as chief permanent officer, provides administrative continuity and ongoing direction and vision for the organization by developing and maintaining policies and upholding traditions.

Since 1906, the administration of the business of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta has benefited from the service of six Clerks and one Acting Clerk. With tenures of service usually extending over at least a decade, these men and women have contributed significantly to the professional and efficient management of Assembly business.

Clerk	Tenure of Service
<i>North-West Territories</i>	
Amédée Emmanuel Marie Forget*	May 1888–August 1888
Robert Bell Gordon	August 1888–December 1900
Samuel Spencer Page	March 1901–August 1905
<i>Alberta</i>	
John Robert Cowell	May 1906–April 1923
Robert Albert Andison	April 1923–May 1955
Raymond Albert Auguste Crevolin†	May 1955–August 1966
William Huestis MacDonald	October 1966–April 1976
Bohdan J. Denis Stefaniuk	September 1976–January 1987
Karen M. South (Acting Clerk)	January 1987–July 1987
Wilfred John David McNeil	August 1987–

* Amédée E. M. Forget was also Clerk of the North-West Territories Council starting on October 7, 1876 and continued in this capacity until Robert B. Gordon was appointed Clerk of the newly formed Legislative Assembly in August 1888. With the First Legislature opening on October 31, 1888, Forget never actually sat as a Table Officer in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories during Session.

† Raymond A. A. Crevolin passed away on August 27, 1966. A newspaper report stated that an Acting Clerk had been appointed in July of that year.

Notes

¹ C. E. S. Franks, "Dr. C. B. Koester: A Personal Memoir," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 21, no. 1 (Spring 1998): p. 28.

² United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Clerk of the House*, rev. ed., FactSheet G16, General Series (London: House of Commons Information Office, 2003), pp. 1–2; Philip Marsden, *The Officers of the Commons, 1363–1978* (London: Barrie and Rockliff, 1979), p. 26.

³ C. B. Koester, "The Clerkship in Saskatchewan," *Saskatchewan History* vol. 16 (1963): p. 59.

⁴ Marsden, *The Officers of the Commons, 1363–1978*, pp. 29–30; Kenneth R. Mackenzie, *The English Parliament*, rev. ed. (Harmondsworth: Penguin Books, 1959), p. 55.

⁵ Mackenzie, *The English Parliament*, p. 57; Koester, "The Clerkship in Saskatchewan," p. 60.

⁶ Koester, "The Clerkship in Saskatchewan," p. 60.

⁷ Ibid; Norman W. Wilding and Philip Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, 4th rev. ed. (London: Cassell, 1972), p. 633.

⁸ Mackenzie, *The English Parliament*, pp. 56–57.



⁹ O. C. Williams, "The Clerks of the House of Commons," *Journal of the Society of Clerks-at-the-Table in Empire Parliaments* vol. 2 (1933): p. 25; Mackenzie, *The English Parliament*, p. 57; Koester, "The Clerkship in Saskatchewan," p. 60. Amanuensis is from the Latin meaning a person who writes from dictation or copies manuscripts.

¹⁰ United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Clerk of the House*, p. 3; Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), p. 214. Letters patent are open documents that are issued by a monarch or government granting some power to act or conferring some right.

¹¹ Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), p. 252.

¹² E. George MacMinn and Robert Vaive, "The Office of Clerk," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 21, no. 2 (Summer 1998): p. 28.

¹³ *Alberta Gazette*, vol. 2, no. 10, 31 May 1906, p. 1; O.C. 545/23 (Public Services Act), Alberta; *Alberta Gazette*, vol. 51, no. 11, 15 June 1955, p. 1207; *Alberta Gazette*, vol. 62, no. 21, 15 November 1966, p. 1992.

¹⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 17th Legislature, 2nd Session*, 10 April 1973, p. 40-1995.

¹⁵ Pierre G. Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1955 ed. (Ottawa: Publication Office, 1955), p. 428; "Veteran Assembly Clerk Anderson Dies," *Edmonton Journal*, 9 February 1978, p. E2.

¹⁶ "Veteran Assembly Clerk Anderson Dies," p. E2.

¹⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 17th Legislature, 2nd Session*, 10 April 1973, p. 40-1995; Pierre G. Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1973 ed. (Ottawa: Publication Office, 1973), pp. 489, 519; Susan Walters, ed., *Canadian Almanac and Directory for 1973* (Toronto: Copp Clark, 1973), p. 533.

¹⁸ O.C. 1033/76, Alberta.

¹⁹ *Election Statutes Amendment Act, 1972*, S.A. 1972, c. 107.

²⁰ *Election Amendment Act, 1977*, S.A. 1977, c. 17.

²¹ Franks, "Dr. C. B. Koester: A Personal Memoir," p. 28; Koester, "The Clerkship in Saskatchewan," p. 68.

²² United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Clerk of the House*, p. 2.

²³ W. J. David McNeil, Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Interview by LAO Staff, 5 February 2004.

²⁴ Ibid.

²⁵ Ibid; United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Clerk of the House*, p. 2.

²⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Schedule A.

²⁷ MacMinn and Vaive, "The Office of Clerk," p. 30.

²⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office: The Clerk*, [Internet], (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office), accessed 9 September 2003, available from <http://www.assembly.ab.ca/lao/lao-clrk.htm>



²⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide: Information for Members on Indemnities, Benefits, Allowances, Services, House Procedure and Interparliamentary Relations* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, October 2004), s. 45.

³⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office: The Clerk*, [Internet].





The Mace

THE MACE

Throughout history, weapons of war have gained significance as symbols of authority.¹ An ancient weapon that has developed symbolic significance and, as such, has been brought forward into modern times, is the Mace. During medieval times, the battle mace, a metal club with a spiked head, was an ordinary weapon of war, used along with lances and swords by mounted warriors.² The development of the Mace as a ceremonial symbol can be traced to 12th-century Europe. The Sergeants-at-Arms of the King's Bodyguard of both Philip II* of France and Richard I of England† were among the first to use the Mace in a symbolic fashion.³ While originally employing the Mace to protect the King, these officers were assigned other duties, such as taking prisoners into custody and bringing persons before the King, during which they carried the Mace. The Mace thus developed into a symbol of the King's authority and an emblem of the Sergeant-at-Arms' authority to arrest without a written warrant.⁴

As the role of the Mace evolved from weapon to symbol of authority, its appearance changed accordingly. Over time, the Mace lost its intimidating spikes in favour of jewels and other ornamentation.⁵ The first record of the ceremonial Mace in use in the House of Commons occurred in a 1558 account.⁶ Particular events further cemented the symbolic significance of the Mace, including the attempt by King Charles I‡ to suspend Parliament by sending for the Mace—a request that was refused.⁷ In 1640, John Pym,§ Member of the English House of Commons, declared: “[I]t is a new doctrine, that we can do nothing without a speaker or the Mace.”⁸ It was this ceremonial significance that Oliver Cromwell** attempted to challenge in 1653, when he referred to the Mace as a ‘bauble’ and demanded that it be removed after he and his soldiers forcibly dismissed Parliament. Although intended to make a mockery of the significance of the Mace, Cromwell's comments further entrenched the tradition that the House could not sit without it.⁹ By the end of the 17th century, the Mace could be seen as a symbol of

* Philip II (1165–1223) ruled France from 1180 to 1223.

† Richard I (1157–1199), also known as Richard the Lion-Heart, ruled England for 10 years, from 1189 to 1199.

‡ Charles I (1600–1649) was King of England, Scotland and Ireland from 1625 to 1649. He was heavily criticized by Parliament on many issues, including his Catholic marriage. Charles' belief in the divine right of kings further strained his relationship with Parliament to the point that he ruled without it for 11 years (1629–1640) until war in Scotland forced him to recall Parliament in order to raise revenue. His relationship with Parliament continued to decline until his attempt to arrest five of his strongest parliamentary opponents precipitated the English Civil War. After the defeat of his Royalist supporters in the war, Charles was unable to find a compromise with parliamentary and army leaders, leading to his trial and execution.

§ John Pym (1584–1643) was the English leader of the parliamentary opposition to King Charles I. He was one of the five Members Charles attempted to arrest in the House of Commons in 1642.

** Oliver Cromwell (1599–1658) took a leading role in opposing Charles I during the English Civil War. He was later involved in the trial and execution of the King. Through force of arms, Cromwell dissolved Parliament in 1653, proclaiming himself “Lord Protector of the Commonwealth.” While in power, Cromwell took liberties to dissolve subsequent Parliaments. Cromwell never accepted the Crown, although it was offered to him by Parliament.



power in many institutions, including universities and municipalities. In parliament, it was no longer viewed as the Sergeant-at-Arms' emblem of office but rather as "the corporate symbol of the House."¹⁰

Historically, the Mace served as a symbol of the authority of the Crown as exercised by Parliament. While it retains this symbolism, it is now also a reminder of our democratic traditions and our history as part of the Commonwealth.¹¹ The procedures and symbolism surrounding the Mace in Canada remain similar to those in the United Kingdom.¹² The



Sergeant-at-Arms N. MacLean
(1941–1955) with Alberta's first Mace.

Sergeant-at-Arms is responsible for the safekeeping of the Mace.¹³ When a sitting of Parliament begins, the Sergeant-at-Arms carries the Mace on his right shoulder as he ushers the Speaker into the Chamber. Once the Speaker is seated, the Sergeant-at-Arms places the Mace on the table in front of the Speaker, with the crown facing the Government side of the Chamber.¹⁴ When a sitting is suspended, the Mace remains on the Table for the duration.¹⁵ The Mace is placed on a cushion on the floor beneath the Table during the election of the Speaker, and on a bracket below the Table when the House sits as the *Committee of the Whole* and the Speaker is no longer presiding.¹⁶ When the Governor General (or Lieutenant Governor) enters the Chamber, the Mace is covered, as it would be redundant to have both the Crown's representative and a symbol of the Crown in the Chamber at the same time.¹⁷

When Alberta's First Legislature opened on March 15, 1906, the province did not yet have a Legislature Building;* instead the Thistle Rink in Edmonton served as a makeshift meeting place. Equally makeshift was the Mace used to open the Session. A few weeks before the First Session of the First Legislature, it was noted that the province did not have a Mace. The discovery prompted Alexander C. Rutherford, Alberta's first Premier (1905–1910), and his Liberal Government to order that a Mace be created as quickly as possible.^{†18} The resulting Mace was designed and crafted by Rufus E. Butterworth for the firm of Watson Brothers Jewelry of Calgary.¹⁹ Working within tight time constraints, Butterworth made creative use of readily available materials. Alberta's first Mace was made entirely of scrap, including plumbing pipe, shaving mug handles, parts of an old bedstead, and wood, all covered with a coat of gold paint.²⁰ The total cost of the Mace was \$150.²¹ Intended as a temporary solution, this Mace served the province for 50 years. Through decades of service, the Mace remained largely unchanged, although the monarch's initials, located in four places on the Mace, were changed from 'E.R.' to 'G.R.' in 1910, then back to 'E.R.' in 1936 in response to the respective ascensions to the throne

* McKay Avenue School was to be the regular meeting place of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, but it was not large enough to accommodate the crowds expected for the opening of the First Session of the First Legislature.

† In 1956, this Mace was described by J. Harper Prowse, Liberal Member for Edmonton and Leader of the Opposition, as representative of 'a young country in a hurry.' "New Mace Presented to Alberta Legislature," *Edmonton Journal*, 10 February 1956, p. 24.

of George V (1910–1936) and Edward VIII.*²² To date, no documentation has been found to suggest that the initials were changed when George VI† or Elizabeth II‡ became monarchs. This Mace shared fundamental characteristics with the jewel-encrusted Maces common in the United Kingdom and other Canadian jurisdictions, but was much more rustic in appearance. Alberta's first Mace thus paid homage to its parliamentary inheritance while also acknowledging the pioneering spirit of the province.²³

In honour of the province's 50th birthday, Alberta received its second Mace. On February 9, 1956, the Civil Service Association of Alberta, represented by Anthony Earnshaw, president, Roy A. Harrison, executive secretary, Jean Cossar, vice-president and W. T. Aitken, the oldest charter member of the association, presented a new Mace to Speaker Peter Dawson (1937–1963) and the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.²⁴ The inscription reads, "The Civil Service Association of Alberta presented This Mace to the people of The Province of Alberta, to be Held in Trust by the Legislative Assembly, as an expression of Loyalty and in commemoration of Alberta's Golden Jubilee 1905–1955."



*Sergeant-at-Arms J.A. Reed
(1955–1976) in the Legislature
Library with Alberta's new Mace.*

While the appearance of the new Mace varies greatly from its predecessor, the design remains closely connected with the culture and history of Alberta.²⁵ Lawrence B. Blain of Edmonton designed the new Mace. After the design was slightly altered by Civil Service Association officials, the final drawing was sent to Joseph Fray Ltd. of Birmingham, England, to implement.²⁶ On top of the Mace is a figure of a beaver,[§] mounted on the traditional crown, representing the connection to Canada and the Crown. Both the Royal Coat of Arms and the Canadian Coat of Arms are displayed on the ball of the Mace. Sheaves of wheat, representing Alberta's prairies, and wild roses, the floral emblem of Alberta, are engraved alternately on the crown. The headband of the crown is adorned with "a ring of seven gems and semi-precious stones."²⁷ These gems are not only attractive, but also symbolic. They have been chosen, in part, because their initial letters spell out 'Alberta'—amethyst, lazurite, bloodstone, emerald, ruby, topaz and agate.²⁸ The bowl of the Mace has the above-noted inscription on one side and the Coat of Arms of Alberta on the other. Two bison heads are positioned just below the bowl as it narrows until it joins the shaft. The shaft of the Mace is decorated with wild roses and is capped with a sheaf of wheat.

* Edward VIII was the King of the United Kingdom for 325 days in 1936. He abdicated his throne in order to marry an American woman who, having been divorced twice, was not considered an appropriate consort for the King.

† George VI became King of the United Kingdom on December 11, 1936, when his brother King Edward VIII abdicated the throne. He ruled until his death on February 6, 1952.

‡ Upon her father's death on February 6, 1952, Elizabeth II became Queen of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Northern Ireland.

§ The beaver is the official symbol of Canada. It was formally adopted on March 24, 1975, when the *National Symbol of Canada Act* received Royal Assent. *National Symbol of Canada Act*, S.C. 1974-75-76, c. 35.



The current Mace is three feet long, contains 5,669 grams of silver and is overlaid with gold to weigh a total of approximately 11 kilograms.²⁹ The total cost of the Mace in 1956 was \$3,000.³⁰ When not in use, this Mace and its rustic predecessor are available for viewing on the third floor of the Legislature Building. A replica of the first Mace can also be viewed in the Legislature pedway.

Notes

- ¹ John McDonough, "The History of the Maces of the British and Canadian Parliaments," *Canadian Regional Review* vol. II, no. 2 (June 1979): p. 23.
- ² Peter Thorne, *Ceremonial and the Mace in the House of Commons*, House of Commons Library Document No. 11 (London: Her Majesty's Stationary Office, 1980), p. 42.
- ³ Peter Thorne, *The Royal Mace*, House of Commons Library Document No. 18 (London: Her Majesty's Stationary Office, 1990), p. 21.
- ⁴ Norman W. Wilding and Philip Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, 4th rev. ed. (London: Cassell, 1972), p. 456; Peter Thorne, *The Royal Mace*, House of Commons Library Document No. 18 (London: Her Majesty's Stationary Office, 1990), p. 21; Thorne, *Ceremonial and the Mace in the House of Commons*, p. 40.
- ⁵ Thorne, *Ceremonial and the Mace in the House of Commons*, p. 44; Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 456.
- ⁶ Peter Thorne, *Serjeant for the Commons*, House of Commons Library Document No. 13 (London: Her Majesty's Stationary Office, 1985), p. 3.
- ⁷ McDonough, "The History of the Maces of the British and Canadian Parliaments," p. 25; Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 452.
- ⁸ Thorne, *The Royal Mace*, p. 38.
- ⁹ McDonough, "The History of the Maces of the British and Canadian Parliaments," p. 25; Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 452.
- ¹⁰ Thorne, *The Royal Mace*, pp. 27–28, 37–38.
- ¹¹ "Trials, Tribulations and Triumphs," *Civil Service Bulletin* vol. 39, no. 3 (March 1959): p. 15; McDonough, "The History of the Maces of the British and Canadian Parliaments," p. 30; John McDonough, "The Maces of the Canadian Provincial and Territorial Legislatures," *Canadian Regional Review* vol. II, no. 4 (October 1979): p. 36.
- ¹² McDonough, "The History of the Maces of the British and Canadian Parliaments," p. 25.
- ¹³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Order 105(g); Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 688.
- ¹⁴ "Trials, Tribulations and Triumphs," p. 15; Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), p. 238.
- ¹⁵ Alistair Fraser, W. F. Dawson, and John A. Holtby, *Beauchesne's Rules & Forms of the House of Commons Canada with Annotations, Comments and Precedents*, 6th ed. (Toronto: Carswell Co., 1989), p. 77, s. 264(2).
- ¹⁶ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 238.
- ¹⁷ Brian Hodgson, Interview by LAO Staff, 26 August 2003.

¹⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *The Citizen's Guide to the Alberta Legislature*, 4th ed. (Edmonton: Alberta Legislative Assembly, 2002), p. 38; Edith Gostick, "Notes on New Mace," [Internal Document], ca. 1955, Alberta Legislature Library, Edmonton, p. 1.

¹⁹ McDonough, "The Maces of the Canadian Provincial and Territorial Legislatures," p. 46.

²⁰ Ibid.

²¹ Alberta. Treasury Dept. *Public Accounts of the Province of Alberta for the Year Ending December 31, 1907* (Edmonton: Treasury Dept., 1908), p. 20.

²² "Get Office Chair For New Speaker," *Edmonton Journal*, 6 February 1936, p. 3; "New Legislature Will Have New Speaker's Chair," *Calgary Albertan*, 5 February 1936, p. 2.

²³ McDonough, "The Maces of the Canadian Provincial and Territorial Legislatures," p. 45.

²⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 13th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. LX, 9 February 1956, p. 10; "New Mace Presented to Alberta Legislature," p. 24.

²⁵ "Trials, Tribulations and Triumphs," p. 15.

²⁶ Ibid.

²⁷ Ibid.

²⁸ Dr. Ronald Burwash, Professor Emeritus, Department of Earth and Atmospheric Sciences, Faculty of Science, University of Alberta, to Dr. W. J. David McNeil, Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, [Letter], 23 February 2005. Previously, the stones in the Mace were identified as: amethyst, Lapis Lazuli, beryl or bloodstone, emerald, ruby, topaz and aquamarine or agate. In his analysis of February 2005, geologist Dr. Ronald A. Burwash determined that the beryl and aquamarine stones are indeed bloodstone and agate, respectively. 'Lazurite' is the modern name for Lapis Lazuli.

²⁹ "Trials, Tribulations and Triumphs," p. 15.

³⁰ Civil Service Association of Alberta, "Thirty-Sixth Annual Convention," *Civil Service Bulletin* vol 36, no. 11 (December 1956): p. 65.





The Chair

THE CHAIR

The Speaker's Chair has been a familiar sight and symbol in parliamentary tradition in the United Kingdom for several centuries. In the mid-1500s, under the direction of King Edward VI (1547–1553), the meeting place of England's Parliament moved from the Chapter House at Westminster Abbey to St. Stephen's Chapel in the Palace of Westminster. While many renovations to St. Stephen's were required for this new use, the previous altar location proved to be an excellent location for the Speaker's Chair.¹ The Chairs of St. Stephen's have been described as carved in oak, a symbol of England, and as having "an imposing appearance," fulfilling the "need for a seat with sufficient gravitas," thereby establishing the authority of the Speaker.²

Throughout the 18th century, the style of the British Speaker's Chair remained fairly consistent. During this period, the Chair had the appearance of a large armchair, raised from the ground, and upholstered in green leather or velvet. Over the Chair was a canopy of carved wood bearing the Royal Coat of Arms, indicating that the Speaker's authority was derived from the Crown.³ Although impressive, the Speaker's Chair in the House of Commons was never as elaborate as the Royal Throne or the Speaker's Chair in the House of Lords. At one time, this lesser degree of ornamentation indicated that the House of Commons was not as politically significant as the Crown. However, as power shifted from the Sovereign to Parliament, the simpler style of the Chair came to represent the practical work of governing in the House.⁴ During the use of St. Stephen's as the parliamentary meeting place, the tradition of the Speaker's taking the Chair with him upon retirement emerged. This custom fell into disuse after St. Stephen's was gutted by fire in 1834, and Parliament was forced to find an alternate meeting place.⁵ The oak Chair, designed by Augustus W. N. Pugin* and completed in 1849 to occupy the new Chamber, had the basic elements of previous Chairs, but was stylistically based on a medieval bishop's chair.⁶ This Chair was destroyed in the bombing of Westminster Palace in 1941. A Chair, presented by Australia and made of black bean wood from North Queensland with the inscription "The Gift of Australia," replaced it.⁷

Until 1921, the Speaker's Chair in the Canadian House of Commons was presented to each retiring Speaker. In that year, the British branch of the Empire Parliamentary Association (known today as the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association) presented the House of Commons with a replica of the Chair that Pugin had designed at Westminster.⁸ On the left arm of the Chair are four Latin inscriptions that translate as follows: "Neither by entreaty nor gifts"; "Liberty lies in the laws"; "Envy is the enemy of honour"; and "Praise be to God." On the right arm are three more: "Mindful and faithful"; "The hand that deals justly is a sweet-smelling ointment"; and "A mind conscious of the right."⁹ The Royal Coat of Arms above the Chair was carved from an oak roof beam, originating in Westminster in 1397.¹⁰ This modern Speaker's Chair now boasts a

* Pugin assisted architect Charles Barry in completing his design of the new Houses of Parliament.

† Canada provided the Table of the House that sits at the centre of the Chamber.



hydraulic lift,* a panel to control Members' microphones and a computer monitor at the foot of the Chair, from which the Speaker can receive messages from the Table Officers.¹¹



The Chair of the first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, H.C. Wilson (1888–1890).

During its history, the Speaker's Chair in Alberta has not maintained a particular style in appearance; however, what is known indicates that the Chairs have shared, and continue to share, common traits with their British predecessors. Prior to becoming a province in 1905, Alberta was part of the North-West Territories. By 1888, the Government of the Territories operated according to the parliamentary model, and included a Speaker. The Speakers' Chairs in Alberta and the North-West Territories were given to retiring Speakers up until 1935.

The Chair used by the first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories in 1888, at over two metres tall, had a throne-like appearance¹² with elaborately hand-carved mahogany and the Coat of Arms of the North-West Territories, all of which was surmounted by a replica of the state crown of Queen Victoria and a large Maltese cross. At the end of his service as Speaker, Herbert C.

Wilson (1888–1890) was granted the Chair.¹³ The Chair was a fixture in the Wilson home for many years. Wilson's daughter Violet remembered the comfortable Chair fondly, despite times as a child when she was banished to the Chair as punishment for bad behaviour.¹⁴ In January 1945, the Chair was returned to the Legislature, when Wilson's widow presented it to the Province of Alberta.¹⁵ In 1958, this Chair was recalled from retirement when Speaker Peter Dawson (1937–1963) sat for the painting of his official portrait. A small room in the Legislature Building was set up as a studio, and there Dawson posed next to the Chair that he used throughout his tenure. The North-West Territories Chair was temporarily used by Dawson in the Chamber while the portrait was being completed.¹⁶ When Wilson's Chair was transferred to the collections of the Provincial Museum of Alberta in 1973, it was in good condition, needing little more than a cleaning and re-gluing of a few broken parts.¹⁷ Although it remained part of the Museum's collection, the Chair was lent to Government House, in Edmonton, for display purposes and to be used during special events such as the Lieutenant Governor's annual New Year's Levee.¹⁸ Unfortunately, in the early 1980s, the Chair's upholstery sustained significant damage and was sent out for repairs without the Museum's knowledge. As a result of these repairs, the original upholstery was lost, and the Chair refinished in a manner that "focused on esthetics instead of historical preservation."¹⁹

The Chair used by Speaker William Eakin in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories from 1899 to 1902 can be found at the Saltcoats Museum in Saltcoats, Saskatchewan.

* The lift was installed for Speaker Jeanne-Mathilde Sauvé (1980–1984) "so she could raise herself to a more stately height." Hans Y. Tammemagi, *Exploring the Hill: A Guide to Canada's Parliament Past and Present* (Markham, ON: Fitzhenry and Whiteside, 2002), p. 95. Sauvé was the first woman elected Speaker of the House of Commons and the first woman to serve as Governor General (1984–1990).

† Photographs of the Chair over the years also show a significant change in the colour of the upholstery after repairs.

This Chair was presented to the Saltcoats Legion by Thomas MacNutt, a former Member of the Territorial Legislative Assembly who went on to become the first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Saskatchewan (1906–1908). When the Saltcoats Legion dissolved, it donated the Chair, along with several other items, to the museum.²⁰

In 1906, Members of Alberta's first Legislative Assembly elected Charles W. Fisher (1906–1919) to preside as Speaker. The Chair used by Fisher before the Legislature Building opened in 1912 resembled an elaborate swivel-based office chair with a high back.²¹ A tag under the fabric on the base of the Chair indicates that it was a product of the Milwaukee Chair Company.²² This Chair was made of quarter-sawn white oak.²³ There is some question as to how many Chairs were used by Fisher, and when these Chairs were in use. Some sources suggest that a new Speaker's Chair was in place for the opening of the Legislature Building in 1912,²⁴ but the 1913 *Journals of the Legislative Assembly* note the *House Committee's* recommendation that a suitable chair for the Speaker be found.²⁵ A photograph at the Provincial Archives of Alberta dated 1913 shows Fisher seated in a chair that appears to be the 'office' chair described above.²⁶ What is clear is that Fisher occupied the Speaker's Chair in Alberta until his death in 1919. Although the custom of granting the Chair to a retiring Speaker had become increasingly uncommon in other jurisdictions, Alberta's first Speaker's Chair, the 'elaborate office chair,' was presented to Fisher's widow, Marjorie, shortly after Fisher's death.²⁷ The Chair was on display in a school in Cochrane, Alberta, until 1966, when Mrs. Fisher agreed to donate it to the Provincial Museum and Archives of Alberta.²⁸ Unfortunately, the Chair used by Fisher had sustained significant damage by the time it entered the Museum's collections. Restoration work on the Chair included the gluing of broken woodwork, the mending of upholstery and replacement of missing casters as well as a thorough cleaning and re-varnishing.²⁹ Concerned with the long-term preservation of the Chair, the Provincial Museum of Alberta was hesitant to allow the original Chair to be displayed on a long-term basis, as requested in 1987 by the Public Schools Archives and Museum, Edmonton.³⁰ Instead, the Provincial Museum and the Department of Culture and Multiculturalism worked together to have a quality reproduction of Fisher's Chair built for permanent display in the Public Schools Museum. In 1988, the replica Chair was built by Cote's Woodcrafts Ltd. of St. Albert, Alberta, at a cost of \$4,620, using materials provided by the Department of Public Works, Supply and Services and the carpenter's shop at the Provincial Museum.³¹ The upholstering work for the replica Chair, including its hand-tied coil springs and hand-made leather nails, was completed by Grundau's Furniture Ltd. of Edmonton, for \$1,100.³² Representatives of the Public Schools Museum were very impressed with the quality and craftsmanship of the replica Chair.³³ The replica continues to be used by the Public Schools Museum as part of the recreation of Alberta's First Legislature, a learning project that is laid out on the third floor of the McKay Avenue School. In 1993, Bryce Ohneck was commissioned by the Department of Community Development to make a second replica of the Chair, primarily hand carved, for the opening of the Legislative Assembly Interpretive Centre.³⁴

* To date, no official record of this transaction has been located.

† An engraving on the bottom of the Chair reads, "Duplicated in Memory of Bruce Ohneck, My Father. Bryce Ohneck Stony Plain, AB 1993."



After Fisher's death, Charles S. Pingle (1920–1921) was elected Speaker. A newspaper report from 1922 suggests that after serving his term as Speaker, Pingle claimed the Speaker's Chair based on 'constitutional custom'.³⁵ In a letter written by O. S. Longman* to Hugh A. Dempsey of the Glenbow Archives, Longman recounts a conversation that he had with Perren E. Baker, former Member for Medicine Hat-Cypress (1921–1935) and Minister of Education (1934–1935) in the United Farmers of Alberta (UFA) Government. Baker claimed that "when the U.F.A. came to power they discovered that there was planned a presentation of the Speaker's Chair to the Speaker of the previous government [Pingle] but the presentation had not been consummated."³⁶ No official records confirming either of these reports have been found.

The last Speaker in Alberta's history to have been granted the Chair was George N. Johnston (1927–1935). Upon retiring from the position of Speaker, Johnston was given the Chair by the Members of the Legislative Assembly as a token of esteem. The motion to grant Johnston the Chair was made in the Assembly by Member for Calgary Norman Hindsley, and was met with popular support throughout the Chamber.³⁷ A few years later, Johnston's Chair returned to temporary service in the Chamber, when a second 'throne' was required for the 1939 royal visit of King George VI and Queen Elizabeth.³⁸ This Chair, with its ornamental depictions of the provincial flower and Coat of Arms, is now a part of the collections at the Glenbow Museum in Calgary, having been donated by Johnston in 1967.³⁹

A new Speaker's Chair was needed when N. Eldon Tanner (1936–1937) took on the responsibilities of the position in 1936.⁴⁰ Unfortunately, the new Chair did not arrive in time for the opening of Tanner's first Session as Speaker, and for several days he had to preside over the Legislative Assembly from a regular office chair.⁴¹ Although it has seen some alterations over the years, the Chair that was built for Tanner continues to be used by the current Speaker, the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–).⁴² The long-standing usage of this Chair in the Assembly was almost cut short in 1963, following the death of Speaker Peter Dawson (1937–1963). After being selected to follow Dawson as Speaker, Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972) felt that it was appropriate to offer the Chair to Dawson's widow, Hildegard. Mrs. Dawson declined the offer, indicating that the Chair would not fit in her house. Instead, she was presented with the silver tea service—engraved with the Alberta Crest and the words, 'Mr. Speaker'—that was in use during the Dawsons' residence in the Speaker's Suite.⁴³

In 1987, two retired Speakers of Alberta's Legislative Assembly, Arthur J. Dixon and Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986), were presented with symbolic, or honorary, Speaker's Chairs. The two Chairs were carved by Grant Kelly to commemorate the 75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building. These Chairs were similar, but each former Speaker's Chair had the Coat of Arms that was in use during that Speaker's term in office. On September 3, 1987, Speaker David J. Carter (1986–1993) presented these Chairs to his two predecessors.⁴⁴

The current Speaker's Chair, in service since 1936, sits at the south end of the Legislature Chamber. Members of the Government Caucus are seated to the right of the Speaker and Members of the Opposition, to the left. As Alberta has a history of electing large majority governments,⁴⁵ there is often a spill over of members of the governing caucus to the left of the

* Longman was an employee of the Department of Agriculture.



Speaker. A dais elevates the Chair several steps above the floor of the Chamber. Due to the width of the dais, Legislative Assembly Pages were required to ascend it and walk behind the Chair when delivering messages and performing other duties. As this practice was distracting for Speakers during a sitting, Carter made arrangements, during the Chamber renovations carried out in the mid-1980s, to include a reduction in the depth and width of the dais. This alteration allowed room for a walkway behind the Chair, giving Pages the opportunity to cross the floor of the House without distracting its presiding officer.⁴⁶



Unveiling of the canopy of the Speaker's Chair (September 1, 1980). Speaker G.J. Amerongen and Premier E.P. Lougheed to the Chair's right and left, respectively.

The current Chair has a high back and four sturdy legs. A forest-green fabric covers the seat, arms and back of the Chair, accenting its mahogany veneer. The Alberta Coat of Arms at the top and borders of wild roses along each side of the frame give the Chair a symbolic touch.⁴⁷ Contained within the Chair is a telephone that has a dedicated line to reach the Table Officers and other officers of the Legislative Assembly, as required. While seated in the Chair, the Speaker has easy access to a laptop computer. The Speaker also has access to an audio override button, used to turn off any open microphones at Members' desks in the Chamber.⁴⁸

The large canopy that now frames the Speaker's Chair was installed in the Chamber in 1980. A gift from the City of Edmonton to commemorate the province's 75th birthday, the canopy was designed by Paul Van Imshoort of Stony Plain and built by Titas Uogintas of Edmonton. Valued at approximately \$35,000 at the time, the canopy is made of solid mahogany and includes carvings of Canada's Coat of Arms as well as the floral emblems of Alberta and the City of Edmonton, wild roses and marigolds, respectively. Delicately fluted columns support the small arch of the canopy.⁴⁹ During renovations to the Chamber in 1987, Speaker David J. Carter had the Canadian Coat of Arms on the peak of the canopy moved to the Confederation Room, located adjacent to the Chamber.⁵⁰ Carter replaced it with Alberta's Coat of Arms, carved in 1990 by Chan Chun, which he felt was more appropriate in the Provincial Legislature.⁵¹

* The Clerk has the same capability at the Table in the Chamber.

Notes

¹ Donald William Wade, *Behind the Speaker's Chair* (Leeds: Austicks Publications, 1978), p. 1.

² Christine Riding, "The Aura of Sacred Mystery: Thrones in the New Palace of Westminster," in *The Houses of Parliament: History, Art, Architecture*, ed. Iain Ross (London: Merrell, 2000), p. 192.

³ Ibid.

⁴ Christine Riding, "Pomp and Circumstance. The Speaker's Chair: A Symbol of Shifting Power," *BBC History Trail: Church and State*, [Internet], (Glasgow: British Broadcasting Corporation, April 2002), accessed 4 May 2004, available from http://www.bbc.co.uk/history/lj/churchlj/pomp_04.shtml

⁵ Wade, *Behind the Speaker's Chair*, p. 2.

⁶ Riding, "Thrones in the New Palace," p. 193.

⁷ Patrick Cormack, *Westminster: Palace and Parliament* (London: Frederick Warne, 1981), p. 129.

⁸ Heather Robertson, *On The Hill: A People's Guide to Canada's Parliament* (Toronto: McLelland and Stewart, 1992), p. 122; Hans Y. Tammemagi, *Exploring the Hill: A Guide to Canada's Parliament Past and Present* (Markham, ON: Fitzhenry and Whiteside, 2002), pp. 55–56.

⁹ Tammemagi, *Exploring the Hill*, pp. 95–96.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*, p. 56.

¹¹ *Ibid.*, pp. 95–96; Personal communication with Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Office of the Speaker, Ottawa, 25 May 2004.

¹² Frances Roback, "Notes on Speaker's Chairs from the Legislative Assembly of Alberta," *National History of Man: Material History Bulletin*, vol. 11 (Fall 1980), p. 142.

¹³ "N.W.T. Speaker's Chair Presented to Province," *Edmonton Journal*, 22 January 1945, p. 12.

¹⁴ Violet Henrietta Wilson, *Canada Made Us: The Story of a Family, 1776–1969*, c. 1969, [Unpublished Manuscript], Archives of British Columbia, Victoria, BC, MS - 0487, pp. 37–38.

¹⁵ "N.W.T. Speaker's Chair Presented to Province," p. 12.

¹⁶ "Two Social Crediters Sit for Portraits," *Edmonton Journal*, 26 March 1958, p. 50.

¹⁷ E-mail from Jane Ross, Head Curator, Human History, Provincial Museum of Alberta, Edmonton, 4 December 2003; R. Davidson, [North West Territories Speakers of the Assembly's Chair], 23 February 1973, [Accession Report], Provincial Museum and Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, H73.11.

¹⁸ E-mail from Ross, 4 December 2003; Greg Stevens, Alberta Minister of Culture and Multiculturalism, to David John Carter, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 6 November 1987, [Internal Document].

¹⁹ Stevens to Carter, 6 November 1987, [Memorandum]; E-mail from Ross, 4 December 2003; Personal communication with Maurice Doll, Curator Emeritus, Provincial Museum of Alberta, Edmonton, 16 December 2003.

²⁰ Calvin Daniels, "Former Church Becomes Town Museum," *Yorkton This Week & Enterprise*, 14 August 2002, p. A10; *Saltcoats Roots and Branches, Thunder and Sunshine*, (Saltcoats, SK: Saltcoats and District Historical Society, 1982), p. 380.

²¹ Roback, "Notes on Speaker's Chairs from the Legislative Assembly of Alberta," p. 142.

²² Speaker's Chair—N.W.T. 1888, [Transcript of Tag on Chair Base Under Fabric], Provincial Museum and Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, H66.395.1.

²³ Personal communication with Bryce Ohneck, 9 September 2004.

²⁴ Roback, "Notes on Speaker's Chairs from the Legislative Assembly of Alberta," p. 142.

²⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 2nd Legislature, 4th Session*, vol. VIII, 18 September 1913, p. 15.

²⁶ [Photograph of Second Parliament in Session], 1913, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, B6668.



²⁷ D. Blake McDougall, Legislature Librarian, "Speakers' Chairs of the Alberta Legislative Assembly," [Internal Document], 3 July 1979, Alberta Legislature Library, Edmonton, p. 1.

²⁸ [First Chair for Mr. Speaker, 1st Session of Alberta Legislative Assembly], 14 December 1966, [Collections Report], Provincial Museum and Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, 200/9-64; Helen M. Fisher, [Donation of First Chair for Mr. Speaker, 1st Session of Alberta Legislative Assembly], 21 December 1966, [Certificate of Gift], Provincial Museum and Archives of Alberta, Edmonton.

²⁹ E-mail from Cathy Roy, Provincial Museum of Alberta, Edmonton, 12 January 2004; Speaker's Chair—N.W.T. 1888, 3 April 1980, [Restoration Report—Human History Division (Report Following Restoration)], Provincial Museum and Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, H66.395.1. Note: in this record, the item is mistakenly identified as "Speaker's Chair—N.W.T. 1888." However, the file number and correspondence with Cathy Roy of the Provincial Museum of Alberta confirm that the Chair in question was actually the first Chair for Mr. Speaker, First Session of Alberta Legislative Assembly. E-mail from Ross, 4 December 2003.

³⁰ Stevens to Carter, 6 November 1987, [Memorandum].

³¹ Alberta. Dept. of Culture, Memorandum of Agreement #1, [Contract between the Province of Alberta, Minister of Culture and Multiculturalism and Cote's Woodcrafts Ltd., to produce a replica of the Speaker's Chair], 1 February 1988.

³² Memorandum of Agreement #1, [Contract between the Province of Alberta, Minister of Culture and Multiculturalism and Grundau's Furniture Ltd., to provide upholstery for the Speaker's Chair replica], 12 February 1988.

³³ Joan Cowling, Trustee and Chairman, McKay Avenue School Sub-committee, to Greg Stevens, Alberta Minister of Culture & Multiculturalism, 12 May 1988, [Letter].

³⁴ Personal communication with Ohneck, 9 September 2004.

³⁵ "Speaker's Chair in Legislature Goes to Pingle," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 6 February 1922, p. 12.

³⁶ O. S. Longman to H. A. Dempsey [Re: U.F.A. Speaker's Chair], 16 November 1964, [Letter], Glenbow Museum, Calgary, C-11776, PI-15843.

³⁷ "Speaker's Chair Goes to Johnston," *Coronation Review*, 2 May 1935, [p. 8]; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 7th Legislature, 5th Session*, vol. XXXII, 23 April 1935, p. 314.

³⁸ Roback, "Notes on Speaker's Chairs from the Legislative Assembly of Alberta," p. 140; "Decorating of the Legislature is Speeded Up," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 26 May 1939, p. 5; "Arrange 2 Thrones for House June 2," *Edmonton Journal*, 22 May 1939, p. 18; "Preparations For Royalty At Buildings," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 22 May 1939, pp. 11, 13.

³⁹ Roback, "Notes on Speaker's Chairs from the Legislative Assembly of Alberta," p. 140.

⁴⁰ *Ibid.*, p. 143.

⁴¹ "Get Office Chair for New Speaker," *Edmonton Journal*, 6 February 1936, p. 3.

⁴² D. Blake McDougall, Legislature Librarian, to Gerard Amerongen, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 3 July 1979, [Internal Memorandum], Alberta Legislature Library; McDougall, "Speakers' Chairs of the Alberta Legislative Assembly," p. 3.

⁴³ E-mail from David G. Dawson, 29 April 2003; E-mail from Earland M. Dawson, 30 April 2003.

⁴⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building, Thursday September 3, 1987* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1987), p. 1.



⁴⁵ Rand Dyck, *Provincial Politics in Canada: Towards the Turn of the Century*, 3rd ed. (Scarborough, ON: Prentice-Hall Canada, 1996), p. 524.

⁴⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, [Major Renovation of the Legislative Assembly Chamber Including Report by Woolfenden Hamilton Brown Architectural Group], 19 September 1986, [News Release].

⁴⁷ Frank Joseph Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration* (Edmonton: Plains Publishing Inc., 1987), p. 43.

⁴⁸ E-mail from Liz Sim, Alberta Hansard, Edmonton, 6 December 2004.

⁴⁹ "Canopy to Shield Speaker," *Edmonton Journal*, 2 September 1980, p. A18.

⁵⁰ Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 37; David John Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.

⁵¹ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.



Election of the Speaker

ELECTION OF THE SPEAKER

Little is known about the method of selecting the Speaker in England until the 16th century. During this period, the House of Commons appeared to choose its Speaker, but, in reality, the monarch made the appointment, and the post was considered an ally of the Sovereign. Nonetheless, some effort was made to appoint a Speaker who would be acceptable to the House. On occasion, when a Speaker proved to be unpopular within the Commons, he was removed and replaced by a more suitable candidate.¹

The method of selecting the Speaker evolved over time. During the Tudor and Stuart periods in the 16th and 17th centuries, Speakers were primarily subservient to the Crown and often held Royal appointments. However, power struggles between the Sovereign and Parliament during this era continued to affect the Speaker's position.² The first contested election for the Speaker's position recorded in English parliamentary history occurred in 1566.³ Although victorious, the 'official'* candidate for Speaker won by a small majority of votes.⁴ Shortly thereafter, in 1604, several candidates for Speaker were mentioned in the House, but no formal contest among the nominees occurred. Instead, the official candidate was again supported.⁵ In this instance, the Clerk took the Chair to oversee the election of the Speaker, a tradition that continues today in many parliaments, including that of Alberta.⁶ The 17th century saw increasing pressure on the Speaker to act as servant of the House, rather than of the monarch. In 1653, when Oliver Cromwell dismissed the Long Parliament,[†] Speaker William Lenthall was forcibly removed from the Chair.⁷ Later that year, once Parliament had been restored, a Speaker (Francis Rous) was appointed with little ceremony and re-elected on a monthly basis for the duration of that Parliament.⁸ On the recommendation of Cromwell, Lenthall returned to the Chair in 1654.⁹ After the Restoration of the monarchy in 1660, the Speaker's allegiance lay with the Sovereign once again, and the Sovereign nominated candidates for the role. No further contested elections occurred until 1678.¹⁰

At the end of the 17th century, the English parliamentary system saw the rise of political parties, which greatly affected the Speaker's selection process. As each caucus sought to have one of its members take the Chair, contested elections for Speaker became the norm. Five contested elections for the position were held from 1695 to 1705.¹¹ It was during this time that the procedure for electing a Speaker was formalized. The Speaker's Chair remained empty while the Clerk of the House oversaw the election process. A Member would propose a candidate for Speaker and if the motion were seconded and no alternative candidates were proposed, the nominated Member would be called to the Chair. When more than one Member was proposed, the Clerk would oversee a debate on the issue. Once the debate closed, the Clerk put the question to the House and, once the selection was made, the newly elected Speaker would submit to the will of the House and be escorted to the Speaker's Chair.¹²

* Meaning the candidate nominated by the Sovereign.

† The Long Parliament was the last one to be summoned by Charles I. This turbulent Parliament spanned 20 years, from 1640 to 1660, during which time the party system began to develop.



Although by 1700 established procedures existed for the contested election of the Speaker, questions regarding the 'system of election' of Speakers continued to arise.¹³ Of particular concern was the power of the Government to determine the successful candidate for the Speaker's position, and the lack of consultation with the Opposition and with Private Members in this decision-making process. Both concerns would lead to a variety of reforms in the way in which Speakers are elected in the modern parliamentary system in the United Kingdom, which in turn is reflected in the methods of electing Speakers in other Commonwealth jurisdictions.¹⁴

Canada's Parliament is modelled on the parliamentary system of the United Kingdom as it existed at the time of Confederation in 1867, a system that included an established method of electing a Speaker in the House of Commons.¹⁵ The question of when to elect the Speaker is outlined in the Canadian Constitution, but details of the process were not codified until amendments were made to the *Standing Orders* of the House of Commons in 1985.¹⁶ As in the United Kingdom, the Speaker of Canada's House of Commons is elected at the beginning of every new Parliament, or when the previous Speaker resigns or dies.¹⁷ The manner of electing a Speaker remained virtually unchanged in Canada for over a century. A Member of the House was nominated by the Prime Minister, seconded by another Minister, and then elected (usually without opposition) by a 'voice vote'¹⁸ of the Members of the House. This procedure changed slightly in 1953, when the Leader of the Opposition, instead of a Cabinet Minister, was invited to second the Speaker's nomination.¹⁹ In 1985, a new procedure was adopted that resulted in the use of a secret ballot for the election of the Speaker.²⁰ The secret ballot was employed for the first time on September 30, 1986, when John A. Fraser (1986–1994) was elected to replace resigning Speaker John W. Bosley (1984–1986).²¹ Under this new system, all Members of the House, with the exception of Ministers of the Crown and party leaders, are listed on the ballot as candidates for position of Speaker. Members who do not wish to be considered for the Chair must notify the Clerk of this intention in writing.²²

From 1867 to 1985, the Clerk of the House of Commons conducted the election of a Speaker.²³ Since 1985, it has not been the Clerk but the Member of the House who has the longest period of unbroken service and who is not a Cabinet Minister who conducts the election. The exception is that if the election were the result of the current Speaker's resignation, then the sitting Speaker would oversee the election of his or her successor, as was the case in 1986.²⁴ Before the election proceeds, candidates for Speaker are given the opportunity to address the House for up to five minutes.²⁵ After the time for speeches elapses, Members cast their votes for Speaker by printing the first and last name of their choice on the ballot.²⁶ Voting continues until a Member gains the support of the majority of the House. After each vote, the names of Members who received the lowest number of votes, and of those who received less than five per cent of the vote, are removed from the list of candidates.²⁷

In parliamentary democracies throughout the Commonwealth, including Canada, the United Kingdom and Australia, there has been a trend toward the use of a secret ballot for the election of the Speaker of the House. Among the reasons for this change is the desire to make the Speaker's position as non-partisan as possible. The Speaker is not the servant of the Government nor of the Opposition, but represents the authority of the entire House. The position is better able to represent and reflect the confidence of the House if all Members play a role in the election process. The secret ballot allows all Members to be more 'actively involved' both by



nominating and voting for candidates,²⁸ and the Speaker's appearance of impartiality is less "tarnished by a government's influence in the selection process."²⁹ There is no requirement for the Speaker to be a member of the governing caucus; however, in Alberta and other jurisdictions, this is usually the case.³⁰ Despite the change in election procedures, women and minorities have not fared any better under the secret ballot system than they had done under the previous system of ministerial nomination.³¹

Objections have been raised regarding the use of secret ballots in the election of a Speaker, despite the potential of this system. The concern raised most frequently is that the use of secret ballots departs from the principle that Members should be accountable to their constituents for any votes cast in the House.³² The Procedure Committee of the House of Commons of the United Kingdom rejected this argument in 2001, stating:

We note that over many years the House has regarded the election of its Speaker as an occasion quite apart from the usual run of parliamentary events, requiring special and unusual procedures. We do not believe there is any danger of setting a precedent which would be carried over into other areas of parliamentary activity.³³

As is frequently the case in other Canadian provinces, the procedure for electing the Speaker in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta has closely followed the procedures of the House of Commons.³⁴ This practice was handed down from the Canadian House of Commons to the North-West Territories through 'statutory stipulation.'³⁵ In 1905, part of the North-West Territories became the Province of Alberta, and the method of electing a Speaker in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta followed the precedent set in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, remaining constant for decades. As in the federal Parliament, Speakers were at first nominated through a motion by the Premier, which was seconded by a Government Minister. The procedure changed in 1945, when Private Members of the government and opposition caucuses began to take part in the nomination process.

Alberta was one of the first provinces to follow the federal House of Commons in instituting the secret ballot to elect the Speaker.³⁶ On May 26, 1992, the *Select Special Committee on Parliamentary Reform* was established "to consider the current functioning status of the Assembly and review ways of making it more responsive to the needs and values of the citizens of Alberta and elected Members within the context of our parliamentary system and traditions."³⁷

Reviewing the process of electing the Speaker was one of many items on the Committee's agenda. Transcripts of meetings of the Committee suggest that consensus was building towards emulating the procedures of the House of Commons in enabling the longest-serving Member to chair the process and in designating all Members to be eligible for candidacy as Speaker. However, no Committee report was published, and no amendments to the *Standing Orders* were made prior to the dissolution of the Legislature.³⁸ On January 26, 1993, before the procedures for the election of the Speaker were amended, the secret ballot system was used to elect the Deputy Chair of Committees, who presides over the Legislative Assembly when the Speaker and Deputy Speaker are unavailable. The Clerk oversaw the election process, and four candidates

* The federal House of Commons first elected a Speaker by secret ballot in 1986. Ontario did likewise in 1990, Saskatchewan and the Northwest Territories in 1991, and Alberta in 1993.



were nominated.³⁹ This precedent was used as a model on August 30, 1993, when Stanley S. Schumacher (1993–1997) became the first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta to be elected by a secret-ballot vote.⁴⁰ Alberta allows several votes to be held if necessary, eliminating those candidates with the lowest number of votes received, until one Member wins a majority of the vote.⁴¹ However, Alberta has also developed procedures that are markedly different from those of its federal counterpart. In Alberta, the Clerk, rather than the Private Member with the longest period of unbroken service in the House, oversees the election of the Speaker.⁴² In contrast to procedure in the House of Commons, the Legislative Assembly of Alberta proceeds to the voting process with no time allotted for nominees to address the House.⁴³

In 1993, Members of the Legislative Assembly initially objected to the process, not because of the secret ballot, but because of the nomination and election procedure. At the first election by secret ballot, Opposition Members attempted to raise two points of order. Firstly, it was argued that a senior Member of the Assembly, rather than the Clerk, should oversee the election process. The second contention was that the nomination procedure was not sufficiently inclusive because, contrary to practice in the Canadian House of Commons, Alberta's process did not automatically nominate all eligible Members. The Opposition referred to *Beauchesne's* and suggested that the federal procedure was "much more open and much less subject to the possibility of bias."⁴⁴ By requiring Members to be specifically nominated for candidacy, it was felt that, once elected, a Speaker might show favouritism towards those responsible for his or her nomination. This objection put the Clerk in a rather unusual position because, while he was overseeing the election, he was not in a position to preside. Future Speaker Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–), then Deputy Premier and House Leader, reasoned, "[H]istorical precedence of this Assembly ... overweighs any citation that might come out of *Beauchesne* or any other document that would deal with any other parliament."⁴⁵ Kowalski also noted that Alberta's election procedure had not changed since 1905, and that precedent had been set for the procedure of election by secret ballot at the election of the Deputy Chair of Committees, held on January 26, 1993. He further emphasized that "unless there is an election of a Speaker, this House is not in a position to advance any business."⁴⁶ After some deliberation, the election proceeded as planned. On February 14, 1995, the precedent set with this election was codified when the Assembly amended the *Standing Orders* to include a schedule outlining the procedure for electing the Speaker by secret ballot.⁴⁷

Although the procedure for electing a Speaker has evolved significantly, there are many traditions that continue to be practised in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, and in federal and other provincial jurisdictions. One such practice relates to the manner in which a newly elected Speaker is escorted to the Chair. Despite the dignity of the Speaker's Chair and the tradition of authority it represents, the Chair would seem to be far from the most popular seat in the Assembly. In fact, throughout history and into modern times it has not been uncommon to see a newly elected Speaker being, quite literally, dragged to the Chair. The practice of dragging the Speaker to the Chair is a symbolic act, a reflection of the 'dangers'* that once went with the

* While it is true many Speakers in England met with violent deaths during the 15th and 16th centuries, it was not due to their activities as Speaker. For example, four Speakers died during the War of the Roses. The myth of the danger of being a Speaker has grown from these occurrences. For more information, see Laundy, *The Office of Speaker*, p. 218.

position of Speaker.⁴⁸ Although the modern Speaker has no need to fear reprisal from the Crown, the tradition continues. Sometimes dragged, sometimes actually carried,⁴⁹ the elected Speaker is always escorted 'with apparent reluctance'* to the Chair by Members of the Legislative Assembly, most often the Premier and Leader of the Opposition. This practice can serve to lighten the mood of the Assembly during the formal ceremonies surrounding the opening of a new Legislature.⁵⁰



Premier E.C. Manning and A.J. Hooke assist in robing Speaker A.J. Dixon (March 26, 1963).

In addition to being 'dragged' to the Chair, newly elected Speakers in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta follow the tradition of the Speaker's address or petition.⁵¹ At the beginning of each new Legislature, the Speaker, on behalf of the Members of the Legislative Assembly, makes the following petition to the Crown, as represented by the Lieutenant Governor:

May it please Your Honour, the Legislative Assembly have elected me as their Speaker, though I am but little able to fulfill the important duties thus assigned to me. If in the performance of those duties I should at any time fall into error, I pray that the fault may be imputed to me and not the Assembly, whose servant I am and who through me, the better to enable them to discharge their duties to their Queen and province, hereby claim all their undoubted rights and privileges, especially that they may have freedom of speech in their debates, access to your person at all seasonable times, and that their proceedings may receive from you the most favourable construction.⁵²

The portion of this address that describes the Speaker as a servant of the House is reminiscent of the remarks made by Speaker William Lenthall in 1642.⁵³ The custom of claiming privilege dates back even further, to the 16th century.⁵⁴ Aside from adjustments made for specific jurisdictional terminology, the address used in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta is identical to that given by Speakers at the beginning of a new Parliament in the Houses of Commons of both Canada⁵⁵ and the United Kingdom.⁵⁶ Although the language of the address suggests that the Speaker is making a 'concession to the Crown' and requesting that the Assembly enjoy the customary parliamentary privileges, in reality, these privileges exist regardless of the petition and are not part of the Crown's prerogative.⁵⁷ In addition, the Canadian House of Commons has determined that if a Speaker is elected at a point other than the beginning of a Parliament, it is not necessary for the address to be repeated. The petition does not need to be renewed because parliamentary privilege would have been claimed at outset of the Parliament and would continue to be in effect for the existence of that Parliament.⁵⁸

* Terminology used in *Alberta Hansard*.

Notes

- ¹ Joseph Redlich, *The Procedure of the House of Commons: A Study of Its History and Present Form*, trans. A. Ernest Steinthal, vol. II (London: Constable & Co., 1908; reprint, New York: AMS Press, 1969), pp. 156–157; United Kingdom. Parliament. House of Commons. Procedure Committee, *Election of a Speaker: Second Report, Together with the Proceedings of the Committee Relating to the Report, Minutes of Evidence and Appendices, Session 2000–01* (London: Stationary Office, 2001), p. vi.
- ² Redlich, *Procedure of the House of Commons*, pp. 156–160.
- ³ United Kingdom. Parliament. House of Commons. Procedure Committee, *Election of a Speaker: Second Report*, p. vi.
- ⁴ Ibid.
- ⁵ Ibid., p. vii.
- ⁶ Ibid.
- ⁷ Philip Laundy, *The Office of Speaker* (London: Cassell, 1964), p. 218.
- ⁸ Ibid., p. 219.
- ⁹ Ibid., p. 220.
- ¹⁰ United Kingdom. Parliament. House of Commons. Procedure Committee, *Election of a Speaker: Second Report*, p. vii.
- ¹¹ Ibid.
- ¹² Ibid., pp. vii–viii.
- ¹³ Ibid., p. vii.
- ¹⁴ Ibid., pp. vii–ix.
- ¹⁵ Gary Levy, *Speakers of the Canadian House of Commons* (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, 1996), p. 1.
- ¹⁶ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Annotated Standing Orders of the House of Commons* (Ottawa: House of Commons, 1989), p. 11.
- ¹⁷ United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Speaker*, rev. ed., FactSheet M2, Members Series (London: House of Commons Information Office, 2003), p. 5; Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), p. 279.
- ¹⁸ Michael S. Whittington and Richard J. Van Loon, *Canadian Government and Politics: Institutions and Processes*, McGraw-Hill Ryerson Series in Canadian Politics (Toronto: McGraw-Hill Ryerson, 1996), p. 510; Gary Levy, “The Evolving Speakership,” *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 21, no. 2 (Summer 1998): p. 7; Alistair Fraser, W. F. Dawson, and John A. Holtby, *Beauchesne’s Rules & Forms of the House of Commons Canada with Annotations, Comments and Precedents*, 6th ed. (Toronto: Carswell Co., 1989), p. 41, s. 146.
- ¹⁹ Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne’s*, p. 41, s. 146.
- ²⁰ Levy, “The Evolving Speakership,” p. 7; Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Table Research Branch, *Précis of Procedure*, rev. ed. (Ottawa: House of Commons, November 2003), p. 3.
- ²¹ Whittington and Van Loon, *Canadian Government and Politics*, p. 510; Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Table Research Branch, *Précis of Procedure*, p. 4; Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne’s*, p. 41, s. 146.

- ²² Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Standing Orders of the House of Commons, Consolidated Version as of February 17, 2004* (Ottawa: House of Commons, 2004), Standing Order 4(1); Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Journals of the House of Commons of Canada, 33rd Parliament, 2nd Session*, vol. CXXIX, 30 September 1986, pp. 2–8.
- ²³ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Annotated Standing Orders of the House of Commons*, p. 11.
- ²⁴ Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, p. 41, s. 148.
- ²⁵ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Standing Orders of the House of Commons*, Standing Order 3.1.
- ²⁶ Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, p. 42, s. 154.
- ²⁷ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Standing Orders of the House of Commons*, Standing Orders 4(7)–(9).
- ²⁸ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Table Research Branch, *Précis of Procedure*, p. 3; Laurie Mackay, *Order in the House: A Historical Account of Two Past Speakers of the Alberta Legislature* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1992), p. 10.
- ²⁹ Saskatchewan. Legislative Assembly. Special Committee on Rules and Procedures of the Legislative Assembly, *Election of Speaker: First Report of the Special Committee on Rules and Procedures of the Legislative Assembly* (1991), p. 2.
- ³⁰ Levy, “The Evolving Speakership,” p. 7.
- ³¹ *Ibid.*, p. 10.
- ³² United Kingdom. Parliament. House of Commons. Procedure Committee, *Election of a Speaker: Second Report*, p. ix.
- ³³ *Ibid.*, p. xviii.
- ³⁴ Levy, “The Evolving Speakership,” p. 7.
- ³⁵ Saskatchewan. Legislative Assembly. Special Committee on Rules and Procedures of the Legislative Assembly, *Election of Speaker*, p. 1.
- ³⁶ Levy, “The Evolving Speakership,” pp. 8–9.
- ³⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 22nd Legislature, 4th Session*, vol. C, 26 May 1992, p. 172.
- ³⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Select Special Committee on Parliamentary Reform, *Transcripts of Meetings, 22nd Legislature, 4th Session*.
- ³⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 22nd Legislature, 4th Session*, 26 January 1993, pp. 297–298; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Order 12(2).
- ⁴⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 23rd Legislature, 1st Session*, 30 August 1993, pp. 1–3.
- ⁴¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Schedule A.
- ⁴² Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, p. 41, s. 148; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Schedule A, s1.
- ⁴³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Schedule A; Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Standing Orders of the House of Commons*, Standing Order 3.1.
- ⁴⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 23rd Legislature, 1st Session*, 30 August 1993, p. 1.



⁴⁵ Ibid.

⁴⁶ Ibid.

⁴⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, "Amendments to Standing Orders," *Sessional Paper*, no. 610/95, 14 February 1995; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, "Schedule A: Election of Officers Procedure," *Sessional Paper*, no. 621/95, 16 February 1995.

⁴⁸ Norman W. Wilding and Philip Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, 4th rev. ed. (London: Cassell, 1972), p. 707.

⁴⁹ David John Carter, "Seven Years in the Speaker's Chair," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 17, no. 1 (Spring 1994): p. 16.

⁵⁰ Wilfred Bennett, "From the Gallery," *Calgary Albertan*, 26 February 1937, p. 1.

⁵¹ J. P. Joseph Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada*, 2nd ed. (Montreal: McGill-Queen's University Press, 1997), pp. 18–20.

⁵² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 25th Legislature, 1st Session*, 10 April 2001, p. 3.

⁵³ Clare A. Dale, "Whose Servant I Am": *Speakers of the Assemblies of the Province of Upper Canada, Canada and Ontario, 1792–1992* (Toronto: Ontario Legislative Library, 1992), p. vi.

⁵⁴ Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada* (1997), p. 18; Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), pp. 79–80.

⁵⁵ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 286.

⁵⁶ United Kingdom. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates of the House of Commons*, vol. 181, 2 February 1866, col. 17–18.

⁵⁷ Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada* (1997), p. 20.

⁵⁸ John George Bourinot, *Parliamentary Procedure and Practice in the Dominion of Canada*, 4th ed., ed. Thomas Barnard Flint (Toronto: Canada Law Book Co., 1916), pp. 49–50; Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 313.



Authorities

AUTHORITIES

The rules of modern parliamentary procedure are derived from practice, custom and the *Standing Orders*. The regulations governing procedure are established in a manner similar to common law: "Just as the application of law is influenced by judicial decision, so the application of parliamentary procedure depends in large measure on the interpretation and discretion of the Speaker."¹ The 'Authorities,' which are various works on parliamentary procedure, attempt to collect and organize the traditions, precedents and procedures of parliament,² thus providing a framework of practice, whereas the *Standing Orders* codify these rules and practices.

While the first manuals and textbooks of the practice of Parliament were published in the 16th century, the first *Standing Orders* of the United Kingdom (UK) did not appear until 1811, and all but a very few of these have been passed since 1832.³ In 1793, when Lower Canada (Quebec) first adopted the majority of its rules, the UK had just six Standing Orders, only one of which was adopted by the Legislative Assembly of Lower Canada. In fact, the rules "were not copied from any one source, but rather were inspired" by a variety of sources, predominantly British.⁴ The Province of Canada, created in 1840, assumed the majority of its Standing Orders from Lower Canada. In 1867, with Confederation, these rules were again carried over to the new Parliament.⁵

When the North-West Territories Council adopted its rules, it referred back to the federal *Standing Orders*. The North-West Territories Council of 1877 had 19 items listed in the *Rules and Forms of Proceeding*. While there was no Speaker until 1888, the rules did refer to the 'President.' In unprovided cases (those that are not outlined in the rules) and in those for which no precedent is clear, the usage and forms of the Canadian House of Commons were followed.⁶ The *Rules and Forms of Proceedings* for the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, established in 1888, had 72 items and referred unprovided cases to the federal Parliament.⁷

The newly formed Legislative Assembly of Alberta adopted its first edition of the *Standing Orders* in March of 1906.⁸ Upon nominating Speaker Charles W. Fisher (1906–1919) at the opening of the First Legislature on March 15, 1906, Premier Alexander C. Rutherford (1905–1910) remarked,

It is right, it is proper, that we should follow the good traditions, the good precedents of the Legislatures of the old Provinces of Canada, the House of Commons of our Dominion, and the House of Commons of the motherland, the Mother of Parliaments under constitutional, under responsible government.⁹

When making rulings on matters in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, the Speaker relies first and foremost on the *Standing Orders* and when there is no Order to address the situation, the

* In *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, Marleau and Montpetit also identify Jefferson's *Manual*, an American source, as having had an influence on the rules adopted by Lower Canada. Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa, Chenelière/McGraw Hill: 2000), p. 221.



Speaker refers to precedents of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and to parliamentary tradition.¹⁰

The Legislative Assembly of Alberta has more than 100 Standing Orders, including Orders 11 through 13 that specifically outline the role and authority of the Speaker. The *Standing Orders* are a complex set of written rules that act as an authoritative guide to procedures and roles in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986) once commented, “The purpose of the Rules which are, you might say, a job description for the Speaker, are undoubtedly to ensure that ideas rather than reflections on personalities will contend in the House.”¹¹

The *Standing Orders* are written and enumerated, but they continue to evolve. Changes to the *Orders* are made by a resolution of the Assembly. The Government has the power to propose amendments to the *Orders* without consulting the House, but customarily the matter will be referred to an all-party committee for consideration before changes are proposed.¹² The *Standing Orders* have changed over the years to meet the evolving needs of the Legislative Assembly, stemming from constituency requirements, longer Sessions, shifting priorities and public perception.¹³

Over time, the Legislative Assembly has made significant revisions to the *Standing Orders*.¹⁴ Some of these revisions include:

- 1916 saw the establishment of rules for a quorum in the House, and the position and responsibilities of the Speaker were outlined.
- In 1928, rules were introduced regarding debatable motions. These rules remain largely unchanged today. Rules for closure were also introduced at this time.
- In 1952, the rules for Members requiring a leave of absence were altered so that it was no longer the Legislative Assembly, but the Speaker, who had the ability to grant a leave.
- 1969 saw the introduction of Oral Question Period in the Legislative Assembly. Prior to this change, questions were dealt with only in written form.
- Changes in 1974 updated the section on parliamentary procedure authorities, expanded routine items, and introduced Orders pertaining to the newly implemented *Alberta Hansard*. Orders related to the Speaker’s role were changed significantly, as it was determined that the only avenue available to challenge a Speaker’s ruling would be “by a substantive motion of which notice has been given.”¹⁵
- In 1993, a variety of reforms were introduced having the overall effect of increasing the influence of Private Members in the Legislative Assembly and giving them more latitude to represent the views of their constituents. These changes provided increased opportunity for Private Members to make statements in the Assembly. Other changes included the revision of the sitting schedule so that the daily sitting time was increased, resulting in one hour per week more than the previous weekly total, and the cancellation of Friday’s sittings, giving Members the opportunity to spend that day in their constituencies.¹⁶
- In 1995, a schedule of procedures for electing the Speaker by secret ballot was added.



- In 2001, further amendments included an increase in the number of 'Member Statements' on Tuesdays and Thursdays, the addition of 'Recognitions' to the Daily Routine for Mondays and Wednesdays, and the inclusion of the singing of the national anthem during the first sitting day of each week.¹⁷

Although the *Standing Orders* are extensive, they cover only a portion of the situations that arise. When a situation occurs that is not addressed by the *Standing Orders*, the Speaker will look for a suitable precedent in the past practices of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, of other Legislative Assemblies in Canada, of the Canadian House of Commons and of parliaments of the Commonwealth. Since 1906, the *Standing Orders* have included a section on sources consulted to determine precedents of parliamentary procedure. Today, this section reads, "In all contingencies unprovided for, the question shall be decided by the Speaker and, in making a ruling, the Speaker shall base any decision on the usages and precedents of the Assembly and on parliamentary tradition."¹⁸ In 1906, the Speaker was directed to precedents set by the House of Commons in Great Britain and Ireland; in 1928, the Order was revised to refer to the Canadian House of Commons; and in 1974, it was revised to refer to the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and parliamentary tradition. The 1973 *Select Committee on the Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly* noted that the proposed change would recognize that, with the establishment of *Alberta Hansard*, it became possible to refer to precedents in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta itself.¹⁹



Authorities displayed in the Legislature Library.

When both the *Standing Orders* and precedent fail to provide direction for the Speaker, a selection of other authorities on parliamentary procedure are consulted.²⁰ In Alberta, the three primary authorities on parliamentary procedure used to resolve issues in the Assembly are listed in the *Members' Guide* in the order in which they are to be consulted: *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* by Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit; current editions of *Beauchesne's Parliamentary Rules and Forms of the House of Commons of Canada*; and *Erskine May's Treatise on The Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*.²¹

In their book *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, Marleau and Montpetit suggest that they are continuing the work of Sir John G. Bourinot.²² Four editions of Bourinot's work, entitled *Parliamentary Procedure and Practice*, were published between 1884 and 1916.* Bourinot, Clerk of the Canadian House of Commons from 1880 to 1902, was the first to assemble a comprehensive guide to the rules and principles of the Parliament of Canada.²³ Intended to assist both parliamentarians and individuals with an interest in the parliamentary system, Bourinot's work focuses not only on rules and orders, but also on constitutional development in Canada.²⁴ Marleau and Montpetit also focus on the Canadian experience. They have compiled a reference work describing the customs and practices of the House of Commons, which, while largely

* When a reference is made to *Bourinot*, it is commonly understood that it is referring to an edition of *Parliamentary Procedure and Practice*.

concerned with procedural issues, includes a discussion of the historical circumstances under which these procedures developed.²⁵

Arthur Beauchesne, Clerk of the Canadian House of Commons (1925–1949),²⁶ also followed Bourinot's example and produced several editions of his own work on Canadian parliamentary procedure, frequently citing *Erskine May* and *Bourinot*. A collection of notes, this book compiles the past practices of the House of Commons in a manner that provides a quick reference for those concerned with legislative procedure.²⁷

The last authority, commonly known as *Erskine May*, is a reference work that focuses on parliamentary practice in the United Kingdom. It is considered by many to be the “definitive authority in the Commonwealth on parliamentary practice.”²⁸ Sir Thomas Erskine May, the original author of this work, was Clerk of the House of Commons at Westminster from 1871 to 1886.²⁹ As precedents evolve, based on new practices and rulings from the Speaker in the United Kingdom, this work is updated and new editions are produced.³⁰

Information specific to the branches, services and procedures of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta can be found in the *Members' Guide*. The Legislative Assembly of Alberta has published a *Members' Guide* since 1979 to provide Members with information “on indemnities, benefits, allowances, services, House procedure and interparliamentary relations.”³¹ Private citizens may also access the guide through the Legislature Library or from the Legislative Assembly website. Although it is not intended to be an authoritative source of information,³² it does provide direction to Members as to the resources that are available to assist them in performing their duties. The *Guide* is updated on a regular basis.

Notes

¹ Philip Laundy, “The Speaker and His Office in the Twentieth Century,” in *The House of Commons in the Twentieth Century: Essays by Members of the Study of Parliament Group*, ed. Stuart Alan Walkland (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1979), p. 153.

² Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), pp. 222–223.

³ Joseph Redlich, *The Procedure of the House of Commons: A Study of Its History and Present Form*, trans. A. Ernest Steinthal, vol. II (London: Constable & Co., 1908; reprint, New York: AMS Press, 1969), p. 11; Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), pp. 5–6.

⁴ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, pp. 221n87, 214.

⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 214.

⁶ Northwest Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Council of the North-West Territories of Canada, Session of 1877*, 9 March 1877, pp. 10–12.

⁷ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 1st Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. I, 21 November 1888, pp. 44–54.

⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta*, Adopted by the House, March 1906 (Edmonton: Jas. E. Richards, 1906).

⁹ "The Premier's Motion," *Edmonton Daily Bulletin*, 16 March 1906, p. 1.

¹⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide: Information for Members on Indemnities, Benefits, Allowances, Services, House Procedure and Interparliamentary Relations* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, October 2004), s. 60; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Orders 1–2.

¹¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, 4 May 1972, p. 43–27.

¹² Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Special Select Committee on Parliamentary Reform Meeting, *Minutes of the Special Select Committee on Parliamentary Reform Meeting*, 26 March 1993, Appendix B, p. 1.

¹³ Stan Schumacher, "Unpopular Forum: Revising the *Standing Orders* to Reform Alberta's Legislature," *The Parliamentarian: Journal of the Parliaments of the Commonwealth* vol. 75, no. 2 (April 1994): p. 105; Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Select Committee on the Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly, *Report on House Rules*, vol. 1 (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1973), p. i.

¹⁴ Schumacher, "Unpopular Forum: Revising the *Standing Orders* to Reform Alberta's Legislature," p. 105; Robert Reynolds, "Legislative Reports: Alberta," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 25, no. 1 (Spring 2002): p. 45.

¹⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Select Committee on the Rules, *Report on House Rules*, p. 11a.

¹⁶ W. J. David McNeil, "Overview: A Year of Change," in *Legislative Assembly Office 1993 Annual Report*, ed. Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1994), p. 1; Schumacher, "Unpopular Forum: Revising the *Standing Orders* to Reform Alberta's Legislature," p. 105; W. J. David McNeil, "Overview: Tradition and Change in 1994," in *Legislative Assembly Office 1994 Annual Report*, ed. Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 1995), p. 1.

¹⁷ Reynolds, "Legislative Reports: Alberta [Spring 2002]," p. 45; Robert Reynolds, "Legislative Reports: Alberta," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 24, no. 2 (Summer 2001): p. 47.

¹⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 2.

¹⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Select Committee on the Rules, *Report on House Rules*, p. 1a.

²⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide 2004*, s. 60.

²¹ *Ibid.*

²² Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. vi.

²³ *Ibid.*, p. v.

²⁴ John George Bourinot, *Parliamentary Procedure and Practice, With a Review of the Origin, Growth, and Operation of Parliamentary Institutions in the Dominion of Canada*, 2nd ed. (Montreal: Dawson Brothers, 1892), p. v.

²⁵ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. vi.

²⁶ *Ibid.*, p. v.

²⁷ Alistair Fraser, W. F. Dawson, and John A. Holtby, *Beauchesne's Rules & Forms of the House of Commons Canada with Annotations, Comments and Precedents*, 6th ed. (Toronto: Carswell Co., 1989), p. iii.

²⁸ E. George MacMinn and Robert Vaive, "The Office of Clerk," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 21, no. 2 (Summer 1998): p. 30.

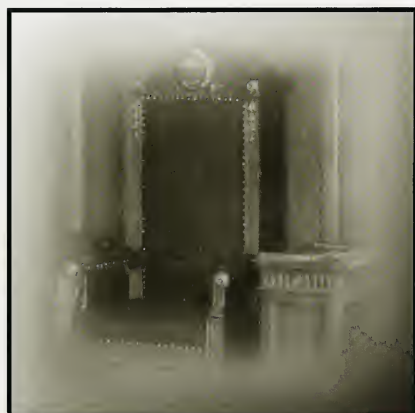
²⁹ Norman W. Wilding and Philip Laundry, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, 4th rev. ed. (London: Cassell, 1972), p. 468.

³⁰ May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, p. vii.

³¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide 2004*, title page.

³² Douglas J. Blain, "Foreword," in *Legislative Assembly of Alberta Members' Guide* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1979), p. 1.





Parliamentary Privilege

PARLIAMENTARY PRIVILEGE

Definition

Parliamentary privilege refers to the legal immunities provided to Parliament and its Members, in order to facilitate the work of the House and protect the integrity of the parliamentary system.¹ The classic definition of parliamentary privilege is found in Erskine May's *Parliamentary Practice*, which is a standard authority for Parliaments throughout the Commonwealth. This definition reads as follows:

Parliamentary privilege is the sum of the peculiar rights enjoyed by each House collectively as a constituent part of the High Court of Parliament, and by the Members of each House individually, without which they could not discharge their functions, and which exceed those possessed by other bodies or individuals.²

At the opening of each parliament, the Speaker symbolically claims these privileges for the House in a petition to the Crown. When any of the rights provided by parliamentary privilege are challenged or ignored, a 'breach of privilege' has occurred.³

The rights and privileges enjoyed today by parliaments grew out of centuries of conflict between the Crown and Parliament.⁴ Application of privilege can be found in the history of the United Kingdom as early as the reign of Edward the Confessor.* Precursors to the current privileges enjoyed by Members of Parliament emerged during the medieval era. These included the concept of parliament as the highest court of justice and the claim of parliament to the 'King's peace,' which was originally the protection extended to the royal entourage by the Crown.⁵ As the power of Parliament grew, the monarch became less involved in matters of justice. Eventually the principle that the monarch no longer had the right to administer justice was formalized with the adoption of the Bill of Rights of 1689.⁶ The Bill of Rights became one of the foundations of the British constitution, as it tied the power of the monarch to the will of Parliament.⁷ The Bill provided Parliament with the right to freedom of speech during debates and allowed Members to perform their duties without the threat of civil charges or retaliation from the Crown.⁸

In 1704, the British Parliament decided that it would give itself no more privileges than it enjoyed up to that point.⁹ Consequently, parliamentarians of today enjoy the same rights as did parliamentarians in 1704, with one notable addition. Measures taken as a result of Stockdale's success in the case of *Stockdale v. Hansard* (1836) led to the establishment of parliamentary privilege as part of British statutory law.¹⁰ Hansard, the company responsible for printing transcripts of parliamentary debates, was held liable for defamatory remarks made about

* Edward the Confessor was King of England from 1042 to 1066. Although well-known for his piety, he earned disfavour among his subjects by granting high positions in his government to foreigners, particularly Normans. "Edward," in *The New Encyclopaedia Britannica*, 15th ed., vol. 4, Micropaedia (Chicago: Encyclopaedia Britannica, Inc., 2002), p. 374.



publisher John J. Stockdale in the House. Consequently, Parliament passed the *Parliamentary Papers Act, 1840* that provided that both the proceedings of Parliament and any papers arising from the proceedings are matters to which parliamentary privilege applies.¹¹

The principles of parliamentary privilege came to Canada through the adoption of British parliamentary tradition. The origins of these privileges are found within the common law, and in statute, particularly section 18 of the *British North America Act, 1867*.¹² This section indicates that “Parliament may not confer upon itself any greater privileges than those enjoyed at the time of Confederation by the Parliament of the United Kingdom.”¹³

The Courts

The 1993 Supreme Court decision in *New Brunswick Broadcasting v. Nova Scotia (Speaker)* (informally known as ‘Donahoe’) is recognized as the landmark case in entrenching parliamentary privilege in Canadian common law.¹⁴ The issue before the Supreme Court was whether the freedom of the press guaranteed under the *Canadian Charter of Rights and Freedoms* overrode the ancient privilege of parliaments to exclude strangers. In its majority decision, the Supreme Court “recognized the existence of inherent privileges of legislative assemblies as enjoying constitutional status.”¹⁵ Further strengthening the legal position of parliamentary privilege, the Court ruled that one part of the Canadian Constitution, in this case the *Canadian Charter of Rights and Freedoms*, cannot be used to overrule another part of the Constitution.¹⁶

Categories of Parliamentary Privilege

Parliamentary privilege is generally divided into two categories: the privileges of the House as a whole and the privileges of individual Members.¹⁷

Collective parliamentary privileges, those that are inherent to the House as a whole, consist generally of “the power to punish for contempt ..., the right to regulate its own constitution, the right to regulate its internal affairs ..., the right to discipline ..., the right to institute inquiries and call for witnesses ..., and the right to settle its own code of procedure.”¹⁸

Individual Members can claim privilege insofar as any abuse or neglect of their rights threatens the ability of parliament to function effectively.¹⁹ Perhaps the most cherished of individual parliamentary privileges is freedom of speech.²⁰ Members must be free to speak in the Chamber in order to facilitate the free flow of debate. Members must not be threatened or coerced into limiting their speeches in the Assembly. Furthermore, Members cannot be sued for what they say in the Assembly. This right was recognized in Article 9 of the English Bill of Rights of 1689, which provided “[t]hat the freedom of speech and debates or proceedings in Parliament ought not to be impeached or questioned in any court or place out of Parliament.”²¹ In Alberta,

* The case arose when camera operators for a television station were prohibited from filming the proceedings of the Nova Scotia Legislative Assembly.



immunity from civil action finds expression in section 13 of the *Legislative Assembly Act*, which states:

A Member is not liable to any civil action or prosecution, arrest, imprisonment or damages by reason of any matter or thing brought by the Member before the Assembly or any committee of the Assembly by petition, Bill, resolution, motion or otherwise or by reason of anything said by the Member in the Assembly or any committee of the Assembly.²²

Other privileges extended to Members are freedom from arrest in civil actions,* exemption from jury duty and exemption from appearing as a witness. These last three privileges are intended to prevent the House from being denied the service of its Members.²³

Parliamentary Privilege and Contempt

One of the collective privileges of parliament allows it to punish those who are guilty of contempt of parliament. An act of contempt occurs in cases in which an offender's behaviour impedes the functioning of the House or its Members or is an affront "against the dignity and authority" of a parliament, yet does not fall within the 'enumerated† rights and immunities' that constitute privilege.²⁴ Both contempt of parliament and breaches of privilege are brought before the House as 'questions of privilege' and are punishable offences.²⁵



Hon. K.R. Kowalski, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, presides over the 25th Legislature (2002).

Alberta

Section 9 of the *Legislative Assembly Act* provides that the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and its Members, as well as the committees of the Assembly and their members, have the same privileges, immunities and powers as those held by the House of Commons of the Parliament of the United Kingdom, the Members of that House, the committees of the House and the members of committees of that House at the time of the passing of the *British North America Act*, 1867.²⁶

These privileges, immunities and powers are part of the public and general law of Alberta, need not be pleaded and shall be judicially noticed in all courts in Alberta.²⁷

Parliamentary privilege supports the values of Alberta's democratic system by protecting the Legislative Assembly and its Members.²⁸ Although Members are granted certain exemptions from the law to facilitate the independent and efficient functioning of the Assembly, Members are not

* Members are not protected from the civil process, except from civil arrest. J. P. Joseph Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada*, 2nd ed. (Montreal: McGill-Queen's University Press, 1997), p. 153. Individuals are now seldom arrested on civil matters. Robert Blackburn and Andrew Kennon with Sir Michael Wheeler-Booth, *Griffith and Ryle on Parliament: Functions, Practice and Procedures*, 2nd ed. (London, Sweet and Maxwell, 2003), p. 125.

† The *Legislative Assembly Act* enumerates 13 'acts [that] constitute breaches of privilege or contempts.' *Legislative Assembly Act*, R.S.A. 2000, c. L-9, s. 10(2).

placed above the law by parliamentary privilege.²⁹ Privilege allows the Assembly and its Members to conduct their business without undue influence from external parties.³⁰ It allows Members to carry out their duties without fear of reprisal, but is not intended to provide the opportunity for personal gain for Members.³¹ Privilege provides the rights and freedoms necessary for the functioning of the Assembly.³² It is the Speaker's role to protect these privileges. The privileges of the Assembly, and its Members, depend upon "the willingness of the chamber and its speaker to assert these rights."³³

Procedure in Alberta

As a breach of the rights of the Assembly, or any of its Members, constitutes a question of privilege, if a Member feels that his or her parliamentary privileges, or those of the Assembly, are not being respected, he or she may raise a question of privilege.³⁴ It is the Speaker's role to determine whether there has been a *prima facie* (on first impression) breach of privilege.

In Alberta, the current procedure for raising a question of privilege is defined both by precedent and outlined in Standing Order 15. A Member may raise the question of privilege by providing to the Speaker and, where applicable, to any Member whose actions might be called into question, written notice containing a brief statement of the question of privilege. Written notice must be given at least two hours before the opening of a sitting. The Member will then call attention to the alleged breach before *Orders of the Day* are called by briefly outlining the nature of the complaint. When an apparent breach of privilege occurs within the Assembly, a Member may raise the matter immediately after the statement is uttered or the events have occurred. In such instances, there is no need for written notice. Once the matter has been raised, the Speaker may allow debate in order to determine if a *prima facie* breach of privilege has occurred. If the Speaker does not feel that the matter can be dealt with fairly at the time (for example, when a Member whose actions have been called into question is not present), the Speaker may choose to defer the debate. If the Speaker rules that the case for a *prima facie* breach of privilege has not been made, or that the matter has not been raised at the earliest possible point, the issue is closed.* Should the Speaker determine that there has been a *prima facie* breach of privilege, it then becomes the responsibility of the Assembly to determine if there has been an actual breach of privilege.³⁵ At this stage, any Member may, by the end of the following sitting day, give notice of a motion to deal with the matter further.³⁶ The motion typically refers the matter to the *Standing Committee on Privileges and Elections*. It is common for the offender to apologize for the breach thereby resolving the matter before the motion is made, the Committee has reported or

* Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986) equated the consideration of whether or not a *prima facie* breach of privilege had occurred to "an ordinary preliminary hearing" to decide whether or not to proceed with a trial and noted that, "a mere *prima facie* case of privilege may turn out not to be a real case of privilege just as a bottle labeled 'whiskey' may turn out to contain tea." Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 17th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. LXXIX, 12 April 1973, pp. 124–125.

the Assembly has made a final decision on the matter.* In some instances, the Legislature is dissolved before the Committee can address the complaint.† In other cases, the Member is satisfied with simply bringing the point or question to the attention of the House, and the issue is closed.‡

In the history of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, the Speaker has ruled that there existed a *prima facie* breach of privilege on a number of occasions. Such breaches of privilege have been committed by media outlets,³⁷ by lawyers and their clients,³⁸ and by Members of the Legislative Assembly.³⁹ Examples of these breaches of privilege are outlined in the biographies of the Speakers, when applicable.

* See, for example, the point of privilege made on May 21, 1996 regarding a letter received by Progressive Conservative Wayne Jacques, Member for Grande Prairie-Wapiti, from Liberal R. Gary Dickson, Member for Calgary-Buffalo. After Speaker Stanley S. Schumacher (1993-1997) made the *prima facie* ruling on May 23, 1996, Dickson apologized, and the matter was put to rest.

† See, for example, the point of privilege raised on April 21, 1993 by Ken Rostad, Progressive Conservative Member for Camrose, which was ruled *prima facie* by Speaker David J. Carter (1986-1993) on April 29, and the motion to refer to the *Standing Committee on Privileges and Elections*, carried May 10, or the two points of privilege raised on May 4, 1994, ruled *prima facie* by Schumacher on May 11, 1994 and referred to the Committee on May 18, 1994.

‡ Amongst numerous other examples: On February 19, 1920, "Mr. [James] Weir rose to a matter of Privilege and called attention to a report in a Calgary newspaper respecting the Honourable Member for Cochrane [Alexander Moore] and himself, which he said was a tissue of misstatements and falsehoods." Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 4th Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. XV, 20 February 1920, p. 12. On April 5, 1972, John G. Ashton rose on a point of privilege stating, "I wish to squelch the rumours concerning my broken arm. I would like to point out that it is not true that the injury resulted from my disagreements with the hon. Members opposite, nor is it true my wife caught me. The fact is that I was in a father and son hockey game with my ten year old son and that is how it happened." Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, 5 April 1972, p. 22-1.

Notes

¹ Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), p. 75; Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa, Chenelière/McGraw Hill: 2000), pp. 50-53; J. P. Joseph Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada*, 2nd ed. (Montreal: McGill-Queen's University Press, 1997), p. 15.

² May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, p. 75.

³ Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada* (1997), p. 14.

⁴ Moore and Robertson, "An Introduction to Parliamentary Privilege," p. 19.

⁵ Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada* (1997), p. 16.



- ⁶ *The Queen's Role in the Modern State: Queen and the Law/Judiciary*, [Internet], (Buckingham Palace, London), accessed 23 April 2004, available from <http://www.royal.gov.uk/output/page457.asp>; Moore and Robertson, "An Introduction to Parliamentary Privilege," p. 19.
- ⁷ "Rights, Bill of," in *The New Encyclopaedia Britannica*, 15th ed., vol. 10, Micropaedia (Chicago: Encyclopaedia Britannica, Inc., 2002), p. 68.
- ⁸ Moore and Robertson, "An Introduction to Parliamentary Privilege," p. 19; Commonwealth Parliamentary Association and Athabasca University, "Privileges and Immunities of Members," *Module on Parliamentary Democracy*, (Athabasca, AB: Athabasca University, 2001), p. 47.
- ⁹ Moore and Robertson, "An Introduction to Parliamentary Privilege," p. 19.
- ¹⁰ Terry Moore and James Robertson, "An Introduction to Parliamentary Privilege," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 24, no. 3 (Fall 2001): p. 19.
- ¹¹ Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada* (1997), pp. 52, 64, 281-285. Maingot provides a concise summary of *Stockdale v. Hansard* in his book.
- ¹² Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada* (1997), p. 16; *British North America Act, 1867* (U.K.), 30 & 31 Vict., c. 3, s. 18. Note that the name of the *British North America Act, 1867* was changed in 1982 to the *Constitution Act, 1867*. For more information, see the Glossary.
- ¹³ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Table Research Branch, *Privilege in the Modern Context*, p. 25; *British North America Act, 1867* (U.K.), 30 & 31 Vict., c. 3, s. 18.
- ¹⁴ *New Brunswick Broadcasting Co. v. Nova Scotia (Speaker of the House of Assembly)*, [1993] 1 S.C.R. 319.
- ¹⁵ Robert Reynolds, "Threatening a Member: Recent Cases of Privilege From Alberta," [Paper presented at the Association of Parliamentary Counsel in Canada], 21-25 August 1996, Victoria, pp. 1, 11; Robert Reynolds, "Parliament and Democracy in the 21st Century: Parliamentary Privilege," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 25, no. 4 (Winter 2002-2003): pp. 2-3; *New Brunswick Broadcasting Co. v. Nova Scotia (Speaker of the House of Assembly)*, [1993] 1 S.C.R. 319 at 322-323.
- ¹⁶ Reynolds, "Threatening a Member: Recent Cases of Privilege From Alberta," p. 11; Commonwealth Parliamentary Association and Athabasca University, "Privileges and Immunities of Members," p. 49; Reynolds, "Parliament and Democracy in the 21st Century: Parliamentary Privilege," pp. 2-3.
- ¹⁷ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Table Research Branch, *Privilege in the Modern Context*, (Ottawa: Clerk of the House of Commons, 1990), p. 2; Moore and Robertson, "An Introduction to Parliamentary Privilege," p. 19.
- ¹⁸ Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada* (1997), p. 15.
- ¹⁹ Robert Blackburn and Andrew Kennon with Sir Michael Wheeler-Booth, *Griffith & Ryle on Parliament: Function, Practice and Procedures*, 2nd ed. (London: Sweet and Maxwell, 2003), p. 124, s. 3-003.
- ²⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 23rd Legislature, 4th Session*, 21 March 1996, p. 743.
- ²¹ *An Act Declaring the Rights and Liberties of the Subject, and Settling the Succession of the Crown (Bill of Rights)* (U.K.), 1689, 1 W. & M., Sess. 2., c. 2.
- ²² *Legislative Assembly Act*, R.S.A. 2000, c. L-9, s. 13(1).
- ²³ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Table Research Branch, *Privilege in the Modern Context*, p. 9.



- ²⁴ Ibid., pp. 5-6; Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada* (1997), p. 226; Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), p. 75.
- ²⁵ Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada* (1997), pp. 14-15.
- ²⁶ *Legislative Assembly Act*, R.S.A. 2000, c. L-9, s. 9(1).
- ²⁷ *Legislative Assembly Act*, R.S.A. 2000, c. L-9, s. 9(2).
- ²⁸ Reynolds, "Threatening a Member: Recent Cases of Privilege From Alberta," p. 11.
- ²⁹ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Table Research Branch, *Privilege in the Modern Context*, p. 3.
- ³⁰ Robert Reynolds, "Parliament and Democracy in the 21st Century: Parliamentary Privilege," pp. 2-3.
- ³¹ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Table Research Branch, *Privilege in the Modern Context*, p. 3.
- ³² Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada* (1997), p. 13.
- ³³ Commonwealth Parliamentary Association and Athabasca University, "Privileges and Immunities of Members," p. 50.
- ³⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Orders 15(1)-(2), (5).
- ³⁵ Moore and Robertson, "An Introduction to Parliamentary Privilege," p. 21; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 15(7); Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Table Research Branch, *Privilege in the Modern Context*, p. 24; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 17th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. LXXIX, 12 April 1973, pp. 124-125.
- ³⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 15(6).
- ³⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 8th Legislature, 7th Session*, vol. XXXIX, 18 March 1938, pp. 101-102.
- ³⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 23rd Legislature, 4th Session*, 21 March 1996, pp. 743-744.
- ³⁹ Ibid., 23 May 1996, pp. 2103-2104.



Unparliamentary Language

UNPARLIAMENTARY LANGUAGE

Members enjoy freedom of speech in the Legislative Assembly. Freedom of speech allows for an unhampered exchange of ideas in the Chamber. To maintain the dignity of the House in this intense environment, Members are responsible for conducting themselves in a respectful manner. According to *Beauchesne's Parliamentary Rules and Forms*, "language used in the House should be temperate and worthy of the place in which it is spoken."¹ Alberta's *Standing Orders* provide that should the statements of a Member become abusive or insulting in a manner likely to cause disorder in the House, the Speaker has the authority to deem the language used 'unparliamentary' and call the offending Member to order.²

It is not feasible to create definitive rules regarding unparliamentary language, as so much depends on the intention and context of a Member's statements.³ Very few individual words or expressions are in and of themselves unparliamentary. Unparliamentary language also changes with the mores and etiquette of the times—what is considered unparliamentary in one era may prove acceptable in another. Despite these challenges, there are some guidelines in place as to what constitutes unparliamentary language. These are delineated in the *Standing Orders* and, more extensively, in the authorities on parliamentary procedure, as follows:

- Members are expected to refrain from using provocative, threatening language or terminology that offends the dignity of the Assembly;⁴
- Members should not imply that another Member has false or hidden motives⁵ or is deliberately making false statements;⁶
- Members must not misrepresent the language of another Member;⁷
- Members must not use insulting language that is likely to cause disorder in the Assembly;⁸
- Members must not disrespect any member of the Royal Family;⁹
- Accusations or reflections on the conduct of a Member may only be presented by a substantive motion;¹⁰
- In order to prevent the criticism inherent in political debate from regressing to a personal level, Members in the House must refer to each other by office or constituency represented or by other designations, rather than by name.¹¹ As Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986) once reflected, "[T]he Members are not there to assess one another's characters nor to assess one another's motives. They are there to assess one another's ideas and proposals."¹²

The Speaker, or any other Member, can bring unparliamentary language to the attention of the Legislative Assembly. Should a Member draw attention to the use of a questionable statement, the issue must be raised as a Point of Order, rather than as a question of privilege.¹³ When making rulings on unparliamentary language, it is the Speaker's responsibility to interpret the mood of the House and the intent of statements made by Members. The Speaker must maintain a balance between free expression and appropriate conduct within the House.¹⁴ When a Member uses questionable terms or phrases in the House, it is not always necessary for the Speaker to make a ruling on unparliamentary language. Often, when concern is expressed, a Member will choose to withdraw a statement and rephrase it. Should a Member refuse to withdraw a



statement that has been ruled unparliamentary, the Speaker can 'name' the Member to the Assembly for disregarding the Speaker's authority and may even suspend the Member from sitting and voting in the House for a stated period of time.*¹⁵ In order for a Member to be suspended, the Speaker puts "the question on motion being made, no amendment, adjournment or debate being allowed."¹⁶ Ultimately, the decorum and language used in the House is a result of the discretion exercised by the Speaker and the restraint displayed by Members.¹⁷

While no specific reference to 'unparliamentary' language is made in the Alberta *Standing Orders*, Standing Order 23 refers to various circumstances under which the Speaker may call a Member to order.¹⁸ Over the years, Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta have ruled more than 200 terms unparliamentary.[†] Examples of some spirited expressions judged unparliamentary include, 'fat, wingless ducks'¹⁹ and 'minister of gobbledygook'.²⁰

* Suspension of a Member has only occurred on one occasion in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. In 1952, Arthur Wray, Independent-Social Credit Member for Banff-Cochrane, refused to withdraw derogatory remarks made about a civil servant, and the House unanimously approved a motion to suspend Wray for two sitting days and until he withdrew the comments and apologized to the Assembly. Wray returned on March 25, withdrew his statement and apologized. Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 11th Legislature, 5th Session*, vol. LV, 21 March 1952, pp. 84–85; *Ibid.*, 25 March 1952, p. 86.

† Only since the establishment of *Alberta Hansard* in 1972 has it been possible to compile precise numbers.

Notes

¹ Alistair Fraser, W. F. Dawson, and John A. Holtby, *Beauchesne's Rules & Forms of the House of Commons Canada with Annotations, Comments and Precedents*, 6th ed. (Toronto: Carswell Co., 1989), p. 149, s. 491.

² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Order 23(j).

³ Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, p. 143, s. 486(1); Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Journals of the House of Commons of Canada, 23rd Parliament, 1st Session*, vol. CXXI, 22 March 1976, pp. 1135–1137.

⁴ Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, p. 143, s. 486(2); Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), p. 525.

⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 23(i).

⁶ David L. E. Peterson, "Unparliamentary Language," [Paper presented at Canadian Presiding Officers Conference], 20–22 January 1989, St. John's, NF, p. 8; Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), p. 441.

⁷ May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, p. 386.

⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 23(j).

⁹ May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, pp. 386–387; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 23(k).

¹⁰ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 525.

¹¹ Peterson, “Unparliamentary Language,” p. 8; May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, p. 439.

¹² Shelley Russell, *From “Camouflage” to “Scabs”: An Analysis of Unparliamentary Language in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1906–1989* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1990), p. 14.

¹³ Fraser, Dawson, and Holtby, *Beauchesne's*, p. 142, s. 485(1); Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 22(1).

¹⁴ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *House of Commons Debates, 35th Parliament, 1st Session*, 8 December 1994, p. 8787.

¹⁵ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 527; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 24.

¹⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 24(2).

¹⁷ Peterson, “Unparliamentary Language,” p. 1; Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *House of Commons Debates, 37th Parliament, 2nd Session*, 27 November 2002, p. 1949.

¹⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 23.

¹⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 16th Legislature, 4th Session*, 18 February 1971, p. 124.

²⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 18th Legislature, 4th Session*, 8 March 1978, pp. 85, 104.







Hansard



Hansard is the official report of the debates of a parliament and its committees. Although considered an accurate, verbatim report of what is said in the House, typically some editing is permitted in order to correct grammatical errors and to minimize redundancy. The *Hansard* tradition began in the United Kingdom in the early-19th century, when William Cobbett produced the first record of Britain's parliamentary proceedings.¹ In 1812, printer Thomas Curson Hansard purchased Cobbett's publishing business, and the Hansard family continued to publish the proceedings of Parliament for close to a century.² During the 1830s, the Hansards were engaged in a protracted legal battle (*Stockdale v. Hansard*).³ Although the principle of parliamentary privilege protected Members against such legal actions, it was unclear whether private companies like the Hansards' should have similar protection. The Hansards lost several of these cases, but the House of Commons covered the cost of the judgments against them. The House eventually put an end to the lawsuits by passing the *Parliamentary Papers Act, 1840* that made both the proceedings of Parliament and any papers arising from the proceedings matters to which parliamentary privilege applies.⁴ Despite the subscriptions of Members, newspapers and clubs, the Hansard operation had to rely on subsidies from the House until it was sold in the late 1880s. In 1909, the United Kingdom Parliament dispensed with private contractors and began to publish in-house the official report of its proceedings.⁵ Although the Hansards no longer produced records of House proceedings, these records continued to bear the Hansard name, both in the United Kingdom* and throughout the Commonwealth.

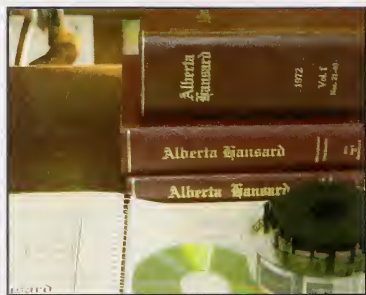
The reporting of the proceedings of Canada's Parliament began in 1875. As in the United Kingdom, these proceedings were published by private contractors. Over time this arrangement was found wanting, and the Canadian Parliament began producing an official *Hansard* in 1880.⁶ Although considered on a number of occasions, the publication of *Hansard* was not instituted in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta until 1972, later than in most other Canadian legislative assemblies.⁷ In 1919, the matter had been raised in the House as one of 'pressing importance and necessity' by George Hoadley, Conservative Member for Okotoks.⁸ Premier Charles Stewart (1917–1921) replied that he had been informed by telegram that a number of other Provinces did not have a *Hansard* and that "[a]s the cost would be considerable, and but comparatively few would require the reports when published, ... there was no necessity for [the] Legislative Assembly to have a *Hansard*."⁹

Prior to the publication of *Alberta Hansard*, other methods were employed to keep a record of the events and proceedings of the Legislative Assembly. Legislature Librarians in particular realized the importance of keeping a record of House proceedings. At the time, the most

* When the publication of proceedings was taken over by the House in 1909, it became the *Parliamentary Debates, Official Report*. It was not until 1943 that the Hansard name was officially resurrected and used once again in the title.

† At the time, although all provinces except Prince Edward Island and Alberta had begun to publish an official report of proceedings, the methods and level of comprehensiveness varied from province to province. For example, Newfoundland produced an official record, but it was an internal document and not published.





Alberta Hansard displayed in several formats at the Legislature Library.

comprehensive coverage of Legislative Assembly proceedings was found in newspapers, which library staff diligently clipped and indexed to compile *Scrapbook Hansard* in the North-West Territories from 1888¹⁰ to 1905, and in Alberta from 1906 to 1971. This early press coverage typically included more description and less commentary than is found in modern newspaper articles. In Alberta, *Scrapbook Hansard* consists of clippings, primarily from Edmonton and Calgary newspapers, pasted into a large album, then dated and indexed for ease of reference.

Newspaper articles often included detailed information on the proceedings of the House, including Members' statements and votes. At times, verbatim copies of speeches were included within the articles. Located at the Legislature Library, Alberta's collection is stored on microfilm for the years 1906 to 1964, and in print from 1965 to 1971. In 2002, the Legislature Library began to digitize *Scrapbook Hansard*.

In 1965, a sound amplification and recording system was installed in the Chamber to produce audiotapes of House proceedings.¹¹ These recordings were used by the Clerk's Office to transcribe speeches and debates in the Assembly. At first, only special proceedings, such as the throne speech, were transcribed. However, as demand for the service increased, a record of Question Period started to be transcribed on a regular basis. The increased demand for an accurate record of House proceedings came not only from Members, but also from the media. By 1971, there were so many requests for transcripts that, in order to meet the demand, everything that transpired in the House was automatically recorded and transcribed.¹² The audio proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta from February 1965 until April 1999 are housed at the Provincial Archives of Alberta.¹³

In 1972, *Hansard* officially became part of Alberta's legislative tradition when, on March 8 of that year, the Government introduced a motion to create and publish a complete record of Legislative Assembly proceedings, retroactive to March 2, 1972.¹⁴ The motion received wide support from both sides of the House.¹⁵ In the Speech from the Throne, Lieutenant Governor J. W. Grant MacEwan (1966–1974) described the significance of the proposed *Hansard*: “[T]his written record of proceedings will enable Albertans to receive, if they so desire, an accurate, up-to-date report on the manner in which issues affecting people in all walks of life and in all parts of the province are being dealt with by their M.L.A.’s.”¹⁶ In the 1974 fall sitting, Alberta *Hansard* began to produce and distribute the *Hansard* ‘Blues.’¹⁷ This is the unofficial copy of the

* Notably, remarks made by those Members not recognized by the Chair, and background noise, are not included unless needed to make sense of a subsequent remark by the Chair or a Member. Editorial comments are also added, if necessary.



debates, with preliminary editing.* The *Blues* are recorded and transcribed in five-minute segments, then delivered, typically within one and a half hours, to various locations around the Parliamentary Precincts, including the Legislature Library. In addition to the paper copy, Alberta's *Blues* are also available to Members and staff on the Assembly's internal computer network.¹⁸ Upon reviewing the transcription, Members may submit corrections for inaccuracies during a period of up to one hour after the *Blues* have been posted, unless the Speaker has given consent otherwise.[†] In submitting corrections, Members must be able to demonstrate to the Speaker either that their remarks have been misrepresented or that "the record of [their] remarks is manifestly erroneous."¹⁹ Members may not suggest changes that alter the "sense of anything that the member has been recorded as saying, nor shall the member be permitted to make any insertion nor strike out any passage which the member regrets having uttered."²⁰ The *Blues* also provide a reference for the Table Officers, who frequently require an immediate transcript of what was said when they need to advise the Speaker on a ruling.

Alberta Hansard is produced and distributed by the Legislative Assembly Office (LAO) under the authority of the Speaker. Guidelines for the production and editing of *Alberta Hansard* are outlined in Standing Orders 107 and 108, respectively.²¹ Research is an important aspect of producing *Hansard*. Whenever a Member mentions a name, a place, or the like, Hansard researchers must confirm that the correct form is entered into the record. To assist in the search and retrieval of records, the Hansard branch also produces a cumulative subject and speaker index for each Session of the Legislature.²² With the assistance of modern technology, Alberta Hansard staff is able to produce a final record of the Assembly's daily proceedings within 24 hours of a sitting.

During the 2003 fall sittings, Hansard staff moved from analog to digital recording of proceedings in the Legislative Assembly Chamber. This technology has significantly improved the quality of the audio and increased the efficiency of operations. In the past, staff worked with over 300 audio cassettes during one week, each passed in turn from recordist to input editor to copy editor to proofreader. Digital files have now replaced these cassettes, allowing for

* The term 'blues' is derived from "the printing tool known as blueline, a blue-toned print used to check the layout of elements on a page." Deirdre Grist, "Indexing Legislative Text: *Alberta Hansard*," *The Indexer* vol. 23, no. 3 (April 2003): p. 129.

† Informally, Hansard allows Members to submit corrections up to 10:00 p.m. that day for an afternoon sitting and up to 10:00 a.m. the following day for an evening sitting. Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office. Public Information Branch, Member's Suggested Corrections to the *Hansard Blues*, 2001, [Form], Alberta Legislature Library, Edmonton; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Order 108; Norman W. Wilding and Philip Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, 4th rev. ed. (London: Cassell, 1972), p. 141; Bryan Keith Lucas, *The Hansard Society: The First Forty Years* (London: Hansard Society for Parliamentary Government, 1984), p. 28. Formally, Standing Order 24a(5)(d) in the 1973 edition was the first to make the provision for corrections to *Alberta Hansard* (within 30 minutes of the adjournment of any sitting). It was Standing Order 108, effective January 1, 1984, that first made reference to the *Blues* and allowed for Members to make corrections within one hour of their posting. Improved technology currently allows Alberta Hansard staff to process requested changes more quickly, and a greater window of opportunity to request corrections is therefore available to Members.



significantly greater ease of access, with more than one person at a time now being able to access an audio segment from their computer workstations. For example, editors can now quickly transcribe a requested segment of audio and send it to the Table Officers without disrupting production.²³ *Alberta Hansard* is still produced in paper format, but can also be accessed and searched online on the Legislative Assembly of Alberta website.

Notes

¹ Norman W. Wilding and Philip Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, 4th rev. ed. (London: Cassell, 1972), p. 141; Bryan Keith Lucas, *The Hansard Society: The First Forty Years* (London: Hansard Society for Parliamentary Government, 1984), p. 28.

² Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 346.

³ J. P. Joseph Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada*, 2nd ed. (Montreal: McGill-Queen's University Press, 1997), pp. 281–285. Maingot provides a concise summary of the actions in his book.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 52; Terry Moore and James Robertson, “An Introduction to Parliamentary Privilege,” *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 24, no. 3 (Fall 2001): p. 19.

⁵ Lucas, *The Hansard Society: The First Forty Years*, pp. 28–29; Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), pp. 258–259.

⁶ Marc Bosc, “The Commons Then and Now: Before *Hansard*,” *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 11, no. 3 (Autumn 1988): p. 32; Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), p. 966.

⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. *Hansard, Alberta Hansard Annual Report, 1972* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1973), p. [3]; J. Peter Swann, *A Report Relating to the Publication of the Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1972), p. 2, Appendix B; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. LXXVIII, 8 March 1972, pp. 28–30.

⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 4th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. XV, 5 February 1919, p. 11.

⁹ *Ibid.*, 6 February 1919, p. 13; *Ibid.*, 5 February 1919, p. 11.

¹⁰ “Local News,” *Regina Leader*, 18 December 1888, p. 8.

¹¹ Swann, *A Report Relating to the Publication of the Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta*, p. 13; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 15th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. LXIX, 12 March 1964, pp. 61–63.

¹² “A Sound Decision,” *The Story of Alberta Hansard*, [Internet], (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, updated 7 May 2001), accessed 7 June 2004, available from http://www.assembly.ab.ca/lao/piib/hansard_AB_history3.htm; Swann, *A Report Relating to the Publication of the Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta*, pp. 13–14.

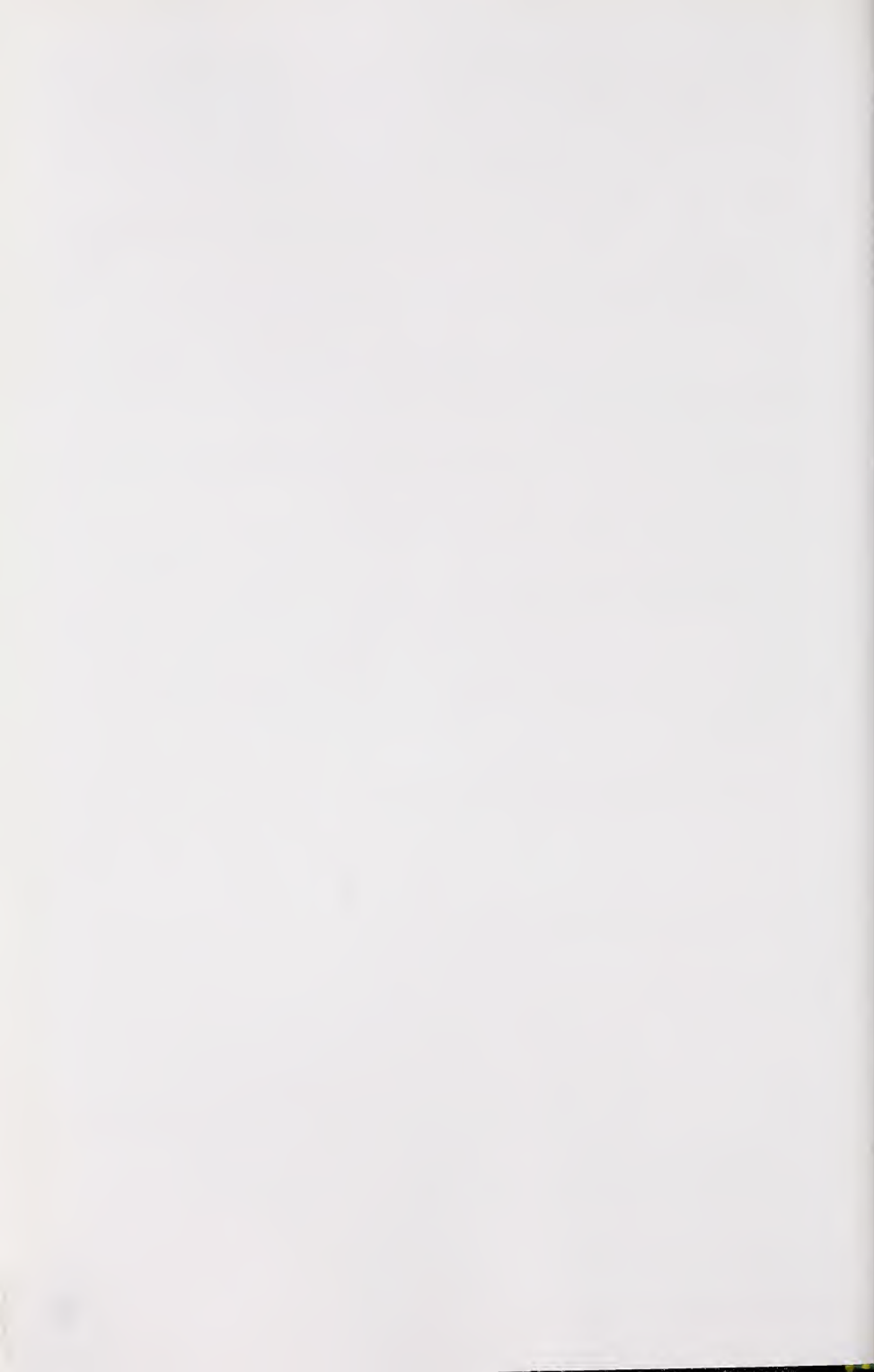
¹³ E-mail from Sharry Watson, Government Records Archivist, Government Records and Preservation Services, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, 27 August 2003.

¹⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, 8 March 1972, pp. 28–30.

¹⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, 8 March 1972, pp. 5–27, 5–35.

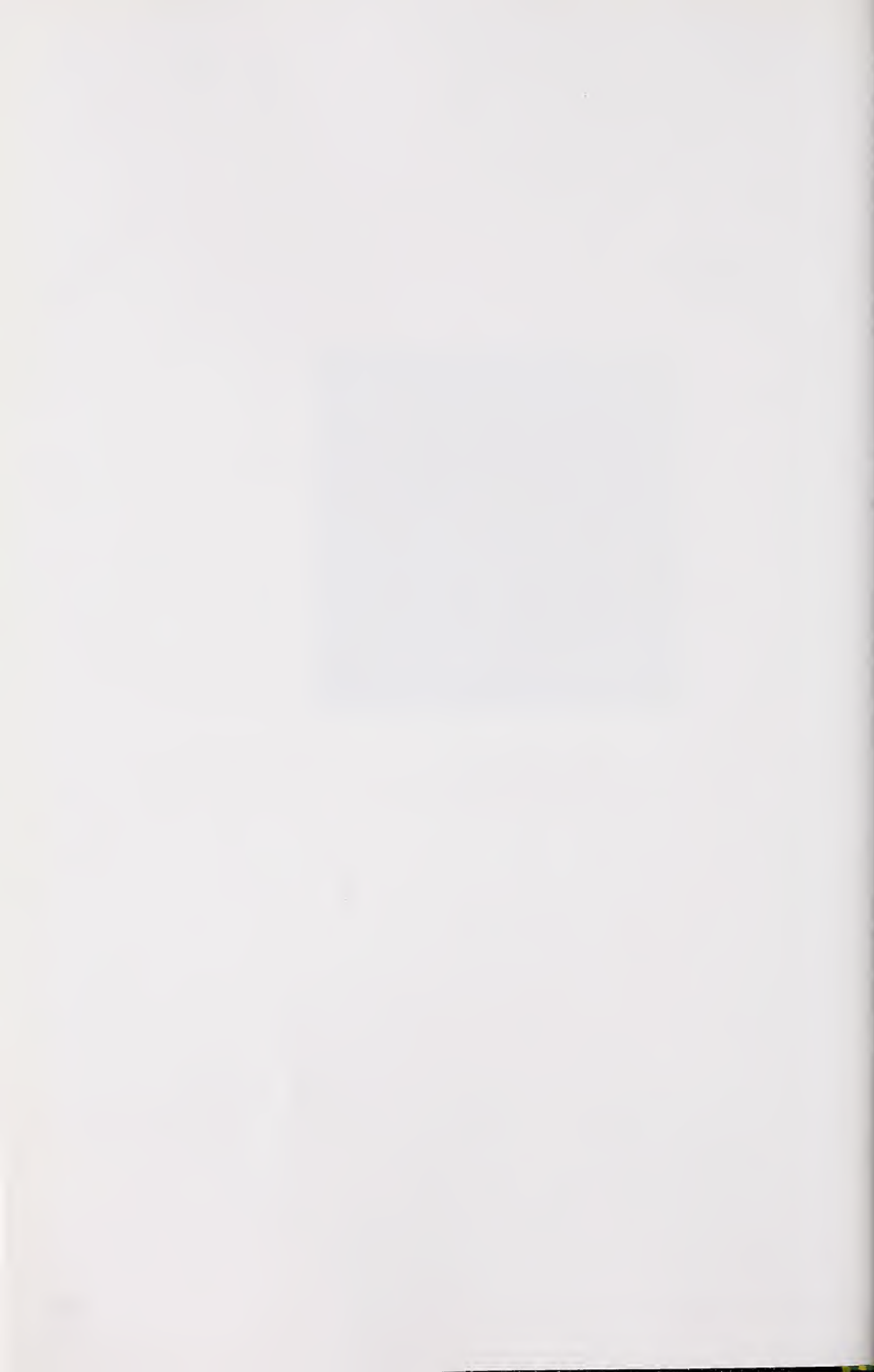
- ¹⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, 2 March 1972, p. 5.
- ¹⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. *Hansard, Alberta Hansard Annual Report* (Edmonton: Alberta Legislative Assembly, 1974/75), p. 2.
- ¹⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office. Public Information Branch, Member's Suggested Corrections to *Hansard Blues*, 2001, [Form], Alberta Legislature Library, Edmonton.
- ¹⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Order 108(e).
- ²⁰ Ibid.
- ²¹ Ibid., Standing Orders 107–108.
- ²² Deirdre Grist, "Indexing Legislative Text: *Alberta Hansard*," *The Indexer* vol. 23, no. 3 (April 2003): p. 129; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide: Information for Members on Indemnities, Benefits, Allowances, Services, House Procedure and Interparliamentary Relations* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, October 2004), s. 69.5.
- ²³ E-mail from Vivian Loosemore, Public Information Branch, Legislative Assembly Office, Edmonton, 6 May 2004.







Broadcasting of Proceedings



BROADCASTING OF PROCEEDINGS

In 1972, the Legislative Assembly of Alberta began to allow its proceedings to be recorded and broadcast on a permanent basis, making it the first amongst its federal and provincial counterparts in Canada to do so.*¹ Prior to this time, the broadcasting of Assembly proceedings had been considered, but concerns about what effect the coverage might have on the conduct of Members and on House business resulted in little support for these proposals. Specific concerns involved the cost of broadcasting the proceedings, the potential for statements or excerpts to be taken out of context or presented irresponsibly, the concern about the legal implications for parliamentary privilege, unease about potential grandstanding by Members and the possibility that an uncomplimentary image of Members or the Assembly would result.² Broadcasting was considered as early as the 1930s. For example, in February 1935, George Hoadley, Member for Okotoks-High River, Minister of Health and Minister of Railways and Telephones, tabled a plan for radio broadcasting of the proceedings of the Legislative Assembly.³ On occasion, the Assembly would consent to having the proceedings broadcast for a particular event. In 1937, for example, when the Legislative Assembly was unable to meet the large number of requests it received for the accommodation of spectators during the opening of the Legislature, radio station CJCA was permitted to broadcast the events of February 25, 1937, the opening of the Third Session of the Eighth Legislature.⁴

During the late 1960s and early 1970s, the Legislative Assembly conducted a variety of experiments and studies on the feasibility and propriety of allowing television and sound recordings of the debates in the Chamber. On February 27, 1969, Donald R. Getty, Member for Strathcona West and future Premier (1985–1992), moved that there be an amendment to the *Standing Orders*, allowing radio and television coverage of Session. After some debate, the motion was referred to the *Standing Committee on Privileges and Elections*.⁵ On April 9, 1969, the Committee reported, asking the Assembly to consider its recommendation that the media be invited to record an afternoon of proceedings by audio, video or photograph “for research purposes only and on the clear understanding that none of the material obtained be broadcast without permission of the Legislature.”⁶ It also requested that the recordings be turned over to the Legislative Assembly through the Speaker’s Office. Although the motion reiterating the Committee’s recommendation was carried on April 16, on May 2 the Committee asked that the issue be raised again in the next Session for further investigation and that the Speaker “consider the merit of inviting a media representative to televise one full day’s proceedings of the House, and take appropriate action accordingly.”⁷ On April 9, 1970, Speaker Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972), with the consent of the House, agreed to permit the CBC’s Edmonton television station to broadcast Assembly proceedings for two days in the following week in order to test the

* ‘Gavel-to-gavel’ broadcasting of Canadian federal parliamentary proceedings began in 1977. Prior to that time, only special occasions and events had been broadcast.

† According to Jack Haggerman of radio station CKUA, he broadcast the opening of the Legislature and Speech from the Throne on CKUA in 1951, and Jim Edwards (Member of Parliament for Edmonton South and Edmonton Southwest, 1984–1993) also broadcast like events. CKUA also broadcast the budget address on a number of occasions in the early 1950s.



potential for further broadcasting privileges. An additional purpose of this exercise was to provide an educational documentary of the procedures of the House. There was a clear understanding that the film would not be used 'for news purposes'.⁸ At the time, no parliament in Canada allowed regular televised broadcasts of parliamentary proceedings. Nova Scotia was the only jurisdiction in Canada to have conducted tests of broadcasting prior to Alberta's experiment.⁹



Lieutenant Governor J.P. Page reads Speech from the Throne, which is broadcast on the radio (February 11, 1960). Speaker P. Dawson stands beside the Chair.

The opening of the 17th Legislature was broadcast by the CTV network, carried in Edmonton on CFRN-TV and in Calgary on CFCN-TV.¹⁰ During the Speech from the Throne on March 2, 1972, it was announced that, as part of the Progressive Conservative Government's program of 'open government,' proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta would soon be televised. The intent was that with the introduction of broadcast proceedings, "Alberta citizens ... should be able to better understand and add their voices to the discussion of issues that are being debated and considered."¹¹ One week later, on March 9, a related resolution was introduced by Louis D. Hyndman, Member for Edmonton-Glenora and Minister of Education (1971-1975), and carried with the support of all political parties represented in the Legislative Assembly. This motion

allowed the media to record and broadcast the proceedings by audio or video, newspaper photographers to take still photographs, and anyone seated in the galleries to take notes or tape-record the proceedings, all under the guidance and advice of the Speaker.¹² Alberta Public Works quickly began the necessary renovations to accommodate television cameras and other recording devices in the Chamber, and by mid-month Legislative Assembly proceedings were being regularly televised. Immediate changes to the Chamber included new wiring and the installation of two platforms for television cameras on the Opposition side of the House. The locations of the platforms did not meet with the approval of the Opposition Members because they allowed for an excellent view of the Government benches, while Opposition Members were seen only from behind.¹³ These renovations were the only costs to the Legislative Assembly associated with the broadcasting of proceedings; all other costs, such as staff and equipment, were covered by participating media outlets.¹⁴

On March 15, 1972, regularly televised live coverage of the proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta began.¹⁵ Only Friday Question Period, and a summary of the week's proceedings on the following Sunday afternoons, were televised regularly until October 11, 1978, when gavel-to-gavel broadcasting began to be provided by QCTV.¹⁶ Eventually, coverage was reduced to include only Question Period, which remains the current practice.¹⁷

* The Government felt that it was not its responsibility to direct the television companies in this regard. The stations were free to choose what they televised. D. Blake McDougall, Assistant Deputy Minister/Legislature Librarian, "Televising Alberta's Legislative Proceedings," [Internal Document], 4 October 1990, Alberta Legislature Library, Edmonton, p. 1.

Reaction to the first broadcasts of Legislative proceedings was mixed. Although there were no significant problems,¹⁸ opinions differed as to the success of the broadcasts. Some commentators found the coverage dry and suggested that having an announcer or narrator would be an appropriate way to provide information and explanation throughout the proceedings.¹⁹ Others felt that the 'electronic Hansard' style, meaning a commercial-free format and lack of commentary, was well-suited to the material being broadcast.²⁰ Reports quickly concluded that many of the concerns, which had caused politicians and government administrators to oppose the broadcasting of legislative proceedings, were proven to be unwarranted. Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986) was said to have described the broadcasting as "a decided success,"²¹ maintaining that there was "no disruption of house proceedings."²² *Edmonton Journal* editorials held that "fears about TV in the House [were] groundless,"²³ and that there was "basically no more grandstanding than ha[d] always existed."²⁴ Some politicians expressed concern that the coverage would limit their freedom of expression in the Legislative Assembly and make them vulnerable to lawsuits;²⁵ however, the tradition of parliamentary privilege has prevented such legal problems.

In Nova Scotia, the filming of Legislative proceedings became an issue when a request by a New Brunswick broadcaster to film the proceedings of the Nova Scotia House of Assembly with its own cameras was denied by Speaker Arthur R. Donahoe (1981–1991). Donahoe refused the request on the basis that this action could disrupt proceedings and that the Assembly would have no control over the production or use of the resultant recordings. The case, *New Brunswick Broadcasting v. Nova Scotia (Speaker)*, was brought to court. In 1993, the Supreme Court of Canada supported the Speaker's decision, ruling that the Assembly had the inherent right to control its internal proceedings, exclude strangers and control the publication of its debates and proceedings.²⁶

Some observers now suggest that concerns about Members' grandstanding in front of the cameras have also proved largely unfounded. If anything, Members are merely more "image conscious. Rambling speeches might get by in the Assembly, but politicians [have] had to master the short clip to be a face on the evening news."²⁷ The primary drawback of televising the proceedings is often identified as the "over-emphasis on Question Period."²⁸ While some opposition may still exist today, televised proceedings are now considered a necessary part of Canada's democracy and an important component of open government.²⁹

Since 1965, when a recording system was first installed,³⁰ the Alberta Legislature Chamber has had several renovations to allow for technological upgrades. In the fall of 1976, a new sound system was installed and in operation for the fall sitting.³¹ In 1986–87, the Legislature Building underwent the first major refurbishment and renovation since 1970. These renovations, which

* According to Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen, "Question Period is nothing more than a media event. It's much more effective to stick to the business of the House and avoid personal attacks. I was constantly badgered for depriving the media of easy stories. It's easier to write up a riot." Frank Joseph Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration* (Edmonton: Plains Publishing, 1987), p. 48. Speaker David J. Carter (1986–1993) suggests, "To only cover QP allows a distortion of a parliamentary day." David John Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.



took place under the direction of Speaker David J. Carter, were occasioned in part by the celebration of the 75th anniversary of the Building's official opening.³² The Chamber saw significant changes. Its walls became bright white in colour, and the vibrant red carpet, traditional for an upper house, was replaced with subdued green carpeting in keeping with the colour scheme in the Houses of Commons of Canada and the United Kingdom. Mahogany paneling was added to the walls, and new chairs were purchased.³³ The interior design choices made for the Chamber also enhanced the production quality of the televised proceedings.³⁴ In 1995, "the spring sittings were closed captioned for the first time and remote cameras replaced the Chamber camera crew."³⁵



Television cameras broadcast the Opening of the 17th Legislature (March 2, 1972). Cropped photo.

When problems do arise with the behaviour of Members, media, or other visitors to the Assembly, the Speaker has been given the discretionary powers to control the situation through provisions found in the *Standing Orders*. Standing Order 110 further endows the Speaker with the authority to set conditions for the broadcast, recording and photographing of proceedings in the Chamber.³⁶ Despite the broad range of powers granted to the Speaker under this rule, media coverage of Legislative proceedings in Alberta is largely unrestricted. Broadcasting outlets have been allowed to make decisions on editing and commentary. The very few constraints placed on the media include prohibitions on close-ups of documents and papers on Members' desks³⁷ and the limiting of coverage to the floor of the Chamber.³⁸ Two exceptions to these restrictions on camera angles are that wide-angle shots of the Chamber as a whole, and of the galleries during the introduction of visitors and guests, are permitted.³⁹

Should any member of the media fail to comply with the limitations imposed by the Speaker, the consequences can be significant. One recent example of the authority of the Speaker to manage broadcasting from the Chamber involved the Canadian Broadcasting Corporation (CBC). In May 2000, the CBC was among the media covering the debates on the health-care reforms proposed by Bill 11. During the debates, some visitors in the galleries attempted to protest the Bill by engaging in unruly behaviour. The demonstration culminated in one protester hanging over the railing of the Public Gallery. At that point, protesters were removed from the Chamber.

Despite instructions from the Sergeant-at-Arms indicating that coverage in the Chamber was to be restricted to Members' speeches, the CBC opted to air footage of the protestors in the Gallery.

* Prior to this, cameras had been situated on the floor of the House and had been the subject of much debate regarding the amount of space used and the disturbances caused by this arrangement.

† According to Sergeant-at-Arms Brian Hodgson (1993–), while this is not stated explicitly in the "Press Gallery Protocols," this is the ultimate aim of the rule to exclude cameras with telephoto lenses longer than 400mm. Personal communication with Brian Hodgson, Sergeant-at-Arms, Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 8 April 2004; Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, Press Gallery Protocols, April 2000.

In response to the CBC's refusal to comply, based on a recommendation from the Sergeant-at-Arms, who is responsible for security in the Chamber, the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–) prohibited CBC cameras from filming in the Chamber for the remainder of the year.⁴⁰

Despite some challenges, broadcast coverage of parliamentary proceedings has become more common, both in Alberta and throughout Canada. All other provincial Legislative Assemblies and the federal House of Commons have opened their doors to various forms of coverage of their proceedings, including television broadcasts and live webcasting. Today, in Alberta, broadcasting from the Chamber now includes live streaming audio (gavel-to-gavel coverage) and video (Question Period) on the Internet when the Legislative Assembly is sitting.* Increased public access to the democratic process through the broadcasting of proceedings has become a standard practice throughout the Commonwealth. In February 2003, a study group of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association (CPA), which comprised parliamentarians with particular expertise in parliamentary procedure and media law, published "Recommendations for an Informed Democracy." In recognizing the importance of access to the proceedings, the group outlined the need for parliaments to provide "access and services to the media to facilitate their coverage of proceedings," suggested flexible guidelines for electronic coverage, and encouraged parliaments to "provide live coverage of their proceedings on a dedicated channel and/or online."⁴¹

* Closed-captioning is also available on the video stream of Question Period.

Notes

¹ D. Blake McDougall, Assistant Deputy Minister/Legislature Librarian, "Televising Alberta's Legislative Proceedings," [Internal Document], 4 October 1990, Alberta Legislature Library, Edmonton, p. 1; John Lindblad, "No Bloopers in Session Televising," *Edmonton Journal*, 16 March 1972, p. 57; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. LXXVIII, 9 March 1972, p. 36.

² Guy Demarino, "House and Office Television Runs Into Critics," *Edmonton Journal*, 31 March 1971, p. 4; J. Peter Swann, *A Report Relating to the Publication of the Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1972), pp. 2, 21, 24; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, 9 March 1972, p. 6–62.

³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 7th Legislature, 5th Session*, vol. XXXII, 13 February 1935, p. 31; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, "Report of Plan for Broadcasting the Proceedings of the Legislature," *Sessional Paper*, no. 43/35, 13 February 1935.

⁴ "To Broadcast House Opening on Thursday: Widespread Interest Dictates Unprecedented Policy," *Calgary Albertan*, 25 February 1937, p. 1.

⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 16th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. LXXV, 27 February 1969, pp. 54–55.

⁶ *Ibid.*, 9 April 1969, p. 122.

⁷ *Ibid.*, 16 April 1969, p. 136; *Ibid.*, 2 May 1969, p. 175.



⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 16th Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. LXXVI, 9 April 1970, pp. 162–163.

⁹ McDougall, “Televising Alberta’s Legislative Proceedings,” p. 1.

¹⁰ “Legislature Opening Televised,” *Edmonton Journal*, 29 February 1972, p. 60; [Photograph of Legislative Assembly Opening], 3 March 1972, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, J-797/5; “Gov’t Assists TV Coverage of Legislature,” *Edmonton Journal*, 8 April 1972, pp. 1, 7; Lindblad, “No Bloopers in Session Televising,” p. 57; Keith Ashwell, “... But Little Drama,” *Edmonton Journal*, 16 March 1972, p. 57.

¹¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, 2 March 1972, p. 5.

¹² Ibid., 9 March 1972, p. 36; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, 9 March 1972, p. 6–65.

¹³ McDougall, “Televising Alberta’s Legislative Proceedings,” p. 1; Lindblad, “No Bloopers in Session Televising,” p. 57.

¹⁴ McDougall, “Televising Alberta’s Legislative Proceedings,” p. 1; Members’ Services Committee, Minutes—Members’ Services Committee Meeting No. 22, 25 October 1978, p. 3.

¹⁵ Lindblad, “No Bloopers in Session Televising,” p. 57.

¹⁶ Members’ Services Committee, Minutes—Members’ Services Committee Meeting No. 22, p. 2.

¹⁷ McDougall, “Televising Alberta’s Legislative Proceedings,” p. 1; “Gov’t Assists TV Coverage of Legislature,” p. 1; Lindblad, “No Bloopers in Session Televising,” p. 57.

¹⁸ Lindblad, “No Bloopers in Session Televising,” p. 57.

¹⁹ Keith Ashwell, “... But Little Drama,” *Edmonton Journal*, 16 March 1972, p. 57.

²⁰ James R. Robertson, *Television and the House of Commons*, Background Paper; BP-242E (Ottawa: Library of Parliament Research Branch., 1998), p. 2; Munroe MacLeod, “TV In House,” [Letter to the Editor], *Edmonton Journal*, 29 March 1972, p. 4.

²¹ “Legislature Broadcasting ‘Successful’,” *Edmonton Journal*, 12 September 1972, p. 48.

²² Ibid.

²³ “Televis Parliament,” [Editorial], *Edmonton Journal*, 16 January 1973, p. 1.

²⁴ “Role for TV,” [Editorial], *Edmonton Journal*, 17 June 1972, p. 4; “Televis Parliament,” p. 1.

²⁵ Frank Joseph Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration* (Edmonton: Plains Publishing Inc., 1987), p. 35.

²⁶ *New Brunswick Broadcasting Co. v. Nova Scotia (Speaker of the House of Assembly)*, [1993] 1 S.C.R. 319; Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), p. 979n99; J. P. Joseph Maingot, *Parliamentary Privilege in Canada*, 2nd ed. (Montreal: McGill-Queen’s University Press, 1997), pp. 306–318.

²⁷ Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 84.

²⁸ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Standing Committee on Elections Privileges Procedure and Private Members’ Business and Chuck Cook, Chairman, *Watching The House At Work: The Ninth Report of the Standing Committee on Elections, Privileges, Procedure and Private Members’ Business* (Ottawa: House of Commons, 1989), p. 7.

²⁹ Robertson, *Television and the House of Commons*, p. 2.

³⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 15th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. LXIX, 12 March 1964, pp. 61–63; Swann, *A Report Relating to the Publication of the Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta*, p. 13; “A Sound Decision,” *The Story of Alberta Hansard*, [Internet], (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta), accessed 15 December 2004, available from http://www.assembly.ab.ca/lao/pib/hansard_AB_history3.htm

³¹ Select Committee on Members’ Services, Minutes—Select Committee on Members’ Services, 15 March 1976, p. 1; Alberta. Legislative Assembly. *Hansard, Alberta Hansard Annual Report, 1974/75* (Edmonton: Alberta Legislative Assembly, [1976]), p. 3; Alberta. Legislative Assembly. *Hansard, Alberta Hansard Annual Report, 1976* (Edmonton: Alberta Legislative Assembly, 1977), p. 5.

³² Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 37.

³³ David John Carter, [Refurbished Chamber of the Alberta Legislature], 5 March 1987, [Internal Memorandum]; Moragh Macauley, “The 75th Anniversary of Alberta’s Legislative Building,” *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 10, no. 3 (Autumn 1987): p. 7.

³⁴ Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 37; Macauley, “The 75th Anniversary of Alberta’s Legislative Building,” p. 7.

³⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office 1995 Annual Report* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 1996), pp. 1–2.

³⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Order 110.

³⁷ McDougall, “Televising Alberta’s Legislative Proceedings,” p. 1.

³⁸ Neil Waugh, “CBC-TV Breaks Rules and Gets Tossed,” [Editorial], *Edmonton Sun*, 7 July 2000, p. 11; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, Press Gallery Protocols, April 2000.

³⁹ Commonwealth Parliamentary Association. Parliamentary Information and Reference Centre, *Broadcasting Commonwealth Parliaments* (London: Commonwealth Parliamentary Association, 2003), p. 91.

⁴⁰ Waugh, “CBC-TV Breaks Rules and Gets Tossed,” p. 11; “TV Cameras Booted From Legislature,” *Calgary Herald*, 16 April 1987; Robert Reynolds, “Alberta [Summary of Legislature Activity],” *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 23, no. 3 (Autumn 2000): p. 43.

⁴¹ Commonwealth Parliamentary Association. Parliamentary Information and Reference Centre, *Broadcasting Commonwealth Parliaments*, p. iv.







Galleries



Parliament has the right to conduct its proceedings in private and therefore the authority to determine who has access to the Chamber. In the United Kingdom (UK), strangers were barred from the House of Commons Chamber by sessional order* until 1845, although in practice they were “tolerated in areas not appropriated to the exclusive use of Members.”¹ The first permanent debating Chamber of the English Parliament, provided by King Edward VI (1547–1553), was St. Stephen’s Chapel. In the 1690s, during the renovations to the House of Commons directed by Sir Christopher Wren, galleries were installed along the walls of St. Stephen’s.² Spectators were seated in these galleries overlooking the floor of the Chamber. In 1778, women were banned from the Chamber and relegated to watching the proceedings through an iron grate in the ceiling, above a chandelier.³ In the new Chamber built after St. Stephen’s was destroyed by fire in 1834,[†] the first row of seats in the Strangers’ Gallery over the Speaker’s Chair was reserved for reporters,[‡] the subsequent rows for women. This area was partitioned off and screened by a brass grille.⁴ Women were again excluded from the galleries between 1888 and 1909,[§] but in 1918, the grilles were removed, and women were allowed to occupy the general seating of the Strangers’ Gallery.⁵ The gallery opposite the Speaker’s Chair, above the main entrance, was deemed the Strangers’ Gallery and intended for the public, with reserved seating for invited guests and dignitaries.⁶ Today, the galleries include areas designated as the Reporters’ Gallery, the Strangers’ Gallery and the Gallery for “peers, foreign and Commonwealth representatives and distinguished strangers.”⁷ The Speaker and the Sergeant-at-Arms are both allotted private galleries. Within the Chamber, there is also a box reserved for government department officials who support Ministers during questions and debate.⁸ The galleries along the length of the Chamber are reserved for Members as the Chamber seats only 350, whereas there are currently 646 Members of Parliament.⁹

Although rarely done, should the Parliament wish to conduct the proceedings in secret,** it may do so by first ‘tak[ing] notice that strangers are present.’¹⁰ Until 1875, the galleries were cleared immediately once a Member took notice of strangers, with no motion necessary. From 1875 to 1998, the UK *Standing Orders* stated that when a Member rose and said, ‘Mr. Speaker, I spy

* Sessional orders are those regulations governing procedure in the House that are renewed at the commencement of each Session.

† When St. Stephen’s was destroyed by fire in 1834, the Commons moved to the Court of Requests, previously occupied by the House of Lords. A new Chamber, designed by Sir Charles Barry, opened in 1852, but was destroyed by German bombing during the Second World War. Parliament was temporarily housed in Church House, and then moved once again to the former meeting place of the House of Lords until the current Chamber in Westminster Palace opened in 1950.

‡ It was not until 1835 that a Press Gallery was made available in the temporary House of Commons Chamber. With the completion of the new Parliament building in 1852, reporters no longer had to sit with the general public and were provided with a gallery for their exclusive use.

§ This was in part due to their vocal support of the female suffrage movement during the proceedings.

** The Parliament of the United Kingdom held secret Sessions during both the First and Second World Wars.



strangers,' the Speaker put the question, with no amendment or debate allowed, as to whether the strangers would be ordered to withdraw.¹¹ If agreed to, the galleries were cleared and Hansard reporters vacated the Chamber. The Table Officers, the Sergeant-at-Arms and various other officials remained.¹² After 1998, this procedure was no longer followed.

The galleries in the Canadian House of Commons can accommodate in excess of 500 individuals.¹³ Above and behind the Speaker's Chair is the Press Gallery, and behind that is a Public Gallery. Directly across from these galleries, facing the Chair, are the Public Gallery and the Ladies' Gallery. In the latter, the first row is reserved for diplomats and distinguished guests; the remaining rows are available for the visiting public. To the left of the Speaker, facing the Government, are galleries reserved for Senators and their guests, guests of the Speaker and Prime Minister, and guests of Government Members. To the right of the Speaker, facing the Opposition, are galleries for: departmental officials, guests of the Leader of the Opposition, guests of Members of the Official Opposition and guests of Members of other opposition parties.¹⁴ In Canada's Parliament, the Speaker has the discretionary power to order the withdrawal of strangers, a power typically used to curb disruptive behavior and maintain order and decorum.*¹⁵ At the time of Confederation, each individual Member had the power to clear the galleries. In 1876, reflecting the change of practice in the House of Commons of the United Kingdom, the *Standing Orders* were amended so that a motion was required to order strangers to withdraw.¹⁶

The Chamber of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta includes four galleries: the Public Gallery, the Members' Gallery, the Press Gallery and the Speaker's Gallery. In 1906, at the Opening Session of the First Legislature in the Thistle Rink,† those who received special invitations to the opening were ushered to their seats, nearest the Speaker's Chair, first, then the remainder of the galleries were filled. Subsequent proceedings took place in McKay Avenue School, where a seating area for the public, termed the 'visitor's gallery,' was partitioned off from the Members by a railing.¹⁷ Newspaper coverage of the first Opening Session to take place at McKay Avenue School in January 1907 describes the hall as "crowded to its full capacity, many lining the stairs in an endeavor to see the proceedings."¹⁸ There was a Ladies' Gallery, with the "fair ones of the city, their bright dresses adding to the picturesqueness of the picture," and a Speaker's Gallery, filled with local officials and dignitaries.¹⁹ In 1908, the Assembly moved to a temporary Legislature Building, an annex next to the Terrace Building on 96th Avenue and 106th Street.²⁰ The Ladies' and Speaker's Galleries were made up of single rows lining either side of the hall and were described as 'particularly small,' whereas the Public Gallery, "at the rear of the hall and in front of the Speaker," was larger.²¹ The galleries of today's Legislature Building, opened in 1911, are one storey above the floor of the Chamber, overlooking the proceedings. During the early part of the 20th century, for the Speech from the Throne, seats were typically provided on the

* The Canadian House of Commons may clear strangers from the galleries to conduct a secret Session although it has done so on only four occasions, during the First and Second World Wars.

† Until the Legislature Building was built, the Legislative Assembly of Alberta had temporary quarters in McKay Avenue School. However, these facilities were not large enough to accommodate guests at the opening of the First Session of the First Legislature, so the Opening Session was held at the Thistle Rink.

floor of the House for the public. However, in 1922, this seating was limited to “wives of the members, wives of visiting federal members, of supreme court judges, and senators,” while all of the galleries were opened to the general public.²² To this day, during the Speech from the Throne, seating for invited guests is provided on the floor of the House.

The Sergeant-at-Arms is responsible for security and order in the galleries.²³ In 1911, a Special House Committee recommended that there be one doorkeeper appointed for the Members’ Gallery and another for the Speaker’s and Public Galleries.²⁴ Today, these functions are performed by security staff. In the parliamentary tradition, Standing Order 14 states that if any Member takes ‘notice’ that strangers are present, the Member may make a motion, with no amendments or debate, that the strangers be ordered to withdraw. The Speaker may order this directly.* If the order is not obeyed, the offender may be taken into custody.²⁵ The rules regarding the withdrawal and custody of strangers have remained largely unchanged since 1906. The more detailed *Standing Orders* of 1916 name the four galleries and state that those visitors and guests in the galleries must remain silent, that men must remove their hats while in the galleries, and that “[n]o person shall read any book, document, or newspaper, or exhibit or use the same.”²⁶ Today the rules that apply to all visitors in the galleries include:

- Visitors should refrain from applauding or speaking out loud while in the Chamber;
- Entering and leaving the galleries should be done as quietly as possible;
- Smoking, drinking and eating are not permitted in the galleries;
- Visitors are not permitted to bring briefcases, parcels, signs or other objects, including reading material, into the galleries;
- Like the Members on the floor, visitors in the galleries should rise and remain standing from the beginning of the Speaker’s Procession to the end of the prayers;
- When the Speaker is standing, all visitors should remain in their places;²⁷ and
- Cellular phones, pagers and cameras are not allowed in the galleries and therefore must be left at the security desk.

The introduction of visitors observing the proceedings from the galleries is one of the first orders of the day, after the singing of the national anthem.²⁸ Visitors seated in the Speaker’s Gallery are introduced first by the Speaker, a Minister or designated Member. Members then introduce guests in the Members’ and Public Galleries, often school groups or constituents. These introductions are made in a non-partisan manner.²⁹

Members’ and Public Galleries

Within the Members’ Gallery, the first two centre rows (19 seats) are reserved for guests of Government Members, while the first two centre rows in the Public Gallery (19 seats) are reserved for guests of the Opposition. In this way, guests are able to see those who invited them, and the Members can see their guests when introducing them. The Public Gallery, which has a total seating capacity of 108, has seats reserved for seven Opposition staff and one Hansard staff member. The staff member from Hansard interviews guests who have been introduced to the

* While no record has been found of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta ever having cleared the galleries for a secret Session, Speaker David J. Carter (1986–1993) did call out, “Strangers, clear the House” on March 27, 1991 in order to have protesters removed and taken into custody.



Assembly in order to confirm the spelling of their names and any other such information that will be recorded in *Hansard*. The remaining 81 seats are allotted to public spectators and two tour guides. In the Members' Gallery, out of the total seating capacity of 109, 29 seats are reserved for Ministerial and government caucus staff and the remaining 61 seats are reserved for the public and one tour guide. On any given day security staff will adjust this formal seating plan to allow for overflow in certain areas or for unexpected spectators.³⁰

Speaker's Gallery

The Speaker's Gallery is located at the north end of the Chamber directly across from the Press Gallery and the Speaker's Chair. The Gallery contains a single row of chairs with the capacity to seat 23 visitors. Two seats are reserved for Hansard staff and two for staff from the Speaker's office, with the remainder for visitors.³¹ After renovations in 1987, the sound system technician and console operator were moved from a corner of the Press Gallery behind the Speaker's Chair to the Speaker's Gallery, above the clock.³² In the previous location, the sound technician, who controls the Members' microphones, could not see the Speaker. The new location helps the technician keep pace with the flow of debate. These renovations also made the galleries wheelchair accessible.³³

Visitors are admitted to the Speaker's Gallery with the permission of the Speaker. Before entering, these invited visitors are met by a representative from the Speaker's Office and escorted to the Gallery, without being subject to the metal-detectors and other security precautions experienced by other visitors.³⁴ When the Legislative Assembly is sitting, the door to the Speaker's Gallery is locked to ensure that only invited visitors enter the Gallery, but the door can be opened from inside allowing guests to leave at any time.³⁵ Visitors to the Speaker's Gallery are often individuals of public stature such as consuls general, ambassadors, high commissioners and visiting parliamentarians.

Press Gallery

In the United Kingdom, as far back as 1803, Speaker Charles Abbot (1802–1817) reserved special seats for the press in the Public Gallery of Parliament. The first gallery exclusively for the use of the press was made available in 1835.³⁶ In 1867, Canada's new Parliament Buildings had a Press Gallery in both the House of Commons and the Senate, and designated entrances and rooms for reporters. Over time, work space, a lounge and several assistants, including a Page, were provided.³⁷

Three newspaper reporters attended the Opening Session of the First Legislature of the North-West Territories in 1888. In the Regina hall where the Assembly met, a writing desk and long bench were provided to reporters outside a railing that separated Members from onlookers.³⁸ In 1910, when the Legislative Assembly of Alberta sat in the annex next to the Terrace Building, the Press Gallery was located above the Speaker's Chair. In that year, the Press Gallery Association boasted eight charter members including Provincial Librarian* John Blue, who acted as secretary,

* Provincial Librarian was the title of the Legislature Librarian until 1974.

and Speaker Charles W. Fisher (1906–1919), who was named honorary president. Any “active newspaper man coming to the galleries during session” was eligible for membership in the Association.³⁹

Today in Alberta's Legislature Building, the Press Gallery is located one storey above the floor of the Chamber, and immediately behind the Speaker's Chair. This Gallery has 22 seats allotted to media and a counter for reporters to use when making notes during Assembly proceedings. As media technology evolved, refurbishments such as the addition of electrical outlets were made to the Gallery to facilitate tape-recording of the proceedings.⁴⁰ While reporters do not have access to phone lines, they are permitted to bring laptop computers into the Gallery.⁴¹ The reporters who occupy the Gallery and cover the business of the Legislative Assembly on a regular basis are referred to as the Press Gallery and as such belong to an independent association.

The Press Gallery and media facilities have changed over the province's history. Workspace has been provided to the media in the Legislature Building since 1911. In the 1970s, many legislature television and radio reporters were moved from the workroom behind the Press Gallery to alternate locations in the basement and on the fifth floor of the Building. However, by 1987, when the Chamber and other areas of the Building were renovated, significant changes were needed, and the press was moved to offices on the first floor, their current location.⁴²

The 1916 edition of the *Standing Orders* provided for a gallery and other rooms, under the direction of the Speaker, strictly for the use of the press.⁴³ The current *Standing Orders* continue to make provision for media attendance and the recording and coverage of Assembly proceedings, subject to conditions set by the Speaker.⁴⁴ Presently these conditions include:

- Admission to the Assembly requires appropriate attire and official identification from the media organization represented;
- Media may pass notes into the Members' and Public Galleries through Security staff. Orange notepaper is used to facilitate this process;
- No interviews may be conducted in the galleries, lobbies or outside of the entrances of the lobbies of the Chamber;
- Up to four camera positions are available in the northwest corner of the Chamber. Special permission must be obtained from the Sergeant-at-Arms half an hour prior to proposed coverage from the floor;
- Flashes for still photography are not allowed;
- Television cameras must focus on those speaking from the floor of the House except to film visitors and guests standing to be introduced by a Member; and
- With special permission, still photographs may be taken from the media positions on the floor of the Chamber or the north and south corners of the galleries so as not to disturb visitors or the proceedings.⁴⁵

Over the years, the Press Gallery has experienced periods of rapid escalation of demand for its facilities. In 1935, the media took a strong interest in the “world's first Social Credit experiment.”⁴⁶ Membership in the Press Gallery Association grew quickly as reporters from around the continent and from overseas took a sudden interest in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. At the opening of the First Session of the Eighth Legislature on February 6, 1936, the Press Gallery was filled to capacity, not only with reporters but also with agents of banks and



mortgage companies claiming to be journalists in order to secure a seat.⁴⁷ Some 50 years later, during the 1980s, the membership of the Press Gallery experienced another period of growth with an increase in the number of print and broadcast bureaux and of out-of-province correspondents demanding access to Gallery facilities.⁴⁸



Members' words thrown back at them from the Press Gallery ('paper shower') as Session ends (May 7, 1969). Cropped photo.

Members of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and the Press Gallery have a mutually dependent relationship.⁴⁹ Members need the press to publicize and explain their ideas, while the press needs legislators and their staff as sources of information and newsworthy stories. Throughout Alberta's history, the relationship between Members and the press has fluctuated; at times it has been quite genial, while at others distant. In the early days, journalists sometimes wrote speeches for the Members for a fee.⁵⁰ The humorous custom of the 'paper shower' serves as an illustration of the nature of the relationship between the press and elected representatives. The paper shower occurred at the conclusion of each Session when Members had their words thrown back at them, quite literally, by the press. Once the formalities of the

Session had ended, and the Speaker, the Lieutenant Governor, and their respective entourages, had exited the Chamber, a barrage of crumpled paper was thrown from the Press Gallery onto the Members below.*⁵¹

On occasion over the years, there has been considerable friction between the press and the Members of the Legislative Assembly. On October 4, 1937, the Legislative Assembly of Alberta passed Bill 9, *An Act to Ensure the Publication of Accurate News and Information*.⁵² The Bill required Alberta newspaper publishers, when instructed by the Chair of the Social Credit Board,[†] to print Government statements for the "correction or amplification of any statement relating to any policy or activity of the Government of the Province published by that newspaper within the next preceding thirty-one days."⁵³ It also required that the newspapers identify their sources of information within 24 hours of a request by the Chair.⁵⁴ This Bill was one of three[‡] that Lieutenant Governor John C. Bowen (1937–1950) reserved "for the signification of His

* This ritual has not taken place in years. There are now very few reporters in the galleries as most prefer to watch the proceedings from their offices in the Legislature Building.

† Aberhart's cautious and gradual approach to financial reform engendered discontent and disunity within the Social Credit caucus, extending to Aberhart's own Cabinet. In 1937, this resulted in a breach within the governing caucus prompted by those who subscribed to Social Credit founder Major Clifford H. Douglas' vision of immediate implementation of Social Credit measures regardless of provincial or federal law. Under pressure from the Douglas adherents, Aberhart established and empowered the Social Credit Board, five Members dedicated to directing the implementation of a full Social Credit program within Alberta. The Social Credit Board grew increasingly radical in its outlook, prompting Premier Ernest C. Manning to dissolve the Board in 1947.

‡ The other two bills were Bill 1, *An Act Respecting the Taxation of Banks* and Bill 8, *An Act to Amend and Consolidate The Credit of Alberta Regulation Act*.

Excellency the Governor General's pleasure thereon," and thus Royal Assent was not granted.⁵⁵ Referred to the Supreme Court of Canada, all three were ruled *ultra vires* (beyond the jurisdictional powers to legislate).⁵⁶ This decision was affirmed by the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council on July 14, 1938.⁵⁷ The *Edmonton Journal* was presented with a bronze plaque by the Pulitzer Prize Board, on May 2, 1938, "for its leadership in the defence of the freedom of the press in the province of Alberta," and five other dailies, including the *Calgary Herald*, *Calgary Albertan*, *Edmonton Bulletin*, *Lethbridge Herald* and *Medicine Hat News*, and 90 weeklies all received engraved certificates.⁵⁸



Press Gallery (March 1972).

Members of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta have often raised points of privilege to correct and express their displeasure with newspaper reports. Simply raising the matter in the House was typically considered sufficient recourse, and the Assembly took no further action. For example, Wilfrid Gariepy, Member for Beaver River, rose on a matter of privilege on April 16, 1919, referring to a report in the *Edmonton Journal** regarding his purchase of "fifty volumes of the Life of Archbishop Langevin, and made a statement to the House respecting the transaction."⁵⁹ On February 27, 1922, Charles R. Mitchell, Member for Bow Valley, "rose to complain" of statements published in the *Edmonton Journal*,† "pointing out the damage to the credit of the Province likely to ensue from such publication in the form in which it appeared, and correcting the statements complained of."⁶⁰ Premier Herbert Greenfield (1921–1925) also made a brief statement on the matter.⁶¹ In an unusual decision in 1938, the Legislative Assembly moved beyond simply raising a matter of privilege in the House, regarding a newspaper article, to actually referring the question to the *Committee on Privileges and Elections*. On March 24 of that year, the Committee found reporter Don Brown in breach of the privileges of the House for misrepresenting Dr. John L. Robinson, Member for Medicine Hat, in an article published in the *Edmonton Journal* on March 17, 1938. Speaker Peter Dawson (1937–1963) was instructed by the Assembly to issue a warrant for Brown's arrest and detention.⁶² Fortunately for Brown, the Assembly accepted a motion to release the reporter before he had even been arrested.⁶³

Over the years the media has been banned from various areas of the Parliamentary Precincts, prompting media outlets to voice their objections in each case. In January 1976, Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986) banned the press from the Members' Lounge in order to secure a private area for the Members.⁶⁴ In 1987, Speaker David J. Carter (1986–1993) ordered the

* The *Edmonton Journal* had reported that Gariepy, former Minister of Municipal Affairs, had removed a list of recipients of these books from the department's records. "Gariepy Denies Taking Records Out of Province," *Edmonton Journal*, 17 April 1919, p. 6.

† The *Edmonton Journal* had reported that independent auditors hired by the then UFA Government had indicated that government departments, under the previous Liberal Government, had used 'faulty book-keeping' practices. "The Province's Accounts," [Editorial], *Edmonton Journal*, 25 February 1922, p. 4.

removal of unauthorized television cameras from the Chamber during a debate.⁶⁵ In 2001, the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–) banned CBC television cameras from the Chamber for the remainder of the year because the station ignored warnings from the Sergeant-at-Arms and aired footage of protesters in the Public Gallery.⁶⁶

Notes

¹ Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), p. 240; Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), p. 210.

² John Goodall, "The Medieval Palace of Westminster," in *The Houses of Parliament: History, Art, Architecture*, ed. Iain Ross (London: Merrell, 2000), p. 64; Christopher Jones, *The Great Palace: The Story of Parliament* (London: British Broadcasting Corporation, 1983), p. 57.

³ Joseph Redlich, *The Procedure of the House of Commons: A Study of Its History and Present Form*, trans. A. Ernest Steinthal, vol. II (London: Constable & Co., 1908; reprint, New York: AMS Press, 1969), p. 35; Norman W. Wilding and Philip Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, 4th rev. ed. (London: Cassell, 1972), p. 424.

⁴ Redlich, *Procedure of the House of Commons*, p. 22; Jones, *The Great Palace*, p. 203; Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 424.

⁵ Jones, *The Great Palace*, pp. 203–204.

⁶ Redlich, *Procedure of the House of Commons*, p. 22.

⁷ May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, p. 210.

⁸ Ibid.

⁹ Ibid., p. 177; *Dod's Parliamentary Companion 2004*, 185th ed. (London: Vacher Dod Publishing, 2004), p. 63.

¹⁰ Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, pp. 679–680.

¹¹ May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, p. 211n3; Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 680.

¹² Wilding and Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 680.

¹³ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 239.

¹⁴ Alistair Fraser, W. F. Dawson, and John A. Holtby, *Beauchesne's Rules & Forms of the House of Commons Canada with Annotations, Comments and Precedents*, 6th ed. (Toronto: Carswell Co., 1989), p. 35, figure no. 1, p. 37, s. 142; Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, pp. 233, 239–240.

¹⁵ Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 264.

¹⁶ Ibid., pp. 240–241.

¹⁷ "Glorious Sunshine Greets the Opening," *Edmonton Daily Bulletin*, 15 March 1906, p. 1.

¹⁸ "Legislature Is Now in Session," [*Edmonton Journal*], 25 January 1907.

¹⁹ Ibid.

²⁰ Frank Joseph Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration* (Edmonton: Plains Publishing Inc., 1987), p. 10.

- 21 "Imposing, Dignified and Brilliant Was the Opening of the Third Legislature of Alberta," *Edmonton Journal*, 16 January 1908, p. 1.
- 22 "First Session of the House is Launched on Thursday," *Calgary Daily Herald*, 2 February 1922, p. 1; "Gov't Calls U.F.A. Members for First Party Caucus of Session Wednesday to Discuss Policies," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 1 February 1922, p. 12.
- 23 Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Order 105(c).
- 24 Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 2nd Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. VII, 4 December 1911, p. 15.
- 25 Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 14.
- 26 Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta* (1916), Standing Orders 85, 87, 91, 92, 94–96.
- 27 Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Welcome to the Legislative Assembly of Alberta* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), p. 1.
- 28 Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 7(1).
- 29 Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide: Information for Members on Indemnities, Benefits, Allowances, Services, House Procedure and Interparliamentary Relations*, (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, October 2004), ss. 78–79.
- 30 William Semple, Assistant Sergeant-at-Arms (Operations), Legislative Assembly of Alberta, *Chamber Galleries Diagram*, Edmonton, Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 6 May 2004; Personal communication with William Semple, Assistant Sergeant-at-Arms (Operations), Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Edmonton, 6 May 2004.
- 31 Semple, Chamber Galleries Diagram.
- 32 Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 41.
- 33 David John Carter, "Seven Years in the Speaker's Chair," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 17, no. 1 (Spring 1994): p. 17.
- 34 Personal communication with Ed Richard, Assistant Sergeant-at-Arms, Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Edmonton, 21 August 2003.
- 35 Personal communication with Brian Hodgson, Sergeant-at-Arms, Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Edmonton, AB, 8 August 2003; Personal communication with Semple, 6 May 2004.
- 36 Wilding and Laundry, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, p. 344.
- 37 Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Building the Future: House of Commons Requirements for the Parliamentary Precinct* (Ottawa: House of Commons, 1999), pp. 3, 51.
- 38 "N.W. Legislature: Opening of First Session," *Regina Journal*, 1 November 1888, p. 1.
- 39 "Brilliant Scene Attends Opening Ceremonies," [*Edmonton Journal*], 11 February 1910.
- 40 Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 77.
- 41 Personal communication with Semple, 6 May 2004.
- 42 Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 78.
- 43 Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 1916*, Standing Orders 92–93.
- 44 Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders, 2003*, Standing Order 110.

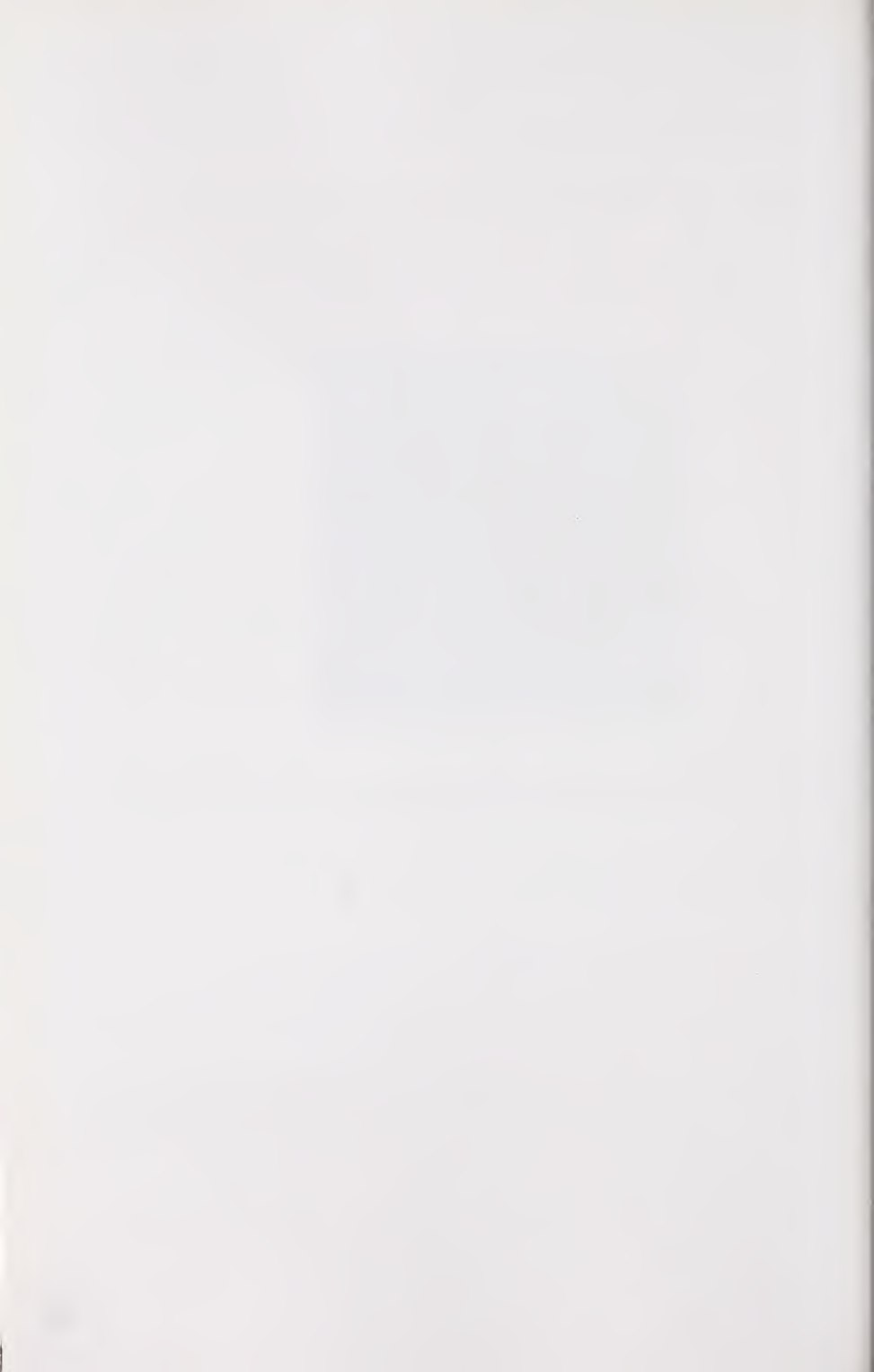


- ⁴⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, Press Gallery Protocols, April 2000, p. 1.
- ⁴⁶ Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 81.
- ⁴⁷ Fred Kennedy, *Alberta Was My Beat: Memoirs of a Western Newspaperman* (Calgary: The Albertan, 1975), p. 227.
- ⁴⁸ Priscilla Schmidt, *Government-Press Relations in Alberta* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1985), p. 4; David John Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ⁴⁹ Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 85.
- ⁵⁰ Ibid., p. 81; Kennedy, *Alberta Was My Beat*, p. 228.
- ⁵¹ Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, pp. 78–79.
- ⁵² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 8th Legislature, 5th Session*, vol. XXXVII, 4 October 1937, pp. 45–46.
- ⁵³ Bill 9, *An Act to Ensure the Publication of Accurate News and Information*, 8th Legislature, 5th Session, Alberta, 1937.
- ⁵⁴ Ibid.
- ⁵⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 8th Legislature, 5th Session*, 5 October 1937, p. 56.
- ⁵⁶ Reference re: *Alberta Legislation*, [1938] S.C.R. 100, 2 D.L.R. 81.
- ⁵⁷ Reference re: *Alberta Legislation*, (1938) 4 D.L.R. 433, [1938] 3 W.W.R. 337 (J.C.P.C.).
- ⁵⁸ “Edmonton Journal Winner Special Pulitzer Award,” *Edmonton Journal*, 2 May 1938, p. 1.
- ⁵⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 4th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. XV, 16 April 1919, p. 146.
- ⁶⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 5th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XVIII, 27 February 1922, p. 51.
- ⁶¹ Ibid.
- ⁶² Decibels (a.k.a. Don Brown), “Under the Dome,” *Edmonton Journal*, 17 March 1938, p. 12; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 8th Legislature, 6th Session*, vol. XXXVIII, 24 March 1938, pp. 114–115.
- ⁶³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 8th Legislature, 6th Session*, 25 March 1938, p. 128; “Brown Declared Clear of Action by Legislature,” *Edmonton Bulletin*, 26 March 1938, p. 1; “House Orders ‘Release’ of Journal Reporter: Warrant for His Arrest Never Was Signed,” *Edmonton Journal*, 26 March 1938, p. 1.
- ⁶⁴ “Press Council Supports Reopened MLAs’ Lounge,” *Edmonton Journal*, 26 October 1976, p. 22.
- ⁶⁵ “TV Cameras Booted From Legislature,” *Calgary Herald*, 16 April 1987, p. A3; Kathy Kerr, “Alberta Speaker’s Action Draws National Criticism,” *Calgary Herald*, 18 April 1987, p. A3; John Trethewy, “Speaker ‘Eats Crow’ After Ejecting TV Crews,” *Edmonton Journal*, 16 April 1987, p. A3.
- ⁶⁶ Neil Waugh, “CBC-TV Breaks Rules and Gets Tossed,” [Editorial], *Edmonton Sun*, 7 July 2000, p. 11; “CBC TV Booted From Alberta Legislature for Filming Protesters,” *Canadian Press NewsWire* (Toronto), 6 July 2000; Robert Reynolds, “Alberta [Summary of Legislature Activity],” *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 23, no. 3 (Autumn 2000): p. 42.





Strangers Addressing the Assembly



STRANGERS ADDRESSING THE ASSEMBLY

The floor of the Legislative Chamber is a fast-paced and competitive place. Time available to address the Assembly is limited, and highly valued, making it a rare honour for an individual who is not a Member of the Legislative Assembly to be granted the opportunity to address the Assembly from the floor of the Chamber. For such an event to occur, the motion which is put forward to waive the *Standing Orders* and deviate from the regular routine must receive unanimous consent from the Members.¹ During the history of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, the opportunity to address the Assembly has been afforded on only five* occasions.

At the invitation of the Assembly, William Aberhart gave a presentation about the Douglas Social Credit plan† from the floor of the Chamber, on March 19, 1935.² Aberhart was not a Member of the Legislative Assembly at the time. On September 3, 1935, he was appointed Premier after leading the fledgling Social Credit Party to victory in the provincial general election of August 22, 1935.

From 1985 to 1987, Rick Hansen covered over 40,000 kilometres and 34 countries by wheelchair. Known as the “Man in Motion” tour, this event raised awareness and over \$26 million for spinal cord research and wheelchair sports.³ On May 8, 1997, in honour of the 10th anniversary of his tour, Hansen was invited to address the Legislative Assembly from the floor. During his speech, Hansen encouraged the Alberta Government to work with private-sector partners to fund research into spinal cord injuries and to eliminate barriers faced by the disabled in society.⁴

On Tuesday, May 18, 1999, two years after Hansen’s address, Grade 10 student Daniel Novak addressed the Legislative Assembly from the Chamber floor. As winner of the 5th Annual Speaker’s Cup Page Speech Competition, Novak was given the opportunity to present his speech to the Assembly.⁵ The topic was: “How Can the Commonwealth Assist in the Protection and Development of National and Regional Cultures in the Face of Increasingly Globalized Communications and Entertainment?”⁶



The occasion of the address of Prince Michael of Kent to the Legislative Assembly (March 18, 2002) as part of Golden Jubilee celebration of the Queen’s ascension to the throne. Speaker K.R. Kowalski at right.

* There may be six occasions, as Winnifred Stewart reportedly addressed the Legislative Assembly in 1954, but efforts to verify this event have not been successful.

† Major Clifford H. Douglas was a Scottish engineer who developed a theory that economic depression was a result of faulty monetary policy. Douglas was a capitalist who opposed the concept of the redistribution of wealth advocated by socialist reformers. He believed that an insufficient money supply undermined the market economy. In order to address these economic problems, Douglas proposed that every citizen receive dividends calculated on the basis of the nation’s real wealth, and/or that price discounts on products be invoked. He also declared that a just price for all goods must be established. Bob Hesketh, *Major Douglas and Alberta Social Credit* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1997), p. 33.

In 2002, Members consented to an address by Prince Michael of Kent, cousin of Queen Elizabeth II.⁷ On March 18, the Prince addressed the Legislative Assembly from the floor of the Chamber as part of the Golden Jubilee celebration of the Queen's ascension to the throne.⁸

On May 5, 2005, three veterans of the Second World War—Commodore Doug Learoyd, Royal Canadian Navy Volunteer Reserve, Captain Stu Lindop, South Alberta Regiment, Canadian Army, and Squadron Leader Mr. Justice Sam Lieberman, Royal Canadian Air Force (RCAF)—were permitted on the floor to commemorate the 60th anniversary of Victory in Europe Day (VE-Day) and the Year of the Veteran.⁹ Mr. Justice Lieberman spoke on behalf of the veterans and recognized their sacrifices that upheld and strengthened the democratic principles that are in practice in the Chamber today.

Notes

¹ John George Bourinot, *Parliamentary Procedure and Practice in the Dominion of Canada*, 4th ed., ed. Thomas Barnard Flint (Toronto: Canada Law Book Company, 1916), p. 203.

² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 7th Legislature, 5th Session*, vol. XXXII, 5 March 1935, p. 117; "Members Get Insight into Douglas Plan," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 19 March 1934, p. 3.

³ Rick Hansen Man in Motion Foundation, *Man in Motion World Tour*, [Internet], (Vancouver: Rick Hansen Man in Motion Foundation, 2004), accessed 31 December 2004, available from http://www.rickhansen.com/Story/story_mimtour.htm

⁴ Robert Reynolds, "Legislative Assembly, Alberta," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 20, no. 3 (Autumn 1997): p. 44; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 24th Legislature, 1st Session*, 8 May 1997, pp. 437–438.

⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office 1999 Annual Report & 1999 Annual Report of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association, Alberta Branch* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 2000), p. 42.

⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 24th Legislature, 3rd Session*, 18 May 1999, p. 1809.

⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 25th Legislature, 2nd Session*, 14 March 2002, pp. 374–375.

⁸ Ibid., 18 March 2002, p. 391; Robert Reynolds, "Legislative Reports: Alberta," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 25, no. 2 (Spring 2002): p. 52; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, His Royal Highness Prince Michael of Kent to Address the Alberta Legislature, 15 March 2002, [News Release].

⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 26th Legislature, 1st Session*, 5 May 2005, pp. 1301–1302.





Speaker's Apparel



SPEAKER'S APPAREL

Throughout the history of the United Kingdom, as the traditions of parliamentary democracy developed, so too did the attire of the Speaker. Initially, the Speaker made his own fashion decisions and would select his clothing according to the style of the day.¹ It was not until the end of the 18th century that the official attire of the Speaker, based on court dress, was established. For the first time, the Speakers' attire differed significantly from that of the Members.² On formal occasions, from this period on, the Speaker of the House of Commons in the United Kingdom has generally worn a ceremonial gown of black satin damask, with a gold trim over a black velvet court suit with a lace jabot, lace frills on the sleeves, a full-bottomed wig, a black silk tricorné (three-cornered) hat and white gloves. During regular sittings of Parliament, the Speaker has usually worn a black silk gown over a black court suit, accented by white linen bands and a stiff, white linen evening collar, and black court shoes with buckles.³ Modern Speakers in the United Kingdom generally do not wear the knee breeches, silk stockings, buckled court shoes or the full-bottomed wig as did Speakers of the past.⁴



The Speaker's tricorné hat.

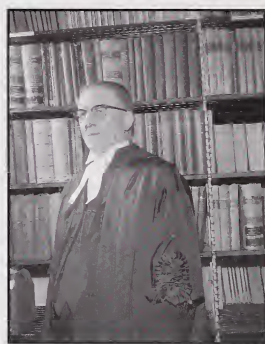
While the basic apparel of Speakers throughout the Commonwealth is modelled on the attire worn in the United Kingdom, the details vary across jurisdictions. The Speaker's full-bottomed wig is a tradition that has fallen out of favour in many parliaments. In the Maritime Provinces, tradition decrees that the Speaker wear a top hat, while in Quebec, there is no particular official attire for the Speaker.⁵

The official attire worn by the Speakers of the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories and Alberta resembles that of Speakers in the Houses of Commons of both Canada and the United Kingdom. The Speaker's apparel is similar to that worn in a court of law, which is appropriate considering that the Speaker oversees the Chamber in which provincial laws are made.⁶ The current Speaker, the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–), regularly dons a Queen's Counsel gown made of silk with a wig bag made of silk ribbon that is buttoned to the back of the gown. Underneath the gown, the Speaker wears black trousers, a wing-collared cotton court shirt with French cuffs under a Queen's Counsel waistcoat of wool and Queen's Counsel tabs. These legal tabs are two separate pieces attached to the back of the shirt collar and are wider than those of a barrister.* On more formal occasions, the Speaker will wear a tailcoat cut away in the front over a sleeveless vest and white court shirt with tabs. On the tailcoat are seven rows of

* Speaker N. Eldon Tanner (1936–1937) was the first to wear legal tabs as evidenced in the official portraits of the Speakers that hang on the fourth floor of the Legislature Building. Preceding Speakers, from Speaker Herbert C. Wilson (1888–1890) of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories to Alberta Speaker George N. Johnston (1927–1935) inclusively, are wearing white bow ties.



braid and seven buttons.⁷ The tricorné hat, covered with corded silk, is worn by the Speaker as he enters the Chamber. It is held by a Page during the opening prayers and then rests on an end table to the right of the Speaker's Chair for the remainder of the sitting. This is a departure from recent British custom, where the Speaker of the House of Commons carries the hat into the Chamber, then lays it on the arm of the Chair at his elbow.⁸ While the robes of Alberta Speakers are typically simple and unadorned, Speaker David J. Carter (1986–1993) wore a more elaborate gown, donated by his Calgary-Egmont constituency, for the 75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building, and on special occasions thereafter, such as the throne speech and opening of Session. This gown had gold trim, and the back was embroidered with the Coat of Arms of Alberta in gold and silver thread.* Carter also had a strip of silver braid attached to the Deputy Speaker's tricorné hat and a strip of gold braid to the Speaker's tricorné. These adornments were intended to help visitors distinguish between the Speaker and the Deputy Speaker.⁹



Speaker P. Dawson in the Legislature Library wearing traditional Speaker's apparel (1955).

Until the mid-1980s, the Speaker had a separate robing room, adjacent to the Chamber, in the Legislature Building. Carter gave up the room in order to incorporate the space into the Confederation Room and create a larger meeting area for the Members. Currently, the Speaker changes in a small robing room in the Speaker's office on the third floor of the Legislature Building.¹⁰

* This unique robe is currently on display in the Legislative Assembly Interpretive Centre.

Notes

¹ Arnold Wright and Philip Smith, *Parliament Past and Present: A Popular and Picturesque Account of a Thousand Years in the Palace of Westminster, the Home of the Mother of Parliaments* (New York: E.P. Dutton & Co., 1904), p. 65.

² Peter Thorne, *Ceremonial and the Mace in the House of Commons*, House of Commons Library Document No. 11 (London: Her Majesty's Stationary Office, 1980), p. 49.

³ *Ibid.*, pp. 49–50; United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Speaker*, rev. ed., FactSheet M2, Members Series (London: House of Commons Information Office, September 2003), p. 4.

⁴ United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Speaker*, p. 4.

⁵ Philip Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth* (London: Quiller Press, 1984), p. 136.

⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Presentation of the Black Rod to the Legislative Assembly of Alberta by Alberta-Northwest Territories Command, Royal Canadian Legion. Tuesday, January 27, 1998* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1998), pp. 3–4.

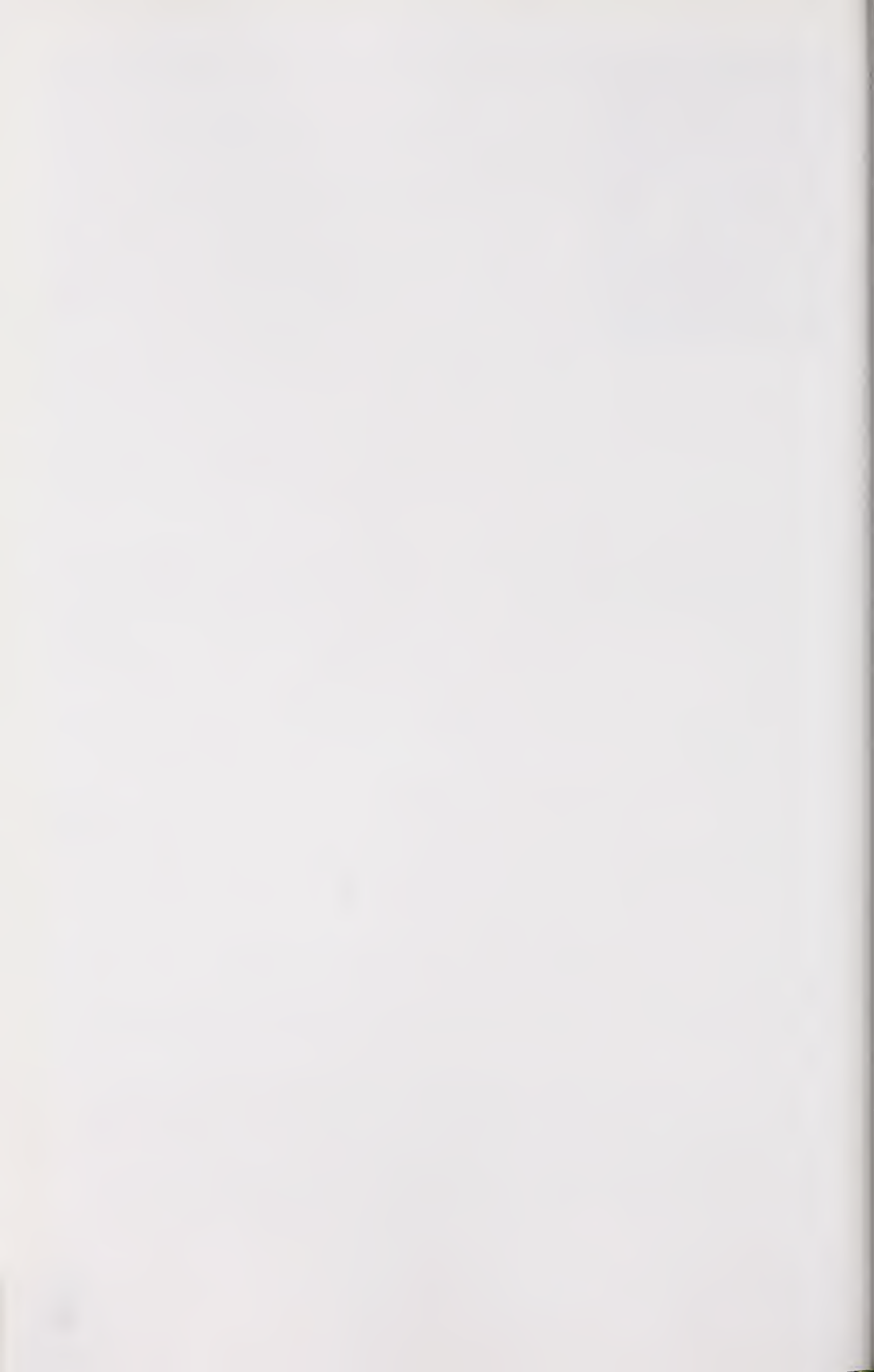
⁷ Personal communication with Ken Stewart, Owner of Stewart's Men's Wear, Edmonton, AB, 20 April 2004.

⁸ Michael MacDonagh, *The Speaker of the House* (London: Methuen & Co., 1914), p. 97.

⁹ E-mail from David John Carter, Elkwater, AB, 15 May 2004.

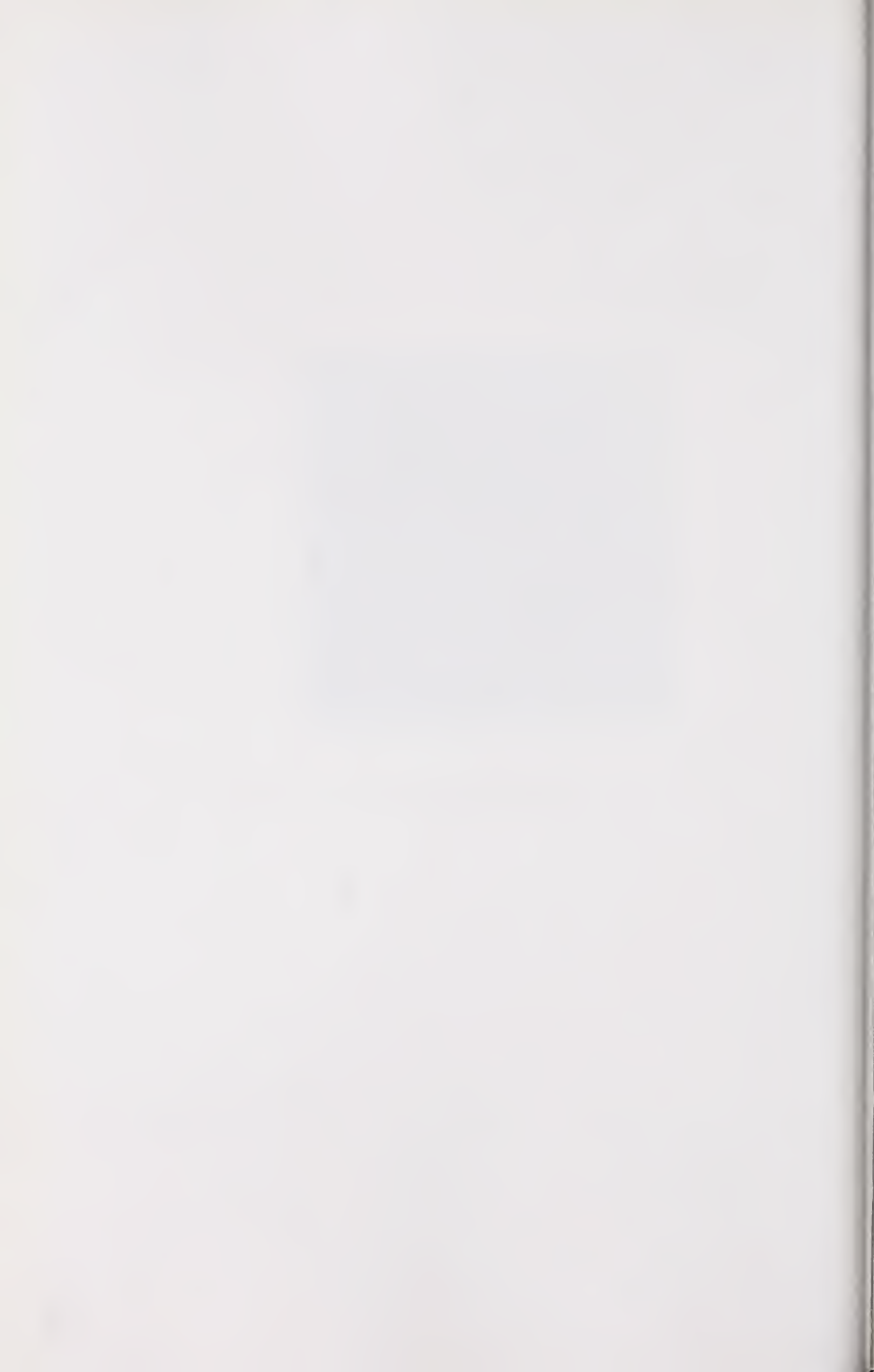
¹⁰ E-mail from Brian Hodgson, Sergeant-at-Arms, Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Edmonton, 11 May 2004.







Speaker's Procession



SPEAKER'S PROCESSION

The Speaker's Procession in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta is similar to the Procession in the Parliament of the United Kingdom and the Speaker's Parade in Canada's House of Commons. The original intent of the Procession is uncertain, but as it immediately precedes the daily prayers, it may have evolved from a religious procession, or it may have had more to do with the need to protect the Speaker during periods in history when tension existed between the Sovereign and Parliament.¹



The Speaker's Procession signals the start of each sitting day of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. A bell rings 10 minutes prior to the start of each sitting to call Members of the Legislative Assembly to the Chamber.²

The Procession then begins as the Sergeant-at-Arms, carrying the Mace over his right shoulder, enters the Chamber and calls out, "Order! Order! Mr. Speaker!"³ At this point, the Speaker enters the Chamber wearing the customary black robes and tricorne hat, followed by the Deputy Speaker, the Deputy Chair of Committees, the Clerk, the Clerk Assistant, the Procedural Clerk, Parliamentary Counsel and two Pages. As the Speaker makes his way to the Chair, the Sergeant-at-Arms places the Mace on a green cushion located at the end of the Table, with the crown pointing towards the Government side of the House.⁴

As the Speaker enters the Chamber, the Members rise and remain standing until the daily prayers have concluded.⁵ Members are permitted to talk during the Procession and often greet Procession participants. Speaker David J. Carter (1986–1993) remarked that he could sense the mood of the Assembly during the Procession and felt uneasy on days when his entrance did not draw commentary from the Members.⁶

In the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, the Speaker's Procession was not always the formal event that it is today. Initially, the Speaker entered the Chamber through a side door. Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986) introduced the more formal Procession in an attempt to add dignity to the Office. As an 'added touch of ceremony,' he had the Procession enter through the main doors of the Chamber, passing closest to the desks of Government Members on days when the Assembly was to deal with Government business, and closest to the Opposition on Opposition days.⁷ Currently, the Procession alternates between Government side and the Opposition side.

Notes

¹ Norman W. Wilding and Philip Laundry, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, 4th rev. ed. (London: Cassell, 1972), pp. 716–717.

² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide: Information for Members on Indemnities, Benefits, Allowances, Services, House Procedure and Interparliamentary Relations, House Procedure and Interparliamentary Relations* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, October 2004), s. 77.

³ Ibid.

⁴ Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), p. 238.

⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide 2004*, s. 77.

⁶ Frank Joseph Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration* (Edmonton: Plains Publishing Inc., 1987), p. 42.

⁷ Ibid., p. 46.



Prayers



PRAYERS

The tradition of including a prayer at the beginning of a sitting of parliament was established in the English Parliament during the second half of the 16th century. Westminster continues to adhere to this tradition, having the Speaker's Chaplain* offer prayers at the beginning of each sitting day as Members stand facing the wall behind them. The practice of facing the wall during prayers may have developed in response to the difficulties Members once experienced trying to kneel while wearing swords.¹ Upon entering the Chamber, the Speaker and Chaplain bow to the empty Chair and take their places on the west and east sides of the Table, respectively. They both kneel at the Table during the prayer, and the Speaker takes the Chair only after the prayers have been said. At that time the doors to the galleries are opened, and the public may enter the Chamber.² The Speaker reads the prayer only rarely, when no member of the clergy of the Church of England is present.³

In the Canadian House of Commons, the Speaker is responsible for offering the opening prayer, after entering the Chamber and having determined that there is a quorum.[†] This tradition began in 1877, although it was not codified in the *Standing Orders* until 1927.⁴ Considered to be a private affair for the Members, the prayers are read prior to the opening of the doors to the galleries, permitting the public to enter. In 1994, a non-sectarian prayer was adopted in an effort to reflect Canada's multiculturalism and diversity of religions.⁵

Unlike the Houses of Commons of the United Kingdom and Canada, the Legislative Assembly of Alberta allows all individuals attending a sitting, including strangers, to take part in the opening prayer. As in the Canadian House of Commons, the Speaker's Procession, followed by the Speaker taking the Chair, opens each sitting. All in attendance then remain standing as the Speaker offers the daily prayer.⁶

Since 1906, the reading of a prayer in the Assembly has been addressed in the Alberta *Standing Orders*.[‡] The reading of a prayer at the beginning of each daily sitting is outlined in Standing Order 6.⁷ Although the wording of this Standing Order has changed over the years, the inclusion of a prayer during a sitting of the Assembly has not.

Although prayer has always been a part of the traditions of the Legislative Assembly, Speakers have used their discretion when reading the prayer. The phrasing of the prayers has changed over time. Speaker Oran L. McPherson (1922–1926) was challenged in the House for always omitting “a certain prayer for His Majesty and the Royal Family.”⁸ There were suggestions that this reflected “a prevailing anti-British, anti-monarchical spirit animating a large percentage of the members on the Government side of the House.”⁹ In his own defence, McPherson explained

* The Speaker's Chaplain, first appointed by the House in 1659 and nominated by the Speaker since 1835, takes part in the Procession and offers prayers at the opening of each sitting. He receives a nominal salary.

† A quorum in the Canadian House of Commons is 20 Members including the Speaker.

‡ Both the 1906 and 1916 editions of the *Standing Orders* include actual prayers.



that he had used his discretion and understood that the prayers, as laid out in the *Standing Orders*, need not be read in their entirety, nor said using exact phrasing. He further explained that “[h]aving in mind the broad and common conception of His Majesty, the King, as the Head of the Empire, [he] felt that in the patriotic spirit breathed in many of the references ... ample reverence was expressed and due prayer was made for Our King and Country.”¹⁰

A particularly significant change to the traditions of the Legislative Assembly was introduced by Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986). Feeling that it was not appropriate to use a Standing Order to impose his Christian beliefs on others, Amerongen significantly altered the nature of the prayers offered in the Assembly.* In his prayers, Amerongen did not refer to Christ and Christianity; instead he used prayers that spoke directly to God and made reference to the obligations and responsibilities of Members.¹¹ Amerongen had different prayers for each day of the week and a specific prayer for opening day.¹²

Today, Speakers in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta have a variety of prepared prayers to select from and will often use a rotation of prayers for each day of the week.¹³ The Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–) indicates that he “writes prayers that are as much messages as prayers, and all are non-denominational and inclusive of all faiths.”¹⁴ When appropriate, the Speaker also has the discretion to use the traditional Westminster prayers, or to offer a prayer in recognition of a particular event, such as the passing of a former, or current, Member of the Legislative Assembly.¹⁵

* At the time, there were in the Legislative Assembly two Members who followed other faiths.

Notes

- ¹ United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *Some Traditions and Customs of the House*, Factsheet General Series (London: House of Commons, 2004), p. 3.
- ² Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), p. 333.
- ³ United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *Some Traditions and Customs of the House*, p. 3.
- ⁴ Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), pp. 357–358.
- ⁵ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Table Research Branch, *Précis of Procedure*, rev. ed. (Ottawa: House of Commons, November 2003), p. 14, s. 6(a); Marleau and Montpetit, eds., *House of Commons Procedure and Practice*, p. 359.
- ⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Members' Guide: Information for Members on Indemnities, Benefits, Allowances, Services, House Procedure and Interparliamentary Relations, House Procedure and Interparliamentary Relations*, (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, October 2004), s. 77.
- ⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Order 6.
- ⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 5th Legislature, 4th Session*, vol. XXI, 14 February 1924, p. 34.
- ⁹ "Speaker McPherson Stays Away From Sitting House While Govt. Frames Up Defence For His Act," *Medicine Hat News*, 19 February 1924, p. 1.
- ¹⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 5th Legislature, 4th Session*, 14 February 1924, p. 34; Ibid., 19 February 1924, p. 42.
- ¹¹ Laurie Mackay, *Order in the House: A Historical Account of Two Past Speakers of the Alberta Legislature* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1992), pp. 7–8.
- ¹² Ibid., p. 20.
- ¹³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, Revised Annotated Standing Orders, Draft #2, [Internal Document] October 1999, p. 8.
- ¹⁴ Jodie Sinnema, "Tradition Dies at Rideau Park When Parents Object to Prayer: Prayer in Public," *Edmonton Journal*, 23 October 2003, p. B5.
- ¹⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, Revised Annotated Standing Orders, Draft #2, p. 8.







Speaker's Suite



SPEAKER'S SUITE¹

In the late 18th-century, the procurement of accommodation within the Parliamentary Precincts for the Speaker of the House of Commons of Great Britain reflected the increasing prestige and demands of the role. In 1794, the Speaker acquired a house within the Palace of Westminster, which had belonged to the Auditor of the Exchequer, the Duke of Newcastle.² This residence allowed for official entertaining, and thus it has been suggested that the Speaker's role as "the head of the social as well as the political system of the House of Commons" began at this time.³ In the early years of the 20th century, the residence was described as embodying "something of the spirit of respect and almost of reverence which the British people feel for the president of the popular chamber."⁴ While the Speaker's house was still usable after the fire of 1834,* the Speaker was relocated in 1839, until the new palace was built. The new residence reflected the pre-eminence of the Speaker amongst House of Commons Officials and included a State Dining Room, where formal dinners and levees continued to be held.⁵

The Speaker of the Canadian House of Commons is provided with an official residence, referred to as 'the Farm,' at Kingsmere in Gatineau Park, Quebec.⁶ This home, originally built about 1891, was purchased by former Prime Minister William Lyon Mackenzie King[†] in 1927 and was bequeathed to the Government of Canada upon his death in 1950. The Farm became the official summer residence of the Speaker of the House in 1954, when it was first rented to Speaker Louis-René Beaudoin (1953–1957). Speakers continued to pay for the accommodation until the mid-1970s, at which time it began to be provided rent-free.⁷ The Speaker is also provided with a small apartment and private dining room in the Centre Block of the Parliament Buildings.⁸

When touring the fourth floor of Alberta's Legislature Building, visitors pass by a door marked 'Mr. Speaker.' This door is the entrance to the Speaker's Suite, an apartment rarely seen by the public. Years ago, when travel was more difficult and time-consuming, the Suite was used as living quarters for the Speaker and his family. The last Speaker to regularly live in the Suite was Speaker Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972). However, on occasion, visiting dignitaries have stayed in the Suite when alternative accommodations could not be arranged.

Today, the Suite is used primarily to host gatherings and official receptions. When visitors are received in the Suite, they are greeted at the door by the current Speaker, the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–), and ushered to a couch near the fireplace. The Speaker will visit with his guests, often discussing topics concerning his visitor's place of origin and experiences. During these discussions, a protocol officer remains nearby, but outside the conversation. In order to

* The first permanent debating Chamber of the United Kingdom Parliament, provided by King Edward VI, was St. Stephen's Chapel. When this building was destroyed by fire in 1834, the Commons moved to the Court of Requests, previously occupied by the House of Lords. A new Chamber, built by Sir Charles Barry, opened in 1852, but was destroyed by German bombing during the Second World War. Parliament was temporarily housed in Church House, and then moved once again to the former meeting place of the House of Lords until the current Chamber in Westminster Palace opened in 1950.

† William Lyon Mackenzie King was Prime Minister from 1921 to 1926, 1926 to 1930 and 1935 to 1948.



prevent interruptions, the door to the Suite has both a deadbolt lock and a doorbell. The doorbell can be switched on so that a light displays outside the Suite in the hallway indicating that an official function is in progress.

The Suite itself is divided into four fully furnished rooms. Upon entering the Suite, guests find themselves in a large, elegantly furnished living area that includes a dining table, a sitting area and artwork that reflects the province's character and geography. A doorway at the east end of the living room leads to the bedroom and ensuite bathroom. The bedroom has large vertical windows, similar to those found in the Lieutenant Governor's office. The bathroom, often described as the most historic room in the Suite, has a deep, platformed bathtub.

At the opposite end of the living area is a door leading into the kitchen. The kitchen is not a large room, but offers sufficient space for staff members or caterers to prepare food for receptions held in the Suite. Over the years, the kitchen has been remodeled and modernized.

As with the remainder of the Legislature Building, the Suite and its furnishings are maintained by Alberta Infrastructure and Transportation, which therefore assumes all the expenditures associated with the upkeep of the Suite. Over the years, as the Suite has been renovated or otherwise altered, attempts have been made to maintain the original style and character of the rooms. The flooring in the Suite has also been changed. The original hardwood flooring is currently covered and protected by engineered hardwood flooring. Prior to this refurbishment, the floors were covered with a cream-coloured carpet in the living area and a green carpet in the bedroom. The carpets were removed due to maintenance issues and the desire for authenticity.

Various pieces of artwork, some of which are on loan from the Alberta Foundation for the Arts, can be found throughout the Suite. Other decorative items on display are gifts to the current Speaker, such as a silver plate that was presented to the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski by the Scottish Parliament on the occasion of his visit in 2002.

Perhaps the most striking item in the Suite is the traditional First Nations headdress found in the living room area, near the entrance to the bedroom. On April 24, 1993, Kowalski was pleased to



Speaker K.R. Kowalski with His Excellency Ki Ho Chang, Ambassador of the Republic of Korea, wearing the headdress presented to Kowalski by the Alexis First Nation (February 20, 2003).

be given the title of Honourary Chief Wa-she-zu-Chada-oo-sheqe-na (White Man with a Kind Heart) by the Alexis First Nation.⁹ The headdress, which was presented at a later date, invariably attracts the attention and interest of guests, often leading to an opportunity for photographs to be taken of the Speaker and his guests with this important symbol of Alberta's history and culture.

In addition, visitors to the Speaker's Suite are invited to sign the pages of the guest book lying on the dining table. The pages are bound annually into an official guest register.

Notes

¹ Unless otherwise noted the information presented here was gathered from a tour of the Speaker's Suite, on June 4, 2003, hosted by Bev Alenius, Executive Assistant, Office of the Speaker, Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

² Christine Riding, Dorian Church, and Christopher Garibaldi, "The Speaker's House," in *The Houses of Parliament: History, Art, Architecture*, ed. Iain Ross (London: Merrell, 2000), pp. 195–196.

³ Ibid., pp. 197–198; Arnold Wright and Philip Smith, *Parliament Past and Present: A Popular and Picturesque Account of a Thousand Years in the Palace of Westminster, the Home of the Mother of Parliaments* (New York: E. P. Dutton & Co., 1904), p. 57.

⁴ Wright and Smith, *Parliament Past and Present*, p. 57.

⁵ Riding, Church, and Garibaldi, "The Speaker's House," pp. 198, 202.

⁶ "Official Residences: The Farm," *Canada's Capital and its Region: Capital Attractions*, [Internet], (Ottawa: National Capital Commission, updated 8 August 2003), accessed 30 June 2004, available from http://www.canadascapital.gc.ca/attractions/official_residences/thefarm_e.html

⁷ National Capital Commission, *Official Residences Handbook—The Farm (Kingsmere)* (Ottawa: National Capital Commission, 2001); Personal communication with Ashleigh Ewchuk, Chief of Property Management of the Official Residences, National Capital Commission, Ottawa, 9 June 2004.

⁸ Hans Y. Tammemagi, *Exploring the Hill: A Guide to Canada's Parliament Past and Present* (Markham, ON: Fitzhenry and Whiteside, 2002), p. 96; Heather Robertson, *On The Hill: A People's Guide to Canada's Parliament* (Toronto: McLelland and Stewart, 1992), p. 123.

⁹ Brian Bachynski, "Kowalski Honored by Alexis First Nation," *Barrhead Leader*, 27 April 1993, p. A14; "Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (PC): MLA for Barrhead-Westlock," Elected Members, *Legislative Assembly of Alberta*, [Internet], (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, updated 7 May 2001), accessed 13 January 2004, available from <http://www.assembly.ab.ca/lao/mla/mlabio.asp?RNumber=45>





Portraits



PORTRAITS

As with other prominent parliamentary officials, Speakers customarily have their portraits painted and hung in parliament buildings to commemorate their time in office. United Kingdom Speaker Henry Addington (1789–1801) began, and Speaker Charles Abbot (1802–1817) continued, the collection of portraits of former British Speakers. They are thus credited with creating a series that “visualized the longevity of the Speaker’s office and thus the integral part that the occupants had played—and were playing—in the history of Parliament”¹ while evoking the “romantic self-consciousness of the significance of the Speaker in Parliamentary history ...”²



Speaker C.W. Fisher in Chair. Portraits of Fisher and Speaker W. Eakin at far right (ca. 1914).

The Speakers’ Portrait Gallery of the Canadian House of Commons contains portraits of Speakers dating back to 1792, thereby including those who held office in the Legislative Assemblies of Upper and Lower Canada and the Province of Canada. The Gallery holds 52 portraits, which were first commissioned in the early 1850s following a motion made by Joseph-Edouard Turcotte, Member of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Canada. The custom of holding an official unveiling of the portraits was begun in 1962 by Speaker Marcel J. A. Lambert (1962–1963). Lambert started the tradition when he issued invitations to the unveiling of a portrait of D. Roland Michener, former Speaker (1957–1962) and Governor General (1967–1974).³

Visitors to the fourth floor of the Alberta Legislature Building will find a collection of 15 portraits for Speakers whose tenures date back to 1888. There is a portrait of each Speaker, except for the current Speaker, the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–). As long as Kowalski holds Office, his portrait will not hang alongside those of his predecessors, as it is considered bad luck to have one’s portrait displayed while still in Office.⁴

To the left of the entrance to the Speaker’s Suite hang the portraits of the five Speakers of the North-West Territories: Herbert C. Wilson (1888–1890), James H. Ross (1891–1892, 1892–1894), John F. Betts (1895–1898), William Eakin and Archibald B. Gillis (1903–1904). Completed in 1912, all five portraits were painted by artist Victor Albert Long in a similar style and have frames that are also quite similar. In 1912, Long also painted a set of portraits of the North-West Territories Speakers that are part of the Saskatchewan Legislative Building Art Collection.⁵

* Notably, Speaker Charles W. Fisher’s (1906–1919) portrait did hang in the Chamber while he occupied the Speaker’s Chair. A photograph taken in about 1914 shows Fisher in the Chair wearing the Speaker’s tricorn hat and robes with his and William Eakin’s (1899–1902) portraits hanging on the wall to his left. See the photograph on this page.

Metaphorically, in this portrait gallery, the door of the Speaker's Suite marks the point where Alberta becomes a province with its own Legislative Assembly. Immediately to the right of the doorway hangs a portrait of the province's first Speaker, Charles W. Fisher, which is followed in chronological sequence, toward the east side of the building, by his successors. To date, all of the Alberta Speakers' portraits have frames of a golden hue, but the frame of each portrait is distinctive in appearance.



The unveiling of the portrait of Speaker A.J. Dixon (May 16, 1974). Dixon at left of portrait.

painting in a style very different from that used for the portraits of other Speakers. Before painting the portrait, Wohlfarth extensively researched the life of McPherson and found him to be a fascinating man. Instead of the 'literal'† oil painting style used for the paintings of other Speakers, Wohlfarth chose to use the *chiaroscuro*‡ style of painting because he wanted the portrait to "make [McPherson] as different as his stay in the Legislature was."⁷ The artist's use of muted primary colours and dramatic under-play were deliberate attempts to portray McPherson "the Speaker" instead of McPherson "the Farmer."⁸ Wohlfarth did not have the opportunity to view existing paintings of previous Speakers before creating his image of McPherson. Although he intended to create an unusual portrait, the artist himself acknowledged that he did not anticipate how dramatic his portrait of McPherson would be when juxtaposed with the portraits of the other Speakers.⁹ The portrait of Oran L. McPherson now on display in the Legislature Building is stylistically similar to its counterparts.

The portrait of Speaker Oran L. McPherson (1922–1926) currently displayed in the Legislature Building was painted in 1990 by Tag Kim. As suggested by this date, it is not the first portrait of McPherson to be displayed.* The original portrait, completed in 1974 by artist Harry Wohlfarth,⁶ was



The unveiling of the portrait of Speaker S.S. Schumacher (October 23, 1997). From left to right: Speakers G.J. Amerongen, Schumacher, K.R. Kowalski and A.J. Dixon.

* Betty Rothwell, Art Collections Registrar and Graeme Moorhouse, Art Placement Consultant of the Alberta Foundation for the Arts, have confirmed that the first portrait, painted by Harry Wohlfarth, did hang in the Legislature Building until the new painting was commissioned.

† This is the description given by artist Harry Wohlfarth. Harry Wohlfarth, Interview by Lindsey Neville, 10 August 1989, Alberta Legislative Assembly, Office of the Speaker, Edmonton.

‡ *Chiaroscuro* is an artistic style that uses light and shade to define three-dimensional objects. Paintings often begin in black and white with layers of colour to follow. Wohlfarth, Interview by Neville, 10 August 1989.

Speaker	Artist	Date Completed	Unveiling
<i>North-West Territories</i>			
Herbert C. Wilson (1888–1890)	Victor Albert Long	1912	Unknown
James H. Ross (1891–1892, 1892–1894)	Victor Albert Long	1912	Unknown
John F. Betts (1895–1898)	Victor Albert Long	1912	Unknown
William Eakin (1899–1902)	Victor Albert Long	1912	Unknown
Archibald B. Gillis (1903–1904)	Victor Albert Long	1912	Unknown
<i>Alberta</i>			
Charles W. Fisher (1906–1919)	Victor Albert Long	1911	Unknown
Charles S. Pingle (1920–1921)	Victor Albert Long	1921	Unknown
Oran L. McPherson (1922–1926)	Tag Kim	1990	Unknown
George N. Johnston (1927–1935)	Robert Hyndman	[1973]	[Official unveiling was tentatively planned for March 7, 1974.]
N. Eldon Tanner (1936–1937)	Holly Middleton	[1974]	[If it actually happened, the official unveiling would have occurred after November 21, 1974.]
Peter Dawson (1937–1963)	Kay Potter	1958	Unknown
Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972)	Robert Hyndman	[1973]	May 16, 1974
Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986)	Holly Middleton	1981	September 3, 1987
David J. Carter (1986–1993)	Tag Kim	n.d.	December 9, 1994
Stanley S. Schumacher (1993–1997)	Tag Kim	1997	October 23, 1997
Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–)	Tag Kim	2003	—

In 1975, Calgary artist Dick Van Den Hoogen was commissioned to paint the formal portrait of Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986). When the work was completed in 1976, despite overall satisfaction with the portrait, it was felt that the awkward proportions of head and body made the painting 'unacceptable.'¹⁰ For this reason, the portrait was re-commissioned to Holly



Middleton in 1977. After numerous delays, work was completed in 1981.¹¹ The artist retouched the face and hands in 1986, and the portrait was unveiled in 1987.¹²

These portraits, and the traditions they represent, give a real sense of Alberta's parliamentary history. In the words of former Speaker Stanley S. Schumacher (1993–1997), these portraits “are an important part of the historical heritage belonging to the people of Alberta. ... The portraits are one way for people to get a sense of the democratic tradition and continuity represented by the Premiers* and Speakers who have gone before ...”¹³

* The portraits of the Premiers of the North-West Territories and Alberta hang on the third floor of the Legislature Building.

Notes

¹ Christine Riding, Dorian Church and Christopher Garibaldi, “The Speaker’s House,” in *The Houses of Parliament: History, Art, Architecture*, ed. Iain Ross (London: Merrell, 2000), p. 197.

² *Ibid.*, p. 203.

³ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons. Curatorial Services, “The Speaker’s Portrait Gallery,” 2003, Ottawa.

⁴ Frank Joseph Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration* (Edmonton: Plains Publishing Inc., 1987), p. 99.

⁵ Saskatchewan. Government Relations and Aboriginal Affairs. Office of Protocol and Honours, *Legislative Building Art Collection*, [Internet], (Regina: Government of Saskatchewan, 2004, updated 6 February 2004), accessed 17 June 2004, available from http://www.graa.gov.sk.ca/Protocol/Art/art_main.htm

⁶ Leslie F. Graff, Director, Visual Arts Branch, Dept. of Culture, Youth and Recreation, to Professor E. Wohlfarth, 10 July 1974, [Letter], Alberta Foundation for the Arts, Holly Middleton File.

⁷ Harry Wohlfarth, Interview by Lindsey Neville, 10 August 1989, Alberta Legislative Assembly, Office of the Speaker, Edmonton.

⁸ *Ibid.*

⁹ *Ibid.*

¹⁰ Sheelagh Dunlap, Alberta Culture, Director, Art Distribution, Visual Arts, Re: Formal Portraits of the Honourable Gerard Amerongen, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly, to Les Graff, Visual Arts, 25 March 1986, [Memorandum], Edmonton.

¹¹ *Ibid.*

¹² Memorandum from Alberta Culture. Visual Arts, Edmonton, 19 September 1986, [Confirmation of Agreement to Provide Services]; Alberta. Legislative Assembly and David John Carter, *75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building, Thursday September 3, 1987* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1987), p. 5.

¹³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, Portraits of Former Premier Don Getty and Former Speaker David Carter Will be Unveiled at the Alberta Legislature, 9 December 1994, [News Release].



Protocol



Order of Precedence

The Order of Precedence recognizes the relative degree of pre-eminence and stature of public figures. The basic order outlined in the Table of Precedence has been well-established over time, but it continues to evolve to reflect the changing values and growing diversity of society. This Table is used at official functions to establish an order for the seating plan, introductions, speeches and toasts.¹ Historically, the Speaker has been referred to as the 'first commoner,' as the *Great Seal Act* of 1688 ranked the Speaker immediately after the peers.² The Speaker of the House of Commons in the United Kingdom has, since 1919, held and enjoyed "place, preeminence and precedence immediately after the Lord President of the Council."³ Those coming before the Speaker in the Table of Precedence are the Royal Family, the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Chancellor, the Archbishop of York, the Prime Minister, the Lord High Treasurer⁴ and the Lord President of the Council.⁴

In Canada, the Governor General, on behalf of the Sovereign, with the advice of the Prime Minister, and on recommendation of the Minister of Canadian Heritage, establishes the Table of Precedence.⁵ The Order of Precedence for Canada was revised in 1968, moving the Speaker of the House of Commons from the tenth to the fifth position. This revision effectively placed the Speaker at a higher level of precedence than members of Cabinet.⁶ In 1981, Governor General Edward R. Schreyer (1979–1984) approved a proposed change to the Table, which placed provincial Speakers one category higher in the *Table of Precedence of Canadian Dignitaries and Officials*, elevating them for the first time to a level of precedence above members of the Executive Council in their respective provinces.⁷ Although provincial officials and dignitaries are included in the Table of Precedence for Canada, each province establishes its own rules that mirror the federal Table. These rules provide more detail for the jurisdiction and typically rank provincial Cabinet Ministers ahead of federal Ministers.⁸



CPA dinner in rotunda of Legislature Building (April 16, 1971). Cropped photo.

* The peerage was historically and continues to be the upper nobility in the United Kingdom. Titles can be either hereditary or granted for life. There are five ranks (in descending order): duke, marquess, earl, viscount and baron.

† The Lord President of the Council is responsible for the Privy Council Office.

‡ This office no longer exists.

The first 10 positions on the Precedence List for the Province of Alberta are as follows:

1. The Lieutenant Governor of Alberta;
2. The Premier of Alberta;
3. The Chief Justice of Alberta;
4. Former Lieutenant Governors; precedence is determined by the date of their Commissions [earliest first];
5. Former Premiers; precedence determined by the date of their swearing-in ceremony [earliest first];
6. **The Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta** [bolding added];
7. Ambassadors and High Commissioners accredited to Canada;
8. Members of the Executive Council of Alberta, in relative order of precedence as determined by the Premier;
9. Leader of the Official Opposition;
10. Members of the Privy Council for Canada resident in Alberta, with relative precedence among them to, first, Members of the Canadian Cabinet and second, to those not in Cabinet.⁹

This order is based on the Canadian Table of Precedence, with attention to the Tables of Precedence in other provincial jurisdictions. It also contains input from the Office of the Premier and the Office of the Clerk of the Executive Council.¹⁰ On occasions where federal or foreign dignitaries or officials are present, the Table of Precedence of Canada or international protocols are observed and may give these dignitaries precedence over certain provincial categories.¹¹

Forms of Address

The same protocol is used for addressing the Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta as is used when addressing the Speaker of the Canadian House of Commons and of the legislative assemblies of the other provinces.¹² When addressing the incumbent Speaker in writing, the correct form is as follows:

The Hon. Kenneth Kowalski, M.L.A.,
Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta,
Office of the Speaker,
Etc.

Salutation	Complimentary Close
Sir:	I remain, Sir, Yours very truly,
Dear Mr. Speaker:	Yours sincerely,
Dear Mr. Speaker:	Believe me, dear Mr. Speaker, Yours sincerely, ¹³

In formal conversation, used during ceremonial occasions or by subordinates, the proper way to address the Speaker is 'Sir' or 'Mr. Speaker'.¹⁴ On less formal occasions, the use of 'Mr. Speaker' or 'Mr. Kowalski' is appropriate.¹⁵ Provincial Speakers retain the title 'Honourable' only while in



office. However, the Speaker of the House of Commons is eligible to be granted this title by the Governor General, on behalf of the Sovereign, after his or her term in office ends.¹⁶ When this title is used, both in speech and writing, it must be in conjunction with the individual's full name, or initials, or other titles. Examples of appropriate use include: 'the Honourable Mr. Kowalski,' 'the Honourable Kenneth Kowalski,' and 'the Honourable Kenneth R. Kowalski.'¹⁷ The title should not come directly before the Speaker's surname, thus making 'the Honourable Kowalski' an inappropriate form of address.

Notes

¹ Saskatchewan. Government Relations and Aboriginal Affairs. Office of Protocol and Honours, "Table of Precedence," *Protocol in Practice*, [Internet], (Regina: Government of Saskatchewan, 2004, updated 6 February 2004), accessed 30 June 2004, available from <http://www.graa.gov.sk.ca/Protocol/Practice/precedence.htm>

² Joseph Redlich, *The Procedure of the House of Commons: A Study of Its History and Present Form*, trans. A. Ernest Steinthal, vol. II (London: Constable & Co., 1908; reprint, New York: AMS Press, 1969), p. 137; Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), pp. 219, 220n2.

³ May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, p. 189; *The London Gazette*, 3 June 1919, Order-in-Council, 30 May 1919.

⁴ Philip Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth* (London: Quiller Press, 1984), p. 67; Norman W. Wilding and Philip Laundy, *An Encyclopaedia of Parliament*, 4th rev. ed. (London: Cassell, 1972), p. 570.

⁵ E-mail from Sylvie Guay, State Ceremonial and Canadian Symbols, Canadian Heritage, Ottawa, 15 June 2004.

⁶ Pierre G. Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1969 ed. (Ottawa: Publication Office, 1969), pp. 847–850; Pierre G. Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1970 ed. (Ottawa: Publication Office, 1970), pp. 862–864.

⁷ Ed Schreyer, Governor General of Canada, to Pierre Elliot Trudeau, Prime Minister of Canada, 11 December 1981, [Letter], State Ceremonial and Canadian Symbols, Heritage Canada, Ottawa; E-mail from Guay, 15 June 2004.

⁸ E-mail from Betty Anne Spinks, Chief of Protocol, Executive Council, Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Edmonton, 27 February 2004.

⁹ Government of Alberta. Protocol Office, "Precedence List for the Province of Alberta," *Government of Alberta*, [Internet], (Edmonton: Government of Alberta, September 1998), accessed 2 July 2004, available from <http://www.gov.ab.ca/home/index.cfm>

¹⁰ E-mail from Betty Anne Spinks, Chief of Protocol, Executive Council, Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Edmonton, 2 February 2004.

¹¹ Government of Alberta. Protocol Office, "Precedence List for the Province of Alberta," [Internet].

¹² Howard Measures, *Styles of Address: A Manual of Usage in Writing and In Speech*, 3rd ed. (Toronto: Macmillan Company of Canada, 1969), p. 150.

¹³ *Ibid.*, p. 149; Saskatchewan. Office of Protocol and Honours, *Forms of Address* (Regina: Government of Saskatchewan, 2004), p. 6.

¹⁴ Alistair Fraser, W. F. Dawson, and John A. Holtby, *Beauchesne's Rules & Forms of the House of Commons Canada with Annotations, Comments and Precedents*, 6th ed. (Toronto: Carswell Co., 1989), p. 50, s. 169.

¹⁵ Measures, *Styles of Address: A Manual of Usage in Writing and in Speech*, p. 149.

¹⁶ Kathryn O'Handley, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 2002 ed. (Toronto: Gale Canada, 2002), p. 1257; Saskatchewan. Office of Protocol and Honours, *Forms of Address*, pp. 6–7.

¹⁷ Saskatchewan. Office of Protocol and Honours, *Forms of Address*, pp. 6–7.



*History of Governance of the
North-West Territories*

HISTORY OF GOVERNANCE OF THE NORTH-WEST TERRITORIES

Introduction

The history of governance of Alberta pre-dates its attainment of provincial status in 1905 and can be traced back to the early years following Canadian Confederation in 1867. The history of governance of the North-West Territories, of which the area now known as Alberta had been a part from the Territories' inception in 1870 until 1905, was characterized primarily by the quest to achieve representative government, embodied in the creation of an elected legislative assembly. The push for responsible government—a governance structure in which an elected executive is held responsible for its decisions by the Legislative Assembly—was the next major development in the legislative system of the North-West Territories. The move towards autonomy, beginning in the late-19th century, was the final stage in the evolution of a political and geographic entity that had begun as a mere 'dependency' of the Dominion of Canada.

Prior to Confederation, the lands that were to constitute what is modern Canada existed within a colonial system, administered first by France and later, after the Conquest of 1760, by Great Britain. In both the French and British colonial systems, Governors administered the colonies. The role of Governor continued beyond the colonial period, after Confederation, in the figure of the Governor General, who was and remains the Crown's representative in Canada and the nation's Head of State. However, because of the implementation of responsible government, the position of Governor General was, at the time of Confederation, as it is today, largely ceremonial. Appointed on the advice of the Prime Minister of Canada, Lieutenant Governors are representatives of the Crown in Canada's provinces. During the early post-Confederation period, they acted in part as federal agents and in part as intermediaries between the federal government and the territorial and provincial governments, which were seen at that time as subordinate levels of government.² As these governments gained power and influence, the role of the Lieutenant Governor became primarily ceremonial and independent of federal control. For example, in 1888, with the establishment of the role of Speaker in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, the Lieutenant Governor no longer presided over legislative proceedings. While ultimate executive authority continues to be held by the Crown or the Lieutenant Governor acting on behalf of the Crown, in actuality the Premier and his or her Cabinet execute this responsibility in today's provincial governments.

The purpose of this section is to briefly outline the key stages in the evolution of Alberta's system of governance during the North-West Territories period, and to highlight major developments along the path to full provincial status.



*Government House at Battleford, North-West Territories (Saskatchewan) (ca. 1877).
Saskatchewan Archives Board (SAB), R-A2287.*

Hudson's Bay Company: Defining the Territories of the North West

European governance of the North West began centuries ago, in the early fur trade period. During this time, the territorial boundaries of what were to become the Prairie Provinces and the Northwest Territories began to be established. After early forays into the area by French *coueurs de bois*,* English fur traders established operations on the shores of Hudson Bay by the mid-17th century. On May 2, 1670, King Charles II (1660–1685) incorporated by Royal Charter the “Governor and Company of Adventurers of England trading into Hudsons Bay,” thus providing the Hudson's Bay Company with exclusive trading rights and naming it as “true and absolute Lordes and Proprietors” of a territory that became known as “Rupert's Land.”³ The vast territory over which the Hudson's Bay Company henceforth claimed dominion was named after Prince Rupert, first Governor of the Company and cousin to Charles II.⁴ The remaining area to which England laid claim came to be called the ‘North-Western Territory’; however, neither the borders of Rupert's Land nor those of the North-Western Territory were ever authoritatively defined.⁵ The Royal Charter granted the Hudson's Bay Company a territory that included the entire Hudson Bay watershed. However, at the time, much of the area that comprises the modern western provinces and the Northwest Territories had not been surveyed. Hence, neither the Crown nor Company officials understood how vast the Hudson Bay drainage system really was. Indeed, in modern geographical terms, the Hudson Bay watershed encompasses the northwestern region of Quebec, northern Ontario, the entire province of Manitoba, most of Saskatchewan, southern and parts of central Alberta, much of Nunavut and an eastern portion of the Northwest Territories.⁶ It was only over time, after many surveys had been completed, that the extent of the territories held by the Hudson's Bay Company was realized.

Canada's Growing Interest in the North West, 1840s–1860s

Well before Confederation, Canadian expansionists,[†] chiefly from Canada West, were beginning to express an interest in annexing the Hudson's Bay Company territories for their province.⁷ There were a number of reasons why the Province of Canada became interested in annexing the North West. Most importantly, the Canadian Government would thereby acquire a territory into which settlers could be sent and which could be developed into a vast agricultural hinterland, of which Canada West would become the prime beneficiary.⁸ Another key reason was concern

* The *coueurs de bois*—literally translated from the French as ‘runners of the woods’—were unlicensed fur traders of New France. *Canadian Encyclopedia*, World Edition 2000, s.v. “Coueurs de bois.”

† The term ‘expansionist’ is an artificial construct developed to refer to those individuals living in the established British North American colonies, especially Canada West (Ontario), who believed that Canada's destiny and long-term economic prosperity depended in large measure on the acquisition of the North West by a newly unified British North America. Doug Owram, *Promise of Eden: The Canadian Expansionist Movement and the Idea of the West 1856–1900* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1980), pp. 3–6, 78.



about American expansionism.⁹ The rush of American immigrants into the western reaches of North America and, in particular, the resulting Oregon boundary dispute,* turned British and Canadian attention to uniting all of British North America, including the ill-defined Hudson's Bay Company territories in the west.¹⁰ Another factor increasing interest in the acquisition of Rupert's Land was the importance of establishing a secure line of communication between the colony of British Columbia (which incorporated the Hudson's Bay Company colony of Vancouver Island in 1866) in the west and the other British North American colonies in the east.[†]

In 1857, with the Hudson's Bay Company's exclusive trading licence coming up for renewal, and in light of various external pressures, including the desire to settle arable portions of the area, a Select Committee of the House of Commons of the United Kingdom was established to review the boundaries of the Company's territories and the validity of the Company's claims.¹¹ The Committee recommended that "[m]eans should also be provided for the ultimate extension of the colony over any portion of the adjoining continent, to the west of the Rocky Mountains, on which permanent settlement may be found practicable."¹² The Committee's report specified that "the districts on the Red River and the Saskatchewan are among those likely to be desired for early occupation" and that it was "of great importance that the peace and good order of those districts should be effectually secured."¹³ The "general consensus," even among Company officials, was that "the fur trade must retreat in the face of settlement."¹⁴ The Company's Licence for Exclusive Trade expired in 1859, facilitating the British Government's desire to prepare the way for the settlement of the North West.¹⁵

By the early 1850s, little was known of the topography, the climate or the soil conditions of the North West. In 1857, in response to increased interest in settlement possibilities, the British and

* The 1840s saw a major influx of American migrants to the Oregon Territory, to which both the United Kingdom and the United States laid claim. Tensions mounted to the level of potential warfare, and the United Kingdom, in no position to defend the territory, relinquished its claim. The Treaty of Oregon, signed on June 15, 1846, defined the international boundary west from the Rocky Mountains. Arthur S. Morton, *A History of the Canadian West to 1870-71*, 2nd ed., ed. Lewis G. Thomas (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1973), pp. 747-749.

† The discovery of gold in the Fraser Valley during the 1850s and the resulting influx of mostly American prospectors, combined with the threat of American annexationism, were the main reasons behind the impulse to establish such lines of communication.

‡ The mainland colony of British Columbia was created August 2, 1858. Vancouver Island was annexed to British Columbia in 1866. Jean Barman, *The West beyond the West: A History of British Columbia*, rev. ed. (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1996), p. 70; J. M. Bumsted, *The Peoples of Canada: A Pre-Confederation History* (Toronto: Oxford University Press, 1992), p. 376; Norman L. Nicholson, *The Boundaries of Canada, Its Provinces and Territories* (Ottawa: Geographical Branch, Mines and Technical Surveys, 1964), p. 33.



Canadian Governments each sponsored scientific expeditions to gather information on the area's geographic characteristics. Both the Palliser* and Hind† expeditions concluded that a substantial portion of the North West, the so-called 'fertile belt',¹⁶ was much more fecund than had been previously imagined.¹⁷ This newly obtained information, which revealed the economic potential of the North West, fueled additional interest in the region, accentuated the drive to develop untapped resources and heightened the concern that the North West's fertile belt would be annexed by the United States if Canada did not acquire it first. Indeed, Canadian expansionists were concerned that American settlers might move into the area en masse and establish an independent government leading to annexation by the United States, as had happened in Oregon.¹⁸

Prelude to Acquisition, 1864–1869

In 1864, at the Quebec Conference, the Fathers of Confederation identified Canada's acquisition of the North West as an important objective.¹⁹ The earliest seeds of a political system for the region were planted in the provisions of the *British North America Act, 1867* (*BNA Act, 1867*), which allowed for the admission of both Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory into the Dominion of Canada.²⁰ During the First Session of Canada's First Parliament, Minister of Public Works William McDougall gave an address that, in accordance with section 146 of the *BNA Act, 1867*, provided the substance of the forthcoming request to the United Kingdom for the acquisition of the North West.²¹ In July of 1868, the Parliament of the United Kingdom responded to this request by passing the *Rupert's Land Act*, providing for the admittance of Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory into the Dominion of Canada.²² However, the terms of cession had yet to be worked out. In late 1868, a delegation, composed of William McDougall and George-Étienne Cartier, was sent to London to negotiate these terms. By April of 1869, the delegates achieved their goal, as an agreement that handled the transfer and sale of Rupert's Land was struck between the Dominion of Canada and the United Kingdom.²³ Later that year, the Dominion Government secured an agreement with the United Kingdom to borrow the funds needed to purchase the land from the Hudson's Bay Company for £300,000 (\$1,460,000).²⁴ The United Kingdom also agreed to provide a second loan for the same amount "for the purpose of defraying the expense of opening up communication with and of the settlement and administration of the Government of the North-West Territories."²⁵

* The expedition was led by Captain John Palliser, a British explorer, and took place from 1857 to 1860. J. M. Bumsted, ed., *Documentary Problems in Canadian History: Pre-Confederation*, vol. 1 (Georgetown, ON: Irwin-Dorsey, 1969), pp. 220–221; Owram, *Promise of Eden*, pp. 64–68.

† Trinity College professor, geologist and naturalist Henry Youle Hind, civil engineer Simon James Dawson, and titular head of the expedition, George Gladman, were involved in the expedition. Bumsted, ed., *Documentary Problems in Canadian History: Pre-Confederation*, vol. 1, pp. 220–221.

‡ However, designated later, Palliser's Triangle was defined as an arid territory "having as its base the 49th parallel from the longitude 100 degrees to 114 degrees w., with its apex reaching the 52 parallel of latitude." United Kingdom, *The Journals, Detailed Reports and Observations Relative to the Exploration by Captain Palliser, 1859, "The General Report,"* p. 7, quoted in Owram, *Promise of Eden*, p. 67.

§ The Imperial Government had first to extinguish the original Hudson's Bay Company Charter in order that the sale of the North West to the Dominion Government might be facilitated. Morton, *A History of the Canadian West to 1870–71*, p. 852.

Temporary Government Act

In 1869, in order to accommodate the transition of governance from the Hudson's Bay Company, the Canadian Parliament passed *An Act for the temporary Government of Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory when united with Canada* (*Temporary Government Act*). The *Temporary Government Act* provided for the provisional government of Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory.²⁶ In the Act, the region was formally named 'The North-West Territories,' and authority was given to appoint a Lieutenant Governor to establish and administer laws. The Lieutenant Governor was to be appointed by the Governor General of Canada on the advice of the Privy Council.²⁷ Provision was also made for the appointment, by the Governor General, of a North-West Council, consisting of no fewer than seven and no more than 15 members, to aid the Lieutenant Governor, although the selection of a Council would not actually take place until 1872.²⁸ On September 28, 1869, William McDougall was appointed as the first Lieutenant Governor. The appointment was to take effect on the date of union of the North-West Territories with Canada. However, McDougall was never sworn in.²⁹

Manitoba Act, 1870

The date of union was initially intended to take place on October 1, 1869, but because of a delay in securing a loan from the United Kingdom, the transfer was postponed until December 1 of that year.³⁰ After further delay, due in part to the Riel Rebellion of 1869–1870,* the transfer of the territory became effective in mid-1870.³¹ On June 23, 1870, an Order in Council set the terms for the transfer of land from the Hudson's Bay Company, with the Territory to become part of the Dominion of Canada, effective July 15, 1870. In the transaction, the Company retained 120 trading posts with adjoining land and could claim one-twentieth of the land allocated in the next 50 years in the fertile belt, an area stretching across parts of present-day southern and central Alberta, southern and central Saskatchewan and southern Manitoba.³²

Legislated in the aftermath of the Riel Rebellion of 1869–1870, the *Manitoba Act*, assented to May 12, 1870, both created the Province of Manitoba and provided for the governance of the North-West Territories.³³ Carved out of a portion of the North-West Territories and composed primarily of settlements in the Red River Valley, Manitoba, the so-called 'Postage-Stamp Province,' was small in size.³⁴ While Manitoba gained most of the powers of the original four

* The details of the Riel Rebellion of 1869–1870 are not germane here except to say that many residents of the Red River Settlement, especially its Métis inhabitants, resented being shut out of the negotiations over the transfer of Rupert's Land to the Dominion Government. This resentment was a primary reason for the negative reaction against federal government preparations for the acquisition, governance and settlement of the North-West Territories, and was a leading contributory cause of the Riel Rebellion of 1869–1870. Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 31, 34–44.

† From 1870 to 1912, the boundaries of Manitoba were adjusted significantly. In 1881, the northern, western and eastern boundaries were extended, although the eastern boundary with Ontario remained in dispute until 1889. In 1912, the northern boundary was extended to its present location at 60 degrees. Canada. Department of Natural Resources, "Territorial Evolution," *The Atlas of Canada*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Dept. of Natural Resources, 2004), accessed 11 August 2004, available from <http://atlas.gc.ca/site/english/maps/history/territorialevolution>



provinces of Confederation, it was not granted control over its natural resources, a right that was retained by the federal government.³⁵ The remainder of what was once Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory continued as the North-West Territories.

The *Manitoba Act, 1870* provided that the Lieutenant Governor of Manitoba was also to act as the Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories. Furthermore, the seat of government was to be Fort Garry (Winnipeg), from which the Lieutenant Governor administered the Territories under the provisions of the Act.³⁶ Adams George Archibald (1870–1872) became the first Lieutenant Governor³⁷ to be sworn in. He held office without the aid of a federally sanctioned North-West Council during his two-year tenure.^{*38}

First North-West Council, 1872–1874

In 1872, Alexander Morris was appointed Lieutenant Governor (1872–1876), and 11 members were appointed to the First Council of the North-West Territories.^{†39} The Dominion Government was criticized for the appointments,[‡] and pressured to name more members to the Council. Consequently, in 1873, the maximum number of members on the Council was increased from 15 to 21 by an amendment to the *Temporary Government Act*.⁴⁰

On February 12, 1873, an Order in Council was issued defining the powers of the Council, allowing for the “administration of justice” and generally making and establishing “such laws, institutions and ordinances as may be necessary for the peace, order and good government” of the North-West Territories.⁴¹ It also stipulated that the Lieutenant Governor would preside over meetings, and that all proceedings were subject to his approval.⁴²

During the tenure of the first Council, the Territories continued to develop as an increasing number of surveyors and explorers moved west.⁴³ The North-West Mounted Police (NWMP), predecessor to the Royal Canadian Mounted Police (RCMP), was established, two Indian

* In 1872, Sir Francis Godschall Johnson was appointed the second Lieutenant Governor of Manitoba and the North-West Territories, but the appointment was revoked. *Canada Gazette*, vol. V, no. 42, 13 April 1872, p. 959; Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *House of Commons Debates, 1st Parliament, 4th Session*, 17 April 1872, cols. 44–45.

† This Council was constituted on December 28, 1872, and first met on March 8, 1873. The members were: Marc A. Girard, Henry J. Clarke, Donald A. Smith, Pascal Bréland, Alfred Boyd, Joseph Dubuc, Andrew G. B. Bannatyne, Dr. John C. Schultz, William Fraser, Robert Hamilton and William J. Christie. Only two of these, Hamilton and Christie, were residents of the Territories. Norman F. Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. I (Regina: Saskatchewan Historical Company, 1913), p. 172; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 54–55.

‡ Sectional interests argued that they were not being appropriately represented. There were complaints from those representing Ontario that its concerns were not sufficiently reflected on the Council, while Métis advocate Archbishop Alexandre-Antonin Taché was unhappy with the appointment of opponent Dr. John C. Schultz, an ‘Ontario man,’ and felt that only a larger contingent of French-speaking members could satisfy Francophone and Roman Catholic interests. Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 54, 54–55.



Treaties (Treaties 3 [1873] and 4 [1874] of Canada's so-called numbered treaties) were signed and the Department of the Interior* was created.⁴⁴ In 1875, work began to link Edmonton to Winnipeg via telegraph lines, and in 1876, mail service was introduced between the two settlements.⁴⁵

North-West Territories Act, 1875

Citing the expense and inefficiency of administering the Territories from Manitoba and responding to arguments highlighting the desirability of locating the seat of government closer to the frontier of settlement, Liberal Prime Minister Alexander Mackenzie (1873–1878) established a Territorial Government independent from that of Manitoba and with a capital that was closer to the centre of population of the Territories than was Winnipeg.⁴⁶ Passed in 1875, the *North-West Territories Act* was brought into force by proclamation on October 7, 1876.⁴⁷ This Act provided for a Lieutenant Governor resident in the Territories and distinct from that position in Manitoba.⁴⁸ Once again, the Council was not elected; rather, its members continued to be appointed by the Governor General of Canada.⁴⁹ However, the Council was given more power in that its ordinances could come into effect without receiving prior approval from Ottawa.⁵⁰ The Act also provided for the gradual addition of elected representatives as population numbers warranted.[†] Once the number of elected members reached 21, the appointed members were to be completely replaced by elected members, who would hold office for two years, and a Legislative Assembly would replace the North-West Council.⁵¹ The promise, if not the reality, of representative government had come to the North-West Territories.

First Lieutenant Governor and Council, 1876

The first Lieutenant Governor responsible solely for the North-West Territories was David Laird (1876–1881).[‡] A North-West Territorial Council was constituted on October 7, 1876 and consisted of just three members.[§] The First Session of the Council was held on March 8, 1877, at Livingstone, on the Swan River, and located near the Manitoba border, approximately one-

* Created in 1873 by the Dominion Government, the Department of the Interior was responsible for, among other things, developing and implementing policy in the North-West Territories. *An Act to provide for the establishment of "The Department of the Interior,"* S.C. 1873, c. 4.

† As soon as an area of 1,000 square miles contained 1,000 adult males owning the required amount of property, an electoral district could be established to return one member for a two-year term. Should the population of that district reach 2,000, a second member could be elected. *North-West Territories Act, 1875*, S.C. 1875, c. 49, s. 13 (1, 5); Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 76–77.

‡ From this date to 1905, there were six Lieutenant Governors of the North-West Territories: David Laird, Edgar Dewdney (1881–1888), Joseph Royal (1888–1893), Charles H. Mackintosh (1893–1898), Malcolm C. Cameron (1898) and Amédée E. M. Forget (1898–1905).

§ These members were: Stipendiary Magistrates Matthew Ryan and Lieutenant Colonel Hugh Richardson, and appointed member Lieutenant Colonel James F. Macleod. Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905–2000* (Regina: Saskatchewan Archives Board, 2001), pp. 1–6. Amédée E. M. Forget, future Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories and Saskatchewan, was appointed Clerk of the Council. North-West Territories Council, *Journals of the Council of the North-West Territories, Session of 1877*, 8 March 1877, p. 1.



and-a-half kilometres northwest of present-day Pelly, Saskatchewan.*⁵⁴ In August of that year, the proceedings were moved to the more central location of Battleford, which had been chosen as the Territorial capital in October 1876.⁵⁵

The Council continued to meet in Battleford until 1882, after which the Territorial capital was moved to Regina.⁵⁶ The move was a practical one based on a change of plans concerning the location of the transcontinental Canadian Pacific Railway (CPR). Initially surveyed to run through Battleford, Edmonton and the Yellowhead Pass, the proposed CPR route was changed to travel directly west from Manitoba, through Regina and Calgary, and then to cross the mountains via the Kicking Horse Pass.⁵⁷ While the CPR facilitated immigration during the 1880s, western settlement attained consistently high levels only during the boom period of 1896 to 1914.⁵⁸

First Elected Representatives, 1881

By 1880, the population of the North-West Territories finally warranted the creation of three electoral districts—Salisbury, Kimberley and Lorne—each district having reached the threshold of 1,000 potential voters. However, Territorial elections were never held in Salisbury and Kimberley, as these districts were subsequently incorporated into Manitoba, whose borders were expanded in 1881.⁵⁹ The new electoral district of Lorne (in present-day Saskatchewan) included Prince Albert, Duck Lake, Batoche and Carlton.⁶⁰ Hudson's Bay Company Factor Lawrence Clarke (1881–1883) defeated Henry S. Moore in the first election held on March 23, 1881.⁶¹

Provisional Districts, 1882

In order to accommodate postal service, and for the convenience of the settlers, a large portion of the North-West Territories was divided into four Provisional Districts[§] through an Order in Council issued on May 8, 1882 and approved by Parliament on May 16 of that year.⁶² As Prime Minister Sir John A. Macdonald (1867–1873, 1878–1891) suggested, these Districts, named

* This was a temporary location while appropriate accommodations at Battleford were being constructed. Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 80. Battleford's historic Government House was destroyed by fire on June 7, 2003. James Parker, "Historic Building Burns," *Leader-Post* (Regina), 9 June 2003, p. B1.

† The last meeting of the Fourth Legislative Session was held in Battleford on June 11, 1881. The first meeting of the Fifth Legislative Session was held on August 20, 1883, at the new Legislative Building in Regina. North-West Territories. Council, *Journals of the Council of the North-West Territories of Canada, Session of 1881*, 26 May–11 June 1881, p. 1; North-West Territories. Council, *Journals of the Council of the North-West Territories of Canada, Session of 1883*, 20 August–4 October 1883, p. 1.

‡ The CPR began its endeavour to build a transcontinental rail line in 1881. The rail line reached Regina in 1882, the summit of the Rocky Mountains in June 1883 and was completed in 1885. Lewis H. Thomas, *The North-West Territories, 1870–1905*, Canadian Historical Association Booklet, no. 26 (Ottawa: Canadian Historical Association, 1970), p. 7. The last spike was driven on November 7, 1885 at Craigellachie, British Columbia, which is near Revelstoke. J. M. Bumsted, *The Peoples of Canada: A Post-Confederation History* (Toronto: Oxford University Press, 1992), p. 29.

§ The Districts encompassed all of present-day Alberta and the southern portion of Saskatchewan. Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 98.

Assiniboia, Saskatchewan, Athabasca and Alberta, 'simply topographical divisions' at the time, might subsequently become provinces.⁶³ In the end, the Districts were not to become independent jurisdictions, rather their designation led to a development of 'district consciousness,' making apparent the divisions that were emerging among the residents of the North-West Territories.⁶⁴



Members of the North-West Council outside Council Chamber (1884). SAB, R-B4.

Roots of Discontent

With an increase in the number of settlers and thus a larger potential readership, by the early 1880s many newspapers were established, contributing to a greater dialogue on issues of territorial policy.⁶⁵ Representation in the federal Parliament was one such issue. In 1884, Josiah B. Plumb, Conservative Senator from Ontario, made a speech in the Senate urging the Dominion Government to grant parliamentary representation to the Territories.⁶⁶ The Minister of the Interior, David L. Macpherson, whose department was responsible for territorial policy, rejected the proposal, arguing that further investigation was warranted.⁶⁷ At about the same time, Liberal Member of Parliament Malcolm C. Cameron, Member for Huron West (Ontario) and future Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories (1898), introduced a Private Bill on the very same issue. The Bill did not progress beyond the first reading, voted down by the governing Conservative caucus.⁶⁸

Additional economic assistance from the federal government, greater control over finances, responsible government and even the attainment of provincial status were other issues that arose among residents of the North-West Territories during the mid-1880s. Efforts to promote more favourable treatment were widespread and evidenced in debates over "[p]arliamentary representation, responsible government, and provincial status" that occurred "at public meetings and in the press in all parts of the North-West."⁶⁹ However, the clamour for these and other reforms was loudest in the Lorne electoral division, located in the District of Saskatchewan. The Prince Albert area, situated within the Lorne constituency, was experiencing an economic downturn, exacerbated by declining immigration. A reduction in the rate of new settlement in the area was caused, in large part, by the change in the planning for the construction of the CPR's transcontinental rail line from its initially proposed northern route to one running instead through the southern prairies. The disappearance of the buffalo and maladjustment to agricultural settlement were causing social and economic suffering for the Métis and First Nations populations.⁷⁰ Furthermore, the Métis of the region had grown impatient and frustrated with the Dominion Government, which, despite Métis petitions urging it to recognize their land claims, had failed to acknowledge the legality of claims for river-lot farms that about 1,500 Métis had occupied near Prairie-Ronde and Prince Albert.⁷¹

Frustrated by government inaction, in the summer of 1884, some of the Métis of the Lorne electoral division turned for help to Louis Riel,⁷² who had successfully rallied support and

* The newspapers included the *Edmonton Bulletin* (1880), *Prince Albert Times* (1882), *Regina Leader* (1883) and *Calgary Herald* (1883). Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 88, 104.

pressured the Dominion Government into granting provincial status to the Red River Settlement in 1870. With Riel's aid, a petition, which outlined grievances and demanded provincial status and various other economic and social reforms to improve the condition of the Métis, was written and sent to Ottawa in December of that year.⁷³ On March 19, 1885, after the federal government again failed to respond to the Métis petition quickly or effectively,^{*74} Louis Riel established a provisional government,⁷⁵ as he had done immediately prior to the outbreak of the Riel Rebellion of 1869–1870. On March 26, Riel's Métis followers took up arms in the name of the provisional government and attacked a force of North-West Mounted Police and civilian volunteers at Duck Lake.⁷⁶ After several more clashes during the spring of 1885, on May 12 the fighting between the Métis and government forces ended with the defeat of Riel and his men at the Battle of Batoche.[†]

Louis Riel was charged and found guilty of committing treason, and was hanged on November 16, 1885.⁷⁷ Clearly, the Riel Rebellion of 1885 had been crushed through military means. Nevertheless, Dominion Government officials understood that the fundamental grievances that had underpinned the strife would continue to fester unless they were satisfactorily addressed.^{‡78} Accordingly, a number of reforms were granted in the aftermath of the Rebellion. In 1886, the North-West Territories was granted federal parliamentary representation, with two Members for Assiniboia and one each for Alberta and Saskatchewan elected to serve in Ottawa. In 1887, two Senators from the North-West Territories were appointed.⁷⁹

First Legislative Assembly, 1888

In 1888, the *North-West Territories Act* was amended, and the existing Council was abolished in favour of the creation of a Legislative Assembly. According to the amendment, the Legislative Assembly came to consist predominantly of elected representatives. In addition to the 22 elected Members, three non-voting legal advisers were appointed to the Assembly by the Governor General.⁸⁰ Furthermore, the Lieutenant Governor, who had presided over regular meetings of the North-West Council, did not preside over Sessions of the Legislative Assembly. Instead, provision was made for the election of a Speaker. The amended *North-West Territories Act* of 1888 stated, "The Legislative Assembly, on its first assembling after a general election, shall proceed with all practicable speed to elect one of its elected members to be Speaker."⁸¹ The first

* In January 1885, the Government promised to establish a commission to study the petition further. However, this weak response and further delays afterwards played into the hands of Riel, who advocated "more forceful measures, in particular the creation of a provisional government," to pressure the Dominion Government. Bill Waiser, "North-West Rebellion," eds. Bob Hesketh and Chris Hackett, *Canada, Confederation to Present*, [CD-ROM] (Edmonton: Chinook Multimedia, 2001), pp. 9–10.

† While the vast majority of First Nations people stayed out of the conflict, several hundred fighters battled government forces until early July 1885, when they were defeated. Waiser, "North-West Rebellion," pp. 21–26.

‡ After the Rebellions ended, the federal government rewarded with food and gifts those within the Aboriginal population who had remained loyal to the Dominion during the conflict. George F. G. Stanley, *The Birth of Western Canada: A History of the Riel Rebellions*, 2nd ed., Reprints in Canadian History (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1992), p. 378.

Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories was Dr. Herbert C. Wilson (1888–1890), Member for the electoral district of Edmonton.*⁸²

Advisory Council, 1888–1891

Another important development emanating from the Act was the provision for a four-person Advisory Council. The Advisory Council was to be appointed by the Lieutenant Governor, from the membership of the Assembly, to assist him in matters of finance. The Lieutenant Governor presided over the Council and held voting privileges.⁸³ Frederick W. A. G. Haultain, Member for Macleod, was the first leader of this Council.⁸⁴ During this period, the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories had control over only those revenues that were raised from within the Territories. Moreover, these revenues accounted for only about 10 per cent of total Territorial expenditures.⁸⁵ As provided in the Act, the Council had no control over the most substantial portion of the total Territorial revenues, namely the grants from the Dominion Government that were administered by the Lieutenant Governor.⁸⁶ This limitation of powers was a primary source of conflict between the Lieutenant Governor and the Advisory Council, and eventually led to the replacement of the Advisory Council with an executive committee.

Executive Committee, 1891–1897

Amendments made to the *North-West Territories Act* in 1891 eliminated the three non-voting legal advisors and allowed for the appointment of an executive committee.⁸⁷ Early in the First Session of the Second Legislature, a four-member Executive Committee was created by an Ordinance of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories.⁸⁸ This Executive Committee was a departure from the Advisory Council, which it had replaced,⁸⁹ and a step closer to responsible government in that its members took an oath of Office, one member was designated Chair, and the Lieutenant Governor was not included in its membership.⁹⁰ These new measures constituted “a major landmark in the autonomy movement” because they “opened the way for territorial control of Parliamentary appropriation ...”⁹¹ However, the achievement of responsible government was left to another day, since the Act, in the words of a prominent historian of the Canadian West, “was provokingly indefinite in regard to the status of the committee which might be set up to exercise these financial powers.”⁹²

* A total of five Speakers would serve in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories prior to the creation of the Provinces of Alberta and Saskatchewan: Herbert Charles Wilson, James Hamilton Ross (1891–1892, 1892–1894), John Felton Betts (1895–1898), William Eakin (1899–1902) and Archibald Beaton Gillis (1903–1904).

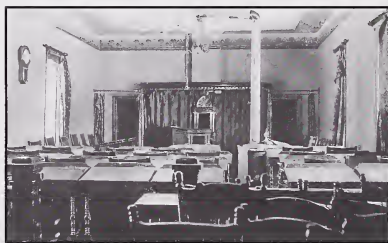
† The task of defining the structure and duties of the Executive Committee fell to the Council membership instead of being developed in Ottawa. Specifically, Frederick Haultain took on the responsibility of drafting the legislation to create the Committee. Haultain presented to the Assembly a Bill, which was subsequently amended so that “the Committee assumed the authority previously exercised by the Advisory Council wherever action by the Lieutenant-Governor in Council was required by territorial legislation.” Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 206, 203–204; North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, “An Ordinance respecting the Executive Government of the Territories,” *Ordinances of the North-West Territories, 2nd Legislature, 1st Session*, no. 1, 1891–92, s. 1; North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, “An Ordinance to Amend ‘The Interpretation Ordinance,’” *Ordinances of the North-West Territories, 2nd Legislature, 1st Session*, no. 3, 1891–92.



In late December 1891, Lieutenant Governor Joseph Royal asked Frederick Haultain to form the Executive Committee, and on December 31, three other Members agreed to serve with Haultain.⁹³ Frederick W. A. G. Haultain thus became “in effect if not in name ... premier and spokesman of the Northwest Territories.”⁹⁴ At this point, he began to negotiate directly with Ottawa for funding to support sundry territorial initiatives and to defray various governmental expenses.⁹⁵

Executive Council and the Advent of Responsible Government, 1897–1905

After years of agitation in favour of greater territorial rights, in 1897 the advocates of constitutional change achieved a measure of success.⁹⁶ A new Liberal Government in Ottawa, fresh from its 1896 election victory, provided hope that constitutional and financial revisions could be made to the existing governance structure of the North-West Territories. Taking advantage of this new opportunity to push forward their agenda for change, reform-minded members of the Executive Committee, including Frederick W. A. G. Haultain and former Speaker James H. Ross, prepared a memorial[†] for submission to the Laurier Government in Ottawa. This memorial subsequently “gave rise to the most notable debate in the parliamentary history of the North-West up to that time.”⁹⁷ While the memorial of 1896 did not bear fruit immediately, it formed the basis of a continuing House of Commons debate that lasted until the fall of 1897.⁹⁸ At that time, Clifford Sifton, Minister of the Interior, introduced a Bill that would “give the people of the Territories a government” in which they would have “Ministers who are responsible to the legislature” and in which “the rules and precedents that apply to the provincial governments [would] apply to the government of the Territories.”⁹⁹



Interior of the old North-West Territories Assembly Hall, Regina, Saskatchewan (ca. 1908). SAB, R-A46.

Accordingly, in 1897, the *North-West Territories Act* was amended again, providing for the establishment of an Executive Council with a President (Cabinet and Premier), appointed by the Lieutenant Governor.¹⁰⁰ The new structure was more reflective of British parliamentary practice than had been the locally developed Executive Committee. While the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories “had clothed the Executive Committee with ... many of the vestments of a responsible executive”¹⁰¹ during the mid-1890s, responsible government had not been

* Haultain remained *de facto* premier until 1897 and Premier of the North-West Territories from that point until provincial status was granted in 1905, with one brief interruption in 1892, when his Committee resigned after losing a vote of no-confidence. Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 216–217; MacEwan, *Frederick Haultain*, pp. 67, 105.

† A memorial is a written petition or a statement of facts put before a legislative body. For more information, see the Glossary.

‡ Following their appointments, every member of the new Executive Council, including Premier Frederick Haultain, had to stand for re-election, as per the contemporary statutory requirement. *An Act further to amend the Acts respecting the North-west Territories*, S.C. 1897, c. 28, s. 9; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 259n105.



incorporated into the legislation; indeed, it still required formal recognition by Parliament, which came at last with the legislative amendment of 1897.

Yukon, 1898

Between 1870 and 1898, the lands that would become the Yukon Territory were part of the North-West Territories. During the mid-1890s, as news spread of the discoveries of great mineral wealth—specifically gold—in the Yukon Valley, the population of this area soared. In 1887, the number of miners had been estimated at 300. After the Klondike strike of August 17, 1896, that number shot into the thousands.¹⁰² In order to create an administrative structure, in 1895 the federal government first established the Provisional District of Yukon, which remained part of the North-West Territories.* Indeed, this change was accompanied by no new governance structure, as the District continued to be governed from Regina.¹⁰³ Then, in 1898, federal legislation created the Yukon Territory out of this District.¹⁰⁴ The rapidly increasing population and need for services, precipitated by the Klondike Gold Rush, had necessitated a new governance structure for the Yukon. However, governmental authority for the Yukon rested not only within the new territory, but also partly in Ottawa.¹⁰⁵

Defining and Creating the Provinces, 1897–1905

With the advent of responsible government in 1897, the powers of the Territorial Government were now quite similar to those of the Canadian provinces. Nevertheless the Territories still did not have control over public lands and natural resources. This issue was not to be resolved until well after provincial status was attained.† Additionally, the Territories' powers of taxation remained very limited, and federal support for local services continued to be inadequate. Further, the Territorial Government lacked the ability to charter its own railways, an important consideration in a large region in which areas were being opened up for settlement and in which farmers required a cost-effective and efficient means by which to deliver their products to market.¹⁰⁶ Consequently, the struggle for autonomy persisted with increasing urgency as population growth outpaced financial resources and as the governance instruments required to administer the region were made conspicuous by their absence.¹⁰⁷

By the turn of the century, the Dominion Government still believed that the Territories were under-populated and therefore unprepared for provincial status.¹⁰⁸ Perhaps more importantly, the Laurier Government was reluctant to entertain discussions over autonomy as long as leading advocates of the autonomy movement, like Frederick Haultain, argued for the creation of one

* On October 2, 1895, the Dominion Parliament determined that "it [was] expedient for the convenience of settlers in the unorganized and unnamed districts of the North-West Territories and for postal purposes, that the whole of such territories should be divided into provisional districts ... to be named Ungava, Franklin, Mackenzie and Yukon." *Canada Gazette*, vol. XXIX, no. 16, 19 October 1895, pp. 683–684.

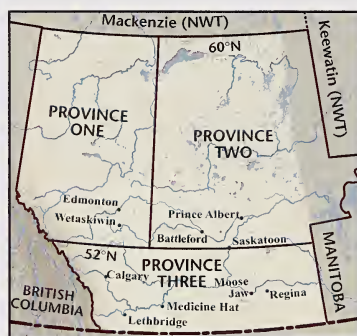
† It was not until the early 1930s that Alberta gained control over the natural resources of the Province. *Alberta Natural Resources Act*, S.A. 1930, c. 21.



large province.*¹⁰⁹ The Dominion Government feared that such an entity would be too powerful a force, upsetting the existing balance of power among the provinces.¹¹⁰

Differing opinions existed, however, as to the appropriate number and boundaries of the potential provinces.¹¹¹ Anywhere from one to four provinces and even partial annexation by Manitoba were considered.¹¹² Proponents of one province cited the lack of government duplication as the primary reason for their position.¹¹³ Also, they argued that one province would help to facilitate the assimilation of new immigrants.¹¹⁴ Those favouring a division into multiple provinces cited the following as factors influencing their stance: a 'diversity of interest' among the Districts of the Territories; the physical and climatic differences of the region (especially between north and south); and the elimination of the rivalry over the question of the capital.¹¹⁵ Other alternatives were proposed, including: two provinces divided by the southern boundary of the District of Saskatchewan; two provinces divided by a border running north to south; and three provinces, merging Assiniboia with the southern part of Alberta, northern Alberta with the Peace River Country, and Saskatchewan with eastern Athabasca.¹¹⁶

The question of autonomy for the Territories, to which the issue of boundaries was closely related, and the matter of adequate financial allocations from the federal government, dominated communications between the Dominion and North-West Territories Governments during this period.¹¹⁷ Autonomy also became a major focus in the federal parliamentary debates of 1903 and during the federal election campaign of the following year.¹¹⁸ Pressured by the Conservative Opposition in Ottawa and a growing autonomy movement in the North-West Territories, the Liberal Party promised during the campaign that, if returned to power, it would grant autonomy to the Territories.¹¹⁹ After its victory, the Laurier Government followed through on its commitment. On July 5, 1905 the Autonomy Acts were passed,¹²⁰ and on September 1, 1905, the federal government created two new provinces,† Alberta and Saskatchewan, out of part of the North-West Territories.



The division of a large portion of the North-West Territories into three provinces, roughly equal in size, was one of several proposals put forth by the proponents of provincial autonomy. See Appendix Q for additional maps.

* Premier Haultain envisioned one province that would include all of the Territories. "Haultain opposes Manitoba extension and supports the one Province idea, Indian Head, December 18, 1901: from the pamphlet, Full Text of the Indian Head Debate," in *The Formation of Alberta: A Documentary History*, ed. Douglas R. Owsam (Calgary: Alberta Records Publication Board, Historical Society of Alberta, 1979), p. 183.

† The decision to create two provinces was based in part on the view that the southern prairies were simply too large an area for one province. Also anything north of the 60th parallel was deemed unfit for agriculture and therefore unsuitable for any significant permanent settlement, which was necessary for a stable provincial government. Norman L. Nicholson, *The Boundaries of the Canadian Confederation*, The Carleton Library, no. 115 (Toronto: Macmillan, 1979), p. 135.

Although Alberta had now achieved provincial status, there were still outstanding issues to be settled. Firstly, from among Edmonton, Red Deer and Calgary, the three primary contenders vying to become the capital, the Dominion Government chose Edmonton as a temporary capital on the understanding that the final selection would be left up to the Province.¹²¹ Subsequently, Edmonton was declared the capital in the *Alberta Act*,¹²² leading to charges of partisanship by the supporters of the other claimants and by certain editorialists.¹²³ Those opposing the selection argued that Edmonton was chosen only because of the influence of Edmonton Liberal Members of Parliament on their colleagues in the Dominion Government.¹²⁴ Nevertheless, in 1906 the Legislative Assembly of Alberta affirmed the selection of Edmonton as the new province's permanent capital.¹²⁵

The matter of the role of politics in the governance of the new province was also in question. At issue was whether there would be party alignments in Alberta provincial politics, as was the case federally and in the other provinces. Frederick Haultain had felt that the new Legislative Assemblies of Alberta and Saskatchewan should continue the tradition established in the Territories and remain non-partisan.¹²⁶ However, Haultain's view did not prevail.

In its founding convention in August of 1905, members of the Liberal Association of Alberta elected Alexander C. Rutherford leader of the Liberal Party. Days later, Richard B. Bennett was selected as the leader of the province's Conservative Party.¹²⁷ In addition, political alliances prevailed in choosing the Lieutenant Governors and Premiers of the provinces, all of whom were of the same political persuasion as the governing party in Ottawa.¹²⁸



The newly constructed Legislature Building rises in the background in stark contrast to the old Hudson's Bay Company fort (1912).

Perhaps the most contentious issue during this period was the matter of denominational schools. The school clause¹²⁹ of the Autonomy Bills of 1905 led to concern among Protestants in the North-West Territories that an education system controlled by the Catholic Church would prevail. Clifford Sifton, Minister of the Interior, was so concerned about these provisions that he resigned from the federal Cabinet. In an interesting twist, after the Minister's resignation, the clause that Sifton had proposed earlier advocating the 'educational status quo' replaced the Bills' original clauses.¹³⁰ As a result of this revision, the first or majority school within a district had to be a public school. Denominational, or separate, schools could only open once the public school had been established.¹³¹

Less contentious, but still very important, was the issue of natural resource ownership. Supporters of provincial autonomy had been advocating natural resources rights for over a decade. In 1905, the federal government opted against granting mineral and other natural resource rights to the two new Provinces of Alberta and Saskatchewan.¹³² In Alberta, the issue gained renewed attention during the First World War and into the 1920s, during which period Alberta oil developers complained about Ottawa's management of petroleum resources in the province. Finally, in 1930, in response to years of agitation in favour of the right to control public lands, Alberta was granted jurisdiction over its natural resources.¹³³

Northwest Territories, 1906–Present

As a consequence of the creation of the Provinces of Alberta and Saskatchewan, the North-West Territories had now become much smaller in terms of population and area. *The North-west Territories Amendment Act*, which was enacted in July of 1905, provided for the governance of the Territories by an officer called the Commissioner of the North-West Territories.¹³⁴ The new North-West Territories consisted of all that part of Canada located north of the 60th parallel of north latitude, except the portions of that area that constituted the Yukon Territory, the District of Keewatin, and parts of Quebec and Newfoundland and Labrador.¹³⁵ Then, in 1906, the revised *Northwest Territories Act* redefined the Territories' boundaries and altered the name, dropping the hyphen.¹³⁶ Frederick D. White was appointed the Commissioner of the North-West Territories on August 24, 1905 and continued as Commissioner of the newly constituted Northwest Territories until 1919.¹³⁷

Alberta and Saskatchewan, 1905

The first general elections of the new provinces were held on November 9, 1905 in Alberta and on December 13, 1905 in Saskatchewan. Elected Members affiliated with the Liberal Party formed Governments in both of the new provinces. As leader of the Provincial Rights Party, Frederick Haultain* served as the Leader of the Official Opposition in Saskatchewan's First Legislature. The Hon. T. Walter Scott, a Liberal, served as Saskatchewan's first Premier from 1905 to 1916, while the Hon. Alexander C. Rutherford, leader of the provincial Liberal Party, became the first Premier of Alberta, serving from 1905 to 1910. The Hon. Amédée E. M. Forget, the last Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories, became the first Lieutenant Governor of Saskatchewan, and served in that capacity from 1905 to 1910. The Hon. George H. V. Bulyea was appointed the first Lieutenant Governor of Alberta, and served in that role from 1905 to 1915. Thomas MacNutt was elected Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Saskatchewan, and held this post from 1906 to 1908. Charles W. Fisher was elected the first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, serving from 1906 until 1919.

Summary

In the 1870s, although not a 'colony,' the North-West Territories had had many of the associated trappings. Economically, it was a hinterland of the new Dominion of Canada. Governmentally, the Territories had a 'primitive'¹³⁸ governance structure in which government members were appointed and behaved as representatives of the centralized power. By the late-19th century, as the North-West Territories slowly began to be settled, reforms were made to the territorial governance structure: a wholly elected Legislative Assembly emerged; the Territories were redistributed into Provisional Districts; and, most importantly, responsible government evolved. Indeed, with the establishment of the Executive Council in 1897, the North-West Territories was, in many respects, governed in the same fashion as the provinces. As a result of self-

* Haultain's active support for the federal Conservative Party and his criticism of the policies of the federal Liberal Government were well known. Because of his Conservative political leanings, Haultain was not appointed as Premier of either of the new provinces. J. William Brennan, "The 'Autonomy Question' and the Creation of Alberta and Saskatchewan, 1905," in *The New Provinces: Alberta and Saskatchewan, 1905–1980: 12th Western Canada Studies Conference*, ed. Howard Palmer and Donald Smith (Vancouver: Tantalus Research Limited, 1980), p. 49.



government, moreover, the Territories lost most of the vestiges of dependency status, but still lacked full control over its finances and policy making. When Alberta and Saskatchewan became provinces in 1905, the yoke of dependency was cast aside for good as the new provinces achieved the status for which many had worked long and hard. In 1930, the remaining traces of territorial status disappeared as Alberta gained full control over its own lands and resources, thus becoming a full partner in Canadian Confederation.

Notes

- ¹ Lewis Herbert Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government in the North-West Territories, 1870–97*, 2nd ed. (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1978), p. ix.
- ² *British North America Act, 1867* (U.K.), 30 & 31 Vict., c. 3, s. 58; George F. G. Stanley, *The Role of the Lieutenant-Governor* (Fredericton: New Brunswick Office of the Lieutenant-Governor, 1992), p. 19; Peter W. Noonan, *The Crown and Constitutional Law in Canada* (Calgary: Scribnon Publications, 1998), p. 125. Note that the name of the *British North America Act, 1867* was changed in 1982 to the *Constitution Act, 1867*. For more information, see the Glossary.
- ³ Glyndwr Williams, *Highlights of the First 200 Years of the Hudson's Bay Company* (Winnipeg: Peguis Publishers, 1970; reprint, *The Beaver: Magazine of the North*, Autumn 1970), pp. 7–8.
- ⁴ Arthur S. Morton, *A History of the Canadian West to 1870–71*, 2nd ed., ed. Lewis G. Thomas (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1973), pp. 59–60; Arthur Ray, “When Two Worlds Met,” in *The Illustrated History of Canada*, ed. Craig Brown (Toronto: Key Porter Books, 2002), p. 68.
- ⁵ Williams, *Highlights of the First 200 Years*, p. 56; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 6.
- ⁶ J. M. Bumstead, *The Peoples of Canada: A Pre-Confederation History* (Toronto: Oxford University Press, 1992), p. 306; Peter Waite, “Between Three Oceans: Challenges of a Continental Destiny (1840–1900),” in *The Illustrated History of Canada*, ed. Craig Brown (Toronto: Key Porter Books, 2002), pp. 326–327; Ray, “When Two Worlds Met,” p. 68.
- ⁷ Doug Owram, *Promise of Eden: The Canadian Expansionist Movement and the Idea of the West, 1856–1900* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1980), pp. 3–4, 38–39, 69.
- ⁸ *Ibid.*, pp. 45–49.
- ⁹ E. E. Rich, *Hudson's Bay Company, 1670–1870*, vol. III: 1821–1870 (Toronto: McClelland & Stewart, 1960), p. 804; Williams, *Highlights of the First 200 Years*, p. 56.
- ¹⁰ Owram, *Promise of Eden*, p. 28; Norman L. Nicholson, *The Boundaries of Canada, Its Provinces and Territories* (Ottawa: Geographical Branch, Mines and Technical Surveys, 1964), pp. 31–33.
- ¹¹ Canada. House of Commons. Select Committee on the Hudson's Bay Company, *Report from the Select Committee on the Hudson's Bay Company together with the Proceedings of the Committee, Minutes of Evidence, Appendix and Index* (Ottawa: House of Commons, 1857), p. iv; Morton, *A History of the Canadian West to 1870–71*, pp. 831, 834.
- ¹² Canada. House of Commons. Select Committee on the Hudson's Bay Company, *Report from the Select Committee on the Hudson's Bay Company*, p. iv.
- ¹³ *Ibid.*
- ¹⁴ Williams, *Highlights of the First 200 Years*, p. 57; Nicholson, *The Boundaries of Canada*, pp. 33–34.



¹⁵ Note that after 1859, the Hudson's Bay Company retained administrative rights over Rupert's Land, according to the provisions of the original Charter of 1670, and in effect, if not in law, retained its trade monopoly over its lands. However, the British Government's action constituted notice that "the days of the Charter might be numbered." Williams, *Highlights of the First 200 Years*, p. 57; Nicholson, *The Boundaries of Canada*, pp. 33–34.

¹⁶ Owram, *Promise of Eden*, p. 67.

¹⁷ *Ibid.*, pp. 61–72.

¹⁸ Morton, *A History of the Canadian West to 1870–71*, p. 750.

¹⁹ Lewis H. Thomas, *The North-West Territories, 1870-1905*, Canadian Historical Association Booklet, no. 26 (Ottawa: Canadian Historical Association, 1970), p. 3.

²⁰ *British North America Act, 1867* (U.K.), 30 & 31 Vict., c. 3, s. 146.

²¹ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 7; Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Journals of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 1st Parliament, 1st Session*, vol. I, 11–12 December 1867, pp. 64–68.

²² *Rupert's Land Act* (U.K.), 31 & 32 Vict. 1868, c. 105; Charles Cecil Lingard, *Territorial Government in Canada: The Autonomy Question in the Old North-West Territories* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1946), p. 3.

²³ *Order of Her Majesty in Council Admitting Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory into the Union*, 23 June 1870, U.K. Schedule (B), no. 1, Resolutions, 28 May 1869; R. S. Longley, "Cartier and McDougall, Emissaries to London," *Canadian Historical Review* vol. 26 (March 1945): pp. 40–41.

²⁴ *An Act for granting to Her Majesty certain sums of money required to defray certain expenses of the public service, for the financial years ending respectively the 30th June, 1869, and the 30th June, 1870, and for other purposes relating to the public service*, S.C. 1869, c. 1, s. 3.

²⁵ *An Act for granting to Her Majesty certain sums of money required to defray certain expenses of the public service, for the financial years ending respectively the 30th June, 1869, and the 30th June, 1870, and for other purposes relating to the public service*, S.C. 1869, c. 1, s. 4.

²⁶ *Temporary Government Act*, S.C. 1869, c. 3.

²⁷ *Temporary Government Act*, S.C. 1869, c. 3, ss. 1–2.

²⁸ *Temporary Government Act*, S.C. 1869, c. 3, s. 4; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 46–47, 51–56.

²⁹ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 19; Canada. Parliament, "Copy of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 28th September 1869," *Sessional Papers, 1st Parliament, 3rd Session*, no. 12, 1870; George F. G. Stanley, *The Birth of Western Canada: A History of the Riel Rebellions*, 2nd ed., *Reprints in Canadian History* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1992), p. 86; John Charles Dent, "The Hon. William McDougall, C. B.," in *Canadian Portrait Gallery*, vol. IV (Toronto: John B. Magurn, 1881), p. 153.

³⁰ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 16.

³¹ Williams, *Highlights of the First 200 Years*, p. 59.

³² "Order of Her Majesty in Council admitting Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory into the Union at the Court at Windsor, the 23rd day of June, 1870," in *The Formation of Alberta: A Documentary History*, ed. Douglas R. Owram (Calgary: Alberta Records Publication Board, Historical Society of Alberta, 1979), pp. 28–33; Williams, *Highlights of the First 200 Years*, p. 59.



³³ *Manitoba Act, 1870*, S.C. 1870, c. 3.

³⁴ Ken Coates and Fred McGuinness, *Manitoba: The Province & The People* (Edmonton: Hurtig, 1987), p. 21; Nicholson, *The Boundaries of Canada*, p. 69; J. M. Bumsted, *The Peoples of Canada: A Pre-Confederation History* (Toronto: Oxford University Press, 1992), p. 375.

³⁵ Morton, *A History of the Canadian West to 1870-71*, p. 914.

³⁶ *Manitoba Act, 1870*, S.C. 1870, c. 3, ss. 8, 35-36.

³⁷ *Canada Gazette*, vol. IV, no. 4, 23 July 1870, p. 46.

³⁸ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 47.

³⁹ *Canada Gazette*, vol. VI, no. 23, 7 December 1872, p. 485; Thomas, *The North-West Territories, 1870-1905*, p. 4.

⁴⁰ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 54-55, 71; *An Act to amend the Act intituled: An Act to make further provision for the Government of the North West Territories*, S.C. 1873, c. 5.

⁴¹ Canada. Parliament, "Copies of all Orders of His Excellency the Governor General in Council; and of all Laws and Ordinances of the Lieutenant-Governor and Council of the North-West Territories, made under the provisions of 34 Vic., cap. 16, sec. 1," *Sessional Papers, 3rd Parliament, 3rd Session*, vol. IX, no. 70, 1876, p. 1.

⁴² *Ibid.*, p. 2; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 57.

⁴³ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 63.

⁴⁴ *An Act respecting the administration of Justice, and for the establishment of a Police Force in the North West Territories*, S.C. 1873, c. 35; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 59-60, 63.

⁴⁵ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 63.

⁴⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 74.

⁴⁷ *North-West Territories Act, 1875*, S.C. 1875, c. 49; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 79.

⁴⁸ *North-West Territories Act, 1875*, S.C. 1875, c. 49, s. 2.

⁴⁹ *North-West Territories Act, 1875*, S.C. 1875, c. 49, s. 3.

⁵⁰ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 78.

⁵¹ *North-West Territories Act, 1875*, S.C. 1875, c. 49, s. 13.

⁵² *Canada Gazette*, vol. X, no. 15, 7 October 1876, p. 457.

⁵³ Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905-2000* (Regina: Saskatchewan Archives Board, 2001), p. 1-6.

⁵⁴ North-West Territories. Council, *Journals of the Council of the North-West Territories of Canada, Session of 1877*, 8 March 1877, p. 1.

⁵⁵ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 80.

⁵⁶ Lingard, *Territorial Government in Canada*, p. 5.

⁵⁷ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 103; Thomas, *The North-West Territories, 1870-1905*, p. 7; Gerald Friesen, *The Canadian Prairies: A History* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1984), p. 178.



- ⁵⁸ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 103–104; D. J. Hall, “Clifford Sifton: Immigration and Settlement Policy, 1896–1905,” in *The Settlement of the West*, ed. Howard Palmer (Calgary: University of Calgary, Comprint Publishing Company, 1977), pp. 62, 70–71, 81; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, *Canada Year Book*, 1970–71 ed. (Ottawa: Dominion Bureau of Statistics, 1971), p. 210.
- ⁵⁹ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 89; North-West Territories. Council, *Journals of the Council of the North-West Territories of Canada, Session of 1881*, 26 May 1881, pp. 5–6; *An Act to provide for the extension of the boundaries of the Province of Manitoba*, S.C. 1881, c. 14.
- ⁶⁰ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 114.
- ⁶¹ *Ibid.*, p. 115; Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905–2000*, pp. 1–6, 1–15, 1–26; Thomas, *The North-West Territories, 1870–1905*, p. 5.
- ⁶² Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 97; Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Official Debates of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 4th Parliament, 4th Session*, 16 May 1882, pp. 1567–1568.
- ⁶³ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates, 4th Parliament, 4th Session*, 16 May 1882, p. 1567.
- ⁶⁴ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 97–98.
- ⁶⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 88, 104.
- ⁶⁶ Canada. Parliament. Senate, *Debates of the Senate, 5th Parliament, 2nd Session*, 25 February 1884, pp. 143–152.
- ⁶⁷ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 120–121.
- ⁶⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 121.
- ⁶⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 127.
- ⁷⁰ *Ibid.*, pp. 121–122.
- ⁷¹ Bill Waiser, “The North-West Rebellion,” eds. Bob Hesketh and Chris Hackett, *Canada, Confederation to Present: An Interactive History of Canada*, [CD-ROM], (Edmonton: Chinook Multimedia, 2001), p. 4.
- ⁷² *Ibid.*, p. 3.
- ⁷³ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 128.
- ⁷⁴ Thomas Flanagan, *Riel and the Rebellion: 1885 Reconsidered*, 2nd ed. (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 2000), pp. 57, 44–63. The petitions centred on the Métis demand that the Dominion Government recognize claims to their river-lot farms.
- ⁷⁵ Waiser, “The North-West Rebellion,” p. 10.
- ⁷⁶ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 130; J. M. Bumsted, *The Peoples of Canada: A Post-Confederation History* (Toronto: Oxford University Press, 1992), pp. 43–44.
- ⁷⁷ Waiser, “The North-West Rebellion,” p. 27.
- ⁷⁸ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 135.
- ⁷⁹ *North-West Territories Representation Act*, 1886, S.C. 1886, c. 24; *An Act respecting the representation of the North-West Territories in the Senate of Canada*, S.C. 1887, c. 3; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 135–136.

⁸⁰ *An Act to amend the North-west Territories Act*, S.C. 1888, c. 19, s. 2.

⁸¹ *An Act to amend the North-west Territories Act*, S.C. 1888, c. 19, s. 11.

⁸² North-West Territories. *Legislative Assembly, Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 1st Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. I, 31 October 1888, p. 8.

⁸³ Thomas, *The North-West Territories, 1870–1905*, p. 10; *An Act to amend the North-west Territories Act*, S.C. 1888, c. 19, s. 13.

⁸⁴ Thomas, *The North-West Territories, 1870–1905*, p. 10; *Debates of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 1st Legislature, 1st Session*, [Microfilm], Saskatchewan Legislative Library, Regina, vol. 1, 1888, pp. 51, 55; *Debates of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 2nd Legislature, 1st Session*, [Microfilm], Saskatchewan Legislative Library, Regina, vol. 5, 1891.

⁸⁵ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 164–165.

⁸⁶ *An Act to amend the Acts respecting the North-West Territories*, S.C. 1891, c. 22, s. 6(12); Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 6th Parliament, 2nd Session*, 16 May 1888, pp. 1474, 1483.

⁸⁷ *An Act to amend the Acts respecting the North-West Territories*, S.C. 1891, c. 22, s. 2; *An Act to amend the North-west Territories Act*, S.C. 1888, c. 19, s. 2; North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, "An Ordinance respecting the Executive Government of the Territories," *Ordinances of the North-West Territories, 2nd Legislature, 1st Session*, no. 1, 1891–92, p. 5; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 199–200.

⁸⁸ Grant MacEwan, *Frederick Haultain: Frontier Statesman of the Canadian Northwest* (Saskatoon: Western Producer Prairie Books, 1985), p. 67.

⁸⁹ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 203–204.

⁹⁰ *Ibid.*, p. 204.

⁹¹ *Ibid.*, p. 200.

⁹² *Ibid.*

⁹³ North-West Territories, *Debates, 2nd Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. 5, 1891; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 205, 207.

⁹⁴ MacEwan, *Frederick Haultain: Frontier Statesman*, p. 67.

⁹⁵ *Ibid.*; Thomas, *The North-West Territories, 1870–1905*, p. 13.

⁹⁶ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 234–263.

⁹⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 253.

⁹⁸ *Ibid.*, pp. 253–259.

⁹⁹ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 8th Parliament, 2nd Session*, 25 May 1897, col. 2797; *Ibid.*, 15 June 1897, col. 4115.

¹⁰⁰ *An Act further to amend the Acts respecting the North-west Territories*, S.C. 1897, c. 28, s. 8.

¹⁰¹ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 259.

¹⁰² Nicholson, *The Boundaries of Canada*, p. 76.

¹⁰³ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 267; David R. Morrison, *The Politics of the Yukon Territory, 1898–1909* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1968), p. 19.

¹⁰⁴ *Yukon Territory Act*, S.C. 1898, c. 6.

- ¹⁰⁵ Morrison, *The Politics of the Yukon Territory, 1898–1909*, p. 20; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 267.
- ¹⁰⁶ Howard Palmer and Tamara Palmer, *Alberta: A New History* (Edmonton: Hurtig, 1990), p. 129.
- ¹⁰⁷ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 8th Parliament, 2nd Session*, 21 April 1897, col. 1036; Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 8th Parliament, 4th Session*, 14 July 1899, cols. 7500–7501; “The Birth of the Province of Saskatchewan,” *Saskatoon Star Phoenix*, 11 September 1952, p. 2.
- ¹⁰⁸ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 9th Parliament, 2nd Session*, 18 April 1902, col. 3079; Palmer and Palmer, *Alberta: A New History*, p. 129; “Clifford Sifton to Haultain, March 27, 1902: Canada Sessional Paper 116a, 1904,” in *The Formation of Alberta: A Documentary History*, ed. Douglas R. Ooram (Calgary: Alberta Records Publication Board, Historical Society of Alberta, 1979), p. 188.
- ¹⁰⁹ Palmer and Palmer, *Alberta: A New History*, p. 129; “Haultain opposes Manitoba extension and supports the one Province idea. Indian Head, December 18, 1901: from the pamphlet, Full Text of the Indian Head Debate,” in *The Formation of Alberta: A Documentary History*, ed. Douglas R. Ooram (Calgary: Alberta Records Publication Board, Historical Society of Alberta, 1979), p. 183.
- ¹¹⁰ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 265; Lingard, *Territorial Government in Canada*, pp. 72–73.
- ¹¹¹ John Blue, *Alberta Past and Present: Historical and Biographical: Illustrated*, vol. 1 (Chicago: Pioneer Historical Pub. Co., 1924), p. 116; Norman L. Nicholson, *The Boundaries of the Canadian Confederation*, The Carleton Library, no. 115 (Toronto: Macmillan, 1979), pp. 130–135.
- ¹¹² Nicholson, *The Boundaries of the Canadian Confederation*, pp. 130–135.
- ¹¹³ Lingard, *Territorial Government in Canada*, p. 70.
- ¹¹⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 71.
- ¹¹⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 72–73.
- ¹¹⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 72.
- ¹¹⁷ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 9th Parliament, 3rd Session*, 13–14 October 1903, cols. 13856–13933.
- ¹¹⁸ Douglas R. Ooram, ed., *The Formation of Alberta: A Documentary History* (Calgary: Alberta Records Publication Board, Historical Society of Alberta, 1979), p. xxxiv; Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates, 9th Parliament, 3rd Session*, 13–14 October 1903, cols. 13856–13933.
- ¹¹⁹ Palmer and Palmer, *Alberta: A New History*, p. 130.
- ¹²⁰ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 10th Parliament, 1st Session*, 5 July 1905, cols. 8831–8866, 8866–8885.
- ¹²¹ Ooram, ed., *The Formation of Alberta*, p. xlii; Palmer and Palmer, *Alberta: A New History*, p. 137.
- ¹²² *Alberta Act*, S.C. 1905, c. 3, s. 9.
- ¹²³ “The Settlement of the Capital Question,” *Calgary Daily Herald*, 17 April 1906, p. 2; “Editorial Comment,” *Calgary Daily Herald*, 5 September 1905, p. 2; “They Represent the Ottawa Machine,” *Calgary Daily Herald*, 30 September 1905, p. 2.
- ¹²⁴ Palmer and Palmer, *Alberta: A New History*, p. 139.

¹²⁵ *Alberta Act*, S.C. 1905, c. 3, s. 9.

¹²⁶ Palmer and Palmer, *Alberta: A New History*, p. 130.

¹²⁷ "Conservative Convention at Red Deer Opened Auspiciously Last Night," *Calgary Herald*, 17 August 1905, p. 1; James H. Gray, *R. B. Bennett: The Calgary Years* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1991), p. 90.

¹²⁸ Gray, *R. B. Bennett: The Calgary Years*, p. 90.

¹²⁹ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 10th Parliament, 1st Session*, 1 March 1905, col. 1852–1853.

¹³⁰ Palmer and Palmer, *Alberta: A New History*, p. 132.

¹³¹ *Ibid.*; Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates, 10th Parliament, 1st Session*, 1 March 1905, col. 1852–1853.

¹³² *Alberta Act*, S.C. 1905, c. 3; *Saskatchewan Act*, S.C. 1905, c. 42.

¹³³ Palmer and Palmer, *Alberta: A New History*, p. 133; *Alberta Natural Resources Act*, S.A. 1930, c. 21.

¹³⁴ *North-West Territories Amendment Act, 1905*, S.C. 1905, c. 27, s. 4.

¹³⁵ *Ibid.*, s. 3; Nicholson, *The Boundaries of the Canadian Confederation*, pp. 126–127, 68.

¹³⁶ *Northwest Territories Act*, R.S.C. 1906, c. 62; Nicholson, *The Boundaries of Canada*, p. 85.

¹³⁷ *Canada Gazette*, vol. XXXIX, no. 12, 16 September 1905, p. 583; Northwest Territories. Legislative Assembly, "Commissioner," *Legislative Assembly of the Northwest Territories*, [Internet], (Yellowknife: Legislative Assembly of the Northwest Territories), accessed 31 December 2004, available from <http://www.assembly.gov.nt.ca/VisitorInfo/NWTStyleOfGovernment/Commissioner.html>; Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Debates of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 13th Parliament, 2nd Session*, 25 June 1919, col. 4045; *Canada Gazette*, vol. LIII, no. 2, 12 July 1919, p. 93.

¹³⁸ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 262.







SPEAKERS



With impartiality to all



Wilson 1888-1890



HERBERT CHARLES WILSON

Herbert Charles Wilson was the first Speaker of the first Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories. At age 28, Wilson was the youngest person ever to be elected Speaker of the North-West Territories or what became Alberta in 1905. Wilson was the first Speaker to exercise a casting vote. He is also the only Speaker of the North-West Territories or Alberta to have served as a mayor.* As a pioneer physician and devoted public servant, he was “an active and well-known figure in practically every field of local activity.”¹ As a member of the Council of the North-West Territories, Wilson served with Lieutenant Governor Edgar Dewdney (1881–1888) and as Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, with Lieutenant Governor Joseph Royal (1888–1893).

Family History

Herbert Wilson was born at Picton, in Hallowell Township, Prince Edward County, Canada West (Ontario), on December 7, 1859.² Herbert was the second child and only son of Charles Stewart Wilson and Eliza Maria Biggar.³ Charles Wilson was born about 1827,⁴ and Eliza was born about 1832,⁵ in Prince Edward County, Province of Upper Canada (Ontario).⁶ In February 1867, Eliza died at the age of 34,⁷ after only nine years of marriage,⁸ leaving Charles a widower with three children[†] under 10 years of age to raise. Herbert was seven years old when his mother died. Herbert's father, Charles, married a second time to Louisa Maria Colley,¹⁰ who was born about 1834.¹¹ Louisa and Charles had a daughter[‡] in about 1870.¹²

Charles Wilson was a manufacturer of carriages and sailing ships¹³ and “a leading banker and broker in Picton.”¹⁴ He was long involved in community affairs, first as a councillor and in 1858, as mayor of Picton.¹⁵ Charles Wilson also served as the warden of Prince Edward County in 1866 and 1867.¹⁶ He was a lifelong friend of Sir John A. Macdonald (Prime Minister 1867–1873, 1878–1891).¹⁷ Their fathers had known each other in the mill business at nearby Glenora, Upper Canada.¹⁸ The Wilsons were members of the Wesleyan Methodist Church¹⁹ and were Conservatives in politics.²⁰ Herbert Wilson's grandfather Stewart Charles Wilson, a United Empire Loyalist (UEL), had left his home and carriage business in Albany, New York, at the time of the American Revolutionary War.²¹ The Wilsons were of Irish descent.²²

Herbert's mother, Eliza Maria, was the daughter of Charles Biggar, also of UEL descent and the first postmaster at Carrying Place, Prince Edward County.²³ One of Eliza Maria's brothers was James Lyons Biggar, Member of Parliament for Northumberland East, Ontario, in the 1870s.²⁴

* Speaker John F. Betts (1895–1898) served as acting mayor of Prince Albert, North-West Territories (Saskatchewan) for nine months in 1886.

† Jessie Maria (b. ca. 1857), Herbert Charles (1859) and Mary Camilla (ca. 1863).

‡ Louisa Eleanor.

Education

Herbert Wilson attended public and high schools in Picton and then studied at Upper Canada College, a private boys' school in Toronto, Ontario.²⁵ On February 7, 1878, he graduated from the Ontario College of Pharmacy.²⁶ He enrolled at Trinity Medical School in Toronto in October 1878, and was granted a Bachelor of Medicine degree in 1882 and a Doctorate of Medicine in 1883.²⁷ He worked as an assistant surgeon in Toronto²⁸ before heading west in 1882 to Edmonton, in the District of Alberta of the North-West Territories.²⁹

Community Activities and Personal Interests

Wilson became active in the Edmonton community soon after his arrival. In October 1882, he was elected as a director of the Edmonton Literary Club. The *Edmonton Bulletin* described the aim of the Club as providing "a comfortable room where the young men of the place could profitably spend their winter evenings by reading the leading newspapers and periodicals of the day, or becoming acquainted with the works of the best authors, and also a place where they could meet their friends and acquaintances."³⁰ In November 1883, Wilson also became a member of the local Methodist church committee.³¹ He was elected president of the Edmonton Cricket Club in 1883³² and was at one time president of the Edmonton Curling Club.³³

Marriage and Family

In 1886,³⁴ Wilson returned briefly to Toronto where on September 15 he married Emily Charlotte Lee, second child and eldest daughter³⁵ of Arthur Brindley³⁶ Lee and Louisa Henrietta Richardson.³⁷ Emily was born on September 13, 1861 in Canada West (Ontario).³⁸ Herbert and Emily were married in a traditional ceremony in St. Peter's Anglican Church in Toronto and spent their honeymoon in Boston, Massachusetts.³⁹ The bride's father was a hardware merchant and a partner in the firm of Rice Lewis & Son in Toronto.⁴⁰ Her grandfather Joseph Lee had arrived in York (Toronto) from England in 1832. He made his fortune as a businessman, selling the products of the nearby Gooderham Distillery and buying property in what is now downtown Toronto.⁴¹

Emily Wilson's piano was the first in Edmonton, and it was transported around to dances, as both Wilson and his wife were 'mad about dancing.'⁴² The Wilsons formed friendships with many of the early pioneers of the Edmonton area; among their friends was Father Albert Lacombe (1827–1916), the Oblate priest and missionary who founded the mission at St. Albert, North-West Territories (Alberta).⁴³ Prime Minister Sir Charles Tupper (1896),⁴⁴ Amédée E. M. Forget (Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories 1898–1905)⁴⁵ and Dr. Robert G. Brett (Lieutenant Governor of Alberta 1915–1925)⁴⁶ were guests in the Wilson home.

On April 25, 1888, the Willing Workers, a ladies' aid society of the Church of England, was formed in the home of Emily Wilson, and Emily was appointed secretary-treasurer.⁴⁷ In 1905, Emily was the first regent of the newly created Imperial Order Daughters of the Empire (IODE) Westward Ho! Chapter in Edmonton and served in various capacities throughout her membership.⁴⁸ She was also a member of the Edmonton Public Hospital Ladies' Aid Society.⁴⁹

The Wilsons had three children: a son, Charles Arthur (b. 1887),⁵⁰ and two daughters, Violet Henrietta (1890)⁵¹ and Marjorie (1894).⁵² The Wilson children were raised in their mother's faith in the Church of England (Anglican).⁵³ Violet, who served overseas as a voluntary aid worker with the St. John's Ambulance Brigade during the First World War, was an immigration officer, a broadcaster and a writer.⁵⁴ Marjorie, a nurse, married Lieutenant Colonel Arthur Hubert Panet in 1918.⁵⁵ Lt. Col. Panet had served with the Canadian Expeditionary Force (CEF) during the First World War.⁵⁶ Charles Arthur Wilson attended Upper Canada College like his father, and was a student in an Edmonton law firm.⁵⁷ He was also one of the original players on the Edmonton Eskimos football (rugby) team.⁵⁸ Lieutenant Charles Wilson served with the 49th Battalion (later known as the Loyal Edmonton Regiment) and was killed in action at the Battle of Sanctuary Wood on June 5, 1916, at age 28.⁵⁹ His sacrifice is commemorated on the Ypres (Menin Gate) Memorial in Belgium.⁶⁰

Early Career

Wilson was one of the first physicians in Edmonton.*⁶¹ He also opened the first drug store in the area, adjacent to his medical practice.⁶² He was first registered as a medical practitioner in the North-West Territories in 1886 and in Alberta in 1906.⁶³ Wilson also served as a medical attendant to nearby First Nations reserves.⁶⁴ According to his daughter Violet, Wilson frequently visited the reserves carrying a Cree dictionary with him at all times in order to communicate more effectively with the Aboriginal population.⁶⁵ In 1886–1887, he served as the official police surgeon for the North-West Mounted Police for the Edmonton district.⁶⁶

With an expanding medical practice due to rapid growth in population, his increasing role in politics, and a new wife, Wilson sold the drug store in 1886 and joined Dr. Hermon L. McInnes in partnership.⁶⁷ During his career, Wilson was coroner for Edmonton⁶⁸ and the North-West Territories and an examiner for a number of insurance companies.⁶⁹ He was a director of the Edmonton Building and Investment Company⁷⁰ and president of the Edmonton Gas and Oil Company.⁷¹

Political Career

Wilson became politically involved soon after he arrived in Edmonton. In 1884, he "was a leading member of the party" that opposed the plan to establish the Edmonton Public School District and acted as a scrutineer for the "anti-school party" when a vote on the issue was held.⁷² The central issue of this plebiscite was funding. Edmonton was the first settlement in the Territories to establish a public school, and for three years funding for the school had been

* Dr. Wilson has been described as "the first doctor in private medical practice in Edmonton" and as "the third resident physician in Edmonton." Mike Jeffreys, "She Returns to Find Her City's Grown Up," *Edmonton Journal*, 27 June 1974, p. 19; Angus C. McGugan, "The Drama of Medicine in Alberta," *Alberta Historical Review* vol. 4, no. 3 (Summer 1956): p. 4.

† He was Surgeon to the Indian Department. Henry James Morgan, ed. *The Canadian Men and Women of the Time: A Handbook of Canadian Biography*, 1st ed. (Toronto: W. Briggs, 1898), p. 1091.

dependent on voluntary public subscription. If a district were established, school funds would be provided instead by assessment on property. For this reason, the Hudson's Bay Company and settlers, including Wilson, who owned large tracts of land, opposed the plan. On December 20, 1884, the plebiscite was held, and the final vote was 54 to 43 in favour of the establishment of the school district.⁷³ Although suffering his first loss, Wilson's appetite for political involvement had been whetted.

The North-West Territories Act, 1875 had provided for an appointed Council to assist the Lieutenant Governor in administering the Territories. Elected representatives were to be added to the Council as population growth warranted.⁷⁴ The Council met for the first time in 1877. In 1885, Wilson entered territorial politics in a bid for a seat as one of the elected representatives on the Council and ran for the electoral district of Edmonton against incumbent Frank Oliver, founder and editor of the *Edmonton Bulletin*.⁷⁵

The 1885 election campaign focused primarily on the struggle for responsible government. In a letter published in the *Edmonton Bulletin*, Wilson argued that "[d]uring the past few years the population and resources of the territories have increased so rapidly that the form of government and mode of administering the public affairs which was quite adequate and satisfactory when the country was thinly settled and had no important interests at stake is at the present time not only inadequate but unsatisfactory and unjust."⁷⁶ Wilson advocated that Council powers be increased in order to help the Territories prosper.⁷⁷ Wilson appealed to voters:

Believing that the best interests of the North West cannot be served (at the present time) by factious opposition and senseless agitation against whatever government may be in power, I shall always oppose any such course, but at the same time will always stand up for the rights of the settlers and endeavor to secure the privileges which this country is entitled to. ... If elected I shall serve the people of this district to the best of my ability, without fear or favor, and without respect to party, class or locality.⁷⁸

The most significant difference between the platforms of Wilson and his opponent Frank Oliver was the issue of temperance; Wilson was in favour of the licensing of breweries while Oliver wanted prohibition.⁷⁹ Wilson was not a 'temperance man,'⁸⁰ but nevertheless promised that, if elected, he would work in accordance with the wishes of his constituents. On September 15, 1885, Wilson, at the age of 25, won his first election with 120 votes to Oliver's 111.^{*81}

At this time, the Council was composed of 13 elected and three appointed (ex-officio) representatives.⁸² In principle, the Council and its members were non-partisan, although in practice members identified with party politics at the Dominion level.⁸³ Politically, Wilson considered himself a Conservative, but, as a contemporary biographer indicated, he had "always been a North-Wester more than a party man."⁸⁴

In February 1886, Wilson was part of the first delegation sent to Ottawa from the North-West Territories.⁸⁵ Wilson, along with William D. Perley, Member for Qu'Appelle, and James H.

* Over 77 per cent of eligible voters in the electoral district voted. J. A. Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1887 ed., (Ottawa: J. Durie & Son, 1887), p. 381.

Ross, Member for Moose Jaw and future Speaker (1891–1892, 1892–1894), went to Ottawa to deliver a reply to the Speech from the Throne.⁸⁶ The reply, which had been agreed to by the Council on December 15, 1885,⁸⁷ was “virtually a censure on the policy of the Dominion Government towards the Territories.”⁸⁸ The Report of Delegates, presented to the Council on November 3, 1886,⁸⁹ shows that out of 27 reforms brought forward in the reply, 17 were granted.⁹⁰ The Council demands had ranged from representation in the federal House of Commons and Senate (Resolution 11—agreed to), to formal encouragement of the construction of north-south railway lines (Resolution 15—no additional money could be offered, but liberal land grants would continue), to Council control of funding voted by the Dominion Parliament to the North-West Territories (Resolution 18—such a scheme was under consideration).⁹¹



Left to right: Tom Stevens, Alex Taylor
and Dr. H.C. Wilson (n.d.).

In 1887, all elected members of the North-West Council (and Hayter Reed, one of the appointed members) served on a Special Committee to draft a memorial* to the Dominion Government in response to the section of the Speech from the Throne “respecting the future formation of the constitution of the North-West Territories.”⁹² The *Special Committee appointed to prepare draft of memorial re: the Constitution of the North-West Territories*† put forward a number of proposals including: that the appointed members on the Council be abolished; that there be 25 elected Members corresponding to the 25 electoral divisions as defined in the memorial; that the term of office be for four years rather than two; and that the Council be presided over by one of the Members.⁹³ Wilson moved that the first government comprise three Ministers, and the motion was seconded by Spencer A. Bedford, Member for Moosimin, and was carried.⁹⁴ The Council of the North-West Territories was prorogued on November 19, 1887.⁹⁵

In the spring of 1888, in response to the memorial of the previous November, legislation (amendments to the *North-West Territories Act* that came into force on May 22, 1888⁹⁶) was passed in the House of Commons that introduced to the North-West Territories a Legislative Assembly with limited powers. Instead of the 25 Members requested, the Legislative Assembly consisted of 22 elected Members, and three legal experts appointed by the Lieutenant Governor to hold office during Sessions of the Assembly. The legal experts took part in debates, but did not have the right to vote.⁹⁷ The Legislative Assembly was to have the same legislative powers as the Council and was to last for three years rather than the requested four. Instead of an executive council, there was an Advisory Council of four, chosen by the Lieutenant Governor from among the Members. The authority of the Advisory Council was to be limited to matters of local finance. The Lieutenant Governor would be a voting member of this Council and would hold a

* A memorial is a written petition or a statement of facts put before a legislative body. For more information, see the Glossary.

† Also known as the *Committee on the Form of the Government*.

casting vote.⁹⁸ During previous Sessions, the Lieutenant Governor had presided over the House, but the new measure of responsible government provided the Legislative Assembly with the power to choose a Speaker from within its own ranks.

Wilson ran against Frank Oliver again in the general election of June 1888, although this time the constituency was allotted two seats, and both men were elected. Both Wilson and Oliver were supporters of responsible government.⁹⁹ Wilson, at the age of 28, was at this time the youngest Member of the Legislative Assembly.^{*100}

As Speaker

The opening of the First Session of the First Legislature of the North-West Territories was held on October 31, 1888, in Regina, District of Saskatchewan, North-West Territories. Herbert Charles Wilson was nominated through a motion by Hugh St. Quentin Cayley, Member for Calgary. This resolution was seconded by future Speaker (1895–1898) and Member for Prince Albert John F. Betts.¹⁰¹ Prior to the commencement of Session, Members had convened in the library to discuss possible candidates for Speaker.¹⁰² It had generally been assumed that James H. Ross would be the first Speaker, but when Wilson's name was put forward, it was decided to hold a vote. The first three ballots resulted in ties, and it was only after Ross called upon his supporters to vote for Wilson that Wilson was elected unanimously, and thus became the first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories.¹⁰³ In his address of thanks, the new Speaker said, "I feel that I also leave all political or partizan [*sic*] feelings, in order that I may discharge with impartiality to all, and to the best of my ability, the various and important duties pertaining to the high office of the Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories."¹⁰⁴ Wilson had become Speaker at the age of 28.

On November 3, 1888, Lieutenant Governor Royal presented Wilson with a petition regarding the election of Hillyard Mitchell, Member for Batoche.¹⁰⁵ Constituents protested the Returning Officer's declaration of Mitchell's victory over George L. Fisher. Wilson tabled the petition and accompanied it with a verbal message from Lieutenant Governor Royal, causing Members to discuss the proper procedures for receiving petitions in the Legislative Assembly.¹⁰⁶ Wilson ruled that the petition be read, and the matter was subsequently sent to the *Committee on Privileges and Elections*.¹⁰⁷ The Committee presented its report on December 5 concluding that the petitioning constituents did not follow proper procedures, and Mitchell's victory held.¹⁰⁸

Wilson presided over a turbulent House amidst strained relations between the Lieutenant Governor and the Legislative Assembly. As per the revised Act, the Lieutenant Governor had appointed a four-person Advisory Council from the membership of the Assembly to assist him with his responsibilities. At issue during Wilson's tenure as Speaker were the powers and responsibilities of the Advisory Council, particularly as they related to fiscal matters. The authority for the administration of federal grants rested with the Lieutenant Governor rather than with the Legislative Assembly. Two successive Advisory Councils, the first in October 1889

* The average age of the Members at this time was 38.8 years. "General," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 10 November 1888, p. 3.

under Frederick Haultain and the second in November of the same year under Dr. Robert G. Brett, resigned in frustration, caught between the expectations of the Assembly for greater autonomy and their own lack of authority as defined by the legislation.¹⁰⁹ These events were important steps on the path to responsible government.

On November 30, 1888, Wilson hosted a dinner for Members and other honoured guests in the Lansdowne Hotel in Regina—"the first of the kind in the history of the North-West Legislative Assembly."¹¹⁰

On December 10, 1888, the first casting vote by a Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories was recorded. A *Special Memorial Committee* had been appointed to draft a request for certain powers to be conferred by the federal government upon the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories. This request was to be presented to the Governor General by Lieutenant Governor Royal. Wilson exercised his casting vote on the question of whether or not the *Report of the Special Memorial Committee* should be referred back to the *Committee of the Whole* for an amendment to the wording. Wilson voted against returning the Report for amendment.¹¹¹

As Speaker, Wilson participated on the *Special Committee to revise the rules and forms of proceedings of the Legislative Assembly*.¹¹² He also served on the *Standing Committee on Standing Orders and Library*.¹¹³ Lieutenant Governor Royal announced the establishment of the Parliamentary Library in his Speech from the Throne in the Third Session of the First Legislature on October 29, 1890:

The formation of a Parliamentary Library, for the use of the Student and the Legislator, has been a want in our organization that I have long desired to see supplied, and in connection with which much has been required.

I have consequently commenced to lay the foundation of what I trust will prove as valuable and complete a Library as time and our resources permit.

When the Books, for which orders have been given, are received, a nucleus will be formed of standard works in every department of human knowledge, which it will afterwards be easy to add to and complete.

A catalogue will then be printed and distributed.¹¹⁴

In 1891, after six years, Wilson left territorial politics because of health problems.¹¹⁵ At the end of his term as Speaker, he was presented with the Chair that he had used in his duties.¹¹⁶ The Chair was kept in the Wilson home, and his eldest daughter, Violet, recalled that this Chair played a large part in their lives when they were children.¹¹⁷ Being told—"Sit in the big chair and don't talk"—was a common refrain in the household as the children were required to spend "many hours seated on it in punishment for various childish crimes."¹¹⁸ In 1945, Wilson's widow, Emily, donated this Chair to the Province of Alberta,¹¹⁹ which, in turn, transferred it to the Provincial Museum of Alberta in 1973. The Chair is on permanent loan to Government House for display purposes and for use by the Lieutenant Governor during special events such as the New Year's Levee.¹²⁰

Later Career

Despite his health concerns, Wilson remained an active member of the community. Included in his activities was the presidency of the newly formed Edmonton Liberal-Conservative Association in 1892.^{*121} He was a member of the Old Timer's Association,¹²² was elected to the first Council of the College of Physicians and Surgeons of North-West Territories and was a patron of both the Edmonton and Fort Saskatchewan Rifle Associations.¹²³ In 1891, Wilson became a founding member of the Edmonton Electric Lighting and Power Company (now EPCOR).¹²⁴ When the Upper Canada College Old Boys' Association formed in Edmonton in 1909, Wilson was elected president.¹²⁵ After his retirement as Speaker, Wilson and his wife spent a year in Europe, where he took post-graduate courses in Edinburgh and London.¹²⁶

In 1895, Wilson successfully ran for mayor in the municipal election in the town of Edmonton. He defeated his opponent, John A. McDougall, a prominent Edmonton businessman, future mayor (1897, 1908) and Member of the Legislative Assembly for Edmonton (1909–1913).¹²⁷ Among the major issues in the campaign were the choosing of a site for the future High Level Bridge, the reducing of expenditures, the securing of funding for a hospital and the lowering of high insurance rates.¹²⁸ In February 1895, Wilson was appointed justice of the peace.¹²⁹

In the January 13, 1896 election, Wilson was returned by acclamation, but his career in municipal politics soon ended over a controversy. When Wilson submitted an expense claim for a trip to Ottawa, several aldermen charged irregularities in the way the transaction was handled.¹³⁰ On September 22, 1896, Wilson penned his resignation stating, "I regret very much that this simple affair has assumed such a disgraceful form [and] has to be fought out in this manner."¹³¹ He resigned on October 9, 1896.¹³² In 1904, Wilson ran unsuccessfully for alderman of the newly incorporated City of Edmonton.¹³³

On April 25, 1894, Wilson and five other physicians sent a letter to His Lordship Bishop Vital-Justin Grandin in support of the building of a general hospital by the Grey Nuns. The opening of the new hospital took place on December 15, 1895,¹³⁴ and Wilson served as a member of the medical board.[†] On March 30, 1899, the *Edmonton Bulletin* published a letter of resignation from the 'medical board' citing its disagreement over the admission of patients. The doctors claimed that the Grey Nuns were not following proper protocol when admitting patients and that only the medical staff should have admitting privileges.¹³⁵ Declaring that the hospital was

* The Conservative Party of Canada was initially known as the Liberal-Conservative Party. W. S. Wallace and Paul Fox, "Political History," in *Encyclopedia Canadiana* (Toronto: Grolier, 1975), p. 230.

† On July 7, 1896, Wilson signed a letter with three others referring to themselves as "the undersigned Medical practitioners and who form the medical Board." H. C. Wilson, et al., to the Executive Committee, North West Territories, Regina, 7 July 1896, [Letter], General Hospital Archives, Edmonton, accession no. Edmonton (Hôp. Historique) Doc. 32.

no longer a general hospital, as agreed upon when they first offered their support, the doctors described the hospital as “a mixed institution, part hospital, part alms house, and part a boarding house.”^{*136}

The issues in the disagreement between the Grey Nuns and the medical board were complex. The sisters, because of their religious calling, frequently offered refuge to the ‘poor or destitute,’¹³⁷ whereas the doctors saw diagnosis, admission and supervision of patient care as the strict purview of the trained medical personnel.[†] Because the Grey Nuns owned the hospital, they viewed administrative matters as their right and responsibility. Historians also suggest that the position of women in society at the time may have affected the doctors’ outlook: “For them, the fact of authority resting on the shoulders of an entirely female administration was probably quite hard to accept if not simply aberrant.”¹³⁸ The resolution of this conflict came in the establishment of a ‘non-sectarian’ hospital in Edmonton in 1899—the Edmonton Public Hospital.¹³⁹

From 1902 to 1904, Wilson served as president of the North Alberta Medical Society (later the Edmonton Academy of Medicine).¹⁴⁰ The Alberta Medical Association was formed in 1906 with Dr. Robert G. Brett as its first president and Wilson as its second in the following year.¹⁴¹

Honours and Awards

In 1975, Wilson Industrial Park in Edmonton was named in honour of Herbert Charles Wilson.¹⁴²

Death

Wilson travelled with his wife to Europe and Japan in 1908–1909 “in an endeavor to secure the alleviation of a nervous disorder from which he suffered.”¹⁴³ Herbert Charles Wilson died in Edmonton at age 50 on December 17, 1909, after he was seized by an ‘attack of apoplexy’ (a stroke).¹⁴⁴ He was attended by his medical partner Dr. Hermon L. McInnes.¹⁴⁵ At the funeral,

* On April 10, 1899, Father Hippolyte Leduc wrote a letter to the *Edmonton Bulletin* refuting the claims of the doctors. The Grey Nuns refused to relinquish control over admissions and faced a decline in financial assistance from Edmonton Town Council. When a smallpox epidemic reached Edmonton in 1901, the Grey Nuns were praised for their handling of the situation and any lingering conflicts regarding the running of the hospital were laid to rest as Town Council gradually restored financial assistance. Pauline Paul, “A History of the Edmonton General Hospital: 1895–1970, ‘Be Faithful to the Duties of Your Calling,’” (PhD diss., University of Alberta, 1994), pp. 65–70. For additional discussions of similar issues in the province of Quebec, see Yolande Cohen, “La Contribution des Soeurs de la Charité à la Modernisation de l’Hôpital Notre-Dame, 1880–1940,” *Canadian Historical Review* vol. 77, no. 2 (June 1996): pp. 185–220.

† There were few training programs in nursing at the time. The first formal training program in a hospital was established in St. Catharines, Ontario, in 1874, and the first university training program began in 1918 at the University of Alberta. *Canadian Nursing History Collection Online*, [Internet], (Canadian Museum of Civilization Corporation, updated 11 June 2004), accessed 25 August 2004, available from <http://www.civilization.ca/tresors/nursing/nchis01e.html>; Lee Elliott, “Eighty Years Filled with Firsts,” *Folio* vol. 35, no. 10 (23 January 1998): p. 9.



which was held on December 19, the procession “extended for half a mile [and comprised] nearly one hundred vehicles.”¹⁴⁶ Wilson was buried at the Edmonton Cemetery. When his wife Emily died on February 23, 1947,¹⁴⁷ she was buried beside him.¹⁴⁸

Fonds

The Wilson Family Fonds (1874–1950) are located at the Provincial Archives of Alberta. In addition, various files can be found at the City of Edmonton Archives.

Tributes

A newspaper editorial after Wilson’s death attested that while he was “in the best sense of the phrase, a general practitioner of the old school, ... [h]e was not in any sense an ‘old fogey’ of a doctor”; rather, “he made it a practice to visit eastern hospitals at frequent intervals to keep in touch with medical progress.”¹⁴⁹ He was described as “an active, public-spirited citizen” of whom “kindliness and geniality were outstanding qualities in his nature.”¹⁵⁰ An acquaintance remarked that “he had a bright mind, was well read, a good conversationalist and good company.”¹⁵¹ A contemporary of Wilson’s said that Wilson had “the good sense to know when to maintain silence and when to voice his opinions.”¹⁵² “Old timers” always spoke of “what a wonderful [public] speaker Wilson was and [declared that] it is a pity that as far as anyone knows there are no actual records of his speeches.”¹⁵³

Notes

¹ “The Death of Dr. H. C. Wilson,” [*Edmonton Capital*], 17 December 1909, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, Violet Wilson Fonds.

² Henry James Morgan, ed., *The Canadian Men and Women of the Time: A Hand-book of Canadian Biography*, 1st ed. (Toronto: W. Briggs, 1898), p. 1091; “Herbert Charles Wilson,” in *Wesleyan Methodist Baptismal Register*, Ontario, Prince Edward Co., Picton, 7 December 1859, vol. 2, p. 506 [Baptismal Record Transcription], *Wesleyan Methodist Baptisms*, [Internet], Ida Reed, transcriber, accessed 9 March 2004, available from http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.com/~wjmartin/wm-w_98.htm

³ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Charles Wilson household, 1871 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 59, Prince Edward, sub-district e-1, Picton, schedule 1, pp. 12-13, microfilm C-9989, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Violet Henrietta Wilson, “Canada Made Us: The Story of a Family, 1776–1969,” [Unpublished Manuscript], ca. 1969, British Columbia Archives, Victoria, p. 30.

⁴ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Charles S. Wilson household, 1881 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 119, Prince Edward, sub-district a-1, Picton, schedule 1, p. 57, microfilm C-13237, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Personal communication with Eleanor Lindsay-MacDonald, 5 November 2003. Source: transcription of the monumental inscription of Charles S. Wilson from the Glenwood Cemetery, Picton, Ontario.

⁵ Personal communication with Lindsay-MacDonald, 5 November 2003; Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Charles S. Wilson household, 1861 Census of the Canadas, Canada West, Hallowell Township, E.D. no. 1, Town of Picton, schedule 1, p. 14, microfilm C-1070. Although the 1861 Census gives Eliza’s age as 26 (and therefore her year of birth works out to 1835), her headstone gives 1832 as her year of birth.

⁶ Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Charles S. Wilson household, 1861 Census of the Canadas.

⁷ Personal communication with Lindsay-MacDonald, 5 November 2003.

⁸ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 18.

⁹ Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Charles S. Wilson household, 1861 Census of the Canadas; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Charles Wilson household, 1871 Census of Canada; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Charles S. Wilson household, 1881 Census of Canada; Will of Charles Stewart Wilson, 19 March 1900, [Personal collection of David and Mary Taylor], p. 3. The ages recorded in the 1861, 1871 and 1881 Censuses are inconsistent. In the 1861 Census, Jesse is age four and Herbert is three. In the 1871 Census, Jesse is 12, Herbert is 10, Mary is eight, and Louisa E. is one. In the 1881 Census, Jesse is 23, Herbert is 21, Mary is 18, and Louisa E. is 10.

¹⁰ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 19.

¹¹ Personal communication with Lindsay-MacDonald, 5 November 2003; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Charles S. Wilson household, 1881 Census of Canada. Both the 1871 Census and the 1881 Census give Louisa Maria's age as 34.

¹² Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 19; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Charles Wilson household, 1871 Census of Canada. Louisa Eleanor was also known as 'Louella.'

¹³ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," pp. 17, 26.

¹⁴ William Cochrane, ed., *The Canadian Album: Men of Canada*, vol. III (Brantford, ON: Bradley, Garretson, 1891), p. 85.

¹⁵ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," pp. 21–22.

¹⁶ Centennial Committee (Picton), *Picton's 100 Years, 1837-1937: A Historical Record of Achievement: Prince Edward County Old Boys' Reunion Official Souvenir Book* (Picton, ON: Centennial Committee, 1937), p. 14.

¹⁷ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 4.

¹⁸ Ibid.

¹⁹ "Herbert Charles Wilson," [Baptismal Record Transcription], [Internet]; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Charles S. Wilson household, 1881 Census of Canada.

²⁰ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 4.

²¹ Ibid., pp. 1–3.

²² Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Charles Wilson household, 1871 Census of Canada; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Charles S. Wilson household, 1881 Census of Canada; Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 7. The 1871 Census lists 'English' as the origin of each of the family members; however, the 1881 Census lists all family members as 'Irish' with the exception of Louisa who is listed as 'English.'

²³ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 17; "Charles Biggar, Carrying Place (2462), Prince Edward–Lennox (Ontario)," *ArchiviaNet: Post Offices and Postmasters*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 30 October 2003, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020109_e.html Later, his son James L. Biggar was also postmaster at Carrying Place.

²⁴ Cochrane, ed., *The Canadian Album: Men of Canada*, vol. III, p. 85; Canada. Parliament. Library. Information and Technical Services Branch, *History of the Federal Electoral Ridings, 1867–1992*, vol. 4–Ontario (M–Z) (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, 1993), Northumberland East, (1867–1914) p. 1; Canada. Library of Parliament, *Senators and Members*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library of Parliament), accessed 17 February 2004, available from <http://www.parl.gc.ca/common/SenatorsMembers.asp>

- ²⁵ J. A. Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1887 ed. (Ottawa: J. Durie & Son, 1887), p. 380.
- ²⁶ Cochrane, ed., *The Canadian Album: Men of Canada*, vol. III, p. 85.
- ²⁷ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 30; Personal communication with Henri Pilon, Trinity College Archives, 6 November 2003; [Trinity College Register of Students, Session 1878–9], Trinity Medical College Collection, Provincial Archives of Ontario, Toronto, F1202.
- ²⁸ Cochrane, ed., *The Canadian Album: Men of Canada*, vol. III, p. 85.
- ²⁹ "Telegraphic: Winnipeg, 25th July, 1882," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 5 August 1882, p. 1.
- ³⁰ "Edmonton Literary Club," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 7 October 1882, p. 2.
- ³¹ "Local," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 17 November 1883, p. 1.
- ³² Morgan, ed., *Canadian Men and Women of the Time*, 1st ed., p. 1091; Cochrane, ed., *The Canadian Album: Men of Canada*, vol. III, p. 85.
- ³³ Cochrane, ed., *The Canadian Album: Men of Canada*, vol. III, p. 85.
- ³⁴ "Herbert Charles Wilson–Emily Charlotte Lee," Ontario, Diocese of Toronto, 15 September 1886, [Marriage Certificate].
- ³⁵ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," pp. 39, 42; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, A. B. Lee household, 1881 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 134, York County, sub-district e-3, Toronto, St. James Ward, schedule 1, p. 24, household 121, microfilm C-13247, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.
- ³⁶ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," pp. 39, 40, 42. Violet Wilson variously refers to her grandfather as Arthur Brindley Lee, Arthur Brindly Lee and Arthur Burdette Lee.
- ³⁷ *Ibid.*, pp. 40–42, 50; Cochrane, ed., *The Canadian Album: Men of Canada*, vol. III, p. 85.
- ³⁸ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, A. B. Lee household, 1881 Census of Canada; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Herbert C. Wilson household, 1901 Census of Canada, North-West Territories, district no. 202, Alberta, sub-district n-1, Edmonton (West), schedule 1, p. 23, microfilm T-6550, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Emily Charlotte Lee headstone, plot no. A/35/0006, 21 August 2001, Photograph, Edmonton Cemetery, 107th Avenue. The 1881 Census gives Emily's age as 19. The 1901 Census provides her year of birth as 1860 with 1861 written over it. Her headstone indicates 1861 as her year of birth.
- ³⁹ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," pp. 43–45.
- ⁴⁰ *Toronto Directory for 1880*, (Toronto: Might & Taylor, 1880), p. 324; Wilson, "Canada Made Us," pp. 38–41; Jim Miller, "RICE LEWIS & SON, HARDWARE, TORONTO, Lot number ADV-00721," *Canada Postal History: Edwardian Period (1903–1911) Covers*, (Kamloops, BC: Jim Miller Ltd., updated 4 April 2004), accessed 7 April 2004, available from <http://www.canadacovers.ca/Covers/EDW2.html>
- ⁴¹ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 40.
- ⁴² *Ibid.*, pp. 46, 45.
- ⁴³ *Ibid.*, p. 48.
- ⁴⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 74.
- ⁴⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 56.

⁴⁶ Ibid., p. 79.

⁴⁷ V. W. Barford, *The Willing Workers*, 1935, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, 66.138/1a, Box 1, File 7-8; [Minutes of the 'Willing Workers' Meetings], 1888-1890, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, 66.138/1a, Box 1, File 1a.

⁴⁸ "Funeral on Friday for Mrs. Wilson," *Edmonton Journal*, 27 February 1947, p. 10; Minute Book of the Daughters of the Empire, Edmonton, 1905-1908, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, 74.1/183; I.O.D.E.: Westward Ho! Chapter, Edmonton, 1905-1920, Membership Lists, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, 2001.1185, File 44.

⁴⁹ C. W. Mathers, Photograph of Edmonton Public Hospital Ladies Aid Society, 1904, City of Edmonton Archives, EA-10-861.

⁵⁰ Alberta Genealogical Society. Edmonton Branch, *Alberta, Formerly the Northwest Territories Index to Registration of Births, Marriages and Deaths 1870 to 1905*, vol. I (Edmonton: Alberta Genealogical Society, 1995), p. 632.

⁵¹ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Herbert C. Wilson household, 1901 Census of Canada; Alberta Genealogical Society. Edmonton Branch, *Alberta, Formerly the Northwest Territories Index to Registration of Births, Marriages and Deaths 1870 to 1905*, vol. I, p. 634.

⁵² *Alberta, Formerly the Northwest Territories: An Index to Birth, Marriage and Death Registrations prior to 1900*, (Edmonton: Documentary Heritage Society of Alberta in cooperation with the Provincial Archives of Alberta, 1999), p. 437.

⁵³ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Herbert C. Wilson household, 1891 Census of Canada, North-West Territories, district no. 197, Alberta, sub-district 18, Edmonton, schedule 1, pp. 21-22, microfilm T-6425, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; "Dr. Herbert Charles Wilson," [Obituary], *Edmonton Journal*, 17 December 1909, p. 10.

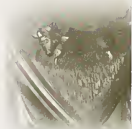
⁵⁴ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," pp. 92, 95, 106, 113; Violet Henrietta Wilson, Interview by Naomi Radford, March 1970, [Unpublished Synopsis], Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, 70.170; Linda J. Quiney, "'Hardly Feminine Work!' Violet Wilson and the Canadian Voluntary Aid Detachment Nurses of the First World War," in *Framing Our Past: Canadian Women's History in the Twentieth Century*, ed. Sharon Anne Cook, Lorna R. McLean, and Kate O'Rourke (Montreal: McGill-Queen's University Press, 2001), p. 289.

⁵⁵ British Columbia Archives, "Arthur Hubert Panet-Marjorie Wilson," British Columbia, Victoria, 30 December 1918, no. 1918-09-195099, microfilm B11389, [Marriage Registration], *Search BC Archives*, [Internet], accessed 13 March 2004, available from <http://search.bcarchives.gov.bc.ca/>

⁵⁶ "Panet, Arthur Hubert," *ArchiviaNet: Soldiers of the First World War (1914-1918)*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 16 November 2004, available from http://www.collectionscanada.ca/archivianet/02010602_e.html; *British Columbia Cemetery Finding Aid, Version 2*, [Internet], accessed 17 February 2004, available from <http://www.islandnet.com/bccfa/>

⁵⁷ "Dr. Herbert Charles Wilson," p. 10.

⁵⁸ "Doc' Wilson Was Splendid Athlete," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 8 June 1916, p. 7; Mike Jeffreys, "She Returns to Find Her City's Grown Up," *Edmonton Journal*, 27 June 1974, p. 19; Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 79. The 1916 *Edmonton Bulletin* article refers to 'Lieut. C. E. Wilson,' but mentions his father Dr. H. C. Wilson.



- ⁵⁹ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 91; Commonwealth War Graves Commission, "Charles Arthur Wilson," in *Debt of Honour Register*, Lieutenant, Canadian Infantry (Alberta Regt.), 49th Bn., Grave/Memorial Reference: Panel 24-28-30, 5 June 1916, *Commonwealth War Graves Commission*, [Internet], accessed 7 November 2003, available from <http://www.cwgc.org/cwgcinternet/search.aspx> Commonwealth War Graves Commission provides the date of Charles Arthur Wilson's death as June 5, 1916 and his age as 29. Violet Wilson states that her brother died on June 3, 1916. Charles' birthdate was August 4, 1887 making him 28 years old at the time of his death.
- ⁶⁰ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 91; Commonwealth War Graves Commission, "Charles Arthur Wilson," [Internet]. Grave/Memorial Reference: Panel 24-28-30.
- ⁶¹ Angus C. McGugan, "The Drama of Medicine in Alberta," *Alberta Historical Review* vol. 4, no. 3 (Summer 1956): p. 4.
- ⁶² Donald M. Cameron, ed., *The History of Pharmacy in Alberta: The First One Hundred Years (From Leeches to Lasers)* (Edmonton: The Alberta Pharmaceutical Association, 1993), p. 357; J. Kenneth Penley, "The Banff Triangle," *Alberta History* vol. 49, no. 2 (Spring 2001): p. 22.
- ⁶³ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 3, no. 1, 8 April 1886, p. 9; Heber C. Jamieson, *Early Medicine in Alberta: The First Seventy-Five Years* (Edmonton: Douglas Printing Co., 1947), p. 142.
- ⁶⁴ Morgan, ed., *Canadian Men and Women of the Time*, 1st ed., p. 1091; "The Death of Dr. H. C. Wilson."
- ⁶⁵ Wilson, Interview by Naomi Radford, [Unpublished Synopsis], p. 2.
- ⁶⁶ Application from H. C. Wilson for position of Surgeon at Edmonton, 1895, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa, RG 18, box 1026, RCMP 1895, no. 3619 - 3722; Fort Edmonton Park, *Daly's Drug Store and Dr. Wilson's Office*, [Internet], (Edmonton: City of Edmonton), accessed 23 June 2003, available from http://www.gov.edmonton.ab.ca/comm_services/city_op_attractions/fort/1885/daleynwl.htm
- ⁶⁷ Fort Edmonton Park, *Daly's Drug Store and Dr. Wilson's Office*, [Internet]; Jamieson, *Early Medicine in Alberta*, p. 41; Penley, "The Banff Triangle," p. 22.
- ⁶⁸ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 8, no. 2, 15 January 1891, p. 8.
- ⁶⁹ Cochrane, ed., *The Canadian Album: Men of Canada*, vol. III, p. 85.
- ⁷⁰ Morgan, ed., *Canadian Men and Women of the Time*, 1st ed., p. 1091.
- ⁷¹ Wilson, "Canada Made Us," p. 53.
- ⁷² John Patrick Day, "Dr. Wilson's Office and Daly's Drug Store Interior Design and Furnishings: A Research Project for the City of Edmonton Fort Edmonton Park," [Unpublished Manuscript], January 1974, Fort Edmonton Park Archives, p. 3.
- ⁷³ "School Voting," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 27 December 1884, p. 3.
- ⁷⁴ *North-West Territories Act*, S.C. 1875, c. 49, ss. 3, 13.
- ⁷⁵ North-West Territories. Council, *Journals of the Council of the North-West Territories of Canada, Session of 1877*, 8 March 1877, p. 5; Lewis Herbert Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government in the North-West Territories, 1870-97*, 2nd ed. (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1978), pp. 73-76.
- ⁷⁶ H. C. Wilson, "To the Electors of Edmonton District," [Letter], *Edmonton Bulletin*, 29 August 1885, p. 4.
- ⁷⁷ "Nomination," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 5 September 1885, p. 3.
- ⁷⁸ Wilson, "To the Electors of Edmonton District," p. 4.
- ⁷⁹ "Nomination," p. 3.

⁸⁰ Ibid.

⁸¹ Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1887 ed., p. 381; *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 2, no. 5, 5 October 1885, p. 102.

⁸² John Blue, *Alberta Past and Present: Historical and Biographical: Illustrated*, vol. 1 (Chicago: Pioneer Historical Pub. Co., 1924), pp. 428-429.

⁸³ Norman Fergus Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II (Regina: Saskatchewan Historical Company, 1913), p. 666.

⁸⁴ Morgan, ed., *Canadian Men and Women of the Time*, 1st ed., p. 1091.

⁸⁵ John Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. I (Regina: S. J. Clarke, 1924), p. 571.

⁸⁶ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 135.

⁸⁷ North-West Territories. Council, *Journals of the Council of the North-West Territories of Canada, Session of 1885*, 15 December 1885, pp. 64-72.

⁸⁸ Blue, *Alberta Past and Present*, vol. 1, p. 105.

⁸⁹ North-West Territories. Council, *Journals of the Council of the North-West Territories of Canada, Session of 1886*, 3 November 1886, p. 35.

⁹⁰ Blue, *Alberta Past and Present*, vol. 1, p. 105.

⁹¹ North-West Territories. Council, *Journals, Session of 1886*, Appendix B, pp. 83-96.

⁹² North-West Territories. Council, *Journals of the Council of the North-West Territories of Canada, Session of 1887*, 10 November 1887, p. 45.

⁹³ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 149-150; North-West Territories. Council, *Journals, Session of 1887*, 19 November 1887, pp. 72-73.

⁹⁴ "Form of Government," *Regina Leader*, 22 November 1887, p. 2.

⁹⁵ North-West Territories. Council, *Journals, Session of 1887*, 19 November 1887, p. 82.

⁹⁶ *An Act to amend the North-west Territories Act*, S.C. 1888, c. 19.

⁹⁷ *An Act to amend the North-west Territories Act*, S.C. 1888, c. 19.

⁹⁸ *An Act to amend the North-west Territories Act*, S.C. 1888, c. 19, ss. 12-13.

⁹⁹ "Electoral Meeting," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 30 June 1888, p. 2.

¹⁰⁰ "General," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 10 November 1888, p. 3.

¹⁰¹ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 1st Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. I, 31 October 1888, p. 8.

¹⁰² "N. W. Legislature: Opening of First Session," *Regina Journal*, 1 November 1888, p. 1.

¹⁰³ "The Speaker," *Regina Leader*, 6 November 1888, p. 4; "Assembly Notes," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 17 November 1888, p. 3.

¹⁰⁴ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 1st Session*, 31 October 1888, p. 8.

¹⁰⁵ Ibid., 3 November 1888, pp. 14-15.

¹⁰⁶ "Northwest Assembly," *Lethbridge News*, 14 November 1888, p. 1; "N. W. Legislature: Proceedings of Assembly During First Week of Session," *Regina Journal*, 8 November 1888, p. 4.

¹⁰⁷ "N. W. Legislature: Proceedings of Assembly During First Week of Session," p. 4.

- ¹⁰⁸ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 1st Session*, 5 December 1888, pp. 90–92.
- ¹⁰⁹ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 171, 176–177.
- ¹¹⁰ “Mr. Speaker’s Dinner,” *Regina Leader*, 4 December 1888, p. 4.
- ¹¹¹ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 1st Session*, 10 December 1888, p. 105.
- ¹¹² *Ibid.*, 21 November 1888, pp. 44–54.
- ¹¹³ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 1st Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. II, 17 October 1889, p. 15.
- ¹¹⁴ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 1st Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. III, 29 October 1890, pp. 9–10.
- ¹¹⁵ Morgan, ed., *Canadian Men and Women of the Time*, 1st ed., p. 1091.
- ¹¹⁶ “N. W. T. Speaker’s Chair Presented to Province,” *Edmonton Journal*, 22 January 1945, p. 12; Wilson, “Canada Made Us,” pp. 37–38.
- ¹¹⁷ Wilson, “Canada Made Us,” pp. 37–38.
- ¹¹⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 38.
- ¹¹⁹ “N.W.T. Speaker’s Chair Presented to Province,” p. 12.
- ¹²⁰ E-mail from Jane Ross, Head Curator, Human History, Provincial Museum of Alberta, Edmonton, 4 December 2003.
- ¹²¹ Morgan, ed., *Canadian Men and Women of the Time*, 1st ed., p. 1091.
- ¹²² *A History of the Northern Alberta Pioneers and Old Timers’ Association, 1894–1983*, (Edmonton: Northern Alberta Pioneers and Old Timers’ Association, 1984), p. 5.
- ¹²³ Cochrane, ed., *The Canadian Album: Men of Canada*, vol. III, p. 85.
- ¹²⁴ “Notice,” *Edmonton Bulletin*, 3 October 1891, p. 3; G. Edmund Kelly, “The Man from Glengarry,” *Alberta Historical Review* vol. 6, no. 1 (Winter 1958): p. 13.
- ¹²⁵ “The Death of Dr. H. C. Wilson.”
- ¹²⁶ Wilson, “Canada Made Us,” p. 61.
- ¹²⁷ Joseph Rek, *Municipal Elections in Edmonton, 1892–1989: Summary of Results with Short Mayoral and Aldermanic Biographies* (Edmonton: Information Division, Edmonton Public Library, 1990), p. 12.
- ¹²⁸ “Public Meeting,” *Edmonton Bulletin*, 10 January 1895, p. 2.
- ¹²⁹ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 12, no. 5, 1 March 1895, p. 1.
- ¹³⁰ “The Mayor’s Reply,” *Edmonton Bulletin*, 21 September 1896, p. 3.
- ¹³¹ Herbert Charles Wilson, Resignations [Report addressed to A. G. Randall, Town Clerk, Edmonton], 15 September 1896. R. G. 8, Class 3, File 3, City of Edmonton Archives.
- ¹³² Rek, *Municipal Elections in Edmonton, 1892–1989*, p. 6.
- ¹³³ Fax from Edmonton. Office of the City Clerk, 6 April 2001.
- ¹³⁴ Sister Marie Xavier, to H. C. Wilson, 14 December 1895, [Letter], General Hospital Archives, Edmonton.
- ¹³⁵ “Regarding the Hospital,” *Edmonton Bulletin*, 30 March 1899, p. 3.

¹³⁶ Ibid.

¹³⁷ Rev. Father H. Leduc, "Regarding the Hospital," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 10 April 1899, p. 3.

¹³⁸ Pauline Paul, "A History of the Edmonton General Hospital: 1895-1970, 'Be Faithful to the Duties of Your Calling,'" (PhD diss., University of Alberta, 1994), p. 69.

¹³⁹ Ibid., pp. 67-68.

¹⁴⁰ Harry Letts, *The Edmonton Academy of Medicine: A History* (Edmonton: Alberta Medical Association, 1986), p. 30; McGugan, "The Drama of Medicine in Alberta," p. 4; University of Alberta Archives, *Edmonton Academy of Medicine, 1902-*, [Internet], (Edmonton: University of Alberta Archives), accessed 13 April 2004, available from <http://www.ualberta.ca/~archives/guide/7ORGAN/181.htm>

¹⁴¹ Letts, *The Edmonton Academy of Medicine: A History*, p. 2; Jamieson, *Early Medicine in Alberta*, pp. 41-42.

¹⁴² E-mail from Cory Sousa, Names Advisory Committee Co-ordinator, Planning and Development Department, City of Edmonton, 18 November 2003; Edmonton Historical Board. Historic Sites Committee, *Naming Edmonton: From Ada to Zoie* (Edmonton: University of Alberta Press, 2004), pp. 344-345.

¹⁴³ "Dr. H. C. Wilson Dead; Pioneer of the West," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 17 December 1909, p. 1.

¹⁴⁴ "Obituary: Dr. Herbert Charles Wilson," *Edmonton Journal*, 17 December 1909, p. 10; "Dr. H. C. Wilson Dead; Pioneer of the West," p. 1.

¹⁴⁵ "Dr. H. C. Wilson Dead; Pioneer of the West," p. 1.

¹⁴⁶ "Funeral of Dr. H. C. Wilson," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 20 December 1909, p. 8.

¹⁴⁷ British Columbia Archives, "Emily Charlotte Wilson," Victoria, 23 February 1947, no. 1947-09-002601, microfilm B13193, [Death Registration], *Search BC Archives*, [Internet], accessed 13 April 2004, available from <http://search.bcarchives.gov.bc.ca/sn-3066CB1/gbsearch>; "Funeral on Friday for Mrs. Wilson," p. 10.

¹⁴⁸ E-mail from Tim McCargar, Parks and Recreation, City of Edmonton, 21 August 2001.

¹⁴⁹ "The Late Dr. Wilson," [Editorial], [*Edmonton Capital*], 17 December 1909, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Violet Wilson Fonds.

¹⁵⁰ Ibid.

¹⁵¹ "Dr. H. C. Wilson Dead; Pioneer of the West," p. 1.

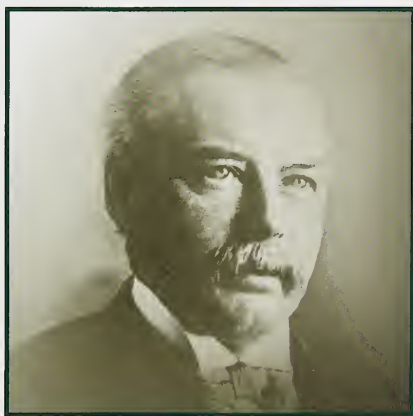
¹⁵² Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, p. 574.

¹⁵³ Wilson, Interview by Naomi Radford, [Unpublished Synopsis], p. 1.





Unique in parliamentary annals



Ross 1891-1892, 1892-1894



JAMES HAMILTON ROSS

James Hamilton Ross was the second Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories. A champion of the right to autonomy for the North-West Territories, Ross played an important role in the evolution of responsible government. His significance has been characterized as “second only to that of Mr. Haultain in the field of Territorial government.”¹ Ross was the only Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories and Alberta to hold office federally after his tenure as Speaker, becoming both a Member of Parliament and a Senator. Ross also holds the distinction of being the only Speaker to resign and be re-elected Speaker. As a Private Member, Ross served with five Lieutenant Governors of the North-West Territories: Edgar Dewdney (1881–1888), Joseph Royal (1888–1893), Charles H. Mackintosh (1893–1898), Malcolm C. Cameron (1898) and Amédée E. M. Forget (1898–1905). He also served with Premier Frederick W. A. G. Haultain (1897–1905). As Speaker, he served with Lieutenant Governors Royal and Mackintosh.

Family History

James H. Ross, commonly known as ‘Jim,’² was born May 12, 1856,³ at London, Middlesex County, Canada West (Ontario).⁴ He was the fifth of the eight children*⁵ of John Edgar Ross and Christina Graeme Hathern.⁶

Both of Jim’s parents were born in Scotland in the early 1820s and were members of the Church of Scotland (Presbyterian).⁷ Having emigrated, they were married in 1844, in Ancaster, Gore District, Canada West.⁸ John Edgar Ross was a lumber merchant and mill owner in London.⁹ He was also involved in local politics as an alderman for 16 years.¹⁰ In 1872, he relocated his family to Manitoba, where he engaged in the lumber business near Fort Garry (Winnipeg) with his son Jim.¹¹ In 1881, the Ross family was farming near Springfield, Manitoba.¹² By 1882, however, John had joined his son Jim as one of the pioneer settlers of Moose Jaw in the District of Saskatchewan of the North-West Territories and again entered local politics.¹³ While earning a living as a coal and lumber merchant and a real estate agent, John was elected the first mayor of Moose Jaw in February 1884,¹⁴ after what was referred to by a contemporary as a ‘very bitterly contested’ campaign.¹⁵ In addition, John Edgar Ross was appointed justice of the peace for Assiniboia District in 1883¹⁶ and coroner for Moose Jaw in 1884¹⁷ by Lieutenant Governor Edgar Dewdney.

Education

Jim Ross attended grammar school and high school in London, Ontario.¹⁸

* William Graeme (b. 1847), Elizabeth (1849), Alexander (1852), Henrietta (1854), James Hamilton (1856), Christina Graeme (1858), John Edgar (1861) and Frederick (1865).

Early Career

James Hamilton Ross was one of the “first four settlers to take up land in what is now known as the whole Moose Jaw area.”¹⁹ He was one of the first permanent residents of the area and is considered the founder of the city,²⁰ the ‘Father of Moose Jaw.’²¹ He and Hector Sutherland* came to the area bent on determining where the Canadian Pacific Railway (CPR) would likely establish the next divisional point on the railway.²² Ross realized the importance of Moose Jaw as a transportation centre, and he and his men secured their rights by piling logs on the land that they were claiming in the area.²³ Ross also established a ranch near Maple Creek, North-West Territories (Saskatchewan).²⁴

Marriage and Family

On November 23, 1886, at Moose Jaw, Ross married Barbara Elizabeth McKay.²⁵ Barbara was one of the five children and second daughter of John McKay and his wife, Mary, who were both born in Prince Edward Island.²⁶ Barbara was born on July 10, 1865, in Prince Edward Island.²⁷ Her father was a farmer, teacher and speculator.²⁸ The McKays were among the pioneer settlers of Moose Jaw, arriving in 1882.²⁹ Prior to this, there had been only one other white woman in the region, so the arrival of the unmarried Barbara and her sister caused a sensation among the few bachelors of the area.³⁰ The McKays were cousins of the Prince Edward Island author Lucy Maud Montgomery.³¹

Ross and his wife were the parents of seven children,³² all born in Moose Jaw: Mary Hathern (b. 1887) [Lorne Wood],³³ Jane Graeme (1889) [Alistair Fraser],³⁴ John Gordon (1891),³⁵ Christina Graeme (1893) [Dr. Robert Struthers],³⁶ James Hamilton Jr. (1895),³⁷ Barbara Elizabeth (1898) [Peter Furse]³⁸ and William McKay (1899).³⁹ Their eldest son, John, was a farmer and rancher who later became the Member of Parliament for Moose Jaw. John Gordon Ross served in Ottawa as a Member of Parliament at the same time that his father, James Hamilton Ross, served as a Senator.⁴⁰

Political Career

Ross was elected as a member of the Council of the North-West Territories for the newly created electoral district of Moose Jaw on August 13, 1883.⁴¹ At this point, there were just six elected representatives on the Council. It was under Ross’ guidance that Moose Jaw was incorporated as a town in 1884.⁴² He was re-elected to the Council in 1885.⁴³ Described as a “Liberal in Dominion politics,”⁴⁴ he was opposed to party lines in the Council.

* Hector Sutherland was the son of John Sutherland, the first Senator appointed from Manitoba, 1871–1899.

† The CPR arrived at the convergence of Moose Jaw and Thunder Creeks eight months later.

‡ They were both in Ottawa from 1925 to 1930: John Gordon Ross served as a Member of Parliament from 1925 to 1930 and from 1935 to 1945, and James Hamilton Ross served as a Senator from 1904 to 1932.

In February 1886, Ross, Dr. Herbert C. Wilson, Member for Edmonton and future Speaker (1888–1890), and William D. Perley, Member for Qu'Appelle, were sent to Ottawa as a three-member delegation to put forward various proposals to gain autonomy for the North-West Territories.⁴⁵ This was the first delegation from the North-West Territories sent to Ottawa.⁴⁶ To be chosen as part of this delegation “was a significant tribute on the part of the Council to the ability of those gentlemen, and an acknowledgment of their fitness to press the claims of the Northwest and cope with the powers that be.”⁴⁷

In the general election of 1887, Ross was an unsuccessful candidate in the constituency of Assiniboia West for a seat in the Dominion Parliament.⁴⁸ The Alberta and Saskatchewan Districts were represented by one Member each, while Assiniboia (southern Saskatchewan), due to its population,⁴⁹ was divided into two electoral districts with each returning a Member.⁵⁰

In 1888, Ross was elected to the newly designated Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories for the electoral division of Moose Jaw. Ross was widely expected to be elected the first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly, but Herbert C. Wilson won on the fourth ballot.⁵¹ Ross was subsequently re-elected in the general elections of 1891, 1894, in the by-election of 1897 and in the general election of 1898,⁵² the last two by acclamation.

As Speaker

James Hamilton Ross became the second Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories when he was elected on December 10, 1891, during the First Session of the Second Legislature. Frederick Haultain, Member for Macleod and future Premier (1897–1905), made the motion for nomination, which was seconded by James Clinkskill, Member for Battleford.⁵³ Ross was 35 years old at the time. Haultain at this time assumed the role of *de facto* premier as leader of the Executive Committee. The Executive Committee, which consisted of no fewer than four appointed members,⁵⁴ was described by Haultain as having very limited powers “confined to matters of [territorial] finance and to administrative work,” as directed by the Lieutenant Governor.⁵⁵

On January 13, 1892, Ross became the second Speaker to exercise his casting vote.⁵⁶ Ross voted in favour of returning the *Bill respecting the sale of Intoxicating Liquors and the issue of Licenses* back to the *Committee of the Whole* with instructions to add a subsection about the number of households that needed to be located within a given radius for a licence to be issued.⁵⁷

In August 1892, during the Second Session of the Second Legislature, there was “a time when, owing to a tie, dramatically created, [the House] was to be without a Speaker, ... ceasing to really function.”⁵⁸ Haultain's Executive Committee had lost a vote of no-confidence, and Lieutenant Governor Royal called on Hugh St. Quentin Cayley, Member for Calgary, to form a new Executive Committee. In a show of solidarity and “a proceeding unparalleled in the history of legislative assemblies,”⁵⁹ Ross stepped down as Speaker on August 30, 1892, and Deputy

* The first three ballots resulted in ties, and it was only after Ross called upon his supporters to vote for Wilson that Wilson was elected unanimously. “The Speaker,” *Regina Leader*, 6 November 1888, p. 4; “Assembly Notes,” *Edmonton Bulletin*, 17 November 1888, p. 3.

Speaker William Sutherland, Member for North Qu' Appelle, took his place in the Speaker's Chair.⁶⁰ Ross announced that he was resigning his position because he regarded the Haultain Executive Committee as the recognized champion of the cause of responsible government.⁶¹ Despite their different political leanings, Ross was Haultain's 'staunchest cabinet colleague' and supporter.⁶² In his statement of resignation, Ross declared:

In view of the defeat of an Executive, advocating the principles which I had struggled for longer than any other Member of this House, and the success of a party evidently, indeed necessarily, opposed to those principles, I feel that, in duty to myself and my constituents, I must place myself in such a position as to be able by voice and vote to advocate those principles and protect the interests of those who elected me to this House. I now resign the position of Speaker of this House.⁶³

At this point, Deputy Speaker Sutherland stepped down from the Speaker's Chair and also resigned. When Ross and Sutherland took their seats on the floor, equal numbers in the opposing factions resulted in a deadlock in the Legislative Assembly.⁶⁴

On August 31, 1892, when the Assembly met with Clerk Robert B. Gordon (1888–1900) in the Chair, Hugh St. Quentin Cayley, acknowledged leader of the new Executive Committee,* made a motion to nominate Sutherland for the position of Speaker. Sutherland declined the nomination, but Cayley insisted on a vote.⁶⁵ The resulting tie vote on Sutherland's election (including a vote by Sutherland against himself⁶⁶) brought the business of the Legislative Assembly to a standstill. The Clerk declared that no election had been held.⁶⁷ The next day, Lieutenant Governor Royal prorogued the Session, essentially killing the legislation on the Table.⁶⁸

At the time, Ross' resignation was criticized "as expressing a spirit of partizanship [*sic*] which contradicted the traditions of the office of Speaker."⁶⁹ In Ross' defence, one might note that "Canadian political tradition had not isolated the Speaker from politics to the extent which prevailed in Great Britain."⁷⁰ Lieutenant Governor Royal in turn was criticized for "unnecessarily and unjustifiably proroguing the House to the injury of the public business and in defiance of constitutional law and usage."⁷¹ It was said that he should have fulfilled his proper role of providing advice to the elected leaders so that the business of the Legislative Assembly could be completed.⁷²

Before the Legislative Assembly sat again, one of Cayley's supporters and Member for Wallace, Joel Reaman died, necessitating a by-election between Sessions. Cayley used the press to voice his opposition to the Haultain Executive Committee, "attack[ing] his opponents and declar[ing] his policy in a newspaper interview" with the *Regina Leader*.⁷³ Cayley's tactics proved unpopular, and when a by-election for the constituency of Wallace on November 12, 1892 returned a Haultain supporter, Fredrik R. Insinger, rather than a Cayley ally, Haultain held the balance of power once

* There was some confusion over whether Cayley had nominated Sutherland for Speaker as a Private Member or as the *de facto* 'premier.' If Cayley had put forward the nomination as *de facto* premier, the defeat of this nomination would have forced him to resign. "General News," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 3 October 1892, p. 5.

more. Cayley asked Lieutenant Governor Royal to reconvene the Legislative Assembly, at which point he would resign.⁷⁴

The Third Session of the Second Legislature on December 7, 1892 saw Ross restored as Speaker of the Assembly. Ross was elected Speaker, without opposition, through a motion by Samuel S. Page, Member for Cannington, which was seconded by Charles A. Magrath, Member for Lethbridge.⁷⁵

In June of 1893, Ross travelled to Ottawa to attend the national convention of the Liberal Party of Canada.⁷⁶ Over 2,000 delegates attended this meeting, the first-ever national convention of any political party in Canada.⁷⁷ Ross was criticized by Jonathan E. Annable, his opponent in the 1894 election campaign, for attending this convention given that the North-West Territories Legislative Assembly was non-partisan.⁷⁸ Ross defended his federal political stance, stating that “no better proof was required that partyism was not a factor in the Assembly, than the fact of his selection for Speaker in a House where four-fifths of the members [were] conservatives.”⁷⁹

In the 1894 election campaign, Annable also raised the issue of the ability of the Speaker to maintain his effectiveness as a representative of his constituents. He argued that “a representative who accepts the Speakership in the Assembly unfits himself thereafter as a representative.”⁸⁰ In response, an editorial in the *Moose Jaw Times* declared that the Speakership “involves a decided self-sacrifice on the part of the member who accepts it,” that the position of Speaker “is given only to men of undoubted ability, integrity and political fairness [and that] every member of the House ... feels it his duty to look after the interests of the Speaker’s constituents, because the Speaker has assumed a higher duty.”⁸¹ Ross defeated Annable in the 1894 election.

As Speaker, Ross served on the *Standing Committee on Standing Orders and Library* and the *Special Committee to enquire into the condition of Agriculture in certain districts in the Territories*.

Later Political Career

James Hamilton Ross was appointed to Haultain’s Executive Committee on April 8, 1895 and, as a result, was ineligible to be re-elected Speaker.⁸² He continued to be a “powerful figure in the deliberations of the Assembly.”⁸³ Ross carried on as a proponent for territorial rights by introducing a resolution to develop a memorial on constitutional and financial matters for submission to the Laurier administration.⁸⁴ This memorial included a proposal for the formation of an executive council, which was an established institution in British parliamentary tradition, to replace the current Executive Committee, which was “a creation without precedent to guide it.”⁸⁵ An 1897 amendment to the *North-West Territories Act* brought such a change into effect, and on October 1, 1897, an Executive Council was established. With this amendment, “Ministers [were] responsible to the legislature, and the rules and precedents that apply to the provincial governments [would] apply to the government of the Territories,” but the Legislative



North-West Territories Council Chamber; J.H. Ross 2nd clockwise, starting at left (1884). Saskatchewan Archives Board, R-B490.

Assembly would still not have the full powers of a provincial legislature.⁸⁶ Ross was a member of the Executive Council from October 7, 1897 to March 1, 1901.⁸⁷

During his career as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, Ross served as Commissioner of Public Works, Commissioner of Agriculture, Territorial Secretary and Territorial Treasurer.⁸⁸

In 1899, Ross served as a member of the Indian Commission.⁸⁹ He helped to negotiate Treaty 8 between the Dominion Government and the Aboriginal peoples in the area.⁹⁰ The Klondike gold rush and the resulting increase in the number of travellers through the area created the need for the treaty.⁹¹ The treaty covers much of what is now the northern half of Alberta, the northeast portion of British Columbia, the northwest corner of Saskatchewan and the area south of Hay River and Great Slave Lake in the Northwest Territories, and is the largest land settlement undertaken by the Canadian Government with the First Nations (over 840,000 km²).⁹² It was the first treaty to recognize that the Aboriginal peoples of the area might wish to retain their social and economic way of life and that the “aboriginal title” of Indians and Métis are co-existent.⁹³

In April of 1901, Ross was appointed Commissioner of the Yukon Territory⁹⁴ and held this position until October 1902. Just prior to their departure from Regina, Jim and Barbara Ross were honoured with a series of dinners with many prominent guests in attendance, including the Bulyeas and the Forgets.⁹⁵ At one such dinner, Barbara was thanked for her work with the Local Council of Women and the Aberdeen Association. She was presented with a silver tea service ‘from Regina friends.’⁹⁶ Barbara’s “keen mental acumen and insight into public questions” were greatly admired in the region.⁹⁷

Ross was the third Commissioner of the Yukon and the first to live in Government House in Dawson City.⁹⁸ Ross was in the process of settling his family in Dawson City when tragedy struck. His wife, Barbara, was travelling to Vancouver, British Columbia, on a shopping expedition to buy furnishings for their new official residence.⁹⁹ On August 15, 1901, the *Islander* left Skagway, Alaska, on its way to Victoria, but that night it struck an iceberg and sank in the Lynn Canal, just off the coast of Alaska.¹⁰⁰ Many lives were lost, including those of Barbara and the Ross’ youngest son, William.¹⁰¹ Ross never remarried, and it is said that he never fully recovered from this disaster.¹⁰²

In the 1902 federal election, James H. Ross was the Liberal candidate, representing the Yukon. Although he had “suffered a stroke which affected his speech and prevented him from actively campaigning,”¹⁰³ he was elected the first Member of Parliament for the Yukon Territory.¹⁰⁴ He served in this role until he was appointed to the Senate on September 30, 1904.¹⁰⁵ He took his

* Hon. David Laird (Minister of the Interior for the Dominion Government, 1873–1876, and Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories, 1876–1881) and James A. J. McKenna (then private secretary to the Superintendent General of Indian Affairs) were the other Treaty Commissioners.

oath of office on January 11, 1905.¹⁰⁶ Ross served as honorary president during the 1905 Convention of the Saskatchewan Provincial Liberal Association.¹⁰⁷

Ross counted Prime Minister Sir Wilfrid Laurier (1896–1911) as one of his close friends* and “enjoyed the confidence of all the other leaders of Canadian Liberalism” of the time.¹⁰⁸ This trust, which spanned nearly half a century, led to Ross’ being “sent ... on the most important missions, involving matters of high policy.”¹⁰⁹ In March 1913, Ross was appointed to the Saskatchewan Water Commission,¹¹⁰ which studied the feasibility of diverting the South Saskatchewan River to alleviate water shortages in the southern part of the province.¹¹¹ In 1916, Ross was a member of a Parliamentary Delegation to England.¹¹²

In later life, Senator Ross moved to Victoria. He had lived there during the summer for many years, between Sessions of the Senate.¹¹³ Ross’ brother Dr. William Ross and his sister Henrietta Flagg lived in Victoria. Ross’ daughter Mary Wood lived in Vancouver.

Death

Senator James Hamilton Ross died of a heart-related illness at the home of his sister on Pemberton Road in Victoria, British Columbia, on December 14, 1932, at the age of 76.¹¹⁴ Ross had “returned from Ottawa for the Christmas season ... apparently in ordinary health and the news of his unexpected end [was] a shock to a legion of friends throughout the Dominion.”¹¹⁵ There was a private funeral held before his interment at Ross Bay Cemetery, Victoria, where he is buried next to his wife and youngest son.¹¹⁶

Honours and Awards

Moose Jaw has honoured James Hamilton Ross in a variety of ways. Ross’ original homestead in Saskatchewan is now the Ross Park subdivision, after which the École Ross School is named.¹¹⁷ Ross Street is also named in his honour.¹¹⁸ James Hamilton Ross was designated a National Historic Person of Canada in 1948.¹¹⁹ The resulting plaque was unveiled at Speaker’s Corner in Wascana Park, Regina, in 1954.¹²⁰

Tributes

Ross was instrumental in “the growth and development of Western Canada, and in all historic references to the work of the Territorial Government and the Executive Council of those days, the name of James H. Ross figures very prominently.”¹²¹ Ross was said to have had a “natural bent for public affairs,”¹²² spending almost a half century in parliamentary service. His resignation as Speaker in 1892 “was, and remains, unique in parliamentary annals.”¹²³ He was influential not only in the West, but also on the national scene. Ross is identified as one of the key figures in Confederation because of his role in the establishment of responsible government for the North-West Territories and in the creation of the Provinces of Alberta and Saskatchewan.¹²⁴ No Member of “either the House of Commons or the Senate was more highly

* It was said that Laurier constantly sought and accepted Ross’ advice. “Senator James H. Ross,” [Editorial], *Moose Jaw Evening Times*, 16 December 1932, p. 4.

regarded than he, and none deserved that regard more unreservedly."¹²⁵ William E. Knowles, Liberal Member of Parliament for Assiniboia West and Moose Jaw (1906–1917) and Member of the Legislative Assembly of Saskatchewan for Moose Jaw City (1918–1921, 1925–1927), remarked he did not “know of a person in Canada who [had] been held in more universal esteem and affection than Mr. Ross.”¹²⁶ Judge William G. Ross, former Member for Moose Jaw (1927–1929), who since childhood had known Ross, said that “in his death Saskatchewan loses one of the finest of its early pioneers and Canada one of its ablest statesmen.”¹²⁷ Sir Frederick Haultain remarked, “When the history of the west is written, his work and career as a member of the North West council, of the North West legislative assembly, of the House of Commons and Senate of Canada, and as Commissioner of the Yukon, will entitle him to a foremost place among the men who have contributed to the development of this part of the Dominion.”¹²⁸

Notes

¹ Charles Cecil Lingard, *Territorial Government in Canada: The Autonomy Question in the Old North-West Territories* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1946), p. 25.

² John Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. I (Regina: S. J. Clarke, 1924), p. 469; Harold Davies, “Senator Ross Founder of City,” *Moose Jaw Times Herald*, 18 September 1961, p. 4.

³ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James H. Ross household, 1901 Census of Canada, North-West Territories, district no. 204, Assiniboia West, sub-district c-2, Regina (Centre), schedule 1, p. 9, household 65, microfilm T-6553, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Canada. Library of Parliament, *Senators and Members*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library of Parliament), accessed 29 February 2004, available from <http://www.parl.gc.ca/common/SenatorsMembers.asp>; J. A. Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1885 ed. (Ottawa: J. Durie & Son, 1885), p. 367. The 1901 Census gives James Hamilton Ross’ year of birth as 1855.

⁴ Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1885 ed., p. 367.

⁵ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, John Ross household, 1871 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 10, London City, sub-district d, Ward 4, schedule 1, pp. 18–19, microfilm C-9906, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.

⁶ Peter O’Neill Geoghegan, “Descendants of John Edgar Ross,” World Family Tree, vol. 7, tree no. 374, *Genealogy.com*, [Internet Subscription Service], available from <http://familytreemaker.genealogy.com/wftonline/>; Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1885 ed., p. 367. Christina Graeme Hatherthorn’s name has several spellings, which appear in various documents. On James Hamilton Ross’ death certificate, her name is Christina Hathorn. British Columbia. Dept. of Health and Welfare. Division of Vital Statistics, “James Hamilton Ross,” Victoria, 14 December 1932, [Death Registration]. Dan Walker and Fawne Stratford-Deva, *The Marriage Registers of Upper Canada/Canada West*, vol. 13, Gore District, 1842–1856 (Delhi, ON: Norsim Research and Publishing, 1995), p. 14 show the spelling of Christiana Hawthorn.

⁷ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, John Ross household, 1871 Census of Canada.

⁸ O’Neill Geoghegan, “Descendants of John Edgar Ross,” World Family Tree [Internet Subscription Service].

⁹ Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1885 ed., p. 367; Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. I, p. 572.

¹⁰ Keith Allen Foster, “Moose Jaw: The First Decade, 1882–1892,” (MA thesis, University of Regina, 1978), p. 82.

¹¹ "Bleak Trails of Prairie Braved by the First Settlers," *Times-Herald* (Moose Jaw, SK), 10 June 1933, p. 22.

¹² Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, John Ross household, 1881 Census of Canada, Manitoba, district no. 183, Selkirk, sub-district e, Springfield, schedule 1, p. 14, household 66, microfilm C-13282, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.

¹³ Robert Moon, ed., *The Moose Jaw Book: The Best and Most Extraordinary Crazy Name Small Town in the World* (Moose Jaw, SK: Crocus House, 1979), p. 12.

¹⁴ Foster, "Moose Jaw: The First Decade, 1882–1892," pp. 82–83; *Henderson's Northwest Territories Directory 1889*, (Henderson Directories, 1889), p. 592.

¹⁵ Foster, "Moose Jaw: The First Decade, 1882–1892," p. 80.

¹⁶ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 1, no. 2, 19 January 1884, p. 6.

¹⁷ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 1, no. 5, 2 September 1884, p. 40.

¹⁸ Arnott James Magurn, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide and Work of General Reference for Canada, the Provinces, and the Northwest Territories*, 1905 ed. (Ottawa: Office of Publication, 1905), p. 72.

¹⁹ Moon, ed., *The Moose Jaw Book: The Best and Most Extraordinary Crazy Name Small Town in the World*, p. 11.

²⁰ Davies, "Senator Ross Founder of City," p. 4.

²¹ Leith Knight, "Father of Moose Jaw Enjoyed Political Success: Ross's Personal Life Marred by Tragedy," *The Times-Herald* (Moose Jaw, SK), 21 March 2003, p. 5.

²² Leith Knight, *All the Moose—All the Jaw* (Moose Jaw, SK: Moose Jaw 100, 1982), pp. 1–2; "Early History of Moose Jaw Told By Senator J. H. Ross," *Times Morning Herald* (Moose Jaw), 4 July 1932, p. 7.

²³ Knight, *All the Moose—All the Jaw*, p. 2.

²⁴ *ArchivaNet: Western Land Grants (1870–1930)*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada.), accessed 18 November 2004, available from http://www.collectionscanada.ca/02/020111_e.html

²⁵ "Ross–McKay," [Marriage Announcement], *Regina Journal*, 10 December 1886, p. 8. In its "North-West News" column, which appeared on the front page of the December 10, 1886 *Regina Journal*, Ross' marriage was reported to have taken place on a Thursday, which was November 25 in 1886.

²⁶ Ibid; Knight, *All the Moose—All the Jaw*, p. 7.

²⁷ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James H. Ross household, 1901 Census of Canada.

²⁸ Knight, *All the Moose—All the Jaw*, p. 7.

²⁹ Ibid.

³⁰ Ibid.

³¹ Knight, "Father of Moose Jaw Enjoyed Political Success," p. 5.

³² Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James H. Ross household, 1901 Census of Canada.

³³ O'Neill Geoghegan, "Descendants of John Edgar Ross," World Family Tree, [Internet Subscription Service]; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James H. Ross household, 1901 Census of Canada.

- ³⁴ O'Neill Geoghegan, "Descendants of John Edgar Ross," World Family Tree, [Internet Subscription Service]; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James H. Ross household, 1901 Census of Canada; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, John McKay household, 1901 Census of Canada, British Columbia, district no. 4, Victoria, sub-district d-1, Victoria City, schedule 1, p. 10, household 91, microfilm T-6429, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.
- ³⁵ O'Neill Geoghegan, "Descendants of John Edgar Ross," World Family Tree, [Internet Subscription Service]; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James H. Ross household, 1901 Census of Canada.
- ³⁶ O'Neill Geoghegan, "Descendants of John Edgar Ross," World Family Tree, [Internet Subscription Service]; "Bleak Trails of Prairie Braved by the First Settlers," *The Times-Herald* (Moose Jaw, SK), 6 October 1933, p. 22; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, John McKay household, 1901 Census of Canada; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James H. Ross household, 1901 Census of Canada.
- ³⁷ O'Neill Geoghegan, "Descendants of John Edgar Ross," World Family Tree, [Internet Subscription Service]; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James H. Ross household, 1901 Census of Canada; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, John McKay household, 1901 Census of Canada.
- ³⁸ O'Neill Geoghegan, "Descendants of John Edgar Ross," World Family Tree, [Internet Subscription Service]; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James H. Ross household, 1901 Census of Canada; Pat Kern, "Children of James Hamilton Ross and Barbara Ross," [Unpublished Manuscript], 1982, p. 1.
- ³⁹ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James H. Ross household, 1901 Census of Canada; "Ross, Barbara Elizabeth," [Obituary], *Victoria Times*, 24 August 1901, p. 8.
- ⁴⁰ Canada. Library of Parliament Information and Documentation Branch, *Family Relations in the Canadian Houses of Parliament*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, updated 8 December 2003), accessed 9 January 2004, available from <http://www.parl.gc.ca/information/about/people/key/familyfamille/index.asp?lang=E>
- ⁴¹ Lewis Herbert Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government in the North-West Territories, 1870-97*, 2nd ed. (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1978), p. 115.
- ⁴² Foster, "Moose Jaw: The First Decade, 1882-1892," p. 79; North-West Territories. Council, *Journals of the Council of the North-West Territories of Canada, Session of 1883*, 20 September 1883, p. 45; North-West Territories. Council, "An Ordinance Respecting Municipalities," *Ordinances of the North-West Territories, Session of 1884*, no. 4.
- ⁴³ J. A. Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1887 ed. (Ottawa: J. Durie & Son, 1887), p. 381.
- ⁴⁴ "Ross and Annable Open the Ball for the Election in Moose Jaw," *Moose Jaw Times*, 19 October 1894, p. 5.
- ⁴⁵ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 135.
- ⁴⁶ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. I, p. 571.
- ⁴⁷ *Ibid.*, vol. I, p. 572.
- ⁴⁸ Canada. Parliament. Library. Information and Technical Services Branch, *History of the Federal Electoral Ridings, 1867-1992*, vol. 2—Saskatchewan, Manitoba, Yukon, Northwest Territories (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, 1993), NT Assiniboia West (1886-1905), p. 1.
- ⁴⁹ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 104.
- ⁵⁰ Canada. Parliament. Library. Information and Technical Services Branch, *History of the Federal Electoral Ridings, 1867-1992*, vol. 2—Saskatchewan, Manitoba, Yukon, Northwest Territories (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, 1993), NT Alberta (Provision District)(1886-1905), p. 1.

- ⁵¹ "The Speaker," *Regina Leader*, 6 November 1888, p. 4; "Assembly Notes," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 17 November 1888, p. 3.
- ⁵² Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905–2000* (Regina: Saskatchewan Archives Board, 2001), pp. 1–28.
- ⁵³ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 2nd Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. IV, 10 December 1891, p. 10.
- ⁵⁴ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 204.
- ⁵⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 206.
- ⁵⁶ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 2nd Legislature, 1st Session*, 13 January 1892, pp. 90–91.
- ⁵⁷ *Ibid.*, 13 January 1892, p. 91.
- ⁵⁸ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. I, p. 486.
- ⁵⁹ James Clinkskill, *A Prairie Memoir: The Life and Times of James Clinkskill, 1853–1936*, ed. Stan D. Hanson (Regina: Canadian Plains Research Center, 2003), p. 100.
- ⁶⁰ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 2nd Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. V, 30 August 1892, p. 80.
- ⁶¹ *Ibid.*
- ⁶² Grant MacEwan, *Frederick Haultain: Frontier Statesman of the Canadian Northwest* (Saskatoon: Western Producer Prairie Books, 1985), p. 5.
- ⁶³ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 2nd Legislature, 2nd Session*, 30 August 1892, p. 80.
- ⁶⁴ "Legislative Assembly," *Calgary Tribune*, 7 September 1892, p. 6.
- ⁶⁵ *Ibid.*
- ⁶⁶ MacEwan, *Frederick Haultain: Frontier Statesman*, p. 78.
- ⁶⁷ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 2nd Legislature, 2nd Session*, 31 August 1892, p. 81.
- ⁶⁸ *Ibid.*, 1 September 1892, pp. 83–84; "Telegraphic: Regina, September 1," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 1 September 1892, p. 1.
- ⁶⁹ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 221.
- ⁷⁰ *Ibid.*
- ⁷¹ *Ibid.*, p. 220.
- ⁷² *Ibid.*
- ⁷³ "Another Interview," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 26 September 1892, p. 5.
- ⁷⁴ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 224.
- ⁷⁵ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 2nd Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. VI, 7 December 1892, p. 8.
- ⁷⁶ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. I, p. 314.
- ⁷⁷ Joseph Schull, *Laurier: The First Canadian* (Toronto: Macmillan, 1965), p. 269; Laurier L. LaPierre, *Sir Wilfrid Laurier and the Romance of Canada* (Don Mills, ON: Stoddart, 1996), p. 190.

- ⁷⁸ "Ross and Annable Open the Ball for the Election in Moose Jaw," p. 5.
- ⁷⁹ Ibid.
- ⁸⁰ "The Speakership," *Moose Jaw Times*, 26 October 1894, p. 4.
- ⁸¹ Ibid.
- ⁸² Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 246.
- ⁸³ Ibid., p. 253.
- ⁸⁴ Ibid.
- ⁸⁵ Ibid., p. 255.
- ⁸⁶ Ibid., p. 259.
- ⁸⁷ Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905–2000*, p. 1–1.
- ⁸⁸ Lingard, *Territorial Government in Canada*, p. 25; Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905–2000*, p. 1–3.
- ⁸⁹ Ross Hamilton, ed., *Prominent Men of Canada, 1931–32* ed. (Montreal: National Publishing Co., 1932), p. 107.
- ⁹⁰ "The Globe on Ross of Yukon," *Regina Leader*, 18 December 1902, p. 7.
- ⁹¹ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 273–274.
- ⁹² Canada. Indian and Northern Affairs Canada, "Timeline and Maps," *Historic Treaty Information Site*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Indian and Northern Affairs Canada, updated 26 August 2003), accessed 25 February 2004, available from http://www.ainc-inac.gc.ca/pr/trts/hti/site/mpindex_e.html; *About Treaty 8*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 24 February 2004, available from http://www.archives.ca/05/051301_e.html
- ⁹³ Canada. Indian and Northern Affairs Canada, "Timeline and Maps," [Internet]; Dennis F. K. Madill, *Treaty Eight (1899)*, Treaty Research Report (Ottawa: Indian and Northern Affairs Canada, Treaties and Historical Research Centre, 1986), p. 70.
- ⁹⁴ *About Treaty 8*, [Internet]; N. Omer Côté, *Political Appointments, Parliaments and the Judicial Bench in the Dominion of Canada, 1896–1917* (Ottawa: Lowe-Martin, 1917), p. 53.
- ⁹⁵ "Ross in the Yukon," *Regina Leader*, 25 April 1901, p. 1; "Presentation to Mr. Ross at Moose Jaw," *Regina Leader*, 28 March 1901, p. 5; "A Rouser for Ross," *Regina Leader*, 28 March 1901, p. 1.
- ⁹⁶ "Ross in the Yukon," p. 1.
- ⁹⁷ Knight, *All the Moose—All the Jaw*, p. 8.
- ⁹⁸ *History of Yukon Commissioners*, [Internet], (Whitehorse: Commissioner of the Yukon), accessed 13 November 2003, available from <http://www.gov.yk.ca/commissioner/history.html>
- ⁹⁹ "Wreck of the Islander," *Regina Leader*, 22 August 1901, p. 4; "The Islander Wreck," *Regina Leader*, 12 September 1901, p. 1.
- ¹⁰⁰ "Thirty to Sixty Lives Lost: Victorian Steamer Strikes an Iceberg and Goes Down," *The Globe* (Toronto), 20 August 1901, p. 1.
- ¹⁰¹ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James H. Ross household, 1901 Census of Canada; "Ross, Barbara Elizabeth," p. 8.
- ¹⁰² "Hon. J. H. Ross Died To-Day," *Victoria Times*, 14 December 1932, p. 2.
- ¹⁰³ Knight, "Father of Moose Jaw Enjoyed Political Success," p. 5.

- ¹⁰⁴ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 271.
- ¹⁰⁵ Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905–2000*, p. 3.2–1.
- ¹⁰⁶ J. Castell Hopkins, *The Canadian Annual Review of Public Affairs*, 1905 ed. (Toronto: Annual Review Publishing Company, 1905), p. 187.
- ¹⁰⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 232.
- ¹⁰⁸ “Hon. J. H. Ross Died To-Day,” p. 2.
- ¹⁰⁹ “Senator James H. Ross,” [Editorial], *Moose Jaw Evening Times*, 16 December 1932, p. 4.
- ¹¹⁰ George Spence, *Survival of a Vision*, Historical Series, no. 3 (Ottawa: Dept. of Agriculture, 1967), p. 38.
- ¹¹¹ J. Castell Hopkins, *The Canadian Annual Review of Public Affairs*, 1913 ed. (Toronto: Annual Review Publishing Company, 1913), p. 606.
- ¹¹² Hamilton, ed., *Prominent Men of Canada*, 1931–32 ed., p. 107.
- ¹¹³ “Hon. J. H. Ross Died To-Day,” p. 2.
- ¹¹⁴ British Columbia. Dept. of Health and Welfare. Division of Vital Statistics, “James Hamilton Ross,” [Death Registration].
- ¹¹⁵ “Hon. J. H. Ross Died To-Day,” p. 1.
- ¹¹⁶ Blk P between 125 and 126 W F. Cemetery located on Fairfield Road, Victoria, B.C. City of Victoria Archives, *Ross Bay Cemetery Search*, [Internet], (Victoria, BC: City of Victoria Archives), accessed 15 August 2001, available from <http://web.city.victoria.bc.ca/archives/rosssearch.asp>; “Ross, James Hamilton,” [Obituary], *Victoria Daily Times*, 16 December 1932, p. 13.
- ¹¹⁷ *Subdivision: Ross Park*, [Internet], (Moose Jaw, SK: City of Moose Jaw), accessed 13 April 2004, available from http://www.citymoosejaw.com/departments/finance/landdiv/pdf/ROSS_PARK_price_calcs.PDF; Sandi Kitts, *Message From the Principal*, [Internet], (Regina: Ecole Ross School), accessed 21 April 2004, available from <http://www.mjsd1.ca/~ross/principal.html>
- ¹¹⁸ Knight, “Father of Moose Jaw Enjoyed Political Success,” p. 5.
- ¹¹⁹ Canada. Parks Canada, *Directory of Designations of National Historic Significance in Canada*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Parks Canada, updated 27 November 2003), accessed 12 February 2004, available from http://www.pc.gc.ca/apps/lhn-nhs/index_e.asp
- ¹²⁰ *Monuments and Memorials: James Hamilton Ross*, [Internet], accessed 18 February 2004, available from <http://wascanapark.tripod.com/monuments/ross.html>; Meika Lalonde and Elton LaClare, *Discover Saskatchewan: A Guide to Historic Sites* (Regina: Canadian Plains Research Center, 1998), p. 155.
- ¹²¹ “Senator J. H. Ross Died Suddenly At Victoria on Wed.,” *Moose Jaw Evening Times*, 14 December 1932, p. 1; “Chief Justice in High Tribute Late Sen. Ross,” *Moose Jaw Evening Times*, 16 December 1932, p. 1.
- ¹²² “Hon. J. H. Ross Died To-Day,” p. 1.
- ¹²³ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. I, p. 492.
- ¹²⁴ “James Hamilton Ross,” *Canadian Confederation: People*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada, 14 December 2001, updated 19 February 2002), accessed 12 August 2003, available from <http://www.nlc-bnc.ca/2/18/h18-2401-e.html>; “Senator James H. Ross,” p. 4.
- ¹²⁵ “Hon. J. H. Ross Died To-Day,” p. 2.

¹²⁶ Davies, "Senator Ross Founder of City," p. 4.

¹²⁷ Ibid.

¹²⁸ "Chief Justice in High Tribute Late Sen. Ross," p. 1.

Real service in the upbuilding of a new country



Betts 1895-1898



JOHN FELTON BETTS

John Felton Betts was the third Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories. Betts was “perhaps better known throughout the Prince Albert district than any other man” due to his service to the people of the Saskatchewan District,¹ but he was “less conscious of the honors than of the opportunities for real service in the upbuilding of a new country.”² As a Private Member, Betts served with Lieutenant Governors Joseph Royal (1888–1893) and Charles H. Mackintosh (1893–1898), and as Speaker, with Lieutenant Governors Mackintosh, Malcolm C. Cameron (1898) and Amédée E. M. Forget (1898–1905). He also served with Premier Frederick W. A. G. Haultain (1897–1905).

Family History

John Betts was born on October 9, 1854 at Frankford, near the town of Stirling, Sidney Township, Hastings County, Canada West (Ontario).³ He was the third of the five sons* of Rev. Lorenzo Arden Betts and Caroline Chisholm.⁴

Lorenzo Betts was born on October 2, 1825, at Demorestville, Sophiasburg Township, Upper Canada (now Prince Edward County, Ontario).⁵ The Betts family was of English descent.⁶ When he was 21 years old, Lorenzo moved to Frankford, approximately 50 kilometres away from Demorestville.⁷ In 1851, Lorenzo married Caroline M. Chisholm,⁸ who was born in about 1833,⁹ near Belleville, Sidney Township, Upper Canada (now Hastings County, Ontario).¹⁰ The Chisholms, of Scottish descent, were pioneer settlers in the Belleville area.¹¹ When they married in 1851, Lorenzo Betts and his wife were both Wesleyan Methodists;¹² however, about six years later, they joined the Methodist Episcopal Church.¹³ Lorenzo had been a carpenter,¹⁴ but was licensed as a preacher in 1858. By 1861, he had become a Methodist Episcopal minister, preaching in various villages in what is now eastern Ontario.¹⁵

Education

John Betts attended school at Newburg¹⁶ in Lennox County, about 30 kilometres northwest of Kingston, Ontario. However, he received most of his education at Albert College† (Belleville, Ontario),¹⁷ which had been established in 1857 by the Methodist Episcopal Church.¹⁸

* John (b. ca. 1850) (in the 1851 Census, Lorenzo and wife Caroline are recorded as having a one-year-old child named John, born in Sidney Township), James (ca. 1852), John (1854), George (ca. 1858) and William (ca. 1862).

† Albert College, where many of “Canada’s most famous men received their academic training,” is “Canada’s oldest, independent, coeducational boarding and day school.” National Gallery of Canada, *Belleville: The Gateway to Central Ontario*, Canadian Souvenir View Albums, [Internet], (Ottawa: National Gallery of Canada and Industry Canada’s Digital Collections Initiative, 2001), accessed 15 March 2004, available from http://collections.ic.gc.ca/sva/on/bel_01/pg_13e.htm; E-mail from Christie Tobia, Development Office, Albert College, Belleville, ON, 18 August 2003; SchoolFinder.com, *Albert College*, School Info, [Internet], (Toronto: EDge Interactive Publishing, updated 28 February 2003), accessed 15 March 2004, available from <http://www.schoolfinder.com/schools/index.asp>



Early Career

In 1871, at age 16, John was living at home and working as a store clerk in Ernestown Township, Lennox County.¹⁹ Betts left Ontario for the West in 1879, arriving in Winnipeg, Manitoba, on an immigrant train. By August, he and his new partner, Richard Gwynne, had pushed further west to the little settlement of Prince Albert, District of Saskatchewan, North-West Territories.²⁰ Betts and Gwynne were among the first merchants in the area,²¹ carrying on business in the first store built in Prince Albert.²² They dealt in dry goods, groceries and clothing, which were hauled overland from Winnipeg by Red River cart.²³ These trips would take 40 to 50 days to complete.²⁴ During his first three winters in Prince Albert, Betts left the store to go north and trade for furs, travelling by dog- or horse-drawn vehicle.²⁵ The business flourished with its 'large and lucrative trade,'²⁶ and in 1884, Betts built the first brick residence in Prince Albert.²⁷

Betts began his public service in 1883 as chair of the Prince Albert Protestant Public School Board.²⁸ During the Riel Rebellion of 1885, Betts was a member of the local corps and then served as head of the commissary department, which was responsible for the care of children and the elderly.²⁹ In that same year, he was sent east as a delegate 'to secure the location' of the North-West Mounted Police barracks.³⁰

Prince Albert was proclaimed the fourth town in the North-West Territories on October 8, 1885.³¹ Betts had participated in the 1884 proceedings leading to incorporation³² and was elected one of four members of Prince Albert's first Municipal Council on November 13, 1885.³³ Betts was acting mayor for nine months in 1886³⁴ after the retirement of the town's first mayor, Thomas McKay. In the following municipal election in 1887, Betts lost his seat on Council, and his bid for the position of mayor, to James MacArthur, by a single vote.³⁵ It was the first municipal election in Prince Albert in which ballots were used.³⁶ Betts served as justice of the peace (1886–1889)³⁷ and commissioner for taking affidavits (1888, 1897).³⁸

Marriage and Family

In 1882, Betts returned briefly to Ontario, where he married Mary E. Boyle on June 3 at the residence of A. and R. Boyle in Picton, Prince Edward County.³⁹ Mary was the daughter of Robert Boyle, a newspaper publisher,⁴⁰ and his wife, Margaret, both of Picton.⁴¹ Robert was also County Clerk and Treasurer of Prince Edward County.⁴² The Boyle family was of Irish descent and belonged to the Church of England (Anglican). Mary was born on September 3, 1857, in Canada West (Ontario),⁴³ and was the third child in a family of at least five children.⁴⁴ She was the first woman to come to Saskatoon, North-West Territories (Saskatchewan), by rail⁴⁵ and also the first woman to arrive in Prince Albert over the Regina and Long Lake Road.⁴⁶

Political Career

Betts was elected to the newly established Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories for the two-Member Prince Albert constituency in the general election of 1888. He was elected in Cumberland in 1891 and in Prince Albert East in 1894. In the next two general elections, he was defeated in the constituencies of Prince Albert East (1898) and Prince Albert (1902).⁴⁷ Betts

was known as a Conservative,⁴⁸ but supported the practice of non-partisan governance of the Territories.⁴⁹

Betts was the lone dissenting voice in the Assembly in its early efforts to broaden its powers to include all those possessed by the original four provinces of Canada.⁵⁰ Opposed to responsible government for his District,⁵¹ Betts was quoted as preferring to "let Assiniboia and Alberta have it and let Saskatchewan go back to the old council."⁵²

The first Advisory Council of the North-West Territories, led by Frederick W. A. G. Haultain, was created during the summer of 1888. The appointment of the Advisory Council, which was to assist Lieutenant Governor Royal with the management of Territorial finance,⁵³ was a step toward increased legislative authority for the North-West Territories. The Haultain Advisory Council was soon at odds with the Dominion Government over the Council's desire to extend its powers beyond finance to general administration.⁵⁴ On October 29, 1889, the Advisory Council resigned because, in Haultain's words, it was "unwilling to accept responsibility without a corresponding right of control."⁵⁵

On November 5, 1889, Lieutenant Governor Royal announced that he had selected four Members to serve on his Advisory Council.⁵⁶ This Council was led by Dr. Robert G. Brett, Member for Red Deer and future Lieutenant Governor of Alberta (1915–1925). Betts was appointed to this Advisory Council along with David F. Jelly, Member for North Regina and former member of the Haultain Advisory Council, and Benjamin P. Richardson, Member for Wolseley. Brett immediately stated that although his Advisory Council would continue to "exercise the functions of an Executive in matters affecting the Territorial Finances *only*," he had the assurance of Lieutenant Governor Royal that the Advisory Council would be consulted on issues regarding the administration of the Territories as well.⁵⁷ The Brett Advisory Council was defeated in a vote of no-confidence four days later.⁵⁸ Betts took the opportunity to express his opposition to responsible government and remarked that "it was a matter of regret that it should be considered that a vote of want of confidence was going to help the object so ardently desired by seven eights [*sic*] of the members of the Assembly."⁵⁹ Lieutenant Governor Royal refused to accept the resulting resignation of the Brett Advisory Council, believing that the Council had not shown itself to be unworthy of office and that it had been doing as much as it was permitted to do within the parameters of the law.⁶⁰

On November 14, Haultain amended a motion by John Secord, Member for South Regina, in such a way as to replace it completely. The amendment read: "[T]he House do not consider of any further supply to be granted to Her Majesty, until the supply voted last year has been properly accounted for."⁶¹ Haultain criticized the Brett Council* for having relinquished control

* William Sutherland, Member for North Qu'Appelle, compared the Brett Advisory Council to the previous Haultain Council: "The position of the old Council was like a handsome new democrat [wagon] in which the Council had been bowling along with a fine, spanking team. When they handed over the lines, the new Council, instead of jumping into the democrat and continuing on the same course, took an old Red River cart, drawn by a shaggynappy, which went crawling along with the Council lying in the bottom." "Legislative Assembly: Second Session—Another Crisis," *Regina Leader*, 19 November 1889, p. 5.

over federal funding, which, although not legally within the Council's mandate, had almost become a vested right.⁶²

Haultain's amended motion passed in the early hours of November 15.⁶³ The Legislative Assembly's refusal to consider the Territorial estimates for the current year set a precedent for the use of obstruction or deadlock in the struggle for increased territorial rights.⁶⁴ The Brett Advisory Council resigned once more. This time, in a letter dated November 16, 1889, Lieutenant Governor Royal accepted the Council's resignation.^{*65}

On November 22, Royal assented to a bill that reduced the number of members on the Advisory Council from four to two and stated that the Legislative Assembly would select these two.⁶⁶ Subsequently, on January 6, 1890, the Governor General of Canada, Sir Frederick Arthur Stanley (1888–1893), Baron Stanley of Preston, after consideration of a report provided by the Minister of Justice, Sir John S. D. Thompson (Prime Minister 1892–1894), disallowed the ordinance on the basis of its inconsistency with *The North-West Territories Act* of 1888, by which the Advisory Council was created.⁶⁷

After the disallowance, Lieutenant Governor Royal convinced a new Advisory Council, composed of Members from the minority group within the Assembly, to accept appointment during the recess between the Second and Third Sessions. This new Council was led once more by Brett, with Betts as one of the appointees. At the opening of the Third Session of the First Legislature on October 29, 1890, the reply to the Speech from the Throne was full of criticism for this second Brett Advisory Council and contained threats to refuse all legislation and motions emanating from the Council. Members of the Council were also excluded from all committees.⁶⁸ Haultain stated that "on account of the unconstitutional manner in which the Advisory Council held their position, the majority of this House did not intend to let them take any part in the business of the country, except to vote."⁶⁹ 'The Noble Thirteen'^{†70} were criticized by the press for this "scandalous invasion of people's rights."⁷¹ Session was prorogued on November 29, 1890.

In May 1891, Betts accompanied Brett on a trip to Ottawa to lobby for constitutional changes.⁷² Some Members felt it was presumptuous for this delegation to bring forward proposals that had yet to be discussed in the Legislative Assembly, particularly because the views of Brett and Betts were not representative of the views of the majority.⁷³ Betts believed that it was an opportunity to plant the idea of a government located in Prince Albert that would be independent of a government located in the District of Assiniboia.⁷⁴ Largely due to the expense and administrative complexities that this proposal would have entailed, Betts' ideas did not go far.⁷⁵ However, progress toward responsible government was made, and, in July 1891, the Dominion Parliament passed "an amending *North West Act* which established a new constitution for the Territories. The

* The Toronto-based newspaper *Grip* published a parody of the events. "North-West Assembly Shakespearean Medley," *Grip: An Independent Journal of Humor and Caricature* vol. XXXIII, no. 24 (14 December 1889); p. 376.

† 'The Noble Thirteen' was a moniker used by the press to describe Haultain and the 12 Members who aligned themselves with him.

Act ... removed the legal experts who had sat in the Assembly and made that body wholly elective."⁷⁶ The division of powers between the Lieutenant Governor and his advisors, particularly as related to issues of finance, was still poorly defined.⁷⁷ In December 1891, the Legislative Assembly passed an Ordinance creating an Executive Committee, led by Haultain, which replaced the Advisory Council.⁷⁸

Betts was a key player in the dramatic legislative deadlock that began in August 1892. Within the *Committee of Supply*, Betts stated that "he had never criticised anything in connection with [the Legislative Assembly's] increased powers excepting the methods taken to secure them."⁷⁹ The membership of the Haultain Executive Committee had been based upon District representation and agreement on policies. Because there had been no representation on the Executive Committee from the District of Saskatchewan for over five months, since the resignation of James Clinkskill, Member for Battleford,⁸⁰ Betts made a motion that this vacancy had "destroy[ed] the confidence of the House in the Committee in their capacity as Advisers to His Honor, the Lieutenant-Governor."⁸¹ This want of confidence motion carried with a vote of 13 to 12. A sequence of events began "seldom if ever matched in the political history of the West."⁸² The Haultain Executive Committee resigned, prompting Lieutenant Governor Royal to choose a new Executive Committee, led by Hugh St. Quentin Cayley, Member for Calgary. The situation continued to escalate with the resignation of Speaker James H. Ross on August 30, 1892. Attempts to elect a new Speaker were thwarted by a tie vote, and the Session was subsequently brought to an abrupt end when prorogation was announced by the Lieutenant Governor on September 1, 1892.

Prior to the next Session, a by-election was held in the electoral district of Wallace after the death of Cayley supporter Joel Reaman. The victory by Fredrik R. Ininger, a Haultain ally, meant the end of the numeric advantage of the Cayley Executive Committee.⁸³ When Session convened on December 7, 1892, Ross was elected Speaker, and the Cayley Executive Committee resigned.⁸⁴ On April 8, 1895, Ross was appointed to Haultain's Executive Committee, which left the position of Speaker open when the following Session began.^{*85}

As Speaker

At the First Session of the Third Legislature, on August 29, 1895, John Felton Betts was elected Speaker unanimously upon the nomination through a motion by the Member for Macleod, Frederick W. A. G. Haultain, which was seconded by Member for North Qu'Appelle and Deputy Speaker William Sutherland. Betts was 40 years old at the time. Of their previous disagreements, Haultain said, "[I]t was not the intention of the assembly to keep alive the troubles and dissensions [*sic*] of the past."⁸⁶ Haultain spoke of Betts' seven years of service in the Legislative Assembly and stated that "[h]e would bring a knowledge of the business of the house, which was essential to the chair."⁸⁷ The selection of Betts as the candidate for Speaker was seen as

* Ross' appointment to the Haultain Executive Committee was confirmed on September 3, 1895. North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 3rd Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. IX, 3 September 1895, p. 21.

a shrewd move on Haultain's part, a move "by which he gained a powerful ally and silenced one of his sharpest critics."⁸⁸ Former Speaker James H. Ross congratulated the new Speaker:

Speaking as one who had occupied the same position for four years, he felt quite sure that Mr. Speaker would show that impartiality which should be shown by one in the position. He could not agree with the sentiment that the House had lost a member by the appointment; he thought the House had gained by securing a man of Mr. Speaker's qualities and ability for the position, and he trusted that the opinion would no longer prevail, which in some quarters had been expressed, that a man when he became Speaker took a retrograde step and lessened his usefulness. The Speakership was the most honourable gift in the competence of the House. He congratulated the House upon its selection.⁸⁹

In his Speaker's address, Betts referred to "the advantage of constant communication with [his] hon. friend, the member for Moose Jaw (Mr. Ross) who as [the Legislative Assembly's] last Speaker so ably discharged his duties," and emphasized his determination "to be as independent as is possible for a man to be."⁹⁰

Betts toured the Territories soon after his election as Speaker so that he could become "more conversant with matters which daily [came] up for his consideration in the position he now [occupied]."⁹¹ After his first Session as Speaker, Betts was honoured with a dinner in Prince Albert where he jokingly remarked that although "the rulings and business of the Speaker's office had not been particularly irksome this session, his position made it necessary that he should keep a watchful eye on the members, and this ... had often kept him from slumber until 3 or 4 o'clock in the morning."⁹²

During Betts' tenure as Speaker, there was significant evolution in the role of the Legislative Assembly. The 1895 Session was devoted mainly to the financial relations of the Territories and the Dominion.⁹³ The election of the Laurier (Liberal) Government in Ottawa in 1896 presented a fresh opportunity for the Territorial Assembly to forward constitutional and financial proposals to a new administration.⁹⁴ Ross raised the issue of the creation of an Executive Council in October of 1896.⁹⁵ In early 1897, Haultain and Ross travelled to Ottawa, where they strongly lobbied the Laurier Government.⁹⁶ The result was the 1897 Act, which amended prior Acts of the North-West Territories and in which provision was made for the establishment of the Executive Council of the Territories.⁹⁷ In 1897, Betts served on the *Select Committee to prepare and report a consolidation of the rules and forms of proceedings of the Assembly*.⁹⁸

The Yukon had been designated a Provisional District of the North-West Territories in 1895. Towards the end of Betts' tenure as Speaker, in June of 1898, the Yukon Territory was made a separate territory from the North-West Territories.⁹⁹ An expansion of gold mining activity in the Yukon resulted in the need to establish an increased government presence to lead in the development of services and to ensure order in the Territory.¹⁰⁰ In addition, the western boundary of the North-West Territories required surveying due to pressure from American mining interests.

In 1897, James Morrow Walsh was appointed the first Commissioner of the Yukon to administer all federal government activities.¹⁰¹ The centre of authority for the Yukon was moved from the North-West Territories to Ottawa.¹⁰²

Betts' tenure as Speaker ended on October 13, 1898 at the dissolution of the Legislative Assembly. In the November 4, 1898 general election, Betts ran unsuccessfully in the constituency of Prince Albert East. He was defeated by Samuel McLeod, former mayor of Prince Albert (1896).¹⁰³

Later Career

Despite his 1898 defeat, Betts remained politically active and campaigned once more in the 1902 election for the newly amalgamated constituency of Prince Albert. A prominent issue in this campaign was the question of provincial status and how the Territories might be divided. The Executive Council under Haultain did not have control over public lands and natural resources; the Dominion Government retained its authority in this regard. Consequently, the Territorial Executive Council did not have the ability to generate sufficient income and therefore assert its independence through gaining control over land-use policies.¹⁰⁴ With the increased population in the area, the idea of transforming the North-West Territories and its four Districts (Alberta, Saskatchewan, Assiniboia, and Athabasca) into a province or provinces continued to gain momentum.¹⁰⁵ At a 1902 campaign meeting at Colleston, North-West Territories (Saskatchewan), Betts spoke out in favour of an east-west division of the area, citing the expense of the construction of bridges in Northern Alberta and proclaiming that "a northern province would be dominated by the foreign immigrants of that region."¹⁰⁶ Samuel MacLeod, who had defeated Betts in the election of 1898, and Thomas McKay, who was to run against him in the upcoming election, criticized Betts' remarks because of the "thoughtless lumping of French-Canadians with foreigners."¹⁰⁷ In the snap election of May 21, 1902, Betts did not prevail against Thomas McKay, the incumbent for Prince Albert West (and first mayor of Prince Albert). McKay's victory meant that "Saskatchewan was not represented in the Assembly in these critical years by a member who had paid even lip service to district autonomy," as McKay's platform focused on Haultain's alleged neglect of the area and included demands for an increased share of public works funding for the constituency.¹⁰⁸

Community Activities and Personal Interests

The sport of curling was a favourite pastime of the early residents of Prince Albert in the 1880s, and Betts was a 'second' on one of the two teams in town.¹⁰⁹ Betts was a member of the Grand Lodge of Ancient Free and Accepted Masons of Canada (Kinistino Lodge No. 381), which was the first Masonic lodge established in the area.¹¹⁰ In 1886, Betts was elected as both a director and an auditor of the Lorne Agricultural Society.¹¹¹ He was also a member of the Independent Order of Foresters.¹¹² In February 1898, as High Chief Ranger of the Foresters, Betts toured Banff, Calgary, Edmonton and other important settlements where he "visited several courts and held a public installation of officers at Calgary."¹¹³



*Surviving members of Prince Albert's First Council;
J.F. Betts far left (1907).*

Death

John Felton Betts retired from his merchandising business on March 15, 1912, largely due to ill health.¹¹⁴ He died on May 9, 1914, at the age of 59, in Prince Albert, Saskatchewan.¹¹⁵ Almost three months earlier he had been stricken with pleurisy, from which he never recovered.¹¹⁶ Betts' funeral was 'held under Masonic auspices'; the service was conducted from St. Alban's Pro-Cathedral, and the burial took place in the Prince Albert Cemetery on May 12, 1914.¹¹⁷

Tributes

Shortly after his election as Speaker, Betts had returned to Prince Albert for a banquet that his fellow citizens held in his honour. Known for "his skill in repartee and also for the touch of humor which he added to his statements on even serious questions," he was popular in the community.¹¹⁸ Betts, with "his great ability as a public speaker," had made "his name a household word" in Prince Albert.¹¹⁹ Judge Thomas H. Maguire (Supreme Court of the North-West Territories 1887–1897, 1898–1902 and Chief Justice of the North-West Territories 1902–1903) spoke of Betts in glowing terms "as a maker of history for the North-West. The newly-elected Speaker had laboured honestly and ably ... and no better evidence could be had that he had discharged his duties favorably than the fact that his fellow members had elected him to the highest position in their power."¹²⁰ At the time that Betts was elected to the position of Speaker, Dr. Robert G. Brett had said that Betts possessed "in an eminent degree, the ability, firmness and impartiality necessary for the proper fulfilment of the duties of the position."¹²¹ Betts was "a ready and clever debater, and while he gave hard knocks, he took ones in return, in the spirit of a true parliamentary veteran. [His election as Speaker was] proof that his course in opposition [had] won for him the esteem, respect and confidence of his opponents."¹²²

Notes

¹ "Hon J. F. Betts Died on Saturday," *Regina Leader*, 11 May 1914, p. 1.

² Norman Fergus Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II (Regina: Saskatchewan Historical Company, 1913), p. 851.

³ "John F. Betts," in *Wesleyan Methodist Baptismal Register*, [Canada West, Newcastle, Sidney Township, Sidney, 21 April 1866, vol. 1, p. 779 Baptismal Record].

⁴ Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Lorenzo A. Betts household, 1851 Census of the Canadas, Canada West, Hastings County, Sidney Township, p. 29 (56), Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, L. A. Betts household, 1871 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 63, Lennox, sub-district g-2, Ernestown, schedule 1, pp. 12–13, household 50, microfilm C-996, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 852.

⁵ Lorenzo A. Betts, Memorial/Obituary. Montreal Methodist Conference, 1911 Minutes, United Church Archives/Victoria University Archives, Toronto, MO3 ACA.

⁶ Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Lorenzo A. Betts household, 1851 Census of the Canadas; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, L. A. Betts household, 1871 Census of Canada; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Lorenzo Betts household, 1881 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 110, South Leeds, sub-district h-58, Yonge Front, schedule 1, p. 58, household 297, microfilm C-13232, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.

⁷ Lorenzo A. Betts, Memorial/Obituary.

⁸ Ibid.

⁹ Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Lorenzo A. Betts household, 1851 Census of the Canadas; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, L. A. Betts household, 1871 Census of Canada; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Lorenzo Betts household, 1881 Census of Canada. Conflicts regarding Caroline Chisholm's age appear in the census. Chisholm's age in the 1851 Census is 19, her age in 1871 Census is 37, and her age in 1881 Census is 46.

¹⁰ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 852.

¹¹ *Pioneer Life on the Bay of Quinte*, Canadiana reprint series, no. 20 (Belleville, ON: Mika Silk Screening, 1972), pp. 236-237; H. Belden & Co., *Illustrated Historical Atlas of Hastings and Prince Edward Counties, Ontario* (Belleville, ON: Mika Silk Screening, 1972), p. 6.

¹² Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Lorenzo A. Betts household, 1851 Census of the Canadas.

¹³ Lorenzo A. Betts, Memorial/Obituary.

¹⁴ Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Lorenzo A. Betts household, 1851 Census of the Canadas.

¹⁵ Lorenzo A. Betts, Memorial/Obituary.

¹⁶ "Legislative Assembly: Sketches of the Members," *Regina Leader*, 30 October 1888, p. 4.

¹⁷ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 852.

¹⁸ National Gallery of Canada, "Belleville: The Gateway to Central Ontario," ed. Andrew Leak, *Canadian Souvenir View Albums*, [Internet], (Ottawa: National Gallery of Canada and Industry Canada's Digital Collections Initiative, 2001), accessed 15 March 2004, available from http://collections.ic.gc.ca/sva/on/be_01/pg_13e.htm

¹⁹ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, L. A. Betts household, 1871 Census of Canada.

²⁰ John Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. II (Regina: S. J. Clarke, 1924), p. 1027.

²¹ "Hon J. F. Betts Died on Saturday," p. 2.

²² Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 851.

²³ Henry Thomas McPhillips, *McPhillips' Alphabetical and Business Directory of the District of Saskatchewan, N.W.T.: Together with Brief Historical Sketches of Prince Albert, Battleford and Other Settlements in the District, 1888* (Qu'Appelle, N.W.T.: "The Progress" Book and Job Office, 1888), p. 43; Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 851.

²⁴ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. II, p. 1029.

²⁵ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 852.

²⁶ "Town Council," *Prince Albert Times*, 19 February 1886, p. 4.

²⁷ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 851.

²⁸ Henry James Morgan, ed., *The Canadian Men and Women of the Time: A Hand-book of Canadian Biography*, 1st ed. (Toronto: W. Briggs, 1898), p. 81; Betts, John Felton, n.d., *Biography*, Prince Albert Historical Society, Prince Albert, SK, p. 1.

²⁹ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 851.

³⁰ Ibid., vol. II, p. 852; "Hon J. F. Betts Died on Saturday," p. 2.

- ³¹ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 2, no. 6, 2 November 1885, pp. 118–119; Gary William David Abrams, *Prince Albert: The First Century, 1866–1966* (Saskatoon: Modern Press, 1966), p. 82.
- ³² “Incorporation,” *Prince Albert Times*, 12 December 1884, p. 2.
- ³³ Abrams, *Prince Albert: The First Century, 1866–1966*, p. 82.
- ³⁴ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 851; McPhillips, *McPhillips’ Alphabetical and Business Directory of the District of Saskatchewan, N.W.T.*, p. 43.
- ³⁵ Abrams, *Prince Albert: The First Century, 1866–1966*, p. 88.
- ³⁶ *Ibid*; Betts, John Felton, Biography, p. 1.
- ³⁷ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 3, no. 7, 31 December 1886, p. 126; *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 6, no. 20, 16 December 1889, p. 173.
- ³⁸ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 851; *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 14, no. 14, 15 June 1897, p. 2.
- ³⁹ “John F. Betts–Mary E. Boyle,” Ontario, Prince Edward County, Picton, 3 June 1882, no. 009996-82, Ontario Archives microfilm MS 932, [Marriage Registration Transcription], *Ontario Marriage Registrations*, [Internet], accessed 16 March 2004, available from <http://homepages.rootsweb.com/~maryc/thisisit.htm> [Marriage Registration Transcription].
- ⁴⁰ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Robert Boyle household, 1871 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 59, Prince Edward, sub-district e-1, Picton, schedule 1, p. 44, microfilm C-9989, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.
- ⁴¹ “John F. Betts–Mary E. Boyle,” [Marriage Registration Transcription].
- ⁴² J. A. Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1897 ed. (Ottawa: J. Durie & Son, 1897), p. 400; “Town Council,” p. 4.
- ⁴³ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, John F. Betts household, 1901 Census of Canada, North-West Territories, district no. 205, Saskatchewan, sub-district s-1, Prince Albert (East), schedule 1, p. 19, microfilm T-6553, *ArchivalNet: Census of Canada, 1901*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), RG31, Statistics Canada, accessed 8 August 2003, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/02012203_e.html
- ⁴⁴ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Robert Boyle household, 1881 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 119, Prince Edward, sub-district a-1, Picton, schedule 1, p. 24, household 135, microfilm C-13237, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Robert Boyle household, 1871 Census of Canada.
- ⁴⁵ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 852.
- ⁴⁶ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. II, p. 1029.
- ⁴⁷ Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905–2000* (Regina: Saskatchewan Archives Board, 2001), pp. 1–15, 1–30.
- ⁴⁸ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 851; Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1897 ed., p. 400.
- ⁴⁹ Morgan, ed., *Canadian Men and Women of the Time*, 1st ed., p. 81.
- ⁵⁰ Lewis Herbert Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government in the North-West Territories, 1870–97*, 2nd ed. (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1978), p. 167.
- ⁵¹ “Legislative Assembly: Two Advisors Appointed in Place of Four,” *Regina Leader*, 26 November 1889, p. 5.

⁵² "N.W. Legislature: Discussion of Budget Speech Continued," *Regina Journal*, 20 December 1888, p. 5.

⁵³ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 1st Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. II, 5 November 1889, p. 62; Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. I, p. 478.

⁵⁴ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 163–164.

⁵⁵ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 617; North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 2nd Session*, 29 October 1889, p. 43.

⁵⁶ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 2nd Session*, 5 November 1889, pp. 61–62.

⁵⁷ *Ibid.*, 5 November 1889, p. 62.

⁵⁸ *Ibid.*, 9 November 1889, pp. 74–76.

⁵⁹ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 176.

⁶⁰ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 2nd Session*, 12 November 1889, pp. 82–84; John Blue, *Alberta Past and Present: Historical and Biographical: Illustrated*, vol. 1 (Chicago: Pioneer Historical Pub. Co., 1924), pp. 110–111.

⁶¹ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 2nd Session*, 14 November 1889, p. 93.

⁶² Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 177.

⁶³ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 2nd Session*, 15 November 1889, pp. 94–95.

⁶⁴ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 177.

⁶⁵ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 2nd Session*, 18 November 1889, pp. 102–103.

⁶⁶ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, "An Ordinance to Amend Chapter 1 of the revised Ordinances of the North-West Territories, Intituled 'The Interpretation Ordinance'," *Ordinances of the North-West Territories, 1st Legislature, 2nd Session*, no. 24, 1889, p. 70.

⁶⁷ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, "[Copy] Despatches," *Sessional Paper*, no. 1, 1890, pp. 10–12.

⁶⁸ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. I, pp. 400–401.

⁶⁹ "The Assembly: Opening of the Last Session," *Regina Leader*, 4 November 1890, p. 4.

⁷⁰ "The Assembly," [Editorial], *Regina Leader*, 4 November 1890, p. 4.

⁷¹ "The Regina Outrage," *Calgary Herald*, 5 November 1890, p. 4.

⁷² "The Delegation to Ottawa," *Regina Leader*, 5 May 1891, p. 4; Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. I, p. 485.

⁷³ "The Deputation," [Editorial], *Standard* (Regina), 21 April 1891, p. 4; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 197–198.

⁷⁴ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 198.

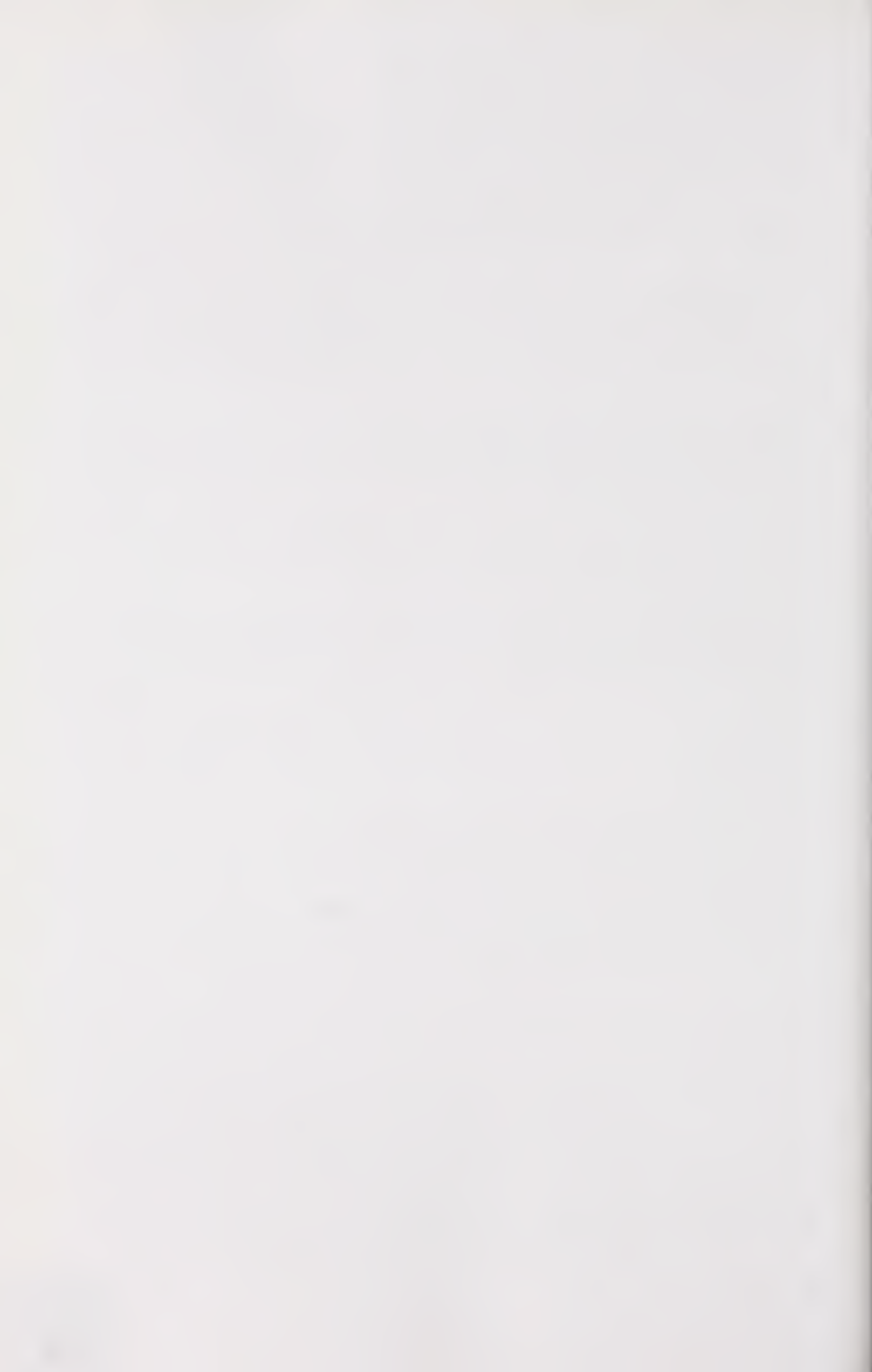
⁷⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 198–199.

⁷⁶ William S. Waddell, "The Honorable Frank Oliver," (MA thesis, University of Alberta, 1950), p. 204.

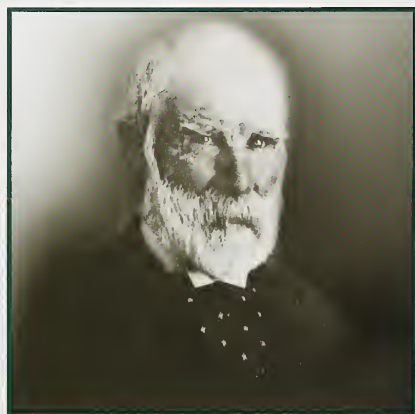
- ⁷⁷ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 200.
- ⁷⁸ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, "An Ordinance respecting the Executive Government of the Territories," *Ordinances of the North-West Territories, 2nd Legislature, 1st Session*, no. 1, 1891–92.
- ⁷⁹ "Legislative Assembly: Wednesday, Aug. 24th, 1892," *Standard* (Regina), 2 September 1892, p. 6.
- ⁸⁰ "Northwest Assembly: The Government is Defeated," *Medicine Hat Times*, 15 September 1892, p. 1; James Clinkskill, *A Prairie Memoir: The Life and Times of James Clinkskill, 1853–1936*, ed. Stan D. Hanson (Regina: Canadian Plains Research Center, 2003), p. 100.
- ⁸¹ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 2nd Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. V, 24 August 1892, p. 70; "Defeat of the Executive," *The Leader* (Regina), 25 August 1892, p. 4.
- ⁸² Grant MacEwan, *Frederick Haultain: Frontier Statesman of the Canadian Northwest* (Saskatoon: Western Producer Prairie Books, 1985), p. 75.
- ⁸³ Clinkskill, *A Prairie Memoir: The Life and Times of James Clinkskill, 1853–1936*, pp. 100–102.
- ⁸⁴ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 2nd Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. VI, 7 December 1892, p. 8; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, pp. 213–228.
- ⁸⁵ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 246.
- ⁸⁶ "Northwest Assembly," *Saskatchewan Times* (Prince Albert), 10 September 1895, p. 1.
- ⁸⁷ Ibid.
- ⁸⁸ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 247.
- ⁸⁹ "The Legislature: Full and Accurate Statement of Proceedings," *Leader* (Regina), 5 September 1895, p. 5.
- ⁹⁰ Ibid.
- ⁹¹ "Bett's [*sic*] Banquetted: The Popular Speaker Warmly Welcomed Home," *Leader* (Regina), 24 October 1895, p. 4.
- ⁹² Ibid.
- ⁹³ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 248.
- ⁹⁴ Ibid., pp. 252–253.
- ⁹⁵ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 3rd Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. X, 8 October 1896, pp. 29–30; Ibid., 22 October 1896, pp. 62; Ibid., 23 October 1896, pp. 67–76; Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 248.
- ⁹⁶ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 259.
- ⁹⁷ *An Act Further to Amend the Acts Respecting the North-west Territories* (U.K.), 60–61 Victoria 1897, c. 28, s. 8.
- ⁹⁸ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 3rd Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. XI, 3 November 1897, p. 23.
- ⁹⁹ *Yukon Territory Act*, S.C. 1898, c. 6; Blue, *Alberta Past and Present*, p. 115.
- ¹⁰⁰ Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 266.
- ¹⁰¹ *Yukon Territory Act*, S.C. 1898, c. 6, s. 4; "James Morrow Walsh," *Canadian Confederation: People*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada, 14 December 2001, updated 19 February 2002), accessed 9 March 2004, available from <http://www.nlc-bnc.ca/2/18/h18-2423-c.html>

- ¹⁰² Thomas, *The Struggle for Responsible Government*, p. 267.
- ¹⁰³ "Election Returns," *Standard* (Regina), 10 November 1898, p. 1.
- ¹⁰⁴ Charles Cecil Lingard, *Territorial Government in Canada: The Autonomy Question in the Old North-West Territories* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1946), pp. 14–20.
- ¹⁰⁵ For a more in-depth discussion of these issues, see *ibid.*, p. 21.
- ¹⁰⁶ Abrams, *Prince Albert: The First Century, 1866–1966*, p. 115.
- ¹⁰⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 116.
- ¹⁰⁸ *Ibid.*, pp. 133–134.
- ¹⁰⁹ James Moffat, "James Moffat," in *The Voice of the People: Reminiscences of Prince Albert Settlement's Early Citizens, 1866–1895*, ed. Manon Lamontagne et al. (Prince Albert, SK: Prince Albert Historical Society, 1985), p. 102.
- ¹¹⁰ E-mail from Gene Miller, Kinistino Lodge #1, Prince Albert, SK, 20 November 2003; Ancient Free and Accepted Masons Grand Lodge of Saskatchewan, *Grand Lodge History, Taken from the Constitution of the Grand Lodge of Saskatchewan*, 1998, [Internet], (Regina: Grand Lodge of Saskatchewan, updated 3 October 2003), accessed 16 March 2004, available from <http://www.masons.sk.ca/grandlodgehistory.html>
- ¹¹¹ "Lorne Agricultural Society," *Prince Albert Times*, 22 January 1886, p. 3.
- ¹¹² Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 852.
- ¹¹³ "The H. C. Ranger's Trip," *Regina Leader*, 17 February 1898, p. 4.
- ¹¹⁴ Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II, p. 851.
- ¹¹⁵ "Hon J. F. Betts Died on Saturday," p. 1.
- ¹¹⁶ *Ibid.*
- ¹¹⁷ *Ibid.*
- ¹¹⁸ *Ibid.*
- ¹¹⁹ *Ibid.*
- ¹²⁰ "Bett's [*sic*] Banquetted," p. 4.
- ¹²¹ "The Legislature: Full and Accurate Statement of Proceedings," p. 5.
- ¹²² "Mr. Speaker Betts," [Editorial], *Leader* (Regina), 5 April 1895, p. 4.





Presiding with fairness, dignity and tact



Eakin 1899-1902



William Eakin, the fourth Speaker of the North-West Territories, was one of three Speakers* of the North-West Territories and later the Province of Saskatchewan to come from Saltcoats, Saskatchewan. Seventy years of age at the time of his election as Speaker, Eakin was the oldest of any of the Speakers of the North-West Territories or what became Alberta in 1905. As a Private Member, Eakin served with Lieutenant Governors Charles H. Mackintosh (1893–1898) and Malcolm C. Cameron (1898), and with Premier Frederick W. A. G. Haultain (1897–1905). As Speaker, he served with Lieutenant Governor Amédée E. M. Forget (1898–1905) and Premier Haultain.

Family History

William Eakin was born on June 14, 1828 near Crosby's Corners (now Cashel), Markham Township, York County, Upper Canada (Ontario).¹ William was the eldest of the six children[†] of Samuel Baxter³ Eakin and Elizabeth Pingle. William's parents were married in Markham Township on May 18, 1826.⁴ The Eakins were members of the Church of Scotland (Presbyterian).⁵

Samuel Eakin, William's father, was born about 1798⁶ in Londonderry, Ireland.⁷ He was a wagon maker and merchant, making and selling his own products, and also a farmer, "clearing [his] bush farm" south of the village of Cashel.⁸ The Eakin family experienced the unsettling 'troubled times' of the Upper Canada Rebellion of 1837–1838, at which time William was about 10 years old.⁹ William Lyon Mackenzie led the Rebellion to oppose what he saw as the rule of the privileged class, the so-called 'Family Compact'.¹⁰

William's mother, Elizabeth, was born in Upper Canada in about 1807¹¹ and was the daughter of George Pingle and Maria Koecke.¹² Her family was part of a group of pioneers known as the German or 'Berczy' settlers. This group had arrived in (what later became) Markham Township in 1794 at the invitation of Governor John Graves Simcoe (1791–1796).¹³ It appears that William Eakin and Charles Steuart Pingle, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta (1920–1921), shared a common ancestor in Joachim Pingle (b. ca. 1745).¹⁴

William's brother George was postmaster of Unionville, Markham Township from 1864 to 1875¹⁵ and secretary-treasurer of the Township Council.¹⁶ Later, George became the county clerk for York, an estate agent, conveyancer and issuer of marriage licences, who worked out of the

* The others were Thomas MacNutt, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Saskatchewan (1906–1908) and James E. P. Snedker, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Saskatchewan (1965–1967, 1968–1971). Saskatchewan. Legislative Assembly, *Debates and Proceedings (Hansard)*, 22nd Legislature, 4th Session, vol. XXXVII, 17 May 1994, p. 2378. The 1901 Census gives the population of Saltcoats as 155 and the 1971 Census shows the population as 509.

† William (b. 1828), George (ca. 1829), David (ca. 1831), John (ca. 1834), Jane (ca. 1836) and Joseph (ca. 1839).



Court House in Toronto, Ontario.¹⁷ In 1869, William's youngest brother, Joseph Samuel, became the minister of the Kippen Presbyterian Church in Tuckersmith Township, Huron County, Ontario.¹⁸

Education

As a young boy, William Eakin attended common school,¹⁹ which was run by fathers of families within the local community, as the public school system in what would become Ontario had not yet been established.²⁰ The students were boarded at the home of whichever father was the teacher at the time.²¹ Later, William received private tutoring to supplement his education.²² At age 12, however, he was already 'following the plough,' and in the 1840s, his teenage years were spent learning his father's trade of wagon making.²³ Eakin was also sent to Toronto as an apprentice, where he learned to build carriages and cabinets.²⁴

Marriage and Family

On March 8, 1853, Eakin married Margaret Hunter,²⁵ the eldest daughter²⁶ of Alexander²⁷ and Lucy Hunter,²⁸ who also lived in Markham Township. Margaret was born in the township²⁹ on December 12, 1835.³⁰ Alexander Hunter, a farmer, was born in Ireland in about 1798, and his wife, Lucy, was born in New York State in about 1813.³¹ Alexander also operated a brewery.³² He was a councillor on the first Markham Township Council in 1850 and deputy reeve in 1852.³³

The Eakins had five daughters: Elizabeth (b. ca. 1854);³⁴ Otelia (ca. 1857);³⁵ Edna J. (between 1860 and 1863) [William Anderson];³⁶ Nella (ca. 1864);³⁷ Margaret 'Maggie' (between 1864 and 1870);³⁸ and one son, Gordon H. (1871).³⁹

Military Career

On November 6, 1866, Eakin received his commission as ensign with the No. 9 or Unionville Company of the 12th York Battalion of Infantry. He retired from the militia in early 1872.⁴⁰

Early Career

In the 1850s, Eakin followed his father's trade and manufactured wagons in the shop on the family property.⁴¹ In 1854, Eakin bought a sawmill, which his brother George later acquired from him.⁴² In the 1860s, the mill was turned into a carriage shop where buggies and wagons were made.⁴³

In 1873, Eakin and his brother built a planing mill close to the site of the new Canadian Pacific Railway (CPR) line.⁴⁴ Known as the Unionville Planing Mill, it manufactured sashes and doors.⁴⁵ In the 1870s, Eakin combined farming and manufacturing, selling products such as wagons, carriages, agricultural implements, and cabinets, including household furniture and coffins.⁴⁶ The mill was leased out in 1874 and finally sold in 1881.⁴⁷

Eakin played an active role in public life while living in Ontario. He served as councillor of the Markham Township Council in 1867, 1871 and 1872 and reeve of the Council from 1879 until

he resigned on February 17, 1883.⁴⁸ In 1881, he was chosen warden of the County of York.⁴⁹ For several years, he also acted as one of the Commissioners of Public Works for the County of York.⁵⁰ Eakin served as secretary for the Reform Association in York East in 1879 and 1880.⁵¹

In March of 1883,⁵² at the age of 55, Eakin came to the North-West Territories as an agent for the Saskatchewan Land and Homestead Company.⁵³ He and his party were among the first white settlers "in North-east Assiniboia north of the Qu'Appelle [River]."⁵⁴ He settled on the Manitoba and Northwestern Road at Crescent Lake, about 40 kilometres from Saltcoats, where he remained for 16 years, farming and ranching.⁵⁵

One member of the Saltcoats community characterized Eakin as a "fearless, forceful man of exceptional ability"⁵⁶ and described an incident that took place during the Riel Rebellion of 1885. The local Aboriginal population was unhappy with the Dominion Government's presence in the area.⁵⁷ The Government's seemingly "oppressive and inconsistent ... Indian policy," coupled with the decline in the number of buffalo and the resulting starvation of the Aboriginal people,* meant that tensions were high.⁵⁸ Eakin reportedly took charge of the situation by suggesting that a council campfire be held with local Aboriginal leaders to discuss the state of affairs. When it came time for Eakin to talk, he recounted the grievances put forward by the Aboriginal people and presented the Government's position.⁵⁹ His explanations and accompanying uncompromising stand,† along with an offer of half of the community's supply of food, defused the situation. Subsequently, on January 28, 1885, Lieutenant Governor Edgar Dewdney (1881–1888) appointed Eakin as the first justice of the peace⁶⁰ in northeastern Assiniboia.⁶¹ Without Eakin's knowledge, settlers in the area had petitioned Dewdney for this appointment.⁶² In February 1894, Eakin was also appointed licence commissioner under the provisions of "The Liquor License Ordinance 1891–1892,"⁶³ and in January 1897, he was appointed commissioner for taking affidavits.⁶⁴

In November 1887, the first school district in the Saltcoats area, Crescent School District No. 110 of the North-West Territories, was organized.⁶⁵ The first classes were held in the summer of 1888 in a log structure on Eakin's farm, with his daughter Maggie serving as the first teacher.⁶⁶ Eakin received \$1 per month in rent for his building.⁶⁷ In the fall of 1888, lumber to build a new school arrived from Winnipeg. Eakin helped to build the school, which was finished in the spring of 1889, and was paid \$190 for his carpentry.⁶⁸ In 1890, the first Presbyterian church in Saltcoats was built by volunteer workers. Eakin was a member of the church choir.⁶⁹

* Aboriginal people "did not want to be spoonfed They just wanted some protection against hunger during the transition to farming. They were uncertain of the effects of making the change and wanted some assurance they wouldn't starve in the process." Bob Beal and Rod Macleod, *Prairie Fire: The 1885 North-West Rebellion* (Edmonton: Hurtig Publishers, 1984), p. 56.

† Eakin warned that if the Aboriginal people used deadly force to acquire arms, ammunition and food, resulting in settlers being harmed, "Queen Victoria would send thousands of red-coats to avenge them." "Notes and Correspondence," *Saskatchewan History* vol. VII, no. 1 (Winter 1954): p. 38.

Political Career

In 1888, at the age of 60, Eakin ran as a candidate for the electoral district of Wallace in the North-West Territories' general election, but was unsuccessful. In 1894, Wallace was divided into two constituencies: Yorkton and Saltcoats. Eakin was the successful candidate in the Saltcoats constituency in elections held on October 31, 1894 and on November 4, 1898.⁷⁰ In 1894, Saltcoats was the first village in the North-West Territories to receive municipal status.⁷¹

During Eakin's period of service, territorial politics remained non-partisan. Although Members identified with political ideologies, the Legislative Assembly was organized without regard to party affiliation.⁷² Party affiliations were related to Dominion politics, and in this regard, Eakin was a Liberal.⁷³

As the Territories began to push for provincial status in the mid-1890s, the matter of boundaries naturally arose. The issue of whether the eventual outcome would be one province or two was a divisive one, with feelings running high on both sides. Some Members, such as Frederick Haultain and former Speaker (1891–1892, 1892–1894) James H. Ross, were in favour of one province, considering it a more cost-effective way of governing the area. In fact, Ross' preference was for one province stretching from Lake Superior to the Rocky Mountains.^{*74} Others favoured the division of the North-West Territories into two provinces, with many variations on how the division should occur.

Further complicating these issues was Manitoba's desire to expand its provincial boundaries. Manitobans believed that their province had bargained badly, having been provided with inadequate land upon entering Confederation in 1870.[†] Rumours of that province's push to annex part of the Territories arose from a 1896 address in Brandon by Manitoba's Premier Thomas Greenway (1888–1900) and a 1897 City of Calgary letter to the federal government. This letter proposed, in the name of preventing "multiplication of government," that "that portion of Assiniboia east of the third meridian" be added to Manitoba.⁷⁵ The most adamant opponents of this proposal were those constituencies in eastern Assiniboia that would be affected. A major reason for this concern was that Manitoba had amassed a large debt compared to the North-West Territories, which was debt free.^{‡76} Eakin declared that his constituents were

* Haultain, although favouring one province, believed that the Territories should remain separate from Manitoba. He moved in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories that such an arrangement would be "detrimental to the interest of not only any portion of the Territories more directly affected thereby but of the Territories as a whole." North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 4th Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. XV, 20 May 1901, p. 31. See Appendix Q for maps of some of the alternate proposals.

† In 1881, Manitoba's boundaries were set at its present western and eastern borders, and in the north, just south of Grand Rapids. Manitoba's current northern border was established in 1912.

‡ Under the *Manitoba Act, 1870*, the Dominion Government had retained control over Manitoba's public lands (and its natural resources), whereas the original provinces of the Dominion (Ontario, Quebec, Nova Scotia and New Brunswick) were granted control over their public lands. *Manitoba Act, 1870*, S.C. 1870, c. 3, s. 30; *Dominion Lands Act, S.C. 1872*, c. 23, s. 1.

"most ... alarmed, as they were well aware of the burdens of the people of the adjoining province."⁷⁷ With aspirations to become the capital of a new province, Calgary would have been pleased with a plan that saw Regina become part of Manitoba.⁷⁸

In December of 1897, Eakin reiterated his relief that "it was fortunate that the Territories had not the power to go into debt" and indicated that he felt that any Territorial funds should go towards education rather than immigration: "It was better to give the children of the country a good education, and lighten the burdens of the inhabitants. That was the best means of securing immigration."⁷⁹ The following year, Eakin declared that it was "too early for the change [to provincial status]" and that he "believed that the people were well satisfied with the present simple form of government. Until they could see a substantial advantage in a change, they would not favor it."⁸⁰

As Speaker

Eakin soon gained the respect of his colleagues and was viewed as a "valuable man in the Assembly" because of "[h]is ability, temper [temperament], and wide general and practical knowledge."⁸¹ On April 4, 1899, at the opening of the First Session of the Fourth Legislature of the North-West Territories, Member for Macleod, Premier Frederick W. A. G. Haultain, moved, and Dr. Robert G. Brett, Member for Banff and future Lieutenant Governor of Alberta (1915–1925), seconded, the nomination of Eakin as Speaker.⁸² Haultain indicated that Eakin "was peculiarly fitted for the duties of the position ... by reason of his fairness and independence, his length of service in the chamber and by his experience as a member of other deliberative bodies both in the Territories and in Ontario."⁸³ At the age of 70, William Eakin was elected as the fourth Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories.

The primary issue in the North-West Territories during the period that Eakin was Speaker continued to be the question of provincial status for the Territories and the accompanying ongoing debate among the Members as to whether there should be 'one province or two.'⁸⁴ Regular correspondence and negotiation was carried on between the North-West Territorial Government and the Dominion Government on issues of financial terms and increased constitutional authority. The issue was brought to the attention of the Dominion Government through a series of speeches in the Legislative Assembly, and visits and communications to Ottawa.* Eakin submitted a memorial to the Dominion Government, dated May 2, 1900, requesting that "inquiries be made and accounts taken with a view to the settlement of the terms and conditions upon which the Territories or any part thereof shall be established as a Province," and that prior to any establishment, the population of the Territories be afforded the opportunity to debate it.⁸⁵

On April 24, 1899, Eakin was required to exercise his casting vote. Thomas A. Patrick, Member for Yorkton, moved that the power to make ordinances regarding land titles be given to the

* Examples include correspondence between Premier Haultain and Minister of the Interior Clifford Sifton, on January 30, 1901 and April 2, 1902, and a memorandum from Haultain to Prime Minister Sir Wilfrid Laurier (1896–1911) on December 7, 1901. See Douglas R. Owsen, ed., *The Formation of Alberta: A Documentary History* (Calgary: Alberta Records Publications Board, Historical Society of Alberta, 1979), Sections II and III, for more examples.



Legislative Assembly, and that two land registration districts with registry offices be created to serve the needs of the people. The vote on the motion resulted in a tie, and Eakin's vote, in the affirmative, was necessary to resolve the issue.⁸⁶

Eakin served as Speaker of the North-West Territories until the dissolution of the Legislative Assembly on April 26, 1902. By this time, he was 73 years old.

The Speaker's Chair that Eakin used was presented to the Saltcoats Canadian Legion by Thomas MacNutt, the first Speaker of the Province of Saskatchewan (1906-1908).⁸⁷ The Chair is currently housed in the Saltcoats Museum.⁸⁸

Eakin retired in 1902 to his Crescent Lake farm,⁸⁹ known as Eakindale,⁹⁰ where he continued to engage in mixed farming until 1911.⁹¹ The farmhouse was also the location of the Eakindale Post Office.⁹² Eakin's daughter Maggie was the first postmistress, having been appointed in 1902. She resigned the position in 1910.⁹³ Eakin later moved into the town of Saltcoats.⁹⁴



W. Eakin in retirement, seated in Speaker's Chair (n.d.). Saskatchewan Archives Board, R-A9435.

Community Activities and Personal Interests

In 1863, Eakin served as president of the Markham and East York Agricultural Society.⁹⁵ Later in life, in addition to being active in the church choir,⁹⁶ Eakin was known to tend his garden and read a great deal. An acquaintance recalled how, as a young child of five, he was taught to knit by Eakin, who also allowed him to sit in the Speaker's Chair.⁹⁷ Eakin retained "a keen interest in world affairs" during his retirement.⁹⁸

Honours

William Eakin's name is among those listed on a cairn dedicated to the Crescent Lake pioneers of 1883.⁹⁹ His name is also mentioned on a historical plaque* commemorating the Unionville Planing Mill in Unionville, Ontario.¹⁰⁰

Death

William Eakin died on March 14, 1918, at the age of 89, in Saltcoats, Saskatchewan. Eakin and his wife had just celebrated their 65th wedding anniversary the previous week.¹⁰¹ Margaret Eakin died in September of the same year, at the age of 82, and was buried beside her husband in the Saltcoats Cemetery.¹⁰²

* The plaque contains acknowledged errors including the year in which Eakin purchased the mill. E-mail from Marie Jones, Curatorial/Research, Markham Museum, Markham, ON, 14 April 2004.

Tributes

Described as a 'gentle, kindly man,'¹⁰³ Eakin was 'essentially a man of the people.'¹⁰⁴ He was noted for "a heart true to the core, a manner hospitable and sympathetic;—a life marked by solid determination, success and fruitfulness."¹⁰⁵ His "judgment and experience ... marked him as a useful legislator."¹⁰⁶ As Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, Eakin "presided over some interesting sessions with fairness, dignity and tact."¹⁰⁷

Notes

¹ "Men of the Day," *Regina Leader*, 13 April 1899, p. 4; Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, ed. Isabel Champion (Markham, ON: Markham Historical Society, 1979), p. 233; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, William Eakin household, 1901 Census of Canada, North-West Territories, district no. 203, Assiniboia (East), sub-district u, Crescent, schedule 1, p. 1, household 13, microfilm T-6552, *ArchivaNet: Census of Canada, 1901*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada) RG31, Statistics Canada, accessed 13 February 2004, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/02012203_e.html Eakin's date of birth has been recorded as both June 12 (Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, William Eakin household, 1901 Census of Canada, [Internet]) and June 14 ("Men of the Day," p. 4; *Saltcoats Roots and Branches, Thunder and Sunshine*, [Saltcoats, SK: Saltcoats and District Historical Society, 1982], p. 504; Arnott James Magurn, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide and Work of General Reference for Canada, the Provinces, and Northwest Territories*, 1901 ed. [Ottawa: Office of Publication, 1901], p. 419; Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, p. 233).

² Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Samuel Eakin household, 1851 Census of the Canadas, Canada West, district no. 2, York County, Markham Township, part 2, p. 153, microfilm C-11759, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.

³ "Men of the Day," p. 4; Early Marriages in the Home District, n.d., Markham District Historical Museum, Markham, ON, cabinet 1, drawer B.

⁴ LDS Family Search Ancestral File marriage date is 18 May 1826. Helen A. Lynch, "Samuel Eakin (AFN:21TL-TQ2) family group record," Ancestral File v4.19, *Family Search*, [Genealogical Chart], [Internet], (Salt Lake City, UT: Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, 2002), accessed 18 October 2001, available from <http://www.familysearch.org>; Early Marriages in the Home District.

⁵ Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Samuel Eakin household, 1851 Census of the Canadas.

⁶ Ibid; Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Samuel Eakin record, 1861 Census of the Canadas, Canada West, York County, Markham Township, division 9, p. 93, microfilm C-1088, *Ontario GenWeb's Official Census Project*, [Transcription], [Internet], accessed 11 March 2004, available from <http://users.rootsworld.com/~ongenpro/census/index.html> According to the 1851 Census, Samuel Eakin would be 54 on his next birthday, making his birth year 1798. However, in the 1861 Census, his age is listed at 65, making his birth year 1796.

⁷ "Men of the Day," p. 4.

⁸ Ibid.

⁹ Ibid.

¹⁰ For more detailed information about the Rebellion of 1837–1838 in Upper Canada, see William Kilbourn, *The Firebrand: William Lyon Mackenzie and the Rebellion in Upper Canada* (Toronto: Clarke, Irwin & Company, 1956).



- ¹¹ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Samuel Eakin household, 1871 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 45, East York, sub-district d-3, Markham, schedule 1, p. 1, household 5, microfilm C-9969, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.
- ¹² Lynch, "Samuel Eakin (AFN:21TL-TQ2) family group record," [Internet]. George Pingle's name is also recorded as Pingel and Maria Koecke's surname is also recorded as Koepke (Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, p. 21) or Kepkie (Norman E. Wideman, Introduction: Wideman Research Material, 1947–1983, Inventory. Wideman Research Collection, Markham District Historical Museum, Markham, ON, 929.2 WID, p. 4).
- ¹³ Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, pp. 11–12; Elizabeth Simcoe and J. Ross Robertson, *The Diary of Mrs. John Graves Simcoe, Wife of the First Lieutenant-Governor of the Province of Upper Canada, 1792–6*, ed. J. Ross Robertson (Toronto: William Briggs, 1911), p. 214.
- ¹⁴ Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, pp. 20–21; Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, George Pingle record, 1861 Census of the Canadas, Canada West, York County, Markham Township, division 9, p. 93, microfilm C-1088, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Helen A. Lynch, "Descendants of Joachim Pingel," [Genealogy Chart], 1 September 2001.
- ¹⁵ "George Eakin, Unionville (Markham) Postal Station (336041), York North (Ontario)," *ArchiviaNet: Post Offices and Postmasters*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 19 August 2003, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020109_e.html
- ¹⁶ Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, p. 303.
- ¹⁷ *Toronto Directory for 1876*, (Toronto: Fisher & Taylor, 1876), pp. 216, 276.
- ¹⁸ "Joseph Samuel Eakin–Margaret E. Dick," Ontario, York County, Richmond Hill, 3 November 1869, no. 3/104 (York Co), Ontario Archives microfilm MS932, [Marriage Registration Transcription], Ontario Marriage Registrations, [Internet], accessed 28 May 2004, available from <http://homepages.rootsweb.com/~maryc/york69.htm>; Gwyneth J. Whilsmith, ed., *Tuckersmith Memories 1835–1985: Nulli Secundus* (Clinton, ON: Corporation of the Township of Tuckersmith, 1985), p. 119.
- ¹⁹ J. A. Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1897 ed. (Ottawa: J. Durie & Son, 1897), p. 402.
- ²⁰ "Men of the Day," p. 4.
- ²¹ Ibid.
- ²² *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 504; "Men of the Day," p. 4.
- ²³ "Men of the Day," p. 4.
- ²⁴ Ibid.
- ²⁵ *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 504; "Saltcoats Couple Diamond Wedding: Mr. and Mrs. Wm. Eakin Celebrate Their Sixtieth Wedding Anniversary," *Leader* (Regina), 26 March 1913, p. 11.
- ²⁶ "William Eakin Dies at Saltcoats [sic], Sask.," *Economist and Sun* (Markham, ON), 4 April 1918, p. 1.
- ²⁷ Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1897 ed., pp. 402–403.
- ²⁸ Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Lucy Hunter record, 1861 Census of the Canadas, Canada West, York County, Markham Township, division 13, p. 132, microfilm C-1088, *Ontario GenWeb's Official Census Project*, [Transcription], [Internet], accessed 11 March 2004, available from <http://users.rootsweb.com/~ongenpro/census/index.html>
- ²⁹ "Saltcoats Couple Diamond Wedding," p. 11.

³⁰ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, William Eakin household, 1901 Census of Canada, [Internet]. There is a conflict regarding the year of Margaret Eakin's birth. The 1901 Census indicates her year of birth as 1835 and her age as 65; in the 1861 Census, her age is 25; in the 1871 Census, her age is 33; in the 1881 Census, her age is 42; in the 1891 Census, her age is 55; and on her headstone, her age is given as 82 years and nine months and her date of death is September 9, 1918.

³¹ Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Alexander Hunter record, 1861 Census of the Canadas, Canada West, York County, Markham Township, division 13, p. 132, microfilm C-1088, *Ontario GenWeb's Official Census Project*, [Transcription], [Internet], accessed 11 March 2004, available from <http://users.rootsweb.com/~ongenpro/census/index.html>

³² Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, pp. 106–107.

³³ *Ibid.*, pp. 201, 341.

³⁴ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, William Eakin household, 1871 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 45, East York, sub-district d-3, Markham, schedule 1, p. 18, household 72, microfilm C-9969, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa. In the 1861 Census, Elizabeth is aged eight; in the 1871 Census, she is 17; and in the 1881 Census, she is 23.

³⁵ *Ibid.*

³⁶ Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Edna J. Eakin record, 1861 Census of the Canadas, Canada West, York County, Markham Township, division 8, p. 74, microfilm C-1088, *Ontario GenWeb's Official Census Project*, [Transcription], [Internet], accessed 11 March 2004, available from <http://users.rootsweb.com/~ongenpro/census/index.html>; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, William Eakin household, 1871 Census of Canada. In the 1861 Census, Edna is one; in the 1871 Census, she is 10; and in the 1881 Census she is 18.; *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 504; "William Eakin Passes Away at Saltcoats Home," *Regina Morning Leader*, 16 March 1918, p. 15.

³⁷ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, William Eakin household, 1871 Census of Canada.

³⁸ *Ibid.* In the 1871 Census, Maggie is 4; in the 1881 Census, she is 15; in the 1891 Census, she is 21, and in the 1901 Census, she is 32.

³⁹ *Ibid.*; *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 504.

⁴⁰ Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, p. 217.

⁴¹ Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, Samuel Eakin household, 1851 Census of the Canadas; Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, pp. 233–234, 303.

⁴² Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, p. 126.

⁴³ *Ibid.*

⁴⁴ *Ibid.*

⁴⁵ "William Eakin Dies at Saltcoats [*sic*], Sask.," p. 1; Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, p. 126.

⁴⁶ Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, p. 303; "Men of the Day," p. 4.

⁴⁷ Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, p. 126.

⁴⁸ *Ibid.*, pp. 342–343. Some sources indicate that in 1875, he was elected a member of the Markham Township Council. ("Men of the Day," p. 4; "Saltcoats Couple Diamond Wedding," p. 11.) Some sources indicate that Eakin became Reeve in 1876 ("Saltcoats Couple Diamond Wedding," p. 11.) or 1880 ("Men of the Day," p. 4.).



⁴⁹ Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1897 ed., p. 403.

⁵⁰ "Men of the Day," p. 4.

⁵¹ Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793–1900*, p. 199; Charles H. MacIntosh, ed., *Canadian Parliamentary Companion and Annual Register*, 1879 ed. ed. (Ottawa: Citizen Printing and Publishing Company, 1879), p. 475; Charles H. MacIntosh, ed., *Canadian Parliamentary Companion and Annual Register*, 1880 ed. (Ottawa: Citizen Printing and Publishing Company, 1880), p. 481.

⁵² "Saltcoats Couple Diamond Wedding," p. 11.

⁵³ "Men of the Day," p. 4.

⁵⁴ *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 504; "Saltcoats Couple Diamond Wedding," p. 11.

⁵⁵ "Men of the Day," p. 4.

⁵⁶ "Notes and Correspondence," *Saskatchewan History* vol. 7, no. 1 (Winter 1954): p. 36.

⁵⁷ *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 4.

⁵⁸ Bob Beal and Rod Macleod, *Prairie Fire: The 1885 North-West Rebellion* (Edmonton: Hurtig Publishers, 1984), p. 68.

⁵⁹ "Notes and Correspondence," pp. 36–38.

⁶⁰ "Men of the Day," p. 4.

⁶¹ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 2, no. 1, 21 February 1885, p. 1; "Men of the Day," p. 4.

⁶² "Men of the Day," p. 4.

⁶³ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 11, no. 5, 1 March 1894, p. 2.

⁶⁴ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 14, no. 4, 1 February 1897, p. 1.

⁶⁵ *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 136.

⁶⁶ Ibid.

⁶⁷ Ibid.

⁶⁸ Ibid.

⁶⁹ Ibid., p. 258.

⁷⁰ Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905–2000* (Regina: Saskatchewan Archives Board, 2001), p. 1–32.

⁷¹ Saskatchewan. Legislative Assembly, *Debates and Proceedings (Hansard)*, 22nd Legislature, 4th Session, vol. XXXVII, 17 May 1994, p. 2378.

⁷² Norman Fergus Black, *History of Saskatchewan and the North West Territories*, vol. II (Regina: Saskatchewan Historical Company, 1913), p. 666.

⁷³ Gemmill, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, 1897 ed., p. 403.

⁷⁴ Charles Cecil Lingard, *Territorial Government in Canada: The Autonomy Question in the Old North-West Territories* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1946), pp. 62–63.

⁷⁵ Ibid., pp. 61–62.

⁷⁶ Grant MacEwan, *Frederick Haultain: Frontier Statesman of the Canadian Northwest* (Saskatoon: Western Producer Prairie Books, 1985), p. 115.

- ⁷⁷ Lingard, *Territorial Government in Canada*, p. 62.
- ⁷⁸ MacEwan, *Frederick Haultain: Frontier Statesman*, p. 116.
- ⁷⁹ "North-West Legislature," *Leader* (Regina), 9 December 1897, p. 5.
- ⁸⁰ "The Territorial Position," *Leader* (Regina), 29 September 1898, p. 11.
- ⁸¹ "Men of the Day," p. 4.
- ⁸² North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 1st Legislature, 4th Session*, vol. IV, 4 April 1899, pp. 11–12.
- ⁸³ "The Legislature Opened by Lieut.-Governor Forget on Tuesday," *Leader* (Regina), 6 April 1899, p. 1.
- ⁸⁴ John Blue, *Alberta Past and Present: Historical and Biographical: Illustrated*, vol. 1 (Chicago: Pioneer Historical Pub. Co., 1924), p. 116.
- ⁸⁵ Douglas R. Owsam, ed., *The Formation of Alberta: A Documentary History* (Calgary: Alberta Records Publication Board, Historical Society of Alberta, 1979), pp. 129–131.
- ⁸⁶ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 4th Session*, 24 April 1889, p. 48.
- ⁸⁷ *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 380. No records regarding the presentation of the Chair to Eakin himself have been found.
- ⁸⁸ Calvin Daniels, "Former Church Becomes Town Museum," *Yorkton This Week & Enterprise*, 14 August 2002, p. A10.
- ⁸⁹ "William Eakin Dies at Saltcoats [sic], Sask.," p. 1.
- ⁹⁰ *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 504.
- ⁹¹ "William Eakin Dies at Saltcoats [sic], Sask.," p. 1.
- ⁹² *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 504.
- ⁹³ "Miss Maggie Eakin, Eakindale, Melville (Saskatchewan)," *ArchiviaNet: Post Offices and Postmasters*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 19 August 2003, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020109_e.html
- ⁹⁴ "William Eakin Dies at Saltcoats [sic], Sask.," p. 1.
- ⁹⁵ Markham Fair Office, *Presidents of Markham and East York Agricultural Society since 1844*, [Internet], (Markham, ON: Markham Fair Office), accessed 18 October 2001, available from http://www.markhamfair.ca/markham_fair_presidents.htm
- ⁹⁶ *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 258.
- ⁹⁷ Jean Réti-Forbes, *Child of the Prairie* (Clayton, GA: Rabun Printing Co., 1977), p. 3.
- ⁹⁸ "William Eakin Dies at Saltcoats [sic], Sask.," p. 1.
- ⁹⁹ *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, pp. 132–133.
- ¹⁰⁰ Wayne Cook, "Plaque #38, Unionville Planing Mill," *Historical Plaques of York County*, [Internet], (updated 16 September 2003), accessed 12 March 2004, available from <http://www.waynecook.com/ayork.html>
- ¹⁰¹ "William Eakin Passes Away at Saltcoats Home," p. 15.
- ¹⁰² William Eakin–Margaret Hunter headstone, 2001, Photograph, Saltcoats Cemetery, Saltcoats, SK.
- ¹⁰³ Réti-Forbes, *Child of the Prairie*, p. 3.



¹⁰⁴ "Men of the Day," p. 4.

¹⁰⁵ Ibid.

¹⁰⁶ *Saltcoats Roots and Branches*, p. 504.

¹⁰⁷ Ibid; "William Eakin Passes Away at Saltcoats Home," p. 15.

Custodian of a sacred trust



Gillis 1903-1904



ARCHIBALD BEATON GILLIS

Archibald Beaton Gillis was the fifth and last Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories as it existed prior to the establishment of the Provinces of Alberta and Saskatchewan.* Gillis was the only Speaker of the North-West Territories to serve as Deputy Speaker prior to becoming Speaker.† He was also one of two Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories‡ to be appointed to the Senate. Gillis served 18 years as a Senator and was active in public service for more than three decades.¹ He was respected for his ability to inspire “the confidence and esteem of those with whom he [had] been associated, in both public and private life.”² As a Private Member, Gillis served with Lieutenant Governors Charles H. Mackintosh (1893–1898), Malcolm C. Cameron (1898) and Amédée E. M. Forget (1898–1905) as well as Premier Frederick W. A. G. Haultain (1897–1905). As Speaker, Gillis served with Lieutenant Governor Forget and with Premier Haultain.

Family History

Archibald Beaton Gillis was born on January 28, 1864, near the village of Whycocomagh, Inverness County, Cape Breton, Nova Scotia.³ His parents, Donald Munro Gillis⁴ (1815)⁵ and Mary Gillis (1819),⁶ of unrelated families,⁷ were born in Inverness, Scotland.⁸ Archibald's paternal grandfather, Murdoch Gillis, and his family emigrated in 1830⁹ from the Isle of Skye to a valley in Cape Breton that the Scottish settlers named Skye Glen.¹⁰ They then took up their 200-acre parcel of land as had been arranged prior to their leaving Scotland.¹¹ The Gillis family was among the early settlers on the west side of the valley near the present-day village of Whycocomagh on the shore of Bras d'Or Lake. Donald and Mary met and married in this part of Cape Breton¹² and had 11 children.⁵ Archibald, or ‘Archie’ as he was known, was the eighth child and fifth son.¹³ The Gillises were members of the Church of Scotland (Presbyterian).¹⁴

In 1882, when Archie was about 18 years old, his parents relocated the family to the District of Assiniboia, North-West Territories, where they settled on a farm about eight kilometres north of Whitewood.¹⁵ Two of Archie's older brothers Jonathon and Peter had preceded the rest of the family on the trek westward and worked on the construction of the railway. Their company, Gillis Brothers Contractors, built portions of the Canadian Pacific Railway (CPR) line between Regina and Prince Albert in the North-West Territories (Saskatchewan), and between Calgary

* The governance of the Territories was non-partisan in nature, which resulted in Gillis' being the last Speaker of the North-West Territories and Alberta to be chosen without regard to affiliation with the governing caucus.

† Two Alberta Speakers served as Deputy Speaker prior to becoming Speaker: Arthur J. Dixon (1955–1963) and Stanley S. Schumacher (1989–1993).

‡ James H. Ross (1891–1892, 1892–1894) was a member of the Senate from 1904 to 1932.

§ Christy (b. ca. 1852), Murdoch (ca. 1849), Peter (ca. 1853), Jonathon (ca. 1855), John ‘Jack’ (ca. 1861), Margaret (ca. 1859), Dorothy ‘Dora’ (ca. 1859), Archibald (1864), Malcolm (ca. 1869), Florah (ca. 1867) and Samuel (ca. 1872).



and Strathcona (later part of Edmonton) in the North-West Territories (Alberta). The brothers worked on the "building of the Spiral Tunnel of the C. P. Railway in the Rocky Mountains."¹⁶

Education

Little is known about Archie's education other than that he attended public school in Whycocomagh, Nova Scotia.¹⁷

Community Activities and Personal Interests

Gillis was chair of the building committee for the Presbyterian church in Whitewood.¹⁸ In 1891, he became a member of the first Masonic lodge formed in Whitewood, which was on the Register of the Grand Lodge of Manitoba.¹⁹ When the Grand Lodge of Saskatchewan was established in 1908, Gillis continued his Masonic membership in the Ashlar Masonic Lodge No. 8 Ancient Free and Accepted Masons, as his first lodge was renamed. In 1896, he was Worshipful Master of the Ashlar Masonic Lodge in Whitewood.²⁰ He also belonged to the International Order of Odd Fellows.²¹

Early Career

Initially, Archie Gillis was a farmer, but later he and his younger brother Malcolm* went into business and founded the Whitewood Implement Company.²² Archie was the president of both the Whitewood Trading Company, Limited and the Whitewood Implement Company.²³ The Gillis brothers were the earliest representatives of the International Harvester Company in Saskatchewan.²⁴ They sold the Whitewood Implement Company in 1928.²⁵ After having been in partnership with Archie for half a century,²⁶ Malcolm was killed in a farm accident in 1935.²⁷

Archie Gillis was appointed postmaster at Whitewood, Saskatchewan, on May 1, 1893 and served for over 15 years, until his resignation on October 1, 1908.²⁸

Marriage and Family

On June 5, 1914, Gillis married Margaret Ann Lamont, whom he had met in the Whitewood area. Margaret was originally from Chesley, Elderslie Township, Bruce County, Ontario.²⁹ Archie and Margaret had no surviving children.³⁰

Margaret Ann Lamont was born October 30, 1873 at Brant Township near Chesley.³¹ By 1881, she was living with her family near the villages of Malcolm and Elmwood in Brant Township. Margaret was the eighth of the 10 children of George B. Lamont and his wife, Margaret, both of whom were born in Scotland and were members of the Church of Scotland (Presbyterian).³² George Lamont was a farmer who had emigrated from Scotland with his family in 1842 and lived in York, Canada West (Toronto, Ontario) until 1849, when he moved to Brant Township.³³ By 1900, Margaret Ann Lamont had moved west to Whitewood. She taught school at

* Malcolm's father-in-law, John Hawkes, was the first official Legislative Librarian of Saskatchewan. Hawkes compiled a comprehensive history of Saskatchewan entitled *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People* (Regina: S. J. Clarke, 1924).

Whitewood, Gainsboro and Melfort, Saskatchewan before her marriage.³⁴ By 1901, she resided with her brother Joseph L. Lamont and his family in Whitewood.³⁵ Joseph served as mayor of Whitewood in 1896.³⁶

Military Career

Gillis served in the Canadian Militia as a lieutenant in the 16th Light Horse.³⁷ On February 21, 1916, at the age of 52, he was appointed lieutenant colonel.³⁸ During the First World War, Gillis organized the 217th Overseas Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force (CEF), a group of 1,100 men, which he led to England in June 1916.³⁹ Subsequently, Gillis acted as a conducting officer, taking a detachment of 250 men to France.⁴⁰ He was "loved and respected by his men and seemed to inject into them something of his own cheerful and indomitable spirit."⁴¹ Gillis returned to Halifax, Nova Scotia, on August 14, 1917, and was discharged on September 5, 1917. He was subsequently attached to the 19th Reserve Battalion.⁴² In 1923, he was "appointed honorary lieutenant colonel of the Eastern Saskatchewan Infantry Battalion."⁴³



*A.B. Gillis in First World War uniform
(n.d.).*

Political Career

Gillis was first elected to the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories in the general election of October 31, 1894, representing the constituency of Whitewood.⁴⁴ A Conservative in terms of Dominion politics,⁴⁵ Gillis was a strong supporter of Haultain's and "never faltered in loyalty to his chief."⁴⁶ When, in 1894, the southern Prairies suffered a disastrous drought, an economic downturn depressed the price of crops, and aid from Ottawa was slow in coming, Premier Haultain used public works funding to provide relief work to farmers. Haultain was severely criticized in some quarters for this action, but Gillis "stood strongly behind his leader"⁴⁷ on this issue. Concerned for the education of the children in his constituency, Gillis arranged in 1896 to have a collection of Canadian minerals sent to the Whitewood School by Dr. George Dawson of the Canadian Geological Survey.⁴⁸ Gillis was re-elected by acclamation in the general elections of 1898 and 1902.⁴⁹

After his second election in the constituency of Whitewood, Gillis was elected Deputy Speaker on April 17, 1899, in the First Session of the Fourth Legislature, through a motion by Member for Macleod, Premier Frederick W. A. G. Haultain, which was seconded by former Speaker (1891–1892, 1892–1894) James H. Ross, Member for Moose Jaw.⁵⁰ Haultain had "enlarged on the duties which the deputy speaker would be called upon to perform, and stated that he thought Mr. Gillis was qualified for the position."⁵¹ Haultain described the role of the Deputy Speaker as:

... almost as important as the higher one occupied by Mr. Speaker. The important work done in committee of the whole over which the deputy presided, was even more wearying, and in one respect more important than the work of any other officer of the

House. The deputy speaker was responsible for seeing that all amendments made to Bills in committee were properly included, and to see that legislation came through the House accurately expressing the will of the Assembly.⁵²

Gillis' entire tenure in this position was co-extensive with that of Speaker William Eakin (1899–1902).

As Speaker

Archibald Beaton Gillis was elected Speaker on April 16, 1903 at the beginning of the First Session of the Fifth Legislature of the North-West Territories. He was nominated through a motion by Premier Frederick Haultain, which was seconded* by George H. V. Bulyea, Member for South Qu'Appelle and later first Lieutenant Governor of Alberta (1905–1915).⁵³ Gillis was 39 years old at the time of his election as Speaker. As Speaker, Gillis served on the *Select Standing Committee on Library*.

The most significant issue during Gillis' term was the move to provincial status for the North-West Territories. The push for provincial status brought with it considerable discussion about whether the Territories should be kept intact as one province or split to form two provinces. Gillis, following his mentor, Haultain, was one of those who advocated one province. The primary reason for the choice of one province was to avoid 'multiplicity of government.'⁵⁴ One province would also facilitate the assimilation of new immigrants and would fit better with the unification spirit of the times.⁵⁵ The argument for more than one province related to the 'diversity of interest' of the regions of the Territories, the physical and climatic differences of the area (especially between north and south), the elimination of the rivalry over the question of the capital and the danger of creating one large province that could politically change the balance of power in the Dominion.⁵⁶ Alternatives to a one-province structure included: two provinces divided along the southern boundary of the Saskatchewan District; two provinces divided by a border running north to south; and three provinces merging Assiniboia with the southern part of Alberta, northern Alberta with the Peace River Country, and Saskatchewan with eastern Athabasca.⁵⁷

A great deal of correspondence related to this issue was sent from representatives of the North-West Territories to the Dominion Government from 1902 until the end of Session in 1904. As

* The *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories* state 'resolution recorded by' Bulyea. North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 5th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XVII, 16 April 1903, p. 12.

† Prime Minister Sir Wilfrid Laurier (1896–1911) was against uniting the Districts of Assiniboia, Saskatchewan, Alberta, Athabasca and Mackenzie into this proposed province carved out of the North-West Territories. The result would be one new province larger in size than the total area of the seven existing provinces – too vast for a single province. Laurier felt that whenever the Dominion Government had control over the situation, it should attempt to create provinces of equal size. Charles Cecil Lingard, *Territorial Government in Canada: The Autonomy Question in the Old North-West Territories* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1946), p. 199.

* See Appendix Q for maps of some of the alternate proposals.

Speaker, Gillis wrote letters on behalf of the Legislative Assembly to press the federal government on the matter. On April 23, 1903, Gillis composed a letter to Governor General the Earl of Minto (1898–1904), which was presented to the Secretary of State Richard W. Scott by Lieutenant Governor Amédée E. M. Forget (1898–1905), outlining appeals that had been made to the Government of Canada and noting the lack of response.⁵⁸ After repeated requests for autonomy from Territorial leaders, primarily from Premier Frederick W. A. G. Haultain, Prime Minister Sir Wilfrid Laurier made provision for the establishment of two new provinces. The Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories met for the last time on October 8, 1904. Lieutenant Governor Forget prorogued the Assembly after a closing speech noting his belief that “at an early date the negotiations preliminary to the establishment of provincial institutions in the West ... will be again taken up, and that legislation will be introduced into Parliament at its next Session to give effect to their result.”⁵⁹

On February 21, 1905, Prime Minister Sir Wilfrid Laurier introduced the Autonomy Bill that formally established the Provinces of Alberta and Saskatchewan on September 1, 1905.⁶⁰ On August 31, 1905, the Government of the North-West Territories ceased to exist.⁶¹

As a result of the new geographic boundaries, it was determined that the remaining Northwest Territories would be governed by a federally appointed Commissioner. A new journey to responsible government would begin for the re-defined Northwest Territories over the next 70 years. A fully elected Legislative Assembly would be created over time.*

The business of building the Province and Legislative Assembly of Alberta followed immediately upon the end of the territorial period. The first election in the Province was held on November 9, 1905, and the Legislative Assembly of Alberta met for the very first time in Edmonton on March 15, 1906, at which time Charles W. Fisher was elected the first Speaker (1906–1919) of the Legislative Assembly.

Later Career

Having completed his term in the Fifth Legislature of the North-West Territories, Gillis ran successfully for the electoral district of Whitewood in the first provincial election of the Saskatchewan Legislative Assembly on December 13, 1905, “when many oldtimers went down to defeat.”⁶² Gillis was re-elected on August 14, 1908 for the constituency of Pipestone.⁶³ He was a member of the Provincial Rights Party of Saskatchewan and was the chief whip of the party in the Legislative Assembly.⁶⁴ In 1908, he was elected president of the Saskatchewan Conservative Party.⁶⁵ In 1909, Gillis ran for the position of town councillor of Whitewood.⁶⁶ As an opponent of free trade,⁶⁷ Gillis was defeated “on the question of Reciprocity”⁶⁸ in the Pipestone electoral division in the Saskatchewan provincial general election of 1912.⁶⁹ In 1915, he was selected as the Conservative candidate for the federal constituency of Qu’Appelle but withdrew prior to the 1917 general election “to allow a supporter of the Union Government [Levi Thomson 1911–1921] to be returned unopposed.”⁷⁰

* It was not until 1975 that the first Speaker of the re-defined Northwest Territories, David H. Searle (1975–1979), was elected.



On October 17, 1921, Archibald Beaton Gillis was appointed to the Senate, representing Saskatchewan.⁷¹ He was a strong supporter of the Hudson's Bay Railway and a "powerful advocate of all measures designed for the welfare of the Canadian west."⁷²

As a Senator, Gillis presided over many official functions. On July 22, 1922, a cenotaph honouring the fallen soldiers of the First World War was unveiled in Whitewood with Gillis in charge of the proceedings.⁷³ On August 6, 1936, Gillis served as chair for the Golden Jubilee Celebration of Whitewood School.⁷⁴ On May 12, 1937, he returned to the school and planted two evergreen trees on the school grounds in celebration of the coronation of King George VI.⁷⁵

Death

Senator Archibald Beaton Gillis, "old timer of the plains," died on January 18, 1940, aged 75, at his home in Whitewood.⁷⁶ He had been ill with cancer for nearly a year.⁷⁷ The funeral was conducted with full military honours and was attended by such dignitaries as Arthur T. Procter, Minister of Highways and Transportation (1938–1944) and Member for Moosimin in the Saskatchewan Legislative Assembly (1934–1948), and Ernest E. Perley, Member of Parliament for Qu'Appelle (1930–1945). The *Regina Leader-Post* described the service as follows: "The coffin bore the late senator's soldier uniform. At the graveside, the Masonic order service was held, and the last rites given."⁷⁸ Gillis is buried in the Whitewood cemetery. His wife, Margaret, who died in 1957,* is buried beside him.⁷⁹

Honours and Awards

In 1962, the Province of Saskatchewan honoured "one of its prominent early homesteaders" by naming an island after Archibald Beaton Gillis.⁸⁰ Gillis Island is on Ena Lake, north-east of Uranium City, "in the heart of one of the province's fine scenic and sport fishing areas."⁸¹

Tributes

Gillis was known for "his energy on the floor [of the Assembly]," which contributed to his election as Deputy Speaker and Speaker in the North-West Territories Legislative Assembly.⁸² The *Regina Leader-Post* characterized Gillis as a "veteran prairie legislator ... [who] always fought a clean fight in his many political contests."⁸³ Gillis' career in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories was described by well-known Prairie newspaper reporter, Z. M. Hamilton, in these words: "[Gillis] became a habit with his constituents and was twice returned by acclamation. He was speaker of the last territorial assembly and brought real dignity to its deliberations. ... While a pioneer survives in this western land, the memory of 'Archie' Gillis will be kept green."⁸⁴ Gillis was a "prominent member of [the] remarkable group that taught the early settlers of the northwest that patriotism came before party, and that the elected representatives of the people were the custodians of a sacred trust."⁸⁵

* Margaret died within two days of her brother Joseph Lamont.

Notes

- ¹ John Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. III (Regina: S. J. Clarke, 1924), p. 1736.
- ² *Ibid.*, p. 1737.
- ³ *Ibid.*, p. 1736; Canada. Library of Parliament, *Senators and Members*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library of Parliament), accessed 14 August 2003, available from <http://www.parl.gc.ca/common/SenatorsMembers.asp>; Canada. Dept. of Militia and Defence, [Canadian Expeditionary Force Personnel File for Archibald Beaton Gillis], 1916–1917. Records of the Overseas Military Forces of Canada, Library and Archives Canada, Personnel Records Unit, Ottawa, RG 150, 1992–93/166, box 3546, file LCL - A. B. Gillis.
- ⁴ Donna Mort, “Donald & Mary Gillis,” in *Whitewood Crossroad Country: Whitewood and Area, 1892–1992*, vol. II, ed. Whitewood History Book Committee (Whitewood, SK: Whitewood Herald, 1992), p. 684.
- ⁵ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Donald Gillis household, 1901 Census of Canada, North-West Territories, district no. 203, Assiniboia (East), sub-district y-3, Whitewood, schedule 1, p. 1, household 3, microfilm T-6553, *ArchiviaNet: Census of Canada, 1901*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), RG31, Statistics Canada, accessed 31 May 2004, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/02012203_e.html
- ⁶ *Ibid.*
- ⁷ Mort, “Donald & Mary Gillis,” p. 681.
- ⁸ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. III, p. 1736; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Donald Gillies household, 1881 Census of Canada, Nova Scotia, district no. 4, Inverness, sub-district q-2, Whycocomagh, schedule 1, pp. 5–6, household 20, microfilm C-13165, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.
- ⁹ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Donald Gillis household, 1901 Census of Canada, [Internet].
- ¹⁰ J.L. MacDougall, *History of Inverness County, Nova Scotia*, Canadiana reprint series, no. 43 (Truro, NS: n.p., 1922; reprint, Belleville, ON: Mika Publishing, 1972), pp. 464–465; Mort, “Donald & Mary Gillis,” p. 681.
- ¹¹ MacDougall, *History of Inverness County, Nova Scotia*, p. 465.
- ¹² Mort, “Donald & Mary Gillis,” p. 681.
- ¹³ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Donald Gillies household, 1881 Census of Canada; “Donald –Mary (Gillis) Gillis and John–Susan (Beaton) Gillis,” in *Beaton Institute Manuscript Group 13, 126 Whycocomagh United Church 1850–1893 and Baptismal Records for McLean Presbyterian Church*, Nova Scotia, Cape Breton, 18 October 1998, [Baptismal Record Transcription], *Whycocomagh Baptisms c. 1868–1875*, [Internet], Nina MacDonald, transcriber, accessed 4 June 2004, available from <http://www.rootsweb.com/~nscpbret/whycocoa.html> The information culled from various documents reveals a number of conflicts in regard to the year of birth and even the composition of Archie’s immediate family. The *Whycocomagh Baptisms* lists Flora’s year of birth as 1867 and Samuel’s as 1870. The 1861 Census only lists the head of household for Inverness County in Nova Scotia. The 1871 Census shows the age of Archie’s father, Donald, as 54 and that of his mother, Mary, as 49. Their children are: Christy (age 24), Dorothy (22), Murdo (20), Peter McLean (18), Jonathan (16), John (14), Margaret (12), Archibald (10), Malcolm (8), Florah (6) and Samuel (4). The 1881 Census lists Donald (62), Mary (58), Christy (34), Dorothy (33), Peter (28), Johnathon (26), John (23), Archy (20), Malcolm (16) and Samuel (10). The 1891 Census lists Donald (75), Mary (65), Christina (34), Dora (32), John (28), Annie (27) and Murdock (36). The 1901 Census lists Donald (b. 1815, age 85), Mary (1819, 81), Christina (1852, 48), Murdoch (1849, 51), Archibald (illegible, 36), Annie (1864, 37) and



Samuel (1872, 25), Peter M. (1853, 47), John (1861, 39), Malcolm (1869, 31) and Dora (1859, 42). The 1906 Census lists D. M. (92) and (illegible) Daughter (56), A. B. (40), S. B. (32), Murdock (53), Jno (44), and Mal (illegible) (45). Whitewood Cemetery records list the following: Murdock (1851–1941), Jonathan (1857–1919), Christina (no dates provided), John (Jack) (18??—illegible), Sam (1870–1910), Archie B. (1864–1940) and Mrs. Archie (Margaret Ann) (1872–1957).

¹⁴ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Donald Gillies household, 1881 Census of Canada; Mort, "Donald & Mary Gillis," p. 683.

¹⁵ "Death Takes Senator Gillis of Whitewood," *Regina Leader-Post*, 18 January 1940, p. 1; Donna Mort, "Archibald Beaton Gillis," in *Whitewood Crossroad Country: Whitewood and Area, 1892–1992*, vol. II, ed. Whitewood History Book Committee (Whitewood, SK: Whitewood Herald, 1992), p. 683; "Legal Land Description, NW 32 16 2 W2, Donald Gillis, liber 49, folio 83, microfilm C-5977," *ArchiviaNet: Western Land Grants (1870–1930)*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 19 August 2003, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020111_e.html. There is conflicting information regarding the year in which the family moved to the North-West Territories from Nova Scotia. *Whitewood and Area, 1892–1992* says 1880, but the Gillis family appears on the 1881 Census transcript in Whycocomagh, Nova Scotia. The family also is represented in the 1881 Library and Archives Canada's *ArchiviaNet: Western Land Grants (1870–1930)*, [Internet].

¹⁶ Donna Mort, "Jonathon Gillis," in *Whitewood Crossroad Country: Whitewood and Area, 1892–1992*, vol. II, ed. Whitewood History Book Committee (Whitewood, SK: Whitewood Herald, 1992), p. 681; Donna Mort, "Peter Gillis," in *Whitewood Crossroad Country: Whitewood and Area, 1892–1992*, vol. II, ed. Whitewood History Book Committee (Whitewood, SK: Whitewood Herald, 1992), p. 681.

¹⁷ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. III, p. 1736; Arnott James Magurn, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide and Work of General Reference for Canada, the Provinces, and the Northwest Territories*, 1903 ed. (Ottawa: Office of Publication, 1903), p. 415.

¹⁸ Doreen Blyth, et al., "Town of Whitewood," in *Whitewood Crossroad Country: Whitewood and Area, 1892–1992*, vol. I, ed. Whitewood History Book Committee (Whitewood, SK: Whitewood Herald, 1992), p. 63.

¹⁹ Grand Lodge of Saskatchewan records indicate that he was initiated on January 20, 1891, but the *Whitewood Crossroad Country* local history states that he joined in 1890. E-mail from Jack E. Carey, Grand Secretary, Grand Lodge of Saskatchewan, AF & AM, 11 December 2003; "Ashlar Masonic Lodge #8 A.F.A.M.," in *Whitewood Crossroad Country: Whitewood and Area, 1892–1992*, vol. I, ed. Whitewood History Book Committee (Whitewood, SK: Whitewood Herald, 1992), p. 314.

²⁰ Mort, "Archibald Beaton Gillis," p. 683.

²¹ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. III, p. 1737.

²² "Malcolm Gillis," in *Whitewood Crossroad Country: Whitewood and Area, 1892–1992*, vol. II, ed. Whitewood History Book Committee (Whitewood, SK: Whitewood Herald, 1992), p. 683.

²³ "Pioneer Honored by Gov't," *Regina Leader-Post*, 3 October 1962, p. 20; Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. III, p. 1736.

²⁴ "Senator Gillis Laid to Rest at Whitewood," *Regina Leader-Post*, 22 January 1940, p. 9.

²⁵ "Malcolm Gillis," p. 683.

²⁶ Z. M. Hamilton, "Senator Gillis Among Those Who Built West," *Regina Leader-Post*, 20 January 1940, p. 3.

²⁷ "Malcolm Gillis," p. 683.

- ²⁸ "Archie B. Gillis, Whitewood, Qu-Appelle (Saskatchewan)," *ArchiviaNet: Post Offices and Postmasters*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 30 March 2001, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020109_e.html
- ²⁹ Mort, "Archibald Beaton Gillis," p. 683; Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. III, p. 1737.
- ³⁰ Fax from Whitewood Cemetery, Whitewood, SK, 30 December 2003. Next to the graves of Archibald and Margaret is a grave with the name Gillis which, according to cemetery records, may be that of a baby.
- ³¹ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Joseph L. Lamont household, 1901 Census of Canada, North-West Territories, district no. 203, Assiniboia (East), sub-district y-3, Whitewood, schedule 1, p. 3, household 21, microfilm T-6553, *ArchiviaNet: Census of Canada, 1901*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), RG31, Statistics Canada, accessed 11 December 2003, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/02012203_e.html; "Local Pioneers, Brother and Sister, Passed Away in Regina Last Week," *Whitewood Herald*, 29 November 1957, p. 1.
- ³² Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, George Lamont household, 1881 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 176, Bruce South, sub-district h-2, Brant, schedule 1, p. 102, household 433, microfilm C-13275, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Laura M. Gateman, ed., *The History of the Township of Brant, 1845-1979* (Elmwood, ON: Brant Township Historical Society, 1979), p. 153.
- ³³ Gateman, ed., *The History of the Township of Brant, 1845-1979*, p. 153; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, George Lamont household, 1881 Census of Canada.
- ³⁴ "Local Pioneers, Brother and Sister, Passed Away in Regina Last Week," p. 1.
- ³⁵ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Joseph L. Lamont household, 1901 Census of Canada, [Internet].
- ³⁶ "Lamont, Joseph & Sarah Ann (Dayman)," in *Whitewood Crossroad Country: Whitewood and Area, 1892-1992*, vol. II, ed. Whitewood History Book Committee (Whitewood, SK: Whitewood Herald, 1992), p. 843; Blyth, et al., "Town of Whitewood," p. 62.
- ³⁷ Canada. Dept. of Militia and Defence, [Canadian Expeditionary Force Personnel File for Archibald Beaton Gillis].
- ³⁸ Ibid.
- ³⁹ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. III, p. 1737; Canada. Dept. of Militia and Defence, [Canadian Expeditionary Force Personnel File for Archibald Beaton Gillis]; Mort, "Archibald Beaton Gillis," p. 683.
- ⁴⁰ Mort, "Archibald Beaton Gillis," p. 683.
- ⁴¹ Hamilton, "Senator Gillis Among Those Who Built West," p. 3.
- ⁴² Canada. Dept. of Militia and Defence, [Canadian Expeditionary Force Personnel File for Archibald Beaton Gillis].
- ⁴³ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. III, p. 1737.
- ⁴⁴ Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905-2000* (Regina: Saskatchewan Archives Board, 2001), p. 1-36.
- ⁴⁵ Magurn, ed., *CPG 1903*, p. 415.
- ⁴⁶ Hamilton, "Senator Gillis Among Those Who Built West," p. 3.
- ⁴⁷ Ibid.



- ⁴⁸ Pearl McDougall and Lenora Santo, "Whitewood School District Number 57," in *Whitewood Crossroad Country: Whitewood and Area, 1892–1992*, vol. I, ed. Whitewood History Book Committee (Whitewood, SK: Whitewood Herald, 1992), p. 150.
- ⁴⁹ Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905–2000*, pp. 1–36.
- ⁵⁰ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 4th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XIII, 17 April 1899, p. 31.
- ⁵¹ "The Legislative Assembly," *Alberta Plaindealer* (Edmonton), 28 April 1899, p. 1.
- ⁵² "The Legislature: A Week Industiously Devoted to Legislation," *Leader* (Regina), 20 April 1899, p. 1.
- ⁵³ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 5th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XVII, 16 April 1903, p. 12.
- ⁵⁴ Charles Cecil Lingard, *Territorial Government in Canada: The Autonomy Question in the Old North-West Territories* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1946), p. 70.
- ⁵⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 71.
- ⁵⁶ *Ibid.*, pp. 72–73.
- ⁵⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 72.
- ⁵⁸ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 5th Legislature, 1st Session*, Appendix, pp. 49–50.
- ⁵⁹ North-West Territories. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 5th Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. XIX, 8 October 1904, p. 49.
- ⁶⁰ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Journals of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 10th Parliament, 1st Session*, vol. XL, 21 February 1905, p. 111; *Alberta Act*, S.C. 1905, c. 3.
- ⁶¹ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 22, no. 17, 31 August 1905, p. 8; *The North-West Territories Amendment Act*, S.C. 1905, c. 27, ss. 14–15.
- ⁶² Hamilton, "Senator Gillis Among Those Who Built West," p. 3.
- ⁶³ Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905–2000*, p. 2.13–12.
- ⁶⁴ Henry J. Morgan, ed., *The Canadian Men and Women of the Time: A Hand-book of Canadian Biography of Living Characters*, 2nd ed. (Toronto: W. Briggs, 1912), p. 447.
- ⁶⁵ *Ibid.*
- ⁶⁶ Blyth, et al., "Town of Whitewood," p. 67.
- ⁶⁷ Hawkes, *The Story of Saskatchewan and Its People*, vol. III, p. 1736.
- ⁶⁸ A. Leopold Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1940 ed. (Ottawa: Publication Office, 1940), p. 70.
- ⁶⁹ Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905–2000*, p. 2.14–68.
- ⁷⁰ A. Leopold Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1939 ed. (Ottawa: Publication Office, 1939), p. 74; "Death Takes Senator Gillis of Whitewood," p. 1.
- ⁷¹ Canada. Library of Parliament, *Senators and Members*, [Internet].
- ⁷² Hamilton, "Senator Gillis Among Those Who Built West," p. 3.

⁷³ "Unveiling of Cenotaph," in *Whitewood Crossroad Country: Whitewood and Area, 1892-1992*, vol. I, ed. Whitewood History Book Committee (Whitewood, SK: Whitewood Herald, 1992), pp. 383-384.

⁷⁴ McDougall and Santo, "Whitewood School District Number 57," pp. 154-155.

⁷⁵ Blyth, et al., "Town of Whitewood," p. 70.

⁷⁶ "Death Takes Senator Gillis of Whitewood," p. 1; Mort, "Archibald Beaton Gillis," p. 683.

⁷⁷ Ibid.

⁷⁸ "Senator Gillis Laid to Rest at Whitewood," p. 9.

⁷⁹ E-mail from Town of Whitewood, SK, 5 December 2003.

⁸⁰ "Pioneer Honored by Gov't," p. 20.

⁸¹ Ibid.

⁸² "Senator Gillis Of Saskatchewan Dies," *Lethbridge Herald*, 18 January 1940, p. 2.

⁸³ "Senator Gillis," [Editorial], *Regina Leader-Post*, 19 January 1940, p. 4.

⁸⁴ Hamilton, "Senator Gillis Among Those Who Built West," p. 3.

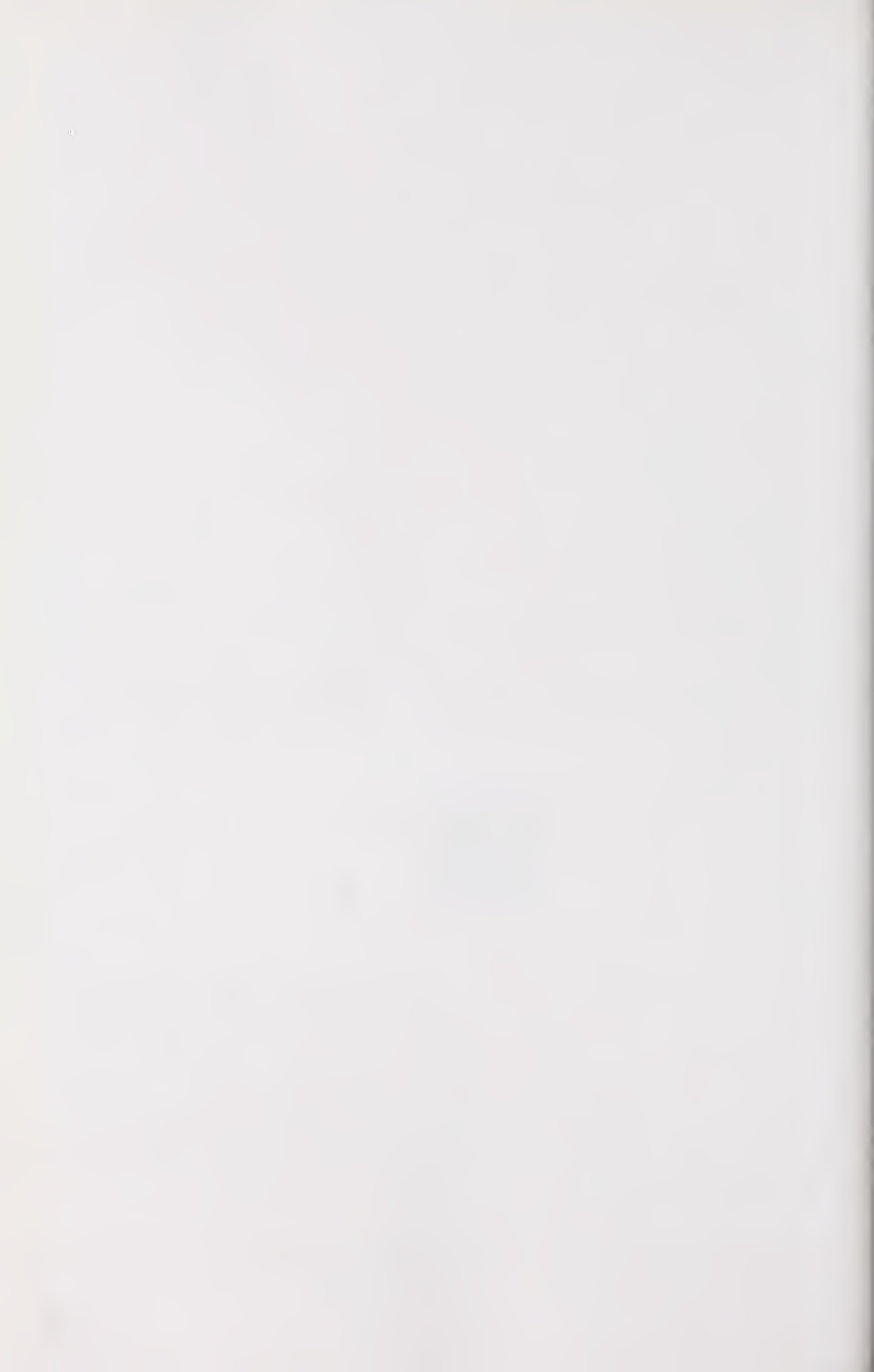
⁸⁵ Ibid.

a higher duty



SPEAKERS

Speaker components and systems



The provincial legislature, much as he shaped it



Fisher 1906-1919



CHARLES WELLINGTON FISHER

Charles Wellington Fisher, the first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, was eminently suited for this historic role both by temperament and because of his prior service in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories. As Speaker, Fisher presided over the Legislative Assembly of Alberta for over 13 years as this new province shaped what was to become its legislative legacy. Fisher is the second longest-serving Speaker in Alberta history.* As a Private Member in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, Fisher had served with Lieutenant Governor Amédée E. M. Forget (1898–1905) and Premier Frederick W. A. G. Haultain (1897–1905). As Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, he served with the first three Premiers of Alberta, Alexander C. Rutherford (1905–1910), Arthur L. Sifton (1910–1917) and Charles Stewart (1917–1921).

Family History

Charles W. Fisher was born on August 4, 1866, on a farm near Hyde Park Corners, London Township, Middlesex County, Canada West (Ontario).¹ Charles was the eighth of the 10 children† of James Fisher and Elizabeth Thorburn.² His parents were married in Dunwoodie Mains, Dumfriesshire, Scotland, on December 13, 1852³ and immigrated to Canada with their young son James in 1856.⁴ The Fishers were members of the Church of Scotland (Presbyterian).⁵

After he arrived in Canada West, James Fisher worked as a conductor with the Great Western Railway.⁶ He was also known as a progressive farmer who followed innovative agricultural practices.⁷ He was an active member of the community, serving as a trustee of the first school board at Hyde Park Corners (1867), member of the building committee for the local Presbyterian Church (1877), licence commissioner for East Middlesex (1882–1885) and justice of the peace.⁸

Two of Charles Fisher's brothers were also active in public life. An older brother Robert Grant Fisher was a lawyer and later Justice of the Supreme Court of Ontario.⁹ Robert also ran in a 1913 federal by-election in the constituency of Middlesex East in Ontario, but was unsuccessful.¹⁰ A younger brother George Dunbar Fisher moved to St. Louis, Missouri, where he served two terms (1928, 1930) as a Republican in the 3rd St. Louis District of the Missouri House of Representatives.¹¹

* Peter Dawson served as Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta from 1937 until his death in 1963.

† James Thorburn (b. 1853), John (1855), John Patterson (1856), William Dixon (1858), Mary Jane (1861), Jessie Dixon (1863), Robert Grant (1864), Charles Wellington (1866), Elizabeth Thorburn (1868) and George Dunbar (1870).

‡ Their second son, John, died August 8, 1855.



Charles' mother, Elizabeth, died in August 1872, when Charles was just six years old.¹² James Fisher married again in 1880, to Elizabeth Nesbit Skippon.¹³ James had two more children* by his second wife.¹⁴

Education

Charles W. Fisher attended public schools at Hyde Park and 'a higher school' in London, Ontario.¹⁵

Marriage and Family

On April 3, 1907, Charles Fisher married Helen Marjorie Powell of Ottawa in a society wedding in Grace Church in Ottawa, Ontario.¹⁶ The full description of the wedding was published in that day's *Ottawa Evening Journal*.¹⁷ The guest list of 500¹⁸ read like a who's who of senior government and military circles. Among those who attended were Lieutenant Governor (1905–1915) and Mrs. George H. V. Bulyea as well as Premier and Mrs. Alexander C. Rutherford from Alberta; Cabinet and former Cabinet Ministers from Ottawa, including two former Ministers of Militia and Defence—Sir Frederick† and Lady Borden and Sir Adolphe P‡ and Lady Caron; and Sir John§ and Lady Carling. Family and friends travelled to the wedding from as far away as South Africa, Italy, France and England.¹⁹ Members of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta "sent an immense silver salve [*sic*], engraved, "To M.H.P. and C.W.F. on the occasion of their wedding."²⁰

Marjorie Powell, the daughter of Charles Berkeley Powell and Helen Louise Pattee,²¹ was born in Ottawa on July 31, 1885²² "at the very end of the Riel Rebellion."²³ Marjorie was a niece of Frederick Carling of the Carling brewery family.²⁴ She enjoyed a privileged upbringing, including a fashionable wardrobe and private boarding schools in Toronto, Ontario (Glen Mawr) and in Bournemouth, England (Wood Heath).²⁵ She was an Ottawa debutante²⁶ who was 'an accomplished horsewoman.'²⁷ The Powells were members of the Church of England (Anglican).²⁸

Charles Berkeley Powell, who was born at Port Dover, Norfolk County, Canada West, in 1858, was a mechanical engineer and partner in the lumber firm of Perley and Pattee in Ottawa. He was a member of the Ottawa City Council and represented Ottawa in the Ontario Legislative Assembly from 1898 to 1905.²⁹ Marjorie's grandfather Colonel Walker Powell represented Norfolk County in the Legislative Assembly of Canada from 1857 to 1861³⁰ and had "much to

* Thomas Skippon Fisher (b. 1882) and Beatrice Dixon Fisher (1886).

† Minister of Militia and Defence in the Government of Sir Wilfrid Laurier (1896–1911).

‡ Formal name as listed in House of Commons records is Joseph Philippe René Adolphe Caron, Minister of Militia and Defence in the Government of Sir John A. Macdonald (1867–1873, 1878–1891).

§ Sir John Carling was a Member of Parliament (1867–1874, 1878–1891, 1892–1896) and a Senator (1891–1892, 1896–1911). While serving as a Member of Parliament, he held the positions of Postmaster General, Minister of Agriculture and Minister without Portfolio. He was also a member of the Carling brewery family.

do with the establishment of the Royal Military College, at Kingston.”³¹ Walker Powell’s father, Israel Wood Powell, who was a descendant of United Empire Loyalists (UEL), represented the same constituency from 1840 to 1847.³²

Charles and Marjorie Fisher had seven children: Helen Angela (b. 1908) [Colin White, Leslie Carver]; Charles Berkeley (1909); Marjorie Louise (1910) [Charles W. Hardy]; Muriel Elsie (1912) [Robert Laidlaw Buller]; Richard James (1916); John ‘Jack’ Wellington (1917); and Gordon Thomas (1918).³³

Early Career

After his father’s death in 1889,³⁴ Charles Fisher operated the family farm at Hyde Park³⁵ and was a merchant in the hardware trade in London for several years.³⁶ Charles had hoped to follow his older brother Robert into law, but, although Charles was a justice of the peace and notary, he never did become a lawyer.³⁷

After moving in 1899 to the Alberta District of the North-West Territories, Fisher ran a general store, one of several businesses located in the Fisher Block business property that he owned in Cochrane.³⁸ He served as the second postmaster* of Cochrane from 1899 to 1905.³⁹ Fisher maintained an interest in business throughout his career as Speaker, serving as president of the Commonwealth Trust Company.⁴⁰ By 1901, in addition to owning the Fisher Block, Fisher had purchased the Merino Ranch,⁴¹ situated between Cochrane and Banff, west of Jumping Pound, near Mitford. After his marriage to Marjorie, Fisher purchased land north of Cochrane at Big Hill Creek† and designed and built a large sandstone house on the property, where the Fishers were said to have “lived lavishly, [and engaged in] a great deal of entertaining.”⁴²

Military Career

Major Charles W. Fisher served in the 15th Light Horse, a cavalry unit of the Canadian Militia, as squadron commander from 1905 until his retirement in 1908.⁴³ He served as regimental second-in-command at headquarters in Calgary (1905), and squadron commander of D Company at Cochrane (1905) and B Company, Cochrane (1906–1908).⁴⁴

Even after Fisher retired from the military, he maintained an interest in military affairs and contributed significantly to the war effort during the First World War. In 1914, Fisher, along with Captain Charles S. Pingle (Member for Redcliff and future Speaker, 1920–1921), was a member of the Canadian Patriotic Fund, South Alberta Branch.⁴⁵ Fisher served as Chair of the Soldiers’ Aid Commission of Alberta and travelled to Ottawa in 1916, where he “confer[red] with the Government Commission on matters pertaining to the care of wounded soldiers who

* Fisher’s predecessor was James Johnson (postmaster 1887–1899), from whom Fisher had bought the property where he built his mercantile block. His successor was his half-brother, Thomas S. Fisher (1906–1912).

† That area’s Aboriginal name was Manachaban Hill, and Marjorie Fisher was informally known in the Cochrane area as ‘The Duchess of Manachaban Hill.’ Helen Marjorie Powell, “The Early Life of Helen Marjorie Powell: The Duchess of Manachaban Hill,” [Unpublished Manuscript], n.d., p. 16.



[had] been invalidated home.”⁴⁶ In an interview with *The Globe*, Fisher talked proudly of the success of the recruitment effort in Alberta, declaring that the province “had responded with flying colors and established a record, which placed the Province in the front rank.”⁴⁷ In a province with a population of just under 500,000, Fisher reported that 35,000 men had enlisted.⁴⁸

Political Career

Charles W. Fisher, like his father before him, was a ‘staunch Liberal.’⁴⁹ He admired Prime Minister Sir Wilfrid Laurier and would often “quot[e] incidents and phrases from the great Liberal’s life and times.”⁵⁰ Shortly after arriving in Cochrane, Fisher formed a political club and provided a room for its meetings in the Fisher Block.⁵¹ Later, a room was designated as Liberal campaign headquarters.⁵²

Fisher served a two-year term as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories. In 1903, he had decided to run for election after Arthur L. Sifton† was called to the Bench of the North-West Territories Supreme Court, thus vacating his seat as the representative for the constituency of Banff.⁵³ A by-election was called for February 4, 1903, and Fisher was elected.⁵⁴ At age 36, Fisher formally entered politics.

While a form of representative and responsible government had been achieved by the Territories by 1897, the struggle for provincial status continued. Although the federal Parliament had an active party system, a more consensual form of governing without political parties was in place in the North-West Territories.⁵⁵ Frederick Haultain, as Premier, led the non-partisan Territorial Government in the fight for autonomy against the Liberal Government in Ottawa.⁵⁶ By 1905, the Laurier Government had recognized the need for the creation of two new provinces and had legislated their existence.⁵⁷

In February 1905, Fisher entered the ongoing debate regarding the capital of the new province of Alberta by proposing Banff as an option. Banff, he argued, was scenic. In addition to its attractiveness to tourists and its educational benefits, its physical location provided an easily defended natural fortress, making it a logical choice.⁵⁸ However, the late bid failed to attract the needed support.

On July 20, 1905, *The Alberta Act* was assented to by the federal Parliament.⁵⁹ There was early speculation as to whether or not the Legislative Assembly of Alberta would be free of party alignment. However, several events during this period pushed the province in a partisan direction. Haultain’s support of the federal Conservative Party during the 1904 federal election⁶⁰ and his disagreement with Prime Minister Sir Wilfrid Laurier over the issue of provincial status

* Upon Laurier’s death in 1919, it was Fisher who communicated the Legislative Assembly’s Resolution of Condolence to Lady Laurier. Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 4th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. XV, 20 February 1919, p. 39.

† Arthur L. Sifton served as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories (1899–1903) and as Premier of Alberta (1910–1917).

made it "difficult for Laurier to call him to office."⁶¹ In August 1905, the Liberal Association of Alberta, in its founding convention, elected Alexander C. Rutherford leader of the party. Within days, Richard B. Bennett was selected as the leader of the Conservative Party in the province, and "[i]t was clear that the struggle in Alberta would be conducted along traditional party lines and that the non-partisan administration ... would have no chance of trial."⁶² With the Liberals in power federally, "it was a foregone conclusion that Liberal Lieutenant-Governors would be installed in both Alberta and Saskatchewan, and that they would call upon Liberal party leaders to form the first governments" in these new provinces.⁶³ On September 1, 1905, the Province of Alberta officially came into existence.

After resigning from the postal service in October 1905,⁶⁴ Fisher began to campaign for a seat in the newly established Legislative Assembly of Alberta. His prior electoral success in the Banff constituency continued during Alberta's first general election on November 9, 1905. In this election, he defeated future Lieutenant Governor (1915–1925) Dr. Robert G. Brett.* In 1909, the provincial electoral boundaries were redrawn, and Fisher won the next three elections (1909, 1913 and 1917) in the constituency of Cochrane.

During these early days, the circle of people with political experience and aspirations was small and close-knit. An article in the *Cochrane Advocate* in 1909 described Brett and Fisher as very good personal friends and claimed that they travelled together while campaigning, even sharing lodging one evening: "Dr. Brett complain[ed] that Mr. Fisher took more than his share of the bed, and Mr. Fisher reply[d] that as he represent[ed] the larger number of voters, as [would] be shown on Monday, he should have the greater part of the bed."⁶⁵ The cordial, collegial relationships among this group of newly minted politicians greatly facilitated the development of the new traditions and institutions of the province.

As Speaker

On March 15, 1906, the Legislative Assembly of Alberta held the opening of the First Session of the First Legislature at the Thistle Rink in Edmonton. As its first item of business, the new Legislative Assembly elected Charles Wellington Fisher as its first Speaker. Fisher's nomination came through a motion by Premier Alexander C. Rutherford, which was seconded by Charles W. Cross, Attorney General and Member for Edson.⁶⁶ Premier Rutherford's speech at the opening of the First Legislature† explained that the House would be "laying the foundations of empire in this new land"⁶⁷ and called to mind the significance of the role of the Speaker in this endeavour:

* In the November 4, 1898 general election, Brett defeated Arthur L. Sifton by two votes in the constituency of Banff, in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories. Sifton subsequently defeated Brett in the June 27, 1899 by-election in the same constituency. In 1901, Brett did not run against Sifton, but accounts vary as to the reason (illness—"Bye-Elections: Probable Walk-over for Bennett," *The Albertan and the Alberta Tribune* [Calgary], 9 March 1901, p. 1; advice from friends—"Bye-Elections: Sifton returned by acclamation in Banff constituency," *The Albertan and the Alberta Tribune* [Calgary], 13 March 1901, p. 1). Sifton held the constituency of Banff until his 1903 appointment as Chief Justice of the North-West Territories. Fisher won the resulting by-election and, in the first Alberta general election in 1905, he defeated Brett.

† At least 4,000 people attended the opening of the First Session of the First Legislature in the Thistle Rink. "Alberta's First Legislature Was Opened Yesterday," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 16 March 1906, p. 1.



[M]any matters will come before us for determination in which the path has not been blazed out for us. ... Following a good example we will proceed without delay to the election of Speaker. The duties of Speaker are various and important. He is the mouthpiece of the House. It is the duty of the First Commoner to preside over our deliberations. He is responsible for enforcing the observance of order and decorum among the members. We should expect that he will mete out uniform and fair treatment to all the parties, to all the members. Charles Wellington Fisher, Member for the electoral district of Banff, is to my mind well qualified to fill the position. He is not new to legislative experience. Those of us who sat with him in the last Legislative Assembly of the N.W.T. learned that he possessed a kindly disposition, a fair and judicial mind. He will doubtless fulfil the duties pertaining to the high and honorable office of speaker creditably and to the satisfaction of the members of this House.⁶⁸

Fisher was 39 years old at the time of his election as Speaker. Since he was one of only eight Members* who had served in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, he was considered a veteran in the newly formed Legislative Assembly of Alberta. Fisher's defeat of the prominent Conservative Dr. Robert G. Brett reinforced his reputation as a skilled and practised politician.⁶⁹ John R. Cowell, who served as Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta (1906–1923), had had 20 years of parliamentary experience as a Member in the House of Keys, Isle of Man, United Kingdom,⁷⁰ and thus was able to greatly assist the new Speaker. Fisher was elected Speaker for four consecutive terms. He was apparently a good-natured man with a keen sense of humour and a talent for mimicry. As *The Morning Albertan* stated, "No man without his sense of humor could have sat out 15 successive legislatures of this province without completely tiring of it. But he seemed to like it."⁷¹

The tradition in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories of having the Speaker serve on committees during his term continued in the new province and, four days into his new role, Fisher was appointed to two committees. The first was the *Select committee on the control and management of the library*.[†] The second was the *Special committee charged with planning entertainment for His Royal Highness Prince Arthur of Connaught*, who was to visit Alberta in early April 1906 as part of a cross-Canada tour. Over the years, Fisher served on several standing committees including: the *Library Committee*; *House and Restaurant Committee*, later known as the *House Committee*; the *Standing Committee on Railways*; and the *Standing Committee on Agriculture and Colonization*. He also served on the *Special Committee to consider the proposed Rules, Regulations, and Orders* in 1916.

During March 1906, the first rules of the Legislative Assembly were adopted. A Special Committee of eight members had been appointed to prepare the *Rules, Orders, and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta*. The result was a small, 33-page, leather-bound book containing 114 rules. Almost immediately, Fisher was working with a reactivated *Special*

* The other seven Members who had previously served in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories were: Matthew McCauley (Vermilion), Alexander C. Rutherford (Strathcona), Dr. Leverett G. DeVeber (Lethbridge), John A. Simpson (Red Deer and Innisfail), John W. Woolf (Cardston), William T. Finlay (Medicine Hat) and Anthony Sigwart de Rosenroll (Wetaskiwin).

† In 1903, the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories split the *Select Standing Committee for Standing Orders and Library* and the Speaker was appointed to the *Standing Committee for Library*.

Committee of Members of the House on Rules to revise particular sections.⁷² Years later, when explaining the lack of exactitude in the wording of the *Standing Orders*, Fisher described them as being “after all, only the grand-children of the old English standing Orders coming to us via Ontario and elsewhere.”⁷³

When the Legislative Assembly of Alberta sat in 1906, it observed the same Act that had been in force in the North-West Territories—“An Ordinance respecting the Legislative Assembly of the Territories,” *Consolidated Ordinances of the North-West Territories*, 1898, c. 2, adopted by Alberta.* It was not until 1909 that the Legislative Assembly passed legislation regarding its own constitution—*Legislative Assembly of Alberta Act*, S.A. 1909, c. 2.



C.W. Fisher with son Charles
Berkeley Fisher (ca.1910).

It was Fisher's role to enforce the first rules of the Legislative Assembly and maintain decorum in the Assembly. The foundations of the new province were laid during those first few years through legislation dealing with: the provision of financial resources required for all aspects of the new civil service; the establishment of government departments, the College of Physicians and Surgeons of the Province of Alberta, and the telephone system; and the incorporation of cities, companies and industries.

The issue of the timely printing of legislative documents was discussed frequently in those early years and, as a result, Fisher ruled “that no bills are to come before the House for a second time until they have been in the hands of members for 24 hours.”⁷⁴ Fisher soon became ‘adept at parliamentary procedures’⁷⁵ and at defining terms and procedures for the Members.⁷⁶ Ministers and Members conferred with him regarding both the format and the substance of bills.⁷⁷

In 1910, Fisher experienced the most significant challenge of his tenure as Speaker. The Alberta and Great Waterways Railway (A&GW) was to link the city of Edmonton with the Fort McMurray region. The provincial government subsidized its construction and offered bonds to private investors at more than favourable rates, as incentives to build the railway lines. Questions began to be raised about the ability of the A&GW company to construct the railway lines to acceptable standards and about the pecuniary interests involved. Allegations of ‘government graft or incompetence’ caused a split in the Liberal caucus.⁷⁸ A Royal Commission was struck to investigate whether any officer of the Government or Member of the Legislative Assembly had an interest in the A&GW or in the contract between the Government of Alberta and the railway company.⁷⁹ Before the Commission delivered its report, there was a vote of want of confidence in the government in response to the crisis.⁸⁰ There was some speculation that Fisher would step down and exercise his casting vote in favour of the motion. This action would have reduced the government majority to one and would have basically made it impossible for the government to

* *Alberta Act*, S.C. 1905, c.3, s.14; *An Act to Amend Chapter 2 of The Consolidated Ordinances of the North-West Territories*, 1898 intituled “An Ordinance Respecting the Legislative Assembly of the Territories,” S.A. 1906, c. 38.

carry on.⁸¹ Fisher did not take that step, and the government survived a motion of non-confidence;⁸² however, on May 26, 1910, Premier Rutherford tendered his resignation over the scandal.⁸³ The Commission's report was tabled at the beginning of the next Session on November 10, 1910, and Rutherford and his Government were cleared of wrongdoing.⁸⁴

Fisher had the challenging task of educating inexperienced Members regarding proper procedures in the Assembly. In 1910, Fisher called Charles M. O'Brien to order for referring to Lieutenant Governor, the Hon. George H. V. Bulyea, as 'that chap.'⁸⁵ O'Brien was the Member for Rocky Mountain and the first socialist to be elected to the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. His style presented a challenge to normal standards of decorum in the Legislative Assembly.⁸⁶ On March 4, 1910, the *Edmonton Capital* reported that during a debate on the A&GW, O'Brien repeatedly used the expression 'that chap' when referring to the Lieutenant Governor.⁸⁷ Fisher demanded that O'Brien withdraw the statement, and when O'Brien seemed not to understand the gravity of his error, Fisher was required to insist on the withdrawal. O'Brien finally complied. He also had to be corrected for calling his colleagues in the Legislative Assembly 'those fellows.'⁸⁸ On May 26, 1910, O'Brien's motion to amend a resolution of condolence for the widow of King Edward VII caused a furor in the Chamber.⁸⁹ O'Brien's amendment called for the extension of sympathy to the widows of a recent mining disaster in Britain, but it was not seconded.⁹⁰ After this motion, Fisher had to quell Members who had shouted O'Brien down and thrown inkwells and books at him.⁹¹

As the first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Fisher was involved in many historic 'firsts.' He was Speaker for the very first sitting in the Thistle Rink and for the first sitting to take place in the partially unfinished Legislature Building on November 30, 1911. He also attended the official opening of the Building, which was presided over by the Duke of Connaught, Canada's Governor General (1911–1916), on September 3, 1912. Fisher read a 'loyal address' to His Royal Highness welcoming him to the province on behalf of the Legislative Assembly and inviting him to declare the Legislature Building open in the name of King George V.⁹² Fisher was also present at the official opening of Government House in 1913. On December 4, 1911, the Special House Committee regarding the Legislature Building recommended that "the Speaker's [robing] room be regarded as private" and that "one doorkeeper who shall keep the

* O'Brien mistook the *Lieutenant Governor in Council* for the person of the *Lieutenant Governor*. "Ministry Sustained by 23 to 15," *Edmonton Capital*, 4 March 1910, p. 2. O'Brien, while keen to challenge the status quo and protocol in the Legislative Assembly, was said to be a hard worker on behalf of his constituents and Alberta workers. After being defeated in the 1913 provincial election, O'Brien moved to the United States and became a founding member of the American Communist Party. Bob Beal, "Logger's Manners Shock a Legislature," *Edmonton Journal*, 5 April 1987, p. B8.

† So unpopular were O'Brien's comments that they and his motion to amend the resolution were not recorded in the *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta* or most of the newspapers at the time.

‡ The Duke of Connaught, Governor General of Canada, stated: "In declaring these halls open in the name of His Majesty the King, I do so with the heartfelt prayer that under the blessing of Almighty God, your deliberations here may be inspired by wisdom and foresight, and that your decisions may always be for the true and lasting benefit of the Province of Alberta and the Dominion of Canada." "Magnificent Pile formally opened by H.R.H The Duke," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 4 September 1912, p. 2.

Speaker's gallery" should be appointed.⁹³ It also was at this time that the Public Gallery and the Members' Gallery were designated as such. During Fisher's tenure as Speaker, the number of Members in the Legislative Assembly more than doubled from 25 in 1906 to 61 in 1919.

Prior to the construction of the Legislature Building, Fisher and his family stayed in "a new home at Edmonton for sessions."⁹⁴ After the Building was completed, they lived in the Speaker's Suite when the Legislative Assembly was in Session. Fisher's son Berkeley remembers having the "run of the Parliament Buildings" and once noted that as a small boy "the library was [his] favorite room."⁹⁵

It was during Fisher's tenure as Speaker that *An Act to Provide for Equal Suffrage* was passed in the Legislative Assembly. Introduced on February 25, 1916, by Premier Arthur L. Sifton,⁹⁶ the passage of the Bill was of great interest to women throughout the province, and Fisher responded to their desire to be present on this historic occasion. When the Bill received its second reading March 1, 1916,⁹⁷ newspaper reports indicated that Fisher "did a graceful thing in turning over to the women all available seats [in the galleries] with the exception of ... ten only."⁹⁸ When one frustrated gentleman demanded a seat due to his involvement with a women's rights group, Fisher tactfully defused the situation. The gentleman was advised that he could get in if he were willing to take a seat that would otherwise be available to a lady.⁹⁹ The Equal Suffrage Bill received Royal Assent thereby becoming law on April 19, 1916,¹⁰⁰ making Alberta the third province† in Canada to grant equal suffrage.¹⁰¹

During the First Session of the Fourth Legislature, on February 8, 1918, Fisher recognized Roberta C. MacAdams,‡ Non-Partisan Member for the Province At Large,¹⁰² who introduced a Bill entitled *An Act to incorporate War Veterans' Next-of-Kin Association*.¹⁰³ This was the first time in the history of the British Empire that a woman introduced a piece of legislation.¹⁰⁴

Death

During the Second Session of the Fourth Legislature in March of 1919, Fisher fell ill with ear trouble.¹⁰⁵ On May 5, 1919, after five weeks of illness, he died at the Royal Alexandra Hospital in Edmonton.§ Charles Wellington Fisher had succumbed to Spanish influenza at the age of 53

* Lucien Boudreau, Liberal Member for St. Albert, was the only Member to vote against the Bill.

† Manitoba had granted equal suffrage to its citizens on January 28, 1916, and Saskatchewan, on March 14, 1916.

‡ Roberta C. MacAdams was one of the two Soldiers' Overseas Representatives for the province at large. With Louise C. McKinney (also elected in the provincial general election on June 7, 1917), she was one of the first two women elected to a legislative assembly in the British Empire. "Roberta Catherine MacAdams Price," *Celebrating Women's Achievements: First Women in Provincial and Territorial Legislature*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada, 2000, updated 30 January 2004), accessed 3 February 2004, available from <http://www.nlc-bnc.ca/2/12/h12-269-e.html>

§ Session had ended on April 17, 1919.



and became the first Speaker of the North-West Territories or Alberta to die in office.* As the funeral service was to be held in Calgary, Fisher's body, accompanied by his widow Marjorie and his half-brother Thomas S. Fisher of Cochrane, was transported to Calgary on the May 6 midnight train.¹⁰⁶ Fisher lay in state at the funeral home of A. M. Shaver in Calgary before being conveyed to the Knox Presbyterian Church,¹⁰⁷ where the "Government gave him one of the finest funerals."¹⁰⁸ Six Members served as pallbearers, including Charles S. Pingle, who was to succeed Fisher as Speaker in 1920.¹⁰⁹ The "[c]hurch was packed to the brink"¹¹⁰ as many dignitaries attended the funeral, including Lieutenant Governor Dr. Robert G. Brett, Provincial Treasurer and Acting Premier Charles R. Mitchell, Minister of Agriculture Duncan M. Marshall, and Minister of Public Works Archibald J. McLean.¹¹¹ Charles Wellington Fisher is buried in Union Cemetery in Calgary.¹¹² After his death, the Legislative Assembly presented his widow with the Speaker's Chair.¹¹³ Subsequently, Marjorie and the Fisher children moved to Victoria, British Columbia. In December 1966, Marjorie donated the Speaker's Chair to the Provincial Museum and Archives of Alberta.¹¹⁴ In the intervening years, the Chair had been on display in a school in Cochrane, Alberta.¹¹⁵ Marjorie Fisher died on November 19, 1982¹¹⁶ and is buried in Royal Oak Burial Park in Victoria.¹¹⁷

Tributes

Tributes to Fisher after his death characterized him as being "buoyant, cheerful—somewhat boyish in his merriment—considerate of others, generous and kindly."¹¹⁸ As Speaker, he was described by William M. Davidson, Member for Calgary North and publisher of *The Morning Albertan*, as having set the standard for his successors:

He was just the kind of speaker for a new legislature in a new western province. He had the right idea of the dignity that was necessary for the office. ... He knew the rules of the house, but was very liberal in his interpretation of them. ... He was very generous in his decisions, and knew no party in his rulings. ... It is not an exaggeration to say that he has left his imprint, if not upon the legislation, upon the legislature itself, more clearly than any other man in the province. ... The Alberta legislature is characterized by less false dignity and foolish ceremony than any other law-making body in Canada. It has a free and easy method of debate, with less red tape and fringe than most bodies of that kind. This has been the work of the man who had the direction of it. The provincial legislature is much as he shaped it.¹¹⁹

Davidson noted that with Fisher's passing "the last link between the old North West Territorial legislature and the Alberta legislature" was severed¹²⁰ as Fisher had been the last Member of the

* The Spanish influenza pandemic spread quickly from Europe to Canada as troops returned to the country after the First World War. In Canada, the Spanish flu was responsible for approximately as many deaths as the war itself. Eileen Pettigrew, *The Silent Enemy: Canada and the Deadly Flu of 1918* (Saskatoon: Western Producer Prairie Books, 1983), introduction. Peter Dawson (1937–1963) was the other Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta to die in office. However, as was not the case with Fisher, the Assembly was in Session at the time of Dawson's death.

Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories still to be serving in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.*

* Only three Members of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta who were elected in 1906 were still serving at the time of Fisher's death: John R. Boyle (Attorney General and Liberal Member for Sturgeon), Charles W. Cross (Liberal Member for Edson) and Frank Walker (Liberal Member for Victoria). "Life and Work of Late Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature," *Morning Albertan* (Calgary), 8 May 1919, p. 5.

Notes

¹ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, C. W. Fisher record, 1901 Census of Canada, North-West Territories, district no. 202, Alberta, sub-district b-1, Cochrane, schedule 1, p. 2, microfilm T-6550, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa, RG31, Statistics Canada; Arnott James Magurn, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide and Work of General Reference for Canada, the Provinces, and the Northwest Territories*, 1903 ed. (Ottawa: Office of Publication, 1903), p. 415.

² James Fisher Weir, "The James Fisher Family," rev. by Richard J. Fisher, ed. Marilyn Beynon Fisher, [Unpublished Manuscript], 1997, p. 3; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James Fisher household, 1881 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 167, East Middlesex, sub-district c-6, London, schedule 1, p. 29, household 145, microfilm C-13268, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James Fisher household, 1871 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 9, Middlesex East, sub-district c-1, London Township, schedule 1, p. 97, microfilm C-9905, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.

³ Weir, "The James Fisher Family," 1997, p. 26.

⁴ Ibid., pp. 25, 27.

⁵ Magurn, ed., *CPG 1903*, p. 415.

⁶ Weir, "The James Fisher Family," 1997, p. 1; *Souvenir of Alberta: Being a General Resumé of the Province, with Portraits, Engravings and Biographies of a Number of the Men Who Have Helped to Build This Great New Province of the West*, (Winnipeg: Salesman Pub., 1906), p. 36.

⁷ Weir, "The James Fisher Family," 1997, p. 1.

⁸ Ibid., p. 1.

⁹ Sir Charles George Douglas Roberts and Arthur Leonard Tunnell, eds., *The Canadian Who's Who: A Handbook of Canadian Biography of Living Characters*, vol. III, 1938-1939 (Toronto: Trans-Canada, 1939), p. 233.

¹⁰ Canada. Parliament. Library. Information and Technical Services Branch, *History of the Federal Electoral Ridings, 1867-1992*, vol. 4 - Ontario (M-Z) (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, 1993), Middlesex East, p. 3.

¹¹ Missouri. Office of the Secretary of State. Records Services. State Archives, *Missouri State Legislators, 1820-2000*, [Internet], (Jefferson City, MO: Missouri State Archives), accessed 3 June 2004, available from <http://www.sos.mo.gov/archives/history/historicallistings/molega.asp>; E-mail from Cindy Bassett, Reference Librarian, Missouri State Library, Jefferson City, MO, 30 March 2004; James Fisher Weir, "The James Fisher Family," ed. Marilyn Beynon Ann Fisher, [Unpublished Manuscript], 1986, Ontario Genealogical Society, North York, ON, p. 17.



¹² Weir, "The James Fisher Family," 1997, pp. 1, 3.

¹³ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, James Fisher household, 1881 Census of Canada; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Charles W. Fisher household, 1891 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 90, East Middlesex, sub-district c, Landon Township, schedule 1, p. 9, household 42, microfilm T-6352, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Weir, "The James Fisher Family," 1997, pp. 1, 3.

¹⁴ Weir, "The James Fisher Family," 1997, pp. 1, 3.

¹⁵ Magurn, ed., *CPG 1903*, p. 415; *Souvenir of Alberta*, p. 36.

¹⁶ "Chas. Wellington Fisher–Helen Marjorie Powell," Ontario, County of Carleton, Division of Ottawa, 3 April 1907, no. 230, p. 187, [Marriage Registration]; "Marriage of Miss Marjory Powell to Hon. Chas. W. Fisher," *Ottawa Evening Journal*, 3 April 1907, p. 10.

¹⁷ "Marriage of Miss Marjory Powell to Hon. Chas. W. Fisher," p. 10.

¹⁸ Helen Marjorie Powell, "The Early Life of Helen Marjorie Powell: The Duchess of Manachaban Hill," [Unpublished Manuscript], n.d., p. 10.

¹⁹ "Marriage of Miss Marjory Powell to Hon. Chas. W. Fisher," p. 10.

²⁰ "Wedding of C. W. Fisher," *Morning Albertan*, 4 April 1907, p. 1.

²¹ "Chas. Wellington Fisher–Helen Marjorie Powell," [Marriage Registration]; "Charles Berkeley Powell–Helen Louse Pattee," Ontario, Ottawa, 22 July 1884, p. 501, [Marriage Registration].

²² "Helen Marjorie Powell," Ontario, Ottawa, 31 July 1885, no. 99, [Birth Registration].

²³ Powell, "The Early Life of Helen Marjorie Powell," p. 1.

²⁴ C. B. Fisher, "My Father, the Speaker," *Alberta Historical Review* vol. 16, no. 1 (Winter 1968): pp. 24–25.

²⁵ Powell, "The Early Life of Helen Marjorie Powell," pp. 2–5.

²⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 6; Fisher, "My Father, the Speaker," p. 25.

²⁷ "Marriage of Miss Marjory Powell to Hon. Chas. W. Fisher," p. 10.

²⁸ "Chas. Wellington Fisher–Helen Marjorie Powell," [Marriage Registration].

²⁹ Henry James Morgan, ed., *The Canadian Men and Women of the Time: A Hand-book of Canadian Biography of Living Characters*, 2nd ed. (Toronto: W. Briggs, 1912), p. 913; Magurn, ed., *CPG 1903*, p. 230.

³⁰ Henry James Morgan, ed., *The Canadian Men and Women of the Time: A Hand-book of Canadian Biography*, 1st ed. (Toronto: W. Briggs, 1898), p. 830.

³¹ *Ibid.*, p. 831.

³² *Ibid.*, p. 830; Debra Forman, ed., *Legislators and Legislatures of Ontario: A Reference Guide*, vol. 1, 1792–1866 (Toronto: Ontario Legislative Library, Research and Information Services, 1984), p. 92.

³³ Weir, "The James Fisher Family," 1997, p. 18; Powell, "The Early Life of Helen Marjorie Powell," p. 21.

³⁴ Weir, "The James Fisher Family," 1997, p. 3.

³⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 16.

³⁶ *Souvenir of Alberta*, p. 36.

³⁷ *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 16, no. 10, 31 May 1899, p. 1; Fisher, "My Father, the Speaker," p. 25.

- ³⁸ "Cochrane, 1899," in *Big Hill Country: Cochrane and Area* (Cochrane, AB: Cochrane and Area Historical Society, 1977), pp. 161–162.
- ³⁹ "C. W. Fisher, Cochrane (8282), Bow River, Calgary West (Alberta)," *ArchiviaNet: Post Offices and Postmasters*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 3 February 2004, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020109_e.html
- ⁴⁰ Henry J. Boam, comp., *The Prairie Provinces of Canada: Their History, People, Commerce, Industries, and Resources*, ed. Ashley Brown (London: Sells Ltd., 1914), p. 339.
- ⁴¹ Margaret Buckley, "Merino Ranch," in *Big Hill Country: Cochrane and Area* (Cochrane, AB: Cochrane and Area Historical Society, 1977), p. 143.
- ⁴² Marjorie Spicer, "Charles W. Fisher," in *Big Hill Country: Cochrane and Area* (Cochrane, AB: Cochrane and Area Historical Society, 1977), p. 229; Powell, "The Early Life of Helen Marjorie Powell," p. 16; Franciscan Friars of Western Canada, *History of Mount St. Francis*, [Internet], (Edmonton: Franciscan Friars of Western Canada), accessed 17 November 2004, available from <http://www.franciscanfriars.ca/history.html>
- ⁴³ "G.O. 208," *Canada Gazette*, vol. XXXIX, 7 October 1905, p. 755; "G.O. 101," *Canada Gazette*, vol. XXXIX, 23 June 1906, p. 2833; "G.O. 9," *Canada Gazette*, vol. XLII, 6 February 1909, p. 2150; Dennis W. Domoney, "Alberta Cavalry Officers of the Militia List 1901–1914," *Relatively Speaking: Alberta Genealogical Society* vol. 28, no. 4 (November 2000): pp. 11–12.
- ⁴⁴ Domoney, "Alberta Cavalry Officers of the Militia List 1901–1914," pp. 11–12; Dennis W. Domoney, "Alberta Cavalry Officers of the Militia List 1901–1914 (Continued from Vol. 28, no. 4)," *Relatively Speaking: Alberta Genealogical Society* vol. 29, no. 1 (February 2001): p. 39.
- ⁴⁵ Philip H. Morris, ed., *The Canadian Patriotic Fund: A Record of Its Activities from 1914 to 1919* (Ottawa: Canadian Patriotic Fund, 1930), p. 69.
- ⁴⁶ "Record Grain Crop Expected in Alberta," *The Globe* (Toronto), 10 February 1916, p. 6.
- ⁴⁷ Ibid.
- ⁴⁸ Ibid.
- ⁴⁹ "Life and Work of Late Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature," *Morning Albertan* (Calgary), 8 May 1919, p. 5; Powell, "The Early Life of Helen Marjorie Powell," p. 19.
- ⁵⁰ Fisher, "My Father, the Speaker," pp. 24–25.
- ⁵¹ Ibid. p. 24.
- ⁵² Spicer, "Big Hill Country," p. 228.
- ⁵³ "Life and Work of Late Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature," p. 5.
- ⁵⁴ Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Directory of the Council & Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 1876–1905* (Regina: Saskatchewan Archives Board, 1970), p. 20.
- ⁵⁵ "Life and Work of Late Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature," p. 5; Lewis Gwynne Thomas, *The Liberal Party in Alberta: A History of Politics in the Province of Alberta, 1905–1921* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1959), p. 1.
- ⁵⁶ For example, Grant MacEwan, *Frederick Haultain: Frontier Statesman of the Canadian Northwest* (Saskatoon: Western Producer Prairie Books, 1985), pp. 122–132; J. Castell Hopkins, *The Canadian Annual Review of Public Affairs*, 1902 ed. (Toronto: Annual Review Publishing Company, 1902), pp. 72–73.



- ⁵⁷ Canada. Parliament. House of Commons, *Journals of the House of Commons of the Dominion of Canada, 10th Parliament, 1st Session*, vol. XL, 21 February 1905, p. 111.
- ⁵⁸ C. W. Fisher, "C. W. Fisher, M.L.A. for Banff, Supports His Home Town, Letter to Haultain Reported in Calgary Herald, February 23, 1905," in *The Formation of Alberta: A Documentary History*, ed. Douglas R. Owsam (Calgary: Alberta Records Publication Board, Historical Society of Alberta, 1979), pp. 354–355.
- ⁵⁹ *Alberta Act*, S.C. 1905, c. 3.
- ⁶⁰ D. R. Babcock, *Alexander Cameron Rutherford: A Gentleman of Strathcona* (Calgary: Friends of Rutherford House and University of Calgary Press, 1989), p. 23; Thomas, *The Liberal Party in Alberta*, pp. 15, 19.
- ⁶¹ Thomas, *The Liberal Party in Alberta*, pp. 15, 14, 19; Babcock, *Alexander Cameron Rutherford: A Gentleman of Strathcona*, p. 23.
- ⁶² Thomas, *The Liberal Party in Alberta*, pp. 18–19.
- ⁶³ Babcock, *Alexander Cameron Rutherford: A Gentleman of Strathcona*, p. 23.
- ⁶⁴ "C. W. Fisher, Cochrane (8282), Bow River, Calgary West (Alberta)," [Internet].
- ⁶⁵ "A Pleasing Feature," *Cochrane Advocate*, 25 March 1909, p. 1.
- ⁶⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 1st Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. I, 15 March 1906, p. 12.
- ⁶⁷ "Alberta's First Legislature Was Opened Yesterday," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 16 March 1906, p. 1.
- ⁶⁸ Ibid.
- ⁶⁹ Thomas, *The Liberal Party in Alberta*, p. 34.
- ⁷⁰ Morgan, ed., *Canadian Men and Women of the Time*, 2nd. ed., p. 268.
- ⁷¹ "Life and Work of Late Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature," p. 5.
- ⁷² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 1st Session*, 20 April 1906, p. 56; Ibid., 28 April 1906, p. 70.
- ⁷³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 4th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. XV, 12 February 1919, p. 20.
- ⁷⁴ "Members Will See All Bills," *Edmonton Daily Bulletin*, 9 February 1909, p. 1; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 2nd Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. VI, 25 November 1910, p. 31.
- ⁷⁵ Fisher, "My Father, the Speaker," p. 25.
- ⁷⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 1st Legislature, 1st Session*, 23 March 1906, pp. 21–22; "Life and Work of Late Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature," p. 5.
- ⁷⁷ "Life and Work of Late Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature," p. 5.
- ⁷⁸ Howard Palmer and Tamara Palmer, *Alberta: A New History* (Edmonton: Hurtig, 1990), p. 147; Thomas, *The Liberal Party in Alberta*, pp. 58, 71, 74, 87.
- ⁷⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 2nd Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. V, 16 March 1910, p. 75.
- ⁸⁰ Ibid., 11 March 1910, pp. 66–67.

- ⁸¹ Thomas, *The Liberal Party in Alberta*, p. 85; "Life and Work of Late Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature," p. 5.
- ⁸² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 2nd Legislature, 1st Session*, 11 March 1910, p. 67.
- ⁸³ Ibid., 26 May 1910, p. 89; Thomas, *The Liberal Party in Alberta*, p. 90.
- ⁸⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 2nd Legislature, 2nd Session*, 10 November 1910, p. 11; Jay Stewart Heard, "The Alberta and Great Waterways Railway Dispute, 1909–1913," (MA thesis, University of Alberta, 1990), p. 123.
- ⁸⁵ "Ministry Sustained by 23 to 15," *Edmonton Capital*, 4 March 1910, p. 2.
- ⁸⁶ A. Ross McCormack, *Reformers, Rebels, and Revolutionaries: The Western Canadian Radical Movement, 1899–1919* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1977), p. 64.
- ⁸⁷ "Ministry Sustained by 23 to 15," p. 2.
- ⁸⁸ Ibid.
- ⁸⁹ Bob Beal, "Logger's Manners Shock a Legislature," *Edmonton Journal*, 5 April 1987, p. B8.
- ⁹⁰ Ibid; "Legislature Has Been Prorogued," *Edmonton Daily Bulletin*, 27 May 1910, p. 10.
- ⁹¹ Beal, "Logger's Manners Shock a Legislature," p. B8.
- ⁹² "Magnificent Pile Formally Opened by H.R.H. The Duke," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 4 September 1912, p. 2.
- ⁹³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 2nd Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. VII, 4 December 1911, p. 15.
- ⁹⁴ Powell, "The Early Life of Helen Marjorie Powell," p. 17.
- ⁹⁵ Fisher, "My Father, the Speaker," p. 27.
- ⁹⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 3rd Legislature, 4th Session*, vol. XII, 25 February 1916, p. 9.
- ⁹⁷ Ibid., 1 March 1916, p. 13.
- ⁹⁸ "Alberta Women Get Vote; Equal Suffrage Bill Is Given Second Reading," *Edmonton Journal*, 2 March 1916, p. 9; "Women Enfranchised Amid Historic Scenes: Equal Suffrage Bill Gets Its Second Reading With Only One Dissenting Vote," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 2 March 1916, p. 1.
- ⁹⁹ "Alberta Women Get Vote," p. 9.
- ¹⁰⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 3rd Legislature, 4th Session*, 19 April 1916, p. 135.
- ¹⁰¹ Canada. Library of Parliament Information and Documentation Branch, "Women's Right to Vote in Canada," *About Parliament: Historical Information*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library of Parliament), accessed 19 April 2004, available from <http://www.parl.gc.ca/information/about/process/House/asp/WomenVote.asp>
- ¹⁰² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 4th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XIV, 7 February 1918, p. 7; Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report on Alberta Elections 1905–1982* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1983), p. 31.
- ¹⁰³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 4th Legislature, 1st Session*, 8 February 1919, p. 15.



¹⁰⁴ "Roberta Catherine MacAdams Price," *Celebrating Women's Achievements: First Women in Provincial and Territorial Legislature*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada, 2000, updated 30 January 2004), accessed 3 February 2004, available from <http://www.nlc-bnc.ca/2/12/h12-269-e.html> Roberta Catherine MacAdams Price was Roberta MacAdams at the time of her election and was married part way through her term.

¹⁰⁵ "Hon. C. W. Fisher, Speaker of the Legislature of Alberta Passes Away at 11:30 Last Night," *The Morning Bulletin* (Edmonton), 6 May 1919, p. 1.

¹⁰⁶ "Took Body Last Night to Calgary for Interment," *The Morning Bulletin* (Edmonton), 7 May 1919, p. 3.

¹⁰⁷ "Funeral of the Late Hon. C. W. Fisher Impressive," *Calgary Daily Herald*, 8 May 1919, p. 9.

¹⁰⁸ Powell, "The Early Life of Helen Marjorie Powell," p. 20.

¹⁰⁹ "Funeral of the Late Hon. C. W. Fisher Impressive," p. 9.

¹¹⁰ Powell, "The Early Life of Helen Marjorie Powell," p. 20.

¹¹¹ "Funeral of the Late Hon. C. W. Fisher Impressive," p. 9.

¹¹² "Funeral of Hon. C. W. Fisher here Thursday," *Calgary Daily Herald*, 7 May 1919, p. 6.

¹¹³ Helen M. Fisher, [Donation of First Chair for Mr. Speaker, 1st Session of Alberta Legislative Assembly], 21 December 1966, Certificate of Gift, Provincial Museum and Archives of Alberta, Edmonton. Although no official records confirming the presentation of the Speaker's Chair to the Fisher family have been found, a Certificate of Gift for the "First Chair for Mr. Speaker, 1st Session of Alberta Legislative Assembly" to the Provincial Museum and Archives of Alberta signed by Helen M. Fisher on December 21, 1966, exists.

¹¹⁴ Ibid.

¹¹⁵ [First Chair for Mr. Speaker, 1st Session of Alberta Legislative Assembly], 14 December 1966, Collections report, Provincial Museum and Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, 200/9-64.

¹¹⁶ "Fisher [Helen Marjorie]," [Obituary], *Victoria Times-Colonist*, 21-22 November 1982, p. D5.

¹¹⁷ *British Columbia Cemetery Finding Aid, Version 2*, [Internet], accessed 17 February 2004, available from <http://www.islandnet.com/bccfa/>

¹¹⁸ "Life and Work of Late Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature," p. 5.

¹¹⁹ "Death and Burial of Hon. Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature," *Cochrane Advocate*, 8 May 1919, p. 6.

¹²⁰ "Life and Work of Late Chas. W. Fisher, Speaker of Alberta Legislature," p. 5.

Sterling qualities and unfailing fairness



Pingle 1920-1921



CHARLES STEUART PINGLE

Charles Steuart Pingle, the second Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, held this office during the final days of the province's Liberal government era (1905–1921). Pingle was the last Liberal Member to be Speaker in 20th-century Alberta. He was known for his integrity, fairness and “remarkable clarity of vision in respect to business questions and matters political. The keenness and the soundness of his judgment caused his opinion to be widely sought and highly valued.”¹ As a Private Member, Pingle served with Premiers Arthur L. Sifton (1910–1917), Charles Stewart (1917–1921) and John E. Brownlee (1925–1934), and as Speaker, with Premier Stewart.

Family History

Charles Steuart* Pingle, also known as ‘Charlie,’² was born on October 16, 1880,³ near Morris, Provencher District, Manitoba,⁴ to Warren Hume Pingle and Georgina Steuart.⁵ He was the third in a family of six children.⁶ Warren and Georgina were married on March 3, 1875, in Creemore, Nottawasaga Township, Simcoe County, Ontario.⁷

Charlie’s ancestors had emigrated from Europe with a group of about 60 Lutheran families who sailed from Hamburg, Germany, in 1792, and settled initially in upper New York State. In the fall of 1794, most of these families resettled in what later became Markham Township, York County, Upper Canada (Ontario), drawn by the promise of free land.⁸ They were known as the ‘Berczy’ settlers after their leader, William Berczy,⁹ the colonization agent who had brought them to North America. The Pingles were ‘very active’ in their local Lutheran church and in the militia.¹⁰ It appears that Charlie Pingle and William Eakin, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories (1899–1902), shared a common ancestor in Joachim Pingle (b. ca. 1745).¹¹

Warren Hume Pingle was born on November 26, 1847, in Markham Township.¹² He had been working for some time in the family sawmill business¹³ near Avening, Nottawasaga Township, when in 1878, he decided to relocate his young family to the Morris area of Manitoba.¹⁴ Charlie was the first member of the family to be born in the West, and later continued the pioneering tradition of his family as he himself moved even farther west. In 1883, Warren Pingle relocated his family to the Regina area of the North-West Territories (Saskatchewan), where he held various jobs including that of agent for the Long Lake Colony,¹⁵ jailer at the Regina Jail,¹⁶ secretary of the School Board and Town Assessor.¹⁷ Charlie was eight years old when his father died on July 15, 1889, at the age of 41.¹⁸ One of Charlie’s older brothers, Frederick, spent 11

* The spelling of middle name ‘Steuart’ is as recorded in the Bible of his parents Warren Hume Pingle and Georgina Steuart. Pingle Family Bible, [Personal collection of Charlie S. Pingle]. However, many documents, including those of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, have used the spelling ‘Stewart.’

† Gustavus (b. 1875), Frederick Steuart (1877), Charles Steuart (1880), Alice Maude (1883) [Thomas Hubie], George Warren (1885) and Warren Hume (1889).



and a half years in various capacities in the public service of the North-West Territories, including two years as a Page in the Legislative Assembly.¹⁹

On his maternal side, Charlie's grandparents were of Scottish and Welsh descent.²⁰ His grandfather Peter Steuart was Writer to the Signet* in Edinburgh, Scotland. Charlie's mother, Georgina, was born in Darlington Township, Durham, Canada West (Ontario), on May 8, 1854.²¹ She was a lifelong member of the Church of England (Anglican),²² of which Charlie was also a member.²³

Education

Charlie was educated at Winnipeg Public School.²⁴ After apprenticing for two years with the Bole Drug Company in Regina,²⁵ he wrote the North-West Territories Pharmaceutical Exams in April 1899²⁶ and became a 'prosperous young druggist.'²⁷

Early Career

By 1901, Pingle had moved to Medicine Hat, District of Assiniboia, North-West Territories,²⁸ and in 1902, he bought Donald A. Black's drug store business,²⁹ which he renamed the Pingle Drug and Book Company. In 1911–1912, Pingle was a member of the Alberta Pharmaceutical Association's first council and served as president of the Association from 1918 to 1919.³⁰ Pingle also served as a director of the *Medicine Hat News*.³¹ Additionally, he was a director of the Commonwealth Trust Company in Calgary, Alberta,³² and president of the O. C. Arnott Company of Calgary.³³ Pingle was regarded as an astute businessman: "[H]is keen business mind appeared to assure him of success in all his various ventures."³⁴ Pingle also operated a farm near Medicine Hat.³⁵

Marriage and Family

On September 16, 1903, Pingle married Jean McLeay, of Watford, Warwick Township, Lambton County, Ontario.³⁶ Jean was born on December 12, 1880,³⁷ the eighth of the 10 children³⁸ of Robert McLeay and Wilhelmina Glendinning.³⁹ Robert and Wilhelmina were married on November 24, 1862.⁴⁰ Robert, who was born in about 1836 in Upper Canada (Ontario), was of Scottish descent⁴¹ and engaged in various occupations, including money broker⁴² and manufacturer.⁴³ Wilhelmina was born in 1840⁴⁴ in Eskdalemuir, Dumfries, Scotland.⁴⁵

Charles and Jean were married in the bride's hometown,⁴⁶ and after their marriage returned to Medicine Hat. Their first son, Robert Warren, was born there on September 1, 1906.⁴⁷ Charles Glendinning, their second son, was born February 14, 1911, but died three days later.⁴⁸

* Writers to the Signet were law agents in Scotland. "The Signet was the private seal of the early Scottish Kings, and the Writers to the Signet were those authorised to supervise its use and, later, to act as clerks to the Courts." *Society of Writers to Her Majesty's Signet*, [Internet], (Edinburgh: WS Society, Society of Writers to Her Majesty's Signet), accessed 4 June 2004, available from <http://www.signetlibrary.co.uk/start.htm>

Robert Warren's son, also Charles Steuart Pingle, ran unsuccessfully as the Progressive Conservative candidate for the constituency of Windsor-Walkerville, Ontario, in the federal elections of 1979 and 1980.⁴⁹ David Steuart, Member of the Saskatchewan Legislative Assembly (1962–1976), Cabinet Minister and Senator (1976–1991),⁵⁰ was a relative.⁵¹

Community Activities and Personal Interests

Pingle was involved in many community activities. It was said that “his interest in matters pertaining to the welfare of the city [Medicine Hat] was whole-souled.”⁵² He was a member of the Medicine Hat Board of Trade and also served as its president.⁵³ Pingle was associated with the Sons of England Society.⁵⁴ He was also on the Board of Directors for the Agricultural Society.⁵⁵ He was a charter member and president of the Rotary Club⁵⁶ as well as a Knight of Pythias, a Free Mason, a Royal Arch Mason and a member of the Shrine.⁵⁷



Soldier Members of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta; C.S. Pingle front row, 2nd from right. On his right, Roberta C. MacAdams (1918).

Pingle served as an alderman for the City of Medicine Hat from 1910 to 1912.⁵⁸ In this position, he participated in a number of committees, as a member of a committee on the location of the Alberta Electric Railway Co.,⁵⁹ as chair of the Police Committee⁶⁰ and as a member of the committee delegated to represent the city when an amendment to the Medicine Hat city charter came before the Legislative Assembly.⁶¹

Pingle's hobbies included both music and sports. In 1901, he was a member of the Pleyel String Quartette, which was formed that year in Medicine Hat.⁶² In March 1909, he was elected president of the Citizen's Band.⁶³ He was a skip in the Curling Club,⁶⁴ and he and his brother Frederick played lacrosse.⁶⁵ He was president of Medicine Hat's baseball club during 1909 and 1910.⁶⁶ At a February 1910 meeting chaired by Pingle, when the team joined the Western Canada League, Pingle became honorary president.⁶⁷

Political Career

Pingle's broader political involvement began in November 1909, when he was elected second vice-president of the Medicine Hat Liberal Association.⁶⁸ In 1911, he served as president.⁶⁹ In 1913, Pingle ran as a candidate in Alberta's third general election. He was the first Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta for the newly created constituency of Redcliff.

In the Fourth Legislature, Pingle served as Chair of the *Standing Committee on Miscellaneous and Private Bills* from 1918 to 1919.

Military Career

Charles S. Pingle was assigned the rank of honorary captain and served in the Canadian Militia as quartermaster with the 21st Alberta Hussars from 1909 to 1914.⁷⁰ In 1914, Pingle, along



with Speaker (Major) Charles W. Fisher (1906–1919), was a member of the Canadian Patriotic Fund, South Alberta Branch.⁷¹ In late May 1915, he signed up for duty with the Canadian Expeditionary Force (CEF). As a member of the 3rd Canadian Mounted Rifles, Captain Pingle sailed from Montreal on the S.S. *Megantic* in June 1915, serving in France from September 1915 until his return to Canada in February 1916.⁷²

In 1917, during the First World War, an amendment to *The Election Act* of Alberta provided for the nomination and election to the Fourth Legislature of the 12 Members who had enlisted and been sent overseas while serving in the Third Legislature.⁷³ As a result, Pingle was “deemed to have been nominated and elected”^{*} as the Member of the Legislative Assembly for the constituency of Redcliff in 1917.⁷⁴

On May 8, 1917, Pingle was elected first vice-president of the provincial branch of the Great War Veterans’ Association (which later became the Royal Canadian Legion).⁷⁵

As Speaker

Charles Stewart Pingle was elected Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta on February 17, 1920 during the Third Session of the Fourth Legislature, after the death of Speaker Charles W. Fisher. Pingle was 39 years old at the time. He was nominated through a motion by Premier Charles Stewart, which was seconded by Attorney General John R. Boyle.⁷⁶ Pingle’s election was “a recognition of his sterling qualities and of his unfailing fairness when dealing with political questions.”⁷⁷

Only days later, on February 25, 1920, Pingle faced one of his first challenges. Dr. John S. Stewart, Conservative Member for Lethbridge City, brought to the attention of the Assembly that the Member for Beaver River, Wilfrid Gariepy, was not a resident of Alberta and was consequently not eligible to sit as a Member in accordance with the *Legislative Assembly of Alberta Act* and *The Alberta Election Act*.⁷⁸ Although the original motion was withdrawn, Pingle offered an opinion for future reference indicating that this was not a matter on which the Speaker should be required to make a decision and that it is the duty of the Speaker “to recognize every member who has been gazetted as a member of this House, and who has taken the oath of office, unless otherwise instructed by the House.”⁷⁹ This was the only time that the matter of disqualification of a Member has been raised in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.⁸⁰

On March 9, 1921, Pingle ruled on a point of order raised by Member for Sturgeon and Attorney General John R. Boyle regarding Private Bills. Boyle insisted that the Speaker rule whether or not he, as a Minister, had the same right as any other Member to introduce a bill.⁸¹ Boyle stated that there “were numerous cases in the Alberta legislature in past years where

* No vote was held in these designated electoral divisions on election day. *An Act to Amend the Election Act respecting Members of the Legislative Assembly on Active Service*, S.A. 1917, c. 38.

† Lieutenant Governor Dr. Robert G. Brett (1915–1925) was elected honorary president.

ministers had introduced private bills.⁸² Pingle ruled that contrary to past practice in Alberta, he must follow recognized authorities that stated that Ministers of the Crown should not initiate or promote Private Bills. In addition, he stated:

[I]t appears that the point of order now raised was not raised before, and the irregular course became common, and the Legislative Assembly must bear the responsibility. ... I think the Bill may be allowed to proceed, but my ruling on the point raised will stand in any case which may hereafter arise.⁸³

In the provincial election of July 18, 1921, Pingle lost his Redcliff seat to the United Farmers of Alberta (UFA) candidate William C. Smith, as the UFA swept to power. Reports prior to the election indicated that Pingle was expected to win the election 'with a handsome majority.'⁸⁴ However, with the unexpected UFA victory, Pingle lost his seat becoming the first Member to be defeated in an election immediately after serving as Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.*

The *Edmonton Bulletin* reported that Pingle "assert[ed] his right to the speaker's chair, according to constitutional custom," and that the Chair was shipped to him the day after the opening of the new Legislature.⁸⁵ No official records confirming this report have been found.

Later Career

On September 29, 1925, Pingle ran in the by-election for Medicine Hat after the death of incumbent William G. Johnston, a representative of the Labour Party. Pingle was elected and joined the 13 sitting Members of the Liberal Opposition.⁸⁶

Pingle's final election victory occurred in the general election of June 28, 1926, when he again represented the constituency of Medicine Hat. He was appointed to the *Special Committee on the Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings* in 1927.

Honours and Awards

In 1925, an Alberta and Great Waterways Railway station was named in honour of Charles Steuart Pingle. Pingle is situated approximately 90 kilometres south-southeast of Fort McMurray.⁸⁷ Pingle Street in Medicine Hat was also named for the former Speaker.⁸⁸

Death

On January 10, 1928, just three weeks prior to the commencement of the Second Session of the Sixth Legislature, Charles Steuart Pingle died at age 47 in Medicine Hat, Alberta.⁸⁹ The cause of death was variously reported as 'an attack of cardiac trouble'⁹⁰ or a stroke.⁹¹ The funeral service

* As per the *Standing Orders*, the Speaker is elected for the duration of a Legislature. The Fourth Session of the Fourth Legislature was prorogued on April 19, 1921 and dissolved on June 30, 1921, which denotes the end of Pingle's tenure. Oran L. McPherson was elected Speaker February 2, 1922. In 1986, Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972-1986) became the second Alberta Speaker to lose his seat. Speaker John F. Betts (1895-1898) of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories lost his seat in the general election of 1898, immediately after serving as Speaker.



was well-attended by representatives of provincial and municipal governments, political associations, the business community and various community organizations, filling the church to capacity and leaving many standing outside.⁹² Among the pallbearers were Senator William A. Buchanan* and Justice Charles R. Mitchell of the Supreme Court of Alberta, who had previously served as Liberal Member for Medicine Hat (1910–1913) and Bow Valley (1913–1921).⁹³ Pingle is buried in Hillside Cemetery in Medicine Hat.⁹⁴ His wife, Jean, died on September 6, 1944 and is buried beside him.⁹⁵

Fonds

Pingle Drug and Book Company Fonds can be found both at the Glenbow Archives (1898–1937, predominantly 1898) and at the Medicine Hat Museum and Art Gallery (1904–1940).

Tributes

Fellow Liberal, Captain Joseph T. Shaw,† Member for Bow Valley, paid tribute to Charles S. Pingle by characterizing his life as “one of rare and useful activity.”⁹⁶ Senator William A. Buchanan referred to him as “the first citizen of Medicine Hat,” described him as “a fair, dignified and capable presiding officer,” and spoke of Pingle’s “high ideals in politics.”⁹⁷ Mr. Justice Charles R. Mitchell described Pingle as having “a high sense of the responsibilities of public life and in the ordinary activities of the business world he was an outstanding personality.”⁹⁸ His passing was lamented in verse by an anonymous admirer of Pingle’s, with one stanza commenting on his role as Speaker:

As Speaker of Alberta’s House,
Ability most rare,
Each side of politics admit
His rulings always fair.⁹⁹

When Session resumed on February 2, 1928, Lieutenant Governor Dr. William Egbert (1925–1931) noted that Pingle’s loss would be “keenly felt by the Members of the House and by the people of the Province.”¹⁰⁰

* Buchanan also served as Minister without Portfolio (1909–1910) in the Provincial Government, and in 1907, as the first Librarian for the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

† Mitchell also served as Attorney General (1910–1912), Minister of Education (1910–1912), Minister of Public Works (1912–1913) and Provincial Treasurer (1913–1921).

‡ Joseph T. Shaw was elected as the Member for Bow Valley in the 1926 Alberta election. He was the leader of the Liberal Party (1926–1930).

Notes

- ¹ "The Late Capt. Pingle," *Medicine Hat Weekly News*, 12 January 1928, p. 2.
- ² E-mail from Charles S. Pingle, 19 September 2001.
- ³ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Warren H. Pingle household, 1881 Census of Canada, Manitoba, district no. 184, Provencher, sub-district a, Morris West, schedule 1, p. 54, microfilm C-13282, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Pingle Family Bible, [Personal collection of Charlie S. Pingle].
- ⁴ Pingle Family Bible.
- ⁵ Ibid.
- ⁶ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Georgina Pingle household, 1891 Census of Canada, Provincial District of the North-West Territories, district no. 199, Assiniboia West, sub-district c-1, Regina, schedule 1, p. 48, microfilm T-6426, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Pingle Family Bible.
- ⁷ "Warren Hume Pingle-Georgiana Steuart," Ontario, Nottawasaga, Creemore, 3 March 1875, [Marriage Certificate].
- ⁸ Ronald J. Stagg, "William Berczy," in *Dictionary of Canadian Biography*, vol. V, ed. Frances G. Halpenny (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1983), p. 71; *A Story of the Markham Berczy Settlers: 200 Years in Markham, 1794-1994* (Markham, ON: Markham Berczy Settlers Association, 1994), p. 31; *William 'Moll' Berczy*, [Internet], (Markham, ON: Markham Berczy Settlers Association, updated 25 June 2001), accessed 31 August 2001, available from <http://www.markhamberczysettlers.ca/berczy.html>
- ⁹ Stagg, "William Berczy," pp. 70-72.
- ¹⁰ *A Story of the Markham Berczy Settlers*, pp. 31, 40. A stained glass window installed in the church in 1981 included the Pingle family name. Pingle is sometimes spelled 'Pingel' in accordance with its German origins.
- ¹¹ Helen A. Lynch, "Descendants of Joachim Pingel," [Genealogy Chart], 1 September 2001; Committee for the History of Markham Township, *Markham, 1793-1900*, ed. Isabel Champion (Markham, ON: Markham Historical Society, 1979), pp. 20-21; Canada. Board of Registration and Statistics, George Pingle record, 1861 Census of the Canadas, Canada West, York County, Markham Township, division 9, p. 93, microfilm C-1088, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.
- ¹² Pingle Family Bible; "The Late Warren H. Pingle," [Obituary], *Regina Journal*, 18 July 1889, p. 8.
- ¹³ "The Late Warren H. Pingle," p. 8; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Jacob Pingle household, 1871 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 42, Simcoe North, sub-district a-3, Nottawasaga, schedule 1, p. 12, microfilm C-9962, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.
- ¹⁴ "Legal Land Description, NE 34 5 1 W4, Warren H. Pingle, RG 68, liber 104, folio 413," *ArchiviaNet: Western Land Grants (1870-1930)*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 20 January 2004, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020111_e.html; "The Late Warren H. Pingle," [Obituary], p. 8.
- ¹⁵ "The Late Warren H. Pingle," [Obituary], p. 8.
- ¹⁶ "Local News," *Regina Leader*, 12 April 1887, p. 4; *Henderson's Manitoba and North West Territories Gazetteer and Directory 1899*, (Henderson Directories, 1899), p. 605.
- ¹⁷ "The Late Warren H. Pingle," [Obituary], p. 8.
- ¹⁸ Ibid.



- ¹⁹ Archibald Oswald MacRae, *History of the Province of Alberta*, vol. II ([Calgary]: Western Canada History Co., 1912), p. 774; *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 13, no. 21, 2 November 1896, p. 149.
- ²⁰ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Warren H. Pingle household, 1881 Census of Canada.
- ²¹ Pingle Family Bible. The 1881 Census records Georgina as 'Georgiana.'
- ²² Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Warren H. Pingle household, 1881 Census of Canada.
- ²³ Ernest J. Chambers, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide and Work of General Reference for the Dominion of Canada*, 1920 ed. (Ottawa: Mortimer, 1920), p. 482; "Captain Pingle Passed Away Suddenly on Tues. Evening," *Medicine Hat News*, 11 January 1928, p. 1.
- ²⁴ E. J. Chambers, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide and Work of General Reference for the Dominion of Canada*, 1921 ed. (Ottawa: Mortimer, 1921), p. 476.
- ²⁵ "Captain Pingle Passed Away Suddenly on Tues. Evening," p. 1; E-mail from Charles S. Pingle, 5 March 2003.
- ²⁶ North West Territories Pharmaceutical Exams, April 1899. Pingle Drug and Book Company Fonds, Glenbow Archives, Calgary, M5744.
- ²⁷ "Pingel [*sic*]-McLeay," [Wedding Announcement], *Watford Guide-Advocate*, 18 September 1903, p. 1.
- ²⁸ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Charles Pingle record, 1901 Census of Canada, North-West Territories, district no. 204, Assiniboia (West), sub-district p-1, Medicine Hat (South), schedule 1, p. 1, microfilm T-6553, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa, RG31, Statistics Canada.
- ²⁹ Donald M. Cameron, ed., *The History of Pharmacy in Alberta: The First One Hundred Years (From Leeches to Lasers)* (Edmonton: The Alberta Pharmaceutical Association, 1993), p. 264; "Captain Pingle Passed Away Suddenly on Tues. Evening," p. 1.
- ³⁰ Cameron, ed., *The History of Pharmacy in Alberta*, pp. xvi, 9.
- ³¹ Chambers, ed., *CPG 1920*, p. 482.
- ³² Ibid.
- ³³ "Popular Member Medicine Hat Dead," *Calgary Herald*, 11 January 1928, p. 5.
- ³⁴ "Captain Pingle Passed Away Suddenly on Tues. Evening," p. 1.
- ³⁵ "Popular Member Medicine Hat Dead," p. 5.
- ³⁶ "Charles Stuart Pingle-Jean McLeay," Ontario, County of Lambton, Watford, 16 September 1903, pp. 603-604 [Marriage Registration].
- ³⁷ "Pingle, Jean McLeay (12 Dec 1880-06 Sep 1944) Cemetery Report," *Alberta Genealogical Society Master Databank*, [Electronic Database], (Edmonton: Alberta Genealogical Society), accessed 29 August 2001.
- ³⁸ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Robert McLeay household, 1891 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 81, East Lambton, sub-district j, Watford Village, schedule 1, pp. 37-38, household 190, microfilm T-6347, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Pingle Family Bible.
- ³⁹ Elizabeth Hancocks, *County Marriage Registers of Ontario, Canada, 1858-1869*, vol. 23, Lambton County (Agincoourt, ON: Generation Press Inc., 1990), p. 37.
- ⁴⁰ Ibid.
- ⁴¹ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Robert McLeay household, 1881 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 179, Lambton, sub-district j, Watford, schedule 1, p. 39, household 203, microfilm C-13278, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.

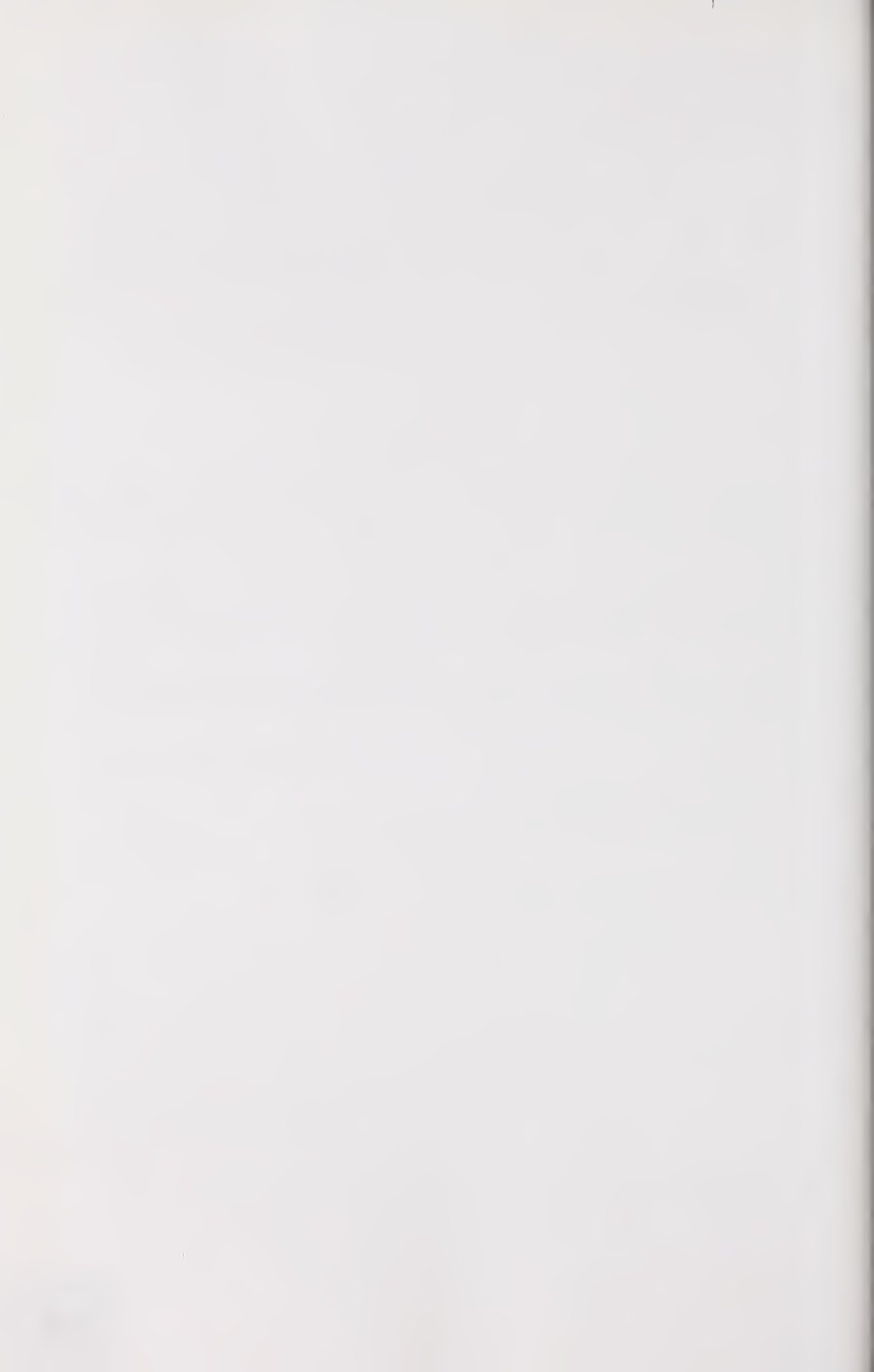
- ⁴² Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Robert McLeay household, 1891 Census of Canada.
- ⁴³ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Robert McLeay household, 1881 Census of Canada.
- ⁴⁴ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Wilhelmina McLeay household, 1901 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 78, Lambton East, sub-district j-1, Village of Watford, schedule 1, p. 11, household 133, microfilm T-6476, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.
- ⁴⁵ "Wilhelmina Glendinning," International Genealogical Index v5.0, British Isles, *FamilySearch*, [Internet], (Salt Lake City, UT: Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints), accessed 10 February 2004, available from <http://www.familysearch.org>; Ian A. Glendinning, *Descendants of James Glendinning and Agnes Little: Fifth Generation*, [Genealogy Chart], [Internet], accessed 10 February 2004, available from <http://www.cults.freemove.co.uk/ancestry/glenfam/pafg07.htm>
- ⁴⁶ "Charles Stuart Pingle-Jean McLeay," [Marriage Registration]; "Pingle [*sic*] -McLeay," [Wedding Announcement], p. 1.
- ⁴⁷ "Pingle," [Birth Announcement], *Medicine Hat News*, 6 September 1906, p. 12. The Alberta Genealogical Society Cemetery Report lists his birth as "Sep 1905." "Pingle, Robert Warren (Sep 1905-08 Dec 1983) Cemetery Report," *Alberta Genealogical Society Master Databank*, [Electronic Database], (Edmonton: Alberta Genealogical Society), accessed 29 August 2001.
- ⁴⁸ "Pingle," [Obituary], *Medicine Hat Daily News*, 17 February 1911, p. 4; "Pingle, Charles Glendinning (14-17 Feb 1911) Cemetery Report," *Alberta Genealogical Society Master Databank*, [Electronic Database], (Edmonton: Alberta Genealogical Society), accessed 29 August 2001; Pingle Family Bible. The spelling 'Glendinning' appears as such on the Cemetery Report as opposed to the spelling 'Glendinning,' which appears on the County Marriage Register of Robert McLeay and Wilhelmina Glendinning.
- ⁴⁹ Canada. Parliament. Library. Information and Technical Services Branch, *History of the Federal Electoral Ridings, 1867-1992*, vol. 4 - Ontario (M-Z) (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, 1993), Windsor-Walkerville (1966-1987), p. 3.
- ⁵⁰ Saskatchewan Archives Board, *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory, 1905-2000* (Regina: Saskatchewan Archives Board, 2001), pp. 2.10-1, 2.13-34, 2.3-20, 3.3-2; Canada. Library of Parliament, *Senators and Members*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library of Parliament), accessed 29 February 2004, available from <http://www.parl.gc.ca/common/SenatorsMembers.asp>
- ⁵¹ Pingle Family Bible; E-mail from Pingle, 5 March 2003; E-mail from Pingle, 19 September 2001.
- ⁵² "Captain Pingle Passed Away Suddenly on Tues. Evening," p. 1.
- ⁵³ "Board of Trade Holds Its Annual Meeting," *Medicine Hat News*, 25 February 1909, p. 1; Chambers, ed., *CPG 1920*, p. 482; *Medicine Hat, Alberta, Canada: Natural Gas, Electricity, Coal*, (Medicine Hat: Medicine Hat Board of Trade, 1910), pp. 17, 23.
- ⁵⁴ "Patriotic Speeches Marked Event of the S. O. E. Banquet," *Medicine Hat News*, 30 December 1911, p. 1.
- ⁵⁵ "Jas. Fleming Pres. of Agric. Society," *Medicine Hat News*, 16 December 1911, p. 1.
- ⁵⁶ "Medicine Hat Rotary Club, 1918 [Description of Fonds, Medicine Hat Museum and Art Gallery, *M89.11.1]," *Access—Archives Network of Alberta*, [Internet], (Archives Network of Alberta, 1989), accessed 8 March 2004, available from <http://asalive.archivesalberta.org:8080/access/asa/archaa/>
- ⁵⁷ "Capt. Pingle Passed Away Suddenly on Tues. Evening," *Medicine Hat Weekly News*, 12 January 1928, p. 1.
- ⁵⁸ "Alderman Pingle Takes His Seat," *Medicine Hat Weekly News*, 22 December 1910, p. 4; Chambers, ed., *CPG 1920*, p. 482.



- ⁵⁹ Mervyn A. Brown, [Letter to the Editor], *Medicine Hat Daily News*, 24 November 1911, p. 4.
- ⁶⁰ "Looters of Hewitt's Hardware Store Are Now Behind Bars," *Medicine Hat Daily News*, 13 October 1911, p. 8.
- ⁶¹ "To Make Application to Change Charter," *Medicine Hat Daily News*, 6 December 1911, p. 1.
- ⁶² L. J. Roy Wilson, "Cultural Life in Medicine Hat, 1883–1905," *Alberta History* vol. 33, no. 3 (Summer 1985): p. 7.
- ⁶³ "Citizens' Band," *Medicine Hat News*, 25 March 1909, p. 1.
- ⁶⁴ "Curling Club Meeting," *Medicine Hat Weekly News*, 10 May 1906, p. 1.
- ⁶⁵ "Domimion [*sic*] Day," *Medicine Hat News*, 28 June 1906, p. 1.
- ⁶⁶ "Professional Baseball for the Hat," *Medicine Hat News*, 24 February 1910, p. 1.
- ⁶⁷ *Ibid.*
- ⁶⁸ "Annual Meeting of Local Liberals," *Medicine Hat News*, 11 November 1909, p. 1.
- ⁶⁹ "Annual Meeting of Liberal Association," *Medicine Hat Weekly News*, 5 January 1911, p. 8.
- ⁷⁰ Dennis W. Domoney, "Alberta Cavalry Officers of the Militia List 1901–1914 (Continued from Vol. 28, no. 4)," *Relatively Speaking: Alberta Genealogical Society* vol. 29, no. 1 (February 2001): p. 43; Canada. Department of National Defence, [Personnel File of Capt. C. S. Pingle], Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa, RG 150, 1992–93/166, p. 19, box 7842-48.
- ⁷¹ Philip H. Morris, ed., *The Canadian Patriotic Fund: A Record of Its Activities from 1914 to 1919* (Ottawa: Canadian Patriotic Fund, 1930), p. 69.
- ⁷² Canada. Department of National Defence, [Personnel File of Capt. C. S. Pingle].
- ⁷³ *An Act to Amend The Election Act respecting Members of the Legislative Assembly on Active Service*, S.A. 1917, c. 38.
- ⁷⁴ Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report on Alberta Elections 1905–1982* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1983), p. 6.
- ⁷⁵ "Capt. Pingle is 1st Vice Pres. of Veterans," *Medicine Hat News*, 10 May 1917, p. 1.
- ⁷⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 4th Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. XVI, 17 February 1920, p. 7.
- ⁷⁷ "Capt. Pingle Ex-Speaker of House Passes," *Edmonton Journal*, 11 January 1928, p. 1.
- ⁷⁸ *Alberta Election Act*, S.A. 1909, c. 3, s. 9; *Legislative Assembly of Alberta Act*, S.A. 1909, c. 2, s. 17; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 4th Legislature, 3rd Session*, 24 February 1920, p. 15.
- ⁷⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 4th Legislature, 3rd Session*, 25 February 1920, p. 16.
- ⁸⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, "Memorandum by the Legislative Assembly of Alberta," *Parliamentary Privilege—First Report*, [Internet], (London: United Kingdom Parliament, 1999), accessed 10 February 2004, available from <http://www.publications.parliament.uk/pa/jt/199899/jtselect/jtpriv/43/43ap33.htm>
- ⁸¹ "Imperial Pipe Line Company's Bill for Incorporation Was Reason for New House Division," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 8 March 1921, p. 3.
- ⁸² *Ibid.*
- ⁸³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 4th Legislature, 4th Session*, vol. XVII, 9 March 1921, p. 78.

- ⁸⁴ "Hon. C. S. Pingle Again Receives Nomination for Redcliff Riding," *Redcliff Review*, 30 June 1921, p. 1.
- ⁸⁵ "Speaker's Chair in Legislature Goes to Pingle," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 6 February 1922, p. 12.
- ⁸⁶ Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report on Alberta Elections 1905-1982*, p. 177.
- ⁸⁷ Merrily K. Aubrey, ed., *Place Names of Alberta, vol. IV, Northern Alberta* (Edmonton: Alberta Culture and Multiculturalism, 1991), pp. 168-169. Pingle (locality) 73M/15-Bohn Lake; 8-80-6-W4; 55°55'N 110°55'W. Now classified as an unincorporated place according to Canada. Dept. of Natural Resources, *The Atlas of Canada*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Natural Resources Canada), accessed 28 January 2004, available from <http://atlas.gc.ca>
- ⁸⁸ E-mail from David Stewart, Archival Assistant, Medicine Hat Museum and Art Gallery, 14 May 2004.
- ⁸⁹ "Capt. Pingle Passed Away Suddenly on Tues. Evening," p. 1.
- ⁹⁰ Ibid.
- ⁹¹ "Popular Member Medicine Hat Dead," p. 5; "Capt. Pingle Ex-Speaker of House Passes," p. 1.
- ⁹² "Capt. Pingle Medicine Hat's Beloved Son was Laid to Rest on Friday," *Medicine Hat Weekly News*, 19 January 1928, p. 5.
- ⁹³ Ibid.
- ⁹⁴ "Pingle, Charles S (16 Oct 1880-10 Jan 1928) Cemetery Report," *Alberta Genealogical Society Master Databank*, [Cemetery Report], [Electronic Database], (Edmonton: Alberta Genealogical Society), accessed 29 August 2001.
- ⁹⁵ "Deaths: Pingle [Jean McLeay]," *Medicine Hat Daily News*, 7 September 1944, p. 4; "Funeral Notice: Pingle [Jean McLeay]," *Medicine Hat Daily News*, 9 September 1944, p. 4.
- ⁹⁶ "Capt. J. T. Shaw's Tribute," *Medicine Hat Weekly News*, 12 January 1928, p. 1.
- ⁹⁷ "The Late C. S. Pingle," [Editorial], *Medicine Hat Daily News*, 12 January 1928, p. 2.
- ⁹⁸ "Popular Member Medicine Hat Dead," p. 5.
- ⁹⁹ "In Loving Memory of C. S. Pingle," [Poem], *Medicine Hat Daily News*, 14 January 1928, p. 4.
- ¹⁰⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 6th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. XXV, 2 February 1920, p. 7.





Man of vision, thoroughly democratic



McPherson 1922-1926



Oran Leo McPherson's parliamentary career spanned the entire time in office of the United Farmers of Alberta (UFA) Government (1921–1935). He was the third Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and the first to have been born in the United States. He became, at the age of 35, the youngest person to hold the position of Speaker in Alberta* to date. McPherson was the first Alberta Speaker to have attended university.[†] On April 14, 1923, McPherson became the first Alberta Speaker to exercise his casting vote. After serving as Speaker, McPherson was appointed Minister of Public Works in the Cabinet of Premier John E. Brownlee (1925–1934), a post that he held for almost nine years. As Speaker, McPherson served with Premier Herbert Greenfield (1921–1925) and Premier Brownlee. At the time of McPherson's appointment to Cabinet, Premier Brownlee indicated that "the ministers [had] felt for some time that they would like to have the benefit of his advice in council."[‡] McPherson also served as a Private Member with Premier Richard G. Reid (1934–1935) after his resignation from Cabinet.

Family History

Oran L. McPherson, or 'Tony' as he was known,² was born on April 12, 1886, in Kingman, Kansas.³ He was the youngest of the five children[§] of William 'Taylor' McPherson and Eliza Jane Davidson.⁴ Taylor McPherson was born on January 31, 1850, in Scott County, Illinois,⁵ and Eliza on August 28, 1855, near Modesto, Illinois.⁶ They were married on March 23, 1873, in Macoupin County, Illinois.⁷ The ancestors of the McPhersons had emigrated from Scotland, settling in what was to become the northeastern United States in the early 1700s.⁸ As generations passed, they migrated westward until they reached Illinois and Kansas. Eliza Davidson's family had settled on the east coast of the United States in the 1700s and eventually migrated to Illinois as well.⁹

The McPhersons were members of the Disciples of Christ in Illinois.¹⁰ James Willis McPherson, Tony's grandfather, was an elder and deacon,¹¹ and his father, Taylor, was a choir conductor in the church, and a teacher and singer.¹² Taylor also farmed in Macoupin County.¹³ After his father died in September of 1887,¹⁴ when Tony was almost one and a half years of age, the family moved several times, eventually returning to the Modesto area, where his mother's family lived.¹⁵

Education

By June 1900, 14-year-old Tony was attending school and living with his mother at the home of his aunt and uncle, Rose and Oren Moffett, in North Palmyra, Macoupin County.¹⁶ Tony "was

* Two Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, Herbert C. Wilson (1888–1890) and James H. Ross (1891–1892, 1892–1894), were younger than McPherson's 35 years and nine months. Wilson was 28 years old and Ross was 35 years and six months.

† Dr. Herbert C. Wilson, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, received medical degrees from Trinity Medical School in Toronto.

‡ Marietta 'Myrtle' (b. 1874), Herman (1878), Everett (1881), Edwin (1884) and Oran (1886).



educated in the usual duties performed by children on the farm. Naturally, he learned self-reliance and business efficiency at a very early age."¹⁷ However, his mother believed in the value of an education,¹⁸ and consequently Tony's education "was above the average achieved by farm boys, consisting of rural, town and college training."¹⁹

Between 1902 and 1906, Tony worked his way through Shurtleff College and Academy in Upper Alton, Illinois, where he was enrolled in the Divinity Department.²⁰ He continued his formal education at the University of Illinois, where he studied agriculture.²¹ He excelled in debating and athletics.²²

By 1905, two of Tony's brothers, Everett and Edwin, had taken up homesteads in Alberta in the Thigh Hill district, near the future town of Nanton.²³ During a visit in the winter of 1906–1907²⁴ to these homesteads,²⁵ where he came to recuperate from health problems brought on by "too strenuous competition in sport,"²⁶ Tony decided to stay and take advantage of the "possibilities of the country," rather than return to school.²⁷ In 1908, his brother Everett applied for a homestead in the district on Tony's behalf. Tony became a naturalized citizen of Canada "as soon as existing laws permitted."²⁸

Marriage and Family

On April 17, 1908,²⁹ in Ashley, Illinois,³⁰ McPherson married Cora Lillian Farmer.^{†31} Cora was born in Florida in 1886, the daughter of Elmer L. Farmer,³² a "railway man."³³ Tony and Cora had met at the age of 16 while attending Shurtleff Academy in Illinois.³⁴ After their marriage, McPherson and his wife moved from the farm at Modesto to the homestead near Vulcan, Alberta.³⁵

The McPhersons had four sons. Both Eugene Lorraine (1914)³⁶ and Coran Lyman (1915)³⁷ were born on the farm in Vulcan.³⁸ Marion Moffett (1917)³⁹ and Donald Keith (ca. 1927)⁴⁰ were born in Calgary, Alberta,⁴¹ to which the McPhersons had relocated so that the older boys could attend school. During spring and fall school terms, McPherson travelled back and forth to the wheat farm, a round trip of about 240 kilometres.⁴² By 1929, the original homestead had grown into a farm consisting of approximately 1,900 acres.⁴³ McPherson kept this farm for the rest of his life.

Early Career

McPherson was very involved in farmers' organizations. He was an active member of the UFA,⁴⁴ president of the Vulcan Co-operative Company,⁴⁵ and in 1917, secretary of the first local board

* At the time, the laws required that one be resident in Canada for at least three years. *Naturalization Act*, R.S.C. 1906, c. 77, s. 13. Naturalization records from this time period are unavailable. Canadian Genealogy Centre, *Naturalization Records Held by Citizenship and Immigration Canada*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada, updated 11 June 2003), accessed 20 February 2004, available from http://www.genealogy.gc.ca/01/01020304_e.html

† Cora's sister Lucille married Oran's brother Edwin. Cora McPherson, "Oran Leo (Tony) McPherson," in *Wheat Country: A History of Vulcan & District* (Vulcan, AB: Vulcan & District Historical Society, 1973), p. 690; Barbara McPherson Krol, *Edwin F. McPherson*, [Genealogy Chart], (updated 12 September 2003), accessed 1 June 2004, available from <http://www.my-ged.com/db/page/krol/1795>

of the newly amalgamated United Grain Growers Limited.⁴⁶ He was involved in the formation of the Alberta Wheat Pool in 1923⁴⁷ and was elected to its Board of Directors at the first annual convention in November 1923.⁴⁸ Additionally, he served as director for the Vulcan district until January 1927⁴⁹ and director of the Canadian Wheat Pool from 1924 to 1927.⁵⁰

Political Career

McPherson's role in provincial politics grew along with the development of the UFA. McPherson was a strong advocate of the UFA's becoming politically active.⁵¹ In 1910, he became the first secretary of the Vulcan UFA local⁵² and in 1919, became the first president of the Bow River Political Association.⁵³ In July 1919, McPherson served as chair of the annual UFA convention in Calgary.⁵⁴ At that convention, McPherson was elected the first and, as it turned out, only president of the United Farmers of Alberta Provincial Political Association.⁵⁵ He had the reputation of being a "self-made man" who had the "ability to apply his knowledge of the practical problems of his own business to organization or to social questions."⁵⁶ The general election of July 18, 1921 saw UFA candidates elected in 38 of the 61 constituencies in the province. McPherson won his seat in the constituency of Little Bow defeating the Liberal candidate, James McNaughton, by a large margin.

As Speaker

In the First Session of the Fifth Legislature, on February 2, 1922, McPherson was nominated as Speaker through a motion by Premier Herbert Greenfield. Attorney General John E. Brownlee seconded the motion.⁵⁷ An unusual turn of events was the additional nomination of Dr. John S. Stewart, an Independent Conservative Member, made "in defiance of the cut-and-dried selection of the government,"⁵⁸ through a motion by UFA Member for Cochrane Alexander Moore.[‡] Moore was not opposed to McPherson's selection 'on personal grounds,' rather, he was trying to make a point about the process of the election of the Speaker.⁵⁹ The UFA philosophy that a Member was directly accountable to his or her constituents, and thus was independent of 'party discipline and cabinet control,' was in conflict with the practicalities of achieving common goals through parliamentary procedures.⁶⁰ Moore's attempt to break with the convention of selecting a Speaker was one way of conforming to the declared UFA election platform by not automatically supporting the candidate nominated by the Premier, as the usual caucus solidarity would dictate.⁶¹ Stewart declined the unexpected nomination, indicating that he had never desired to

* In January 1920, the United Farmers of Alberta Provincial Political Association was disbanded because the UFA itself had "decided to carry on political action and assume all the obligations of the U.F.A. Political Association." "U.F.A. Farmers' Parliament," *Grain Growers' Guide*, 28 January 1920, p. 7.

† McPherson was typical of the farmers who settled in Vulcan during this period. The majority of immigrants to the area were entrepreneurial English-speaking Protestants from Ontario and the United States who were early adopters of new technologies. Common economic interests in the community led to 'shared political aspirations.' Paul Voisey, *Vulcan: The Making of a Prairie Community* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1988), pp. 8–9, 226.

‡ This motion was seconded by Samuel Brown, UFA Member for High River.



become Speaker.⁶² The unprecedented action was front-page news as the newspapers declared that when the Premier nominates a Speaker, in this instance 'Tony McFearson,'* any departure from the traditional, very formal proceedings is 'very bad form.'⁶³ *The Morning Albertan* reported that Premier Greenfield appeared displeased with this unexpected break from tradition.⁶⁴ After Stewart's rejection of the nomination, Oran Leo McPherson, at the age of 35, became Speaker of the Legislative Assembly. McPherson had been participating for some weeks in 'daily training' with John R. Cowell, Clerk of the Legislative Assembly (1906–1923), in preparation for assuming the role of Speaker.⁶⁵ An *Edmonton Journal* article profiled McPherson just prior to his election as Speaker and noted that although he had no experience as a Member, it should be remembered

... that the people of Alberta last July voiced their preference for legislators who are not so accustomed to political life. New blood, new methods, more direct and businesslike means of approaching the problems of every day living are evidently desired by the electorate. If needed elsewhere, then why not in the speaker's chair?⁶⁶

The opening of the First Session of the Fifth Legislature was said to be the first time that the general public was excluded from the floor of the Chamber.⁶⁷ At this time, the Chamber was also renovated to provide a long bench directly behind the government caucus members, on which Deputy Ministers sat when they were required for consultation during *Committees of the Whole*.⁶⁸ The desk that ran along in front of this bench provided a demarcation that technically kept this seating from being on the floor of the Assembly.

The afternoon of March 2, 1922 was devoted to a discussion of parliamentary procedure regarding the circumstances that require a government to resign.⁶⁹ Two years earlier, on March 2, 1920, a motion stating that Members of the Legislative Assembly should be able to vote freely on any bill or measure without it necessarily resulting in the defeat of the government had been moved by James G. Turgeon, Liberal Member for Ribstone. Speaker Charles S. Pingle (1920–1921) had ruled that the motion was out of order, and it was dropped. On March 2, 1922, Alexander Moore, Member for Cochrane, raised the issue again by moving an identical motion. There was an extended debate on the issue. John R. Boyle, Member for Edmonton and Leader of the Opposition, strongly objected indicating that the motion was out of order for a variety of reasons, "the chief of which was that the Resolution proposed to interfere with the constitutional usages of the Crown."⁷⁰ McPherson ruled that the decision made by former Speaker Pingle⁷¹ relating to a similar resolution was not binding on him and then referred the matter to the Legislative Assembly for debate.⁷² An amended resolution, which was eventually carried, stated that "the Government should not in cases within the discretion of the Government, be bound to accept the defeat of any Government Bill or Measure as an occasion for resignation unless followed by a vote of non-confidence."⁷³ The principle that "each elected candidate is directly answerable to the organization in the constituency that elected him" and the resolution that only a direct vote of want of confidence could cause a government to resign were popular with farmers who had come to believe that caucus meetings and Cabinet control were undemocratic.⁷⁴ In practice, however, the caucus discipline espoused by the established parties soon came to characterize the UFA caucus as well.⁷⁵

* As pronounced by friends.

On April 14, 1923, McPherson exercised his casting vote as Speaker.⁷⁶ This was the first of only two occasions* in Alberta history on which the Speaker had to vote to break a tie in the Legislative Assembly. The issue concerned an amendment to a motion regarding the granting of rights for the “development of hydro-electric energy” to private businesses and the transfer of rights over all water power sites from the federal to the provincial government.⁷⁷ The amendment required ‘a special Act of this Legislature’ for the leasing of water power for the development of hydroelectricity.⁷⁸ A tie vote of 18 on this amendment required that McPherson cast the deciding vote. McPherson voted against the amendment, stating that since the amendment necessitated “in the future the advice of the Legislature for future action, voting against [it did] not finally defeat the object of the amendment.”⁷⁹



O.L. McPherson in Speaker's robes, Legislature Building (n.d.).

On February 14, 1924, John C. Bowen, Liberal Member for Edmonton and future Lieutenant Governor (1937–1950), rose to a point of order stating that McPherson as Speaker was omitting a prayer for His Majesty King George V and the Royal Family from his prayer at the opening of the daily sitting.⁸⁰ McPherson replied that “he carried out his duties in respect to the reading of the prayers to the best of his ability, and that he propose[d] to continue to perform those duties in a discretionary way.”⁸¹ Bowen would not let the matter drop, and the following day moved that McPherson “be instructed to read the prayer for His Majesty the King as set out in the Rules of the House.”⁸² The motion was seconded by John R. Boyle, Leader of the Opposition and Liberal Member for Edmonton. After the Assembly discussed whether or not debate on the motion could be adjourned, McPherson ruled the motion to be a substantive motion that could be adjourned. Brownlee moved to adjourn the debate until the next sitting day, February 18. McPherson was absent that day,[†] but returned the next, February 19, and read a statement, a part of which follows:

The considered interpretation which, as Speaker, I placed upon the matter of the Prayer as set forth in the Rules and Forms of Procedure was, that the Form of Prayer as therein set forth, consisting of four separate petitions, was not to be taken as the exact wording of the Prayer to be offered, or that the Prayers should be offered in their entirety. In, at times, omitting the second petition, I had not considered that there was any slight, either veiled or actual, to His Majesty, the King.⁸³

McPherson “had a reputation for bold (some said head-strong) action.”⁸⁴ While serving as Speaker, he was a ‘prime mover’⁸⁵ among the Members who were dissatisfied with the leadership

* On May 3, 1973, Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986) became the second Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta to exercise his casting vote.

† McPherson’s absence, due to “another engagement contracted some time ago,” led to criticism by the press and to charges that “a determined move is on foot to create the impression that there is a prevailing anti-British, anti-monarchical spirit animating a large percentage of the members on the Government side of the House.” “Speaker McPherson Stays Away from House Sitting While Govt. Frames Up Defence For His Act,” *Medicine Hat News*, 19 February 1924, p. 1.



of Premier Herbert Greenfield and who were seeking Greenfield's resignation.⁸⁶ George N. Johnston, Member for Coronation and future Speaker (1927–1935), was designated to invite Greenfield to a meeting with this group in the Speaker's Suite.⁸⁷ Ultimately, Greenfield did resign, and on November 23, 1925, John E. Brownlee was appointed by Lieutenant Governor William Egbert (1925–1931) as the next Premier.⁸⁸

As Speaker, McPherson served on the *Standing Committee on Railways* and the *Standing Committee on Agriculture and Colonization*.

It had been the practice for retiring Speakers to be presented with the Chair that they had used but, at the time of his election as Speaker, McPherson agreed to leave the Chair in the Chamber when he left office.⁸⁹ McPherson had two portraits painted commemorating his tenure as Speaker. Artist Harry Wohlfarth painted the original portrait in the *chiaroscuro** style. Wohlfarth wanted to represent McPherson "the Speaker" rather than McPherson "the Farmer" and to "make him as different as his stay in the Legislature was."⁹⁰ The artist later acknowledged that he did not realize how striking his portrait of McPherson would be in contrast to the portraits of the other Speakers, as he had not seen the other portraits. In 1990, artist Tag Kim painted the portrait now on display in the Legislature Building.

Later Career

McPherson was re-elected for the constituency of Little Bow in the June 28, 1926 general election and, on December 31, 1926, he was appointed Minister of Public Works† to replace Alexander Ross, who had tendered his resignation.⁹¹ In appointing McPherson to Cabinet, Premier Brownlee remarked, "I believe it will be agreed by all shades of public opinion, that he is the logical person for this position."⁹² It was reported in the *Edmonton Bulletin* that this move to Public Works made McPherson the first Cabinet Minister in Canadian history "to take office without the necessity of going back to the electors on his elevation."⁹³ McPherson moved to Edmonton at this time, and his family relocated the following year.⁹⁴

On June 19, 1930, McPherson was elected by acclamation in the provincial general election as another UFA majority Government came to power. In March 1933, McPherson's administration of the Department of Public Works was 'vigorously attacked' by Member for Edmonton and Liberal Leader William R. Howson.⁹⁵ The resulting legislative inquiry exposed, among other things, the fact that, in 1932, almost two-thirds of a total of 60 highway contracts were awarded without calling for tenders.⁹⁶ The UFA had always championed the notion of applying methods

* *Chiaroscuro* is an artistic style that uses light and shade to define three-dimensional objects. Paintings often begin in black and white with layers of colour to follow.

† Having accepted a Cabinet post, McPherson was ineligible to be re-elected as Speaker.

‡ McPherson took over only the Public Works part of Ross' portfolio. The Department of Labour portfolio was retained by the Premier.

§ *The Legislative Assembly Act Amendment Act, 1926* was assented to on April 8, 1926. The Act amended *The Legislative Assembly Act, R.S.A. 1922, c. 3, s. 17* by removing the provision that stated that if a Member of the Legislative Assembly became a member of the Executive Council, then the Member was required to go back to the electorate. *Legislative Assembly Act Amendment Act, 1926, S.A. 1926, c. 3, s. 6.*

of business efficiency to government. The lack of an appropriate tendering process appeared to go against the UFA's notion of 'business government'.⁹⁷ McPherson was eventually exonerated of wrongdoing by the *Public Accounts Committee*; however, damage had been done to his credibility and to the reputation of the Government. An editorial in the *Edmonton Journal* stated that "no department has ever in the political history of Alberta had to face a more searching investigation than that to which [McPherson's] was subjected a year ago last winter. The manner in which he came through this test was most convincing evidence of his administrative ability and integrity."⁹⁸

As Minister of Public Works, it was McPherson's responsibility to manage the relief activities in the early 1930s as unemployment rose in the province.⁹⁹ While relief was well-managed from a fiduciary perspective, its administration was bitterly criticized by organizations of the unemployed,¹⁰⁰ eventually making McPherson himself a target of criticism by trade unions and the unemployed.¹⁰¹ It was also under McPherson's administration that a review of the treatment of prisoners in provincial jails took place.¹⁰²

After McPherson's divorce in 1931,¹⁰³ the Liberal Opposition and the press attempted to focus public attention on McPherson's personal life and the court proceedings surrounding his divorce and re-marriage.¹⁰⁴ McPherson's divorce proceedings became a sensation in the newspapers* only later to be eclipsed by the civil proceedings against Premier Brownlee.† McPherson married Helen Gordon Mattern, ex-wife of a former aide-de-camp to Lieutenant Governor William Egbert¹⁰⁵ and daughter of Rev. M. R. Gordon of Ryley, Alberta,¹⁰⁶ in a small wedding ceremony on July 23, 1932.¹⁰⁷ Helen was an author whose fiction had been published in Canadian and American magazines¹⁰⁸ and who later became a public speaker on the Chautauqua‡ circuit.¹⁰⁹ McPherson had, by this time, begun to study Christian Science.¹¹⁰

In July 1934, the resignation of Premier Brownlee, prompted by the civil proceedings against him, led to the resignations of a number of Cabinet Ministers, McPherson among them.¹¹¹ The

* At the time, divorce was rare in Canada, and widely frowned upon. In 1931, there was a total of 700 divorces granted in Canada, 157 of those were in Alberta. James G. Snell, *In the Shadow of the Law: Divorce in Canada, 1900–1939* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1991), pp. 10, 36.

† In 1933, a civil suit was brought against Premier Brownlee. Charges were laid under *The Seduction Act*. In June 1934, the jurors in the case awarded damages to the plaintiffs, Vivian MacMillan and her father, A. D. MacMillan, but the presiding judge of the Trial Division, Mr. Justice William C. Ives, disagreed with the jury and overturned the decision. Brownlee recognized, however, that the jury decision meant the end of his career, and he subsequently resigned as Premier effective July 10, 1934. Brownlee continued to serve in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta as a Private Member until he was defeated in the general election of August 22, 1935. The MacMillans appealed, and in 1937, the Supreme Court of Canada overturned Justice Ives' decision. Brownlee appealed the Supreme Court decision to the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council, where his appeal was dismissed. Franklin L. Foster, *John E. Brownlee: A Biography* (Lloydminster, AB: Foster Learning, Inc., 1996), pp. 215, 222, 225, 258–262, 272–273.

‡ Teachers, lecturers and performers would travel across North America stopping in towns and cities on the Chautauqua circuit. A mix of education and entertainment, the Chautauqua was popular in the late-19th and early-20th centuries.



Deputy Minister of Public Works, Homer P. Keith, expressed the “genuine regret” of the staff of the government ministries at McPherson’s departure and voiced their appreciation for “the fact that those in his department always knew where he stood when a matter was under consideration.”¹¹²

On April 15, 1935, in a skirmish at the Legislature Building, McPherson struck Charles E. Campbell, owner and publisher of the *Edmonton Bulletin*. Campbell had corroborated a statement made at a committee meeting by the vice-president and managing director of the *Edmonton Journal* that the first mention of McPherson’s divorce proceedings in Edmonton newspapers were “at the instance of Hon. J. F. Lymburn, KC, attorney general, and in the case of the other paper, by Mr. McPherson himself.”¹¹³ In committee, McPherson claimed Campbell was not telling the truth and, outside in the corridor near the top of the main stairway of the Legislature Building, the two exchanged unpleasanties. The *Edmonton Bulletin* described what happened next:

As Mr. Campbell was withdrawing, Mr. McPherson suddenly struck him, high up on one side of the face. Mr. Campbell reeled and fell forward against a railing striking his head against a corner of a pillar as he fell, the blow having temporarily affected his sight.¹¹⁴

Campbell did not press charges.¹¹⁵

On April 17, McPherson spoke out against the press during debate on Bill 82, *An Act to Regulate the Publication of Reports of Judicial Proceedings in Civil Matters in the Province*. He said that the incident of April 15 had led to a ‘council of war’ by the Liberals, including Edmonton’s Liberal Mayor Joseph A. Clarke (1919–1920, 1934–1937).¹¹⁶ ‘Fighting Joe’ Clarke, present in the Members’ Gallery awaiting discussion on a Bill to amend the city’s charter, responded to McPherson’s charge by shouting, “You’re a liar! He’s a liar and he knows it!”¹¹⁷ Such outbursts from the galleries are rare in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta,¹¹⁸ and Deputy Speaker Charles M. McKeen, who was in the Chair, ordered Clarke removed from the Gallery for interfering “in the proceedings in a manner that constitute[d] gross disorder.”¹¹⁹ The Deputy Speaker later reported the incident to Speaker George N. Johnston.

In the provincial general election of August 22, 1935, the Social Credit Party swept to power, and all UFA candidates were defeated. McPherson lost his seat in the constituency of Little Bow to Rev. Peter Dawson, who would become the next Speaker (1937–1963).*

When McPherson’s career as a Member ended, his family returned to the Vulcan area¹²⁰ and became involved in local community organizations.¹²¹ In April 1936, McPherson was elected president of the Vulcan Board of Trade.¹²² In May 1937, McPherson and his wife moved to Kellogg, Idaho, where he had mining interests.¹²³ For several winters, the couple participated in lecture tours throughout the United States.¹²⁴ In a January 1945 speech to the Lethbridge Rotary

* This was the first time a future Speaker defeated a former Speaker in an election. The only other like occurrence was on March 14, 1979 when David J. Carter (1986–1993) defeated Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972) in the constituency of Calgary-Millican.

Club, McPherson called upon Canadians and Americans “to understand each other and to get away from anything petty or mean in their relationships with each other.”¹²⁵ The McPhersons lived in Vancouver, British Columbia, from August 1948¹²⁶ until February 1949, when they moved to Victoria.¹²⁷

Community Activities and Personal Interests

McPherson made a hobby of inventing mechanical labour-saving devices.¹²⁸ When he first settled in Alberta, McPherson brought with him the necessary supplies so he could rig up a ‘barbed-wire’ telephone system between neighbouring farms.¹²⁹ As well, he contributed to the life of his community, serving as a member of the first Board of Managers of the Vulcan Presbyterian Church,¹³⁰ participating in the drama club¹³¹ and joining the International Order of Odd Fellows.¹³² McPherson was also a hunter. In 1928, during his tenure as Minister of Public Works, McPherson went hunting as a way of getting away from lobbyists. When asked about his interest in moose hunting, he replied, “Well, there’s one thing certain about a moose, that appeals greatly to me—he isn’t likely to turn around and bring in a whole delegation from Moose lodge number 319 insisting that the government provide him with a graveled road to and from the nearest railway station to facilitate hauling him to market.”¹³³

Death

Just three months after moving to Victoria, British Columbia, Oran Leo McPherson died of myocarditis, at age 63, on May 23, 1949, at the Empress Hotel.¹³⁴ He was buried on May 26 in the Royal Oak Burial Park in Victoria.¹³⁵

Fonds

Fonds regarding the McPherson court cases are located at City of Edmonton Archives.

Tributes

At various times throughout his life, McPherson was lauded as a man of vision,¹³⁶ ‘thoroughly democratic’¹³⁷ and an ‘able legislator.’¹³⁸ He was characterized as a man of unwavering determination. As a “deep student of questions of the day,” his beliefs led “him to a definite line of action, and from this course of action he [was] not easily led.”¹³⁹ Robert Barrowman, former mayor of Lethbridge (1928–1934), who knew McPherson during his time as Minister of Public Works, remarked that he “had always found him fair, though when [McPherson] said ‘no’ he meant ‘no.’”¹⁴⁰ McPherson was said to possess “the faculty of winning the confidence even of those who [might] disagree with him.”¹⁴¹ As predicted when he first became president of the UFA Political Association, his was a life of ‘useful service.’¹⁴²



Notes

- ¹ "McPherson Minister of Public Works: Ross to be Dirt Farmer," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 31 December 1926, p. 19.
- ² Lillie Young McKinney, "New Speaker of Provincial House is University Graduate and Very Successful Farmer," *Edmonton Journal*, 31 December 1921, p. 3.
- ³ British Columbia. Dept. of Health and Welfare. Division of Vital Statistics, "Oran Leo McPherson," Victoria, 26 May 1949, no. 49-09-005399, [Death Registration].
- ⁴ A. Leopold Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1935 ed. (Ottawa: Publication Office, 1935), p. 375; Barbara McPherson Krol, *William Taylor McPherson*, [Genealogy Chart], [Internet], (updated 12 September 2003), accessed 26 February 2004, available from <http://www.my-ged.com/db/page/krol/29>; Allen Mayer Davidson, "A Genealogy of Our Davidson Ancestors," [Genealogy Chart], 15 January 1975, p. 19.
- ⁵ Krol, *William Taylor McPherson*, [Genealogy Chart], [Internet].
- ⁶ Davidson, "A Genealogy of Our Davidson Ancestors," p. 19.
- ⁷ Illinois State Archives, "William T McPherson—Eliza J Davidson," Macoupin County, 23 March 1873, no. 7764, vol. 5, p. 91 [Marriage Registration], Illinois Statewide Marriage Index, [Internet], accessed 5 February 2004, available from <http://www.cyberdriveillinois.com/departments/archives/marriage.html>
- ⁸ Normandin, ed., *CPG 1935*, p. 375; Krol, *William Taylor McPherson* [Genealogy Chart], [Internet].
- ⁹ Davidson, "A Genealogy of Our Davidson Ancestors," pp. 12–16, 19–20; Philip C. Ellsworth, "Davidson Investigations: Materials Collected during a Search for the Ancestry and Family Relationships of Golden Davidson of Patrick County, Virginia," [Unpublished Manuscript], n.d., pp. 1–2.
- ¹⁰ Nathaniel S. Haynes, "Biographical Sketch of M. M. Goode," in *History of the Disciples of Christ in Illinois 1819–1914* (Cincinnati: Standard Publishing, 1915; reprint, 1997 Internet edition, James L. McMillan. Available from <http://www.mun.ca/rels/restmov/texts/nhaynes/hdcib/GOODEMM.HTM>).
- ¹¹ "Descendants of James Willis McPherson," World Family Tree, vol. 3, tree no. 4018, *Genealogy.com*, [Internet Subscription Service], available from <http://familytreemaker.genealogy.com/wftonline/>
- ¹² Ibid.
- ¹³ United States. Census Office, William T. McPherson household, 1880 U.S. Census, Illinois, Macoupin County, Virden, schedule T9-0232, p. 379B, *Family Search*, [Transcription], [Internet], Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, Salt Lake City, UT, accessed 13 May 2003, available from <http://www.familysearch.org>
- ¹⁴ Davidson, "A Genealogy of Our Davidson Ancestors," p. 19.
- ¹⁵ E. G. McPherson, "Everett G. McPherson," in *Wheat Country: A History of Vulcan & District* (Vulcan, AB: Vulcan & District Historical Society, 1973), pp. 686, 688; United States. Census Office, Oren Moffatt household, 1900 U.S. Census, Illinois, Macoupin County, North Palmyra, p. 142, microfilm 324, book 2, *Genealogy.com*, [Transcription], [Internet Subscription Service], accessed 24 March 2003, available from <http://www.genealogy.com>
- ¹⁶ United States. Census Office, Oren Moffatt household, 1900 U.S. Census, [Transcription], [Internet Subscription Service]; McKinney, "New Speaker of Provincial House is University Graduate and Very Successful Farmer," p. 3.
- ¹⁷ "O. L. McPherson," *Western Independent* (Calgary), 19 November 1919, p. 7.
- ¹⁸ McKinney, "New Speaker of Provincial House is University Graduate and Very Successful Farmer," p. 3.

¹⁹ "O. L. McPherson," p. 7.

²⁰ Ibid; McKinney, "New Speaker of Provincial House is University Graduate and Very Successful Farmer," p. 3; Shurtleff College, Annual Catalogues, 1902–1906, Southern Illinois University Archives, Edwardsville, IL; E-mail from Amanda Bahr-Evola, Southern Illinois University Archives, 24 February 2003.

²¹ "O. L. McPherson," p. 7.

²² McKinney, "New Speaker of Provincial House is University Graduate and Very Successful Farmer," p. 3.

²³ McPherson, "Everett G. McPherson," pp. 686–687, 689.

²⁴ J. S. Cowper, "Laughter Ripples In Courtroom as Letters Read Out," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 9 May 1933, p. 2.

²⁵ McKinney, "New Speaker of Provincial House is University Graduate and Very Successful Farmer," p. 3; "Speaker McPherson Succeeds Hon. Alex. Ross in Alberta Cabinet," *Red Deer Advocate*, 6 January 1927, p. 2.

²⁶ "Former House Speaker in Brownlee Ministry Since 1926 Now Retires," *Edmonton Journal*, 9 July 1934, p. 1.

²⁷ "O. L. McPherson," p. 7.

²⁸ McKinney, "New Speaker of Provincial House is University Graduate and Very Successful Farmer," p. 3; Canada. Dept. of the Interior, [Application for Homestead Patent, Oran Leo MacPherson, for SW 21 16 33 W4], 1908, Provincial Archives of Alberta.

²⁹ *McPherson v. McPherson*, [1933] 2 W.W.R. 513 (Alta. S.C. (A.D.)).

³⁰ "Mrs M'Pherson Relates Own Story: Drama, Pathos Mingle in Revealing Narrative," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 10 May 1933, p. 3.

³¹ Barbara McPherson Krol, *Oran Leo "Tony" McPherson*, [Genealogy Chart], [Internet], (updated 12 September 2003), accessed 26 February 2004, available from [http://www.myged.com/db/page/krol/1800;McPherson.v.McPherson,\[1933\]2W.W.R.513\(Alta.S.C.\(A.D.\)\).](http://www.myged.com/db/page/krol/1800;McPherson.v.McPherson,[1933]2W.W.R.513(Alta.S.C.(A.D.)).)

³² Normandin, ed., *CPG 1935*, p. 375.

³³ "Mrs M'Pherson Relates Own Story," p. 3.

³⁴ Ibid; Shurtleff College, Annual Catalogue, 1902–1903, Southern Illinois University Archives, Edwardsville, IL, p. 58.

³⁵ Canada. Dept. of the Interior, [Application for Homestead Patent, Oran Leo MacPherson, for SW 21 16 33 W4]; Cora McPherson, "Oran Leo (Tony) McPherson," in *Wheat Country: A History of Vulcan & District* (Vulcan, AB: Vulcan & District Historical Society, 1973), p. 688; "Mrs M'Pherson Relates Own Story," p. 3.

³⁶ Barbara McPherson Krol, Eugene Lorraine McPherson, [Genealogy Chart], [Internet], (updated 12 September 2003), accessed 26 February 2004, available from <http://www.my-ged.com/db/page/krol/1801>; Davidson, "A Genealogy of Our Davidson Ancestors," p. 20; "Eugene L. McPherson," [Obituary], *Mail Tribune* (Jackson County, OR), 28 April 2002, p. B2.

³⁷ Normandin, ed., *CPG 1935*, p. 375; *Book of Remembrance ... Second World War* (Ottawa: Veterans Affairs Canada), 1943, p. 193.

³⁸ McPherson, "Oran Leo (Tony) McPherson," p. 688.

³⁹ Normandin, ed., *CPG 1935*, p. 375; Davidson, "A Genealogy of Our Davidson Ancestors," p. 20.



- ⁴⁰ A. Leopold Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1927 ed. (Ottawa: Mortimer Co., 1927), p. 352; A. Leopold Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1918 ed. (Ottawa: Mortimer Co., 1928), p. 354.
- ⁴¹ McPherson, "Oran Leo (Tony) McPherson," p. 688.
- ⁴² James Henry Gray, *Talk To My Lawyer! Great Stories of Southern Alberta's Bar & Bench* (Edmonton: Hurtig, 1987), p. 106.
- ⁴³ Cowper, "Laughter Ripples In Courtroom as Letters Read Out," p. 2.
- ⁴⁴ Sir Charles George Douglas Roberts and Arthur Leonard Tunnell, eds., *The Canadian Who's Who: A Handbook of Canadian Biography of Living Characters*, vol. II, 1936–1937 (Toronto: Trans-Canada, 1936), p. 768.
- ⁴⁵ "O. L. McPherson," p. 7.
- ⁴⁶ Vulcan and District Historical Society, *Wheat Country: A History of Vulcan & District* (Vulcan, AB: Vulcan & District Historical Society, 1973), p. 33.
- ⁴⁷ Ibid; Alberta Pool, *Beyond the Drillbox: Serving Alberta's Farming Communities for 60 Years* (Calgary: Alberta Pool, 1984), p. 9.
- ⁴⁸ Alberta Wheat Pool, *History, Ownership & Government of Alberta Wheat Pool: Committeemens' Handbook* (Calgary: Alberta Wheat Pool, 1977), p. 4.
- ⁴⁹ Vulcan and District Historical Society, *Wheat Country: A History of Vulcan & District*, p. 33.
- ⁵⁰ Roberts and Tunnell, eds., *Canadian Who's Who 1936–37*, p. 768.
- ⁵¹ Franklin L. Foster, *John E. Brownlee: A Biography* (Lloydminster, AB: Foster Learning Inc., 1996), p. 132.
- ⁵² "Speaker McPherson Succeeds Hon. Alex. Ross in Alberta Cabinet," p. 2.
- ⁵³ Ibid; McKinney, "New Speaker of Provincial House is University Graduate and Very Successful Farmer," p. 3.
- ⁵⁴ "U.F.A. Political Convention," *Grain Growers' Guide*, 30 July 1919, p. 4.
- ⁵⁵ Ibid.
- ⁵⁶ "O. L. McPherson," p. 7.
- ⁵⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 5th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XVIII, 2 February 1922, p. 10; "Government Procedure for Election of Speaker Was Momentarily Halted," *Edmonton Journal*, 3 February 1922, p. 11.
- ⁵⁸ "Sidelights of the Session," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 4 February 1922, p. 5.
- ⁵⁹ Ibid.
- ⁶⁰ C. B. Macpherson, *Democracy in Alberta: Social Credit and the Party System*, 2nd ed. (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1962), pp. 75–76.
- ⁶¹ William Kirby Rolph, *Henry Wise Wood of Alberta* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1950), p. 100; Carl F. Betke, "Farm Politics in an Urban Age: The Decline of the United Farmers of Alberta After 1921," in *Essays on Western History*, ed. Lewis H. Thomas (Edmonton: University of Alberta Press, 1976), p. 180; "Group System Laid Down by U.F.A. Platform," *Calgary Herald*, 2 July 1921, p. 19.
- ⁶² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 5th Legislature, 1st Session*, 4 February 1922, p. 10.
- ⁶³ "Farmer M.L.A. Names Near Conservative Member as Speaker," *Morning Albertan*, 3 February 1922, p. 1.

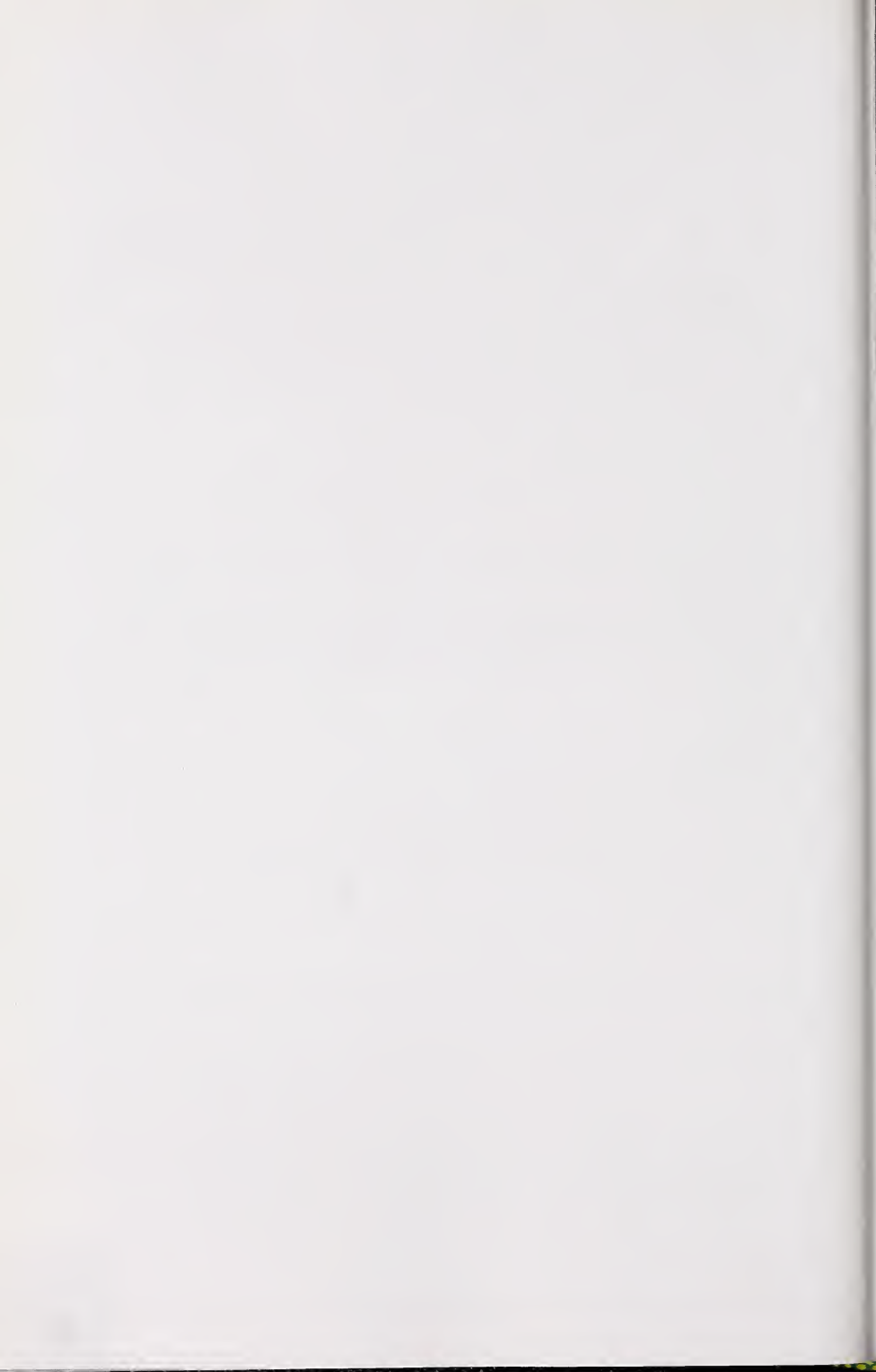
- ⁶⁴ Ibid.
- ⁶⁵ "Gov't Calls U.F.A. Members for First Party Caucus of Session Wednesday to Discuss Policies," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 1 February 1922, p. 12.
- ⁶⁶ McKinney, "New Speaker of Provincial House is University Graduate and Very Successful Farmer," p. 3.
- ⁶⁷ "Gov't Calls U.F.A. Members for First Party Caucus of Session Wednesday to Discuss Policies," p. 12.
- ⁶⁸ "Speaker's Chair in Legislature Goes to Pingle," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 6 February 1922, p. 12.
- ⁶⁹ "Government Is Not 'Bound to' Accept Defeat on Floor of Legislature as an Occasion for Its Resignation," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 3 March 1922, p. 3.
- ⁷⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 5th Legislature, 1st Session*, 2 March 1922, p. 60.
- ⁷¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 4th Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. XVI, 2 March 1920, p. 29.
- ⁷² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 5th Legislature, 1st Session*, 2 March 1922, pp. 60–61.
- ⁷³ Ibid., p. 61.
- ⁷⁴ "Group System Laid Down by U.F.A. Platform," *Calgary Herald*, 2 July 1921, p. 19; "United Framers of Alberta," *Grain Growers' Guide*, 17 August 1921, p. 22; William Kirby Rolph, *Henry Wise Wood of Alberta* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1950), p. 100.
- ⁷⁵ Macpherson, *Democracy in Alberta*, p. 80.
- ⁷⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 5th Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. XX, 14 April 1923, p. 165.
- ⁷⁷ Ibid., 14 April 1923, p. 164.
- ⁷⁸ Ibid.
- ⁷⁹ Ibid., p. 165.
- ⁸⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 5th Legislature, 4th Session*, vol. XXI, 14 February 1924, p. 34.
- ⁸¹ Ibid.
- ⁸² Ibid., 15 February 1924, p. 38.
- ⁸³ Ibid., 19 February 1924, p. 42.
- ⁸⁴ Foster, *John E. Brownlee: A Biography*, p. 132.
- ⁸⁵ George Johnston, Interview by Una McLean Evans, 20 January 1967, Glenbow Archives, Calgary, United Farmers of Alberta Oral History Project Collection, Tape Number: RCT-37.
- ⁸⁶ Foster, *John E. Brownlee: A Biography*, p. 111.
- ⁸⁷ Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.
- ⁸⁸ Foster, *John E. Brownlee: A Biography*, p. 116.
- ⁸⁹ "Speaker's Chair in Legislature Goes to Pingle," p. 12.
- ⁹⁰ Harry Wohlfarth, Interview by Lindsey Neville, 10 August 1989, Alberta Legislative Assembly, Office of the Speaker, Edmonton.
- ⁹¹ "Ross Resigns: McPherson Is His Successor," *Calgary Daily Herald*, 31 December 1926, p. 1.



- ⁹² "Speaker McPherson Succeeds Hon. Alex. Ross in Alberta Cabinet," p. 2.
- ⁹³ "McPherson Minister of Public Works," p. 1.
- ⁹⁴ Cowper, "Laughter Ripples In Courtroom as Letters Read Out," p. 2.
- ⁹⁵ Foster, *John E. Brownlee: A Biography*, p. 214.
- ⁹⁶ Ibid.
- ⁹⁷ Macpherson, *Democracy in Alberta*, pp. 230–233.
- ⁹⁸ "Mr. McPherson's Retirement," [Editorial], *Edmonton Journal*, 10 July 1934, p. 4.
- ⁹⁹ Ibid.
- ¹⁰⁰ Alvin Finkel, "Social Credit and the Unemployed," *Alberta History* vol. 31, no. 2 (Spring 1983): pp. 24–25; "Police Crush 'Hunger March' Here," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 21 December 1932, pp. 1, 6; "Demands Are Presented by 'Hunger' Army," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 21 December 1932, pp. 1, 3.
- ¹⁰¹ "Unemployed Strike Situation Remains Practically Unchanged," *Drumheller Mail*, 24 May 1934, p. 1.
- ¹⁰² "Former House Speaker in Brownlee Ministry Since 1926 Now Retires," p. 1.
- ¹⁰³ *McPherson v. McPherson*, [1933] 1 W.W.R. 321 (Alta. S.C. (A.D.)).
- ¹⁰⁴ Foster, *John E. Brownlee: A Biography*, p. 214.
- ¹⁰⁵ J. S. Cowper, "Mattern Denies Bargain to Supply Evidence: Wood Objects to Questioning; Court Adjourns," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 19 May 1933, p. 3; Gray, *Talk To My Lawyer!*, p. 106.
- ¹⁰⁶ Roberts and Tunnell, eds., *Canadian Who's Who 1936–37*, p. 768.
- ¹⁰⁷ J. S. Cowper, "McPherson Subjected to Cross-Examination: Minister Talked with Officials of Relief Dept.," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 17 May 1933, p. 3; Roberts and Tunnell, eds., *Canadian Who's Who 1936–37*, p. 768.
- ¹⁰⁸ J. S. Cowper, "McPherson Principals are Striking Contrasts," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 15 May 1933, p. 3.
- ¹⁰⁹ Helen Gordon McPherson, 195–?, Publicity flyer. Redpath Chautauqua Collection, University of Iowa Libraries, Special Collections Department, Iowa City, IA.
- ¹¹⁰ J. S. Cowper, "Wife Tells—'Impossible Situation,'" *Edmonton Bulletin*, 11 May 1933, p. 1.
- ¹¹¹ "Former House Speaker in Brownlee Ministry Since 1926 Now Retires," p. 1.
- ¹¹² "Staff Pays Honor to O. L. McPherson," *Edmonton Journal*, 12 July 1934, p. 13.
- ¹¹³ "Bulletin Publisher Is Assaulted by Ex-U.F.A. Minister," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 16 April 1935, p. 1.
- ¹¹⁴ Ibid., p. 5.
- ¹¹⁵ *Fury and Futility: The Onset of the Great Depression, Alberta in the 20th Century: A Journalistic History of the Province*, vol. 6, ed. Ted Byfield (Edmonton: United Western Communications, 1998), p. 319.
- ¹¹⁶ "Mayor Clarke Arouses Solons: Shouts Epithet From Gallery to O. L. McPherson," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 18 April 1935, p. 1.
- ¹¹⁷ Ibid.
- ¹¹⁸ "Mayor Clarke Debarred At Legislature," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 18 April 1931, p. 2.
- ¹¹⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 7th Legislature, 5th Session*, vol. XXXII, 17 April 1935, p. 254.

- ¹²⁰ "O. L. McPherson Quits Edmonton," *Edmonton Journal*, 26 September 1934, p. 15.
- ¹²¹ "Vulcan Board of Trade Officers Elected," *Vulcan Advocate*, 7 May 1936, p. 1.
- ¹²² Ibid.
- ¹²³ "Former Minister Moves to Idaho," *Edmonton Journal*, 20 May 1937, p. 2.
- ¹²⁴ "O. L. McPherson Dies at Victoria," *Vulcan Advocate*, 26 May 1949, p. 1.
- ¹²⁵ "Former Cabinet Minister Appeals for Better Understanding Among Peoples," *Lethbridge Herald*, 23 January 1945, p. 7.
- ¹²⁶ "Former Minister Dies in Victoria," *Daily Colonist* (Victoria), 24 May 1949, p. 19.
- ¹²⁷ "O. L. McPherson Dies at Victoria," p. 1.
- ¹²⁸ Roberts and Tunnell, eds., *Canadian Who's Who 1936-37*, p. 768.
- ¹²⁹ McPherson, "Oran Leo (Tony) McPherson," p. 690.
- ¹³⁰ Mr. and Mrs. Bob Jamison, "Vulcan United Church," in *Wheat Country: A History of Vulcan & District* (Vulcan, AB: Vulcan & District Historical Society, 1973), p. 131.
- ¹³¹ McPherson, "Oran Leo (Tony) McPherson," p. 689.
- ¹³² Roberts and Tunnell, eds., *Canadian Who's Who 1936-37*, p. 768.
- ¹³³ "Hunting Moose, Not Delegations," *Edmonton Journal*, 6 November 1928, p. 13.
- ¹³⁴ British Columbia. Dept. of Health and Welfare. Division of Vital Statistics, "Oran Leo McPherson," [Death Registration].
- ¹³⁵ *British Columbia Cemetery Finding Aid, Version 2*, [Internet], accessed 23 January 2004, available from <http://www.islandnet.com/bccfa/>; "McPherson," [Obituary], *Daily Colonist* (Victoria), 24 May 1949, p. 11.
- ¹³⁶ "O. L. McPherson," p. 7.
- ¹³⁷ Ibid., p. 1.
- ¹³⁸ "O. L. McPherson Dies at Victoria," p. 1.
- ¹³⁹ McKinney, "New Speaker of Provincial House is University Graduate and Very Successful Farmer," p. 3.
- ¹⁴⁰ "Former Cabinet Minister Appeals for Better Understanding Among Peoples," p. 7.
- ¹⁴¹ "O. L. McPherson," p. 7.
- ¹⁴² Ibid.





Uncoloured vision of the conduct of legislative matters



Johnston 1927-1935



GEORGE NORMAN JOHNSTON

George Norman Johnston, fourth Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, was the last member of the United Farmers of Alberta (UFA) (1921–1935) to be Speaker in 20th-century Alberta. Johnston's rulings declaring certain language unparliamentary were the first such reported. During his two terms as Speaker, Johnston was praised by Members from all parties "as one of the most capable members of the Assembly. ... [H]is sound judgment and keen sense of fairplay and fine personality won him the highest esteem of all members."¹ As a Private Member, Johnston served with Premiers Herbert Greenfield (1921–1925) and John E. Brownlee (1925–1934), and as Speaker, with both Premier Brownlee and Premier Richard G. Reid (1934–1935).

Family History

George Johnston was born September 13, 1884, in the town of Wingham, Turnberry Township, Huron County, Ontario.² George was the youngest of the 10 children^{*3} of William M. Johnston, a peddler⁴ and carpenter,⁵ and Elenor⁶ 'Ellen'⁷ Green.⁸ William and Ellen were born in southern Ireland,⁹ but were married in Canada West (Ontario) on January 10, 1861.¹⁰ They were members of the Church of England (Anglican).¹¹ On February 20, 1890, when George was not yet six years old, his father died.¹²

Education

George Johnston attended Wingham Public School and London Collegiate Institute.^{†13} He continued his education between 1903 and 1905 by taking teacher training at Model School, while teaching school near Listowel, Ontario.¹⁴ Johnston subsequently decided to move to Saskatchewan, where there was a shortage of teachers and the promise of better pay.^{‡15} He continued his teacher training at Regina Normal School¹⁶ and taught school near the towns of Melville and Watrous, Saskatchewan.¹⁷ Johnston later related in an interview that he believed teaching was the most useful thing he had done in his life.¹⁸

In 1910, Johnston moved to Alberta.¹⁹ He settled in the Chinook area on a homestead southwest of Naco, Alberta.²⁰ Clarke Frazer, brother-in-law of George Johnston, had already settled in the

* Catherine (b. ca. 1862), Amelia Eleanor (ca. 1864), William John (ca. 1867), Margaret (ca. 1869), Ogle Robert (ca. 1871), Richard Paten (ca. 1873), Isabella (ca. 1875), Henrietta (ca. 1878), Rosanna (ca. 1882) and George Norman (1884).

† In the 1901 Census, it was reported that Johnston could speak French.

‡ Many teachers came west due to the relatively favourable treatment by western school boards. The established provinces in central and eastern Canada had an oversupply of teachers in comparison with the West. Jean Barman, *Sojourning Sisters: The Lives and Letters of Jessie and Annie McQueen* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 2003), p. 39.



Chinook region, and Johnston's brother Ogle and sister Maggie and her family later homesteaded in the area.²¹ For the next four years, Johnston used oxen to break and backset* 160 acres a year, an achievement that he described with pride many years later.²²

Marriage and Family

On June 20, 1913, at Innisfail, Alberta, Johnston married Ada Catherine McDougall of Maxville, Ontario.²³ Ada was born on June 24, 1884²⁴ and received her elementary and secondary education in Glengarry County, Ontario.²⁵ The couple met at Regina Normal School,²⁶ where Ada had received her teacher training and where she subsequently worked as a librarian and secretary.²⁷ Her parents were Peter McDougall, a farmer,²⁸ and Ellen Robertson, both of Maxville, Kenyon Township, Glengarry County, Ontario.²⁹ Both parents were born in Glengarry County and were of Scottish descent.³⁰ They were married September 23, 1879, in Cornwall, Ontario.³¹ The McDougalls were members of the Congregationalist Church.³²

Ada McDougall was the second of seven daughters, all born in Maxville.³³ Her sister Violet, the executive secretary to four Governors of the state of Virginia, married the last of the four, John Garland Pollard (1930–1934).³⁴ One of the McDougall cousins, another 'Glengarrian,' was Sir Edward Peacock, Governor of the Bank of England and financial advisor to the Royal Family.³⁵

After George and Ada married, they settled on a new homestead in Wiste,³⁶ close to Loyalist and Consort, Alberta.³⁷ George and Ada had no children of their own, but raised a nephew³⁸ Harry Johnston (the son of George's brother William), until Harry joined the military and left for England.³⁹

Community Activities and Personal Interests

The Johnstons were actively involved in community activities. They helped to organize a UFA local.⁴⁰ Johnston became an active member of the UFA when he started farming, serving as vice-president of the UFA Co-op and president of the Coronation Livestock Co-op.⁴¹ Additionally, he served as president of the Silverdale Co-operative Society and as a member of the school board in his district.⁴²

Political Career

In a 1967 interview, Johnston indicated that he had "had no ambition for a public life at all."⁴³ He recalled that he "didn't like public speaking and had done very little of it ... [and] would have

* To backset is to turn back sod into its furrow after partial decomposition. For a description of the backsetting process, see: Kenneth Tingley, *Steel and Steam: Aspects of Breaking Land in Alberta* (Edmonton: Alberta Dept. of Culture and Multiculturalism, Historic Sites and Archives Service, 1983), pp. 5–8.

† Pollard also served as the Attorney General of Virginia from 1913 to 1917. A. N. Marquis, ed., *Who's Who in America*, vol. 16, 1930–1931 ed. (Chicago: Marquis Who's Who), p. 1783. Violet was involved in the Democratic Party of the United States and served on many National Democratic committees. *Ibid.*, vol. 29, 1956–1957 ed., p. 2049.

much preferred to have backed someone else for that nomination."⁴⁴ Johnston's neighbours, however, were adamant that he let his name stand for the nomination as the UFA candidate in the constituency of Coronation. Johnston enjoyed recounting the story of how a representative of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union (WCTU) questioned each nominee as to his stance on prohibition:

When my turn came, I said: I don't think really she wants to know my attitude toward prohibition; she wants to know whether I'm a teetotaler. She said: yes, that's what I want to know. So I said: all right; I have never been on a bender in my life, but I've taken lots of drinks. I thought the noise I heard was disapproval, but I listened a little more, and I said: that's applause. That remark of mine nominated me without any doubt. That made a politician of me.⁴⁵

Johnston subsequently won his seat in the general election of July 18, 1921 and ultimately served 14 years as an elected representative, filling the position of Speaker of the Legislative Assembly for nine of those years. He characterized his first Session as a Private Member as 'a unique thing,' as the UFA was expecting to have a small number of Members in the Assembly to represent agricultural interests, but, to its surprise, ended up forming the government.⁴⁶



UFA Members-elect in front of Lougheed Building, Calgary.
G.N. Johnston, middle row 3rd from left (July 1921).

After both Henry Wise Wood[†] and John E. Brownlee turned down the position, farmer Herbert Greenfield became the first UFA Premier (1921–1925).⁴⁷ The UFA's political philosophy, which was that the elected Member should be responsible and responsive to constituents as opposed to the party, did not function well in conjunction with its role as the governing party.⁴⁸ It became apparent that, in order to accomplish their goals within the Legislative Assembly, government caucus members would have to adopt more traditional parliamentary practices, such as caucus meetings.⁴⁹ Brownlee's legal training became increasingly influential in making the Members cognizant of the need to adopt parliamentary conventions.⁵⁰

* Johnston's admission that he was a moderate drinker may indeed have suggested that he was a good politician. Prohibition was becoming increasingly unpopular after the First World War for a number of reasons, including the return of war veterans, the continued supply of liquor and the cost of prohibition enforcement. See James H. Gray, *Bacchanalia Revisited: Western Canada's Boozing Skid to Social Disaster* (Saskatoon: Western Producer Prairie Books, 1982), pp. 30–39. A referendum on prohibition was held on November 5, 1923, which resulted in the repeal of the prohibition law in Alberta. Tom Monto, *United Farmers of Alberta: A Movement, a Government* (Edmonton: Crang Publishing, 1989), p. 31. Alberta was only the second province after Manitoba to permit public drinking. It did so well before most other jurisdictions in Canada. In May 1924, the UFA opened provincially owned retail liquor stores. Craig Heron, *Booze: A Distilled History* (Toronto: Between the Lines, 2003), p. 274; Gray, *Bacchanalia Revisited*, p. 42.

[†] Henry Wise Wood was president of the UFA from 1916 to 1931.

One of Johnston's most difficult tasks as a Private Member was approaching Premier Herbert Greenfield to request that the Premier resign prior to the next election.⁵¹ Although Speaker Oran L. McPherson was the 'prime mover' in a group of about five Members who believed that it was in the best interest of the party for Greenfield to resign as Premier, it fell to Johnston to alert Greenfield to the group's intentions in requesting a meeting with him.⁵² The meeting took place in the Speaker's Suite, and some time later Greenfield agreed to step aside.* Brownlee was appointed Premier by Lieutenant Governor William Egbert (1925–1931), effective November 23, 1925.⁵³ Johnston, who was one of three candidates for the constituency of Coronation in the general election of June 28, 1926, was re-elected with more than half of the votes being cast in his favour.⁵⁴

As Speaker

George Norman Johnston was first elected Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta on February 10, 1927, during the First Session of the Sixth Legislature. He was 42 years old at the time. His nomination, through a motion by Premier John E. Brownlee, was seconded by Oran L. McPherson,⁵⁵ Minister of Public Works, who had previously served as Speaker (1922–1926). Former Speaker Charles S. Pingle (1920–1921) "in graceful terms offered the newly elected Speaker his heartiest congratulations and expressed his best wishes for his success in the conduct of the affairs of the Legislature."⁵⁶ Johnston had only one week's notice of his upcoming election and later remarked, "I don't want anyone to look up my early decisions. I hope they won't be accepted as precedents."⁵⁷

As Speaker, Johnston served on the *Standing Committee on Railways* and later the *Standing Committee on Railways, Telephones and Irrigation*, as well as on the *Standing Committee on Agriculture and Colonization* and later the *Standing Committee on Agriculture, Colonization, Immigration and Education*.

In the Legislative Assembly on March 10, 1927, considerable furor arose over the controversial Northern Railways Bill. Member for Calgary and Conservative Leader (1925–1929) Alexander A. McGillivray mocked the government caucus members as "those members who flock into the little back room like sheep and take their instructions and cannot vote as they ought to."⁵⁸ He also portrayed them as "grinning fools when opponents offer arguments which they sincerely believe in."⁵⁹ Johnston ruled the comments to be unparliamentary.⁶⁰ In a related incident, Johnston recalled coming upon George Hoadley, Member for Okotoks and Minister of Agriculture, in the Legislature Library one Sunday looking through the dictionary attempting to locate a word that would "call a man a liar," but which would not be declared unparliamentary by Johnston. Johnston advised Hoadley that he would not find it in the dictionary.⁶¹

* The group wanted Member for Ponoka and Attorney General John E. Brownlee to take the place of Greenfield, but Brownlee resisted until Greenfield yielded. George Johnston, Interview by Una McLean Evans, 20 January 1967, Glenbow Archives, Calgary, United Farmers of Alberta Oral History Project Collection, Tape Number: RCT-37.

† This is a reference to the original intent of UFA Members to resist pressure to vote along party lines. Members were later compelled to vote as a caucus in order to keep the UFA in power.

During the 14 years that the UFA was in office, Alberta experienced two economic downturns: the first after the First World War and the second in the 1930s.* Having directed a rollback of 10 per cent in civil servants' salaries, the Members felt that reducing their own indemnities was the "only sporting thing to do."⁶² The Estimates of 1927 also cut the Speaker's sessional allowance from \$2,500 to \$1,500.⁶³ Oran L. McPherson, Minister of Public Works, was quoted as saying that he was glad that this reduction had not come during his tenure as Speaker.⁶⁴

On March 8, 1928, Johnston surprised many within the government caucus when he delivered a ruling against the Government. During the second reading of Bill 33, *An Act to amend The Workmen's Compensation Act (Accident Fund)*, Johnston allowed a motion by Alexander A. McGillivray to amend the Bill, specifically the section that dealt with a clause which would "bring the railway running trades under [the Act] and deprive them of their common law rights."⁶⁵ Former Speaker and Minister of Public Works Oran L. McPherson asked for a ruling that McGillivray's motion was out of order, but Johnston ruled that the amendment was in order. As a result, a recorded vote on McGillivray's motion was forced, despite the desire of the UFA and Labour Parties to avoid it. The following day the motion was defeated 53 to 4.⁶⁶

In the constituency of Coronation, the general election of 1930 was a closely contested race ending in Johnston's victory over the Independent candidate, Arthur M. Day, with 51 per cent of the vote. On January 29, 1931, during the First Session of the Seventh Legislature, Johnston was re-elected Speaker through the nomination by Premier John E. Brownlee, which was seconded by Vernor W. Smith, Member for Camrose and Minister of Railways and Telephones (1921-1932).⁶⁷ Johnston's election was met with a 'warm and unusual' response from the Members of the Legislative Assembly.⁶⁸

On February 26, 1931, Johnston declared unparliamentary some remarks made by Hugh J. Montgomery, Liberal Member for Wetaskiwin. Montgomery had insinuated that certain Alberta magistrates, having promised lenient treatment to those accused who pleaded guilty, then turned around and "double-crossed" and "soaked" them.⁶⁹ Referring to *Bourinot* and *Erskine May*, Johnston stated that "all references to judges and courts of justice and to personages of high official station, of the nature of personal attacks and censure have always been considered unparliamentary and the speakers of the British and Canadian houses have always treated them as breaches of order."⁷⁰ He further indicated that the correct constitutional method for lodging a formal complaint was through a petition "so that the person accused may have full opportunity to answer the charges presented against him."⁷¹ Montgomery withdrew his remarks the next day.

In March 1931, during the First Session of the Seventh Legislature, the Legislative Assembly of Alberta experienced what the press declared to be "the most sensational debate ... in the last decade at least."⁷² The issue centred on the sale of government bonds through a fiscal agency rather than on the open market. William R. Howson, Liberal Member for Edmonton, argued that selling through a fiscal agency was a far less economic option. Howson was harsh in his

* The UFA government incurred deficits for 9 of its 14 years in office. Alberta. Treasury Department, *Public Accounts of Province of Alberta for the Year ended March 31 1936*, (Edmonton: Treasury Dept.), p. 87.

censure of the Government of Premier Brownlee as well as of Conservative Leader David M. Duggan, whom Howson accused of being too restrained in his criticism of the Government because of “business obtained for his business firm [DM Duggan Investments Ltd.] from the government.”⁷³ In the heat of the debate, Howson referred to Premier Brownlee as a “slick politician”⁷⁴ and charged Duggan with “wooing notes motivated by business relationship,”⁷⁵ with “restraint in debate”⁷⁶ and with “deceit.”⁷⁷ In the first instance, the Speaker intervened, citing the rules of the Assembly for proper behaviour during debate, and Howson withdrew his remark about the Premier. In the second instance, with Howson denying that he had made these remarks and too much time having elapsed,* Johnston was unable to pursue Duggan’s point of order. The press praised Johnston’s handling of this heated debate, especially his ability “to exercise his individual judgment in an emergency and to do so promptly and courageously.”⁷⁸

On April 17, 1935, Edmonton Mayor Joseph A. Clarke (1919–1920, 1934–1937) was ejected from the Members’ Gallery.⁷⁹ The incident resulted from a controversy over newspaper coverage of the divorce of Oran L. McPherson (former Speaker and Member for Little Bow). In the Assembly, during debate on Bill 82, *An Act to Regulate the Publication of Reports of Judicial Proceedings in Civil Matters in the Province*, McPherson strongly criticized the press. He also charged that the Liberals, including Mayor Clarke, had targeted him.⁸⁰ From his position in the Gallery where he was awaiting the discussion on a Bill to amend the city’s charter, Clarke shouted, “You’re a liar! He’s a liar and he knows it!”⁸¹ The unexpected outburst, a rare occurrence in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta,⁸² caused Deputy Speaker Charles M. McKeen, who was in the Chair, to have Clarke removed from the Gallery for interfering “in the proceedings in a manner that constitute[d] gross disorder.”⁸³ The Deputy Speaker later reported the incident to Johnston, who indicated that he would “take appropriate measures to insure that there shall be no recurrence of such offence on the part of the person named.”⁸⁴

Once when commenting on the overall level of decorum in the Legislative Assembly during his tenure as Speaker, Johnston indicated that he was “very proud of the calibre of people that were in the Legislature from all sides at that period. Everyone seemed to realize that it was so important that the conduct of the Legislature and his own conduct should be such that people would have respect for ... the institution of Legislatures ... and that the word ‘politician’ should not be a term of derision.”⁸⁵

It is believed that Johnston was the driving force behind the establishment of Gooseberry Lake Provincial Park,⁸⁶ 12 kilometres north of Consort, and that he persuaded the government to buy the land in 1932.⁸⁷

Johnston did not run in the 1935 general election. At the UFA nominating convention, he and C. C. Wager were on the final ballot to contest the Coronation constituency. When Johnston spoke, he indicated that while he was still willing to serve, he felt that it was time for a change and threw his support behind Wager. Wager was nominated and received “hearty applause from the hall and Mr. Johnston.”⁸⁸ After the complete defeat of the UFA Government in this election, Johnston was one of the first to advocate that the party get out of politics and return to its roots

* Duggan raised his point of order the next sitting day after Howson made the remarks in question.

as a farmers' organization, focused on its original mandate of cooperation among farmers, and of exerting non-partisan pressure upon governments to respond to farmers' concerns.⁸⁹

On April 23, 1935, a motion that "the chair which Mr. Speaker has occupied in this assembly for some years with so much dignity and ability, become his personal property" was moved by Norman Hindsley, Independent Member for Calgary, and seconded by John Mackintosh, Independent Member for Bow Valley.⁹⁰ Johnston was thus presented with the Speaker's Chair. Premier Reid remarked that "it had been a great pleasure to sit in the house under Mr. Speaker's 'munificent autocracy'" and also conceded that "[n]ever in his life had he taken a rebuke and liked it better than when it came from the Speaker."⁹¹

Johnston remained vocal during the 1935 election campaign, openly criticizing Social Credit policies. In a speech in Coronation, he indicated that he took "great pleasure in addressing the people at this time—as he was not in the field for re-election and had a feeling of freedom not hitherto enjoyed."⁹² In the general election of 1935, the Social Credit Party won 56 seats, the Liberals five, the Conservatives two and the UFA none. This marked the end of the UFA's presence in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta in the 20th century.

Later Career

In the spring of 1936, after retiring from public life, Johnston returned to farming at his Broadview district farm.⁹³ Since depression and drought still prevailed in Alberta, Johnston decided to seed drought-resistant tame grasses for pasturing his cattle rather than to grow the native grasses on which his neighbours relied. This turned out to be a successful strategy, and the formation of the Crested Wheat Grass and Rye Club, with Johnston as its president, arose from the discussions of the strategy's merit. The Speaker's Chair became the chair of the president of the club.^{*94}

In 1940, after being approached several times, Johnston eventually agreed to run in the March 21 general election as an Independent candidate for the newly formed constituency of Acadia-Coronation.⁹⁵ He was still highly regarded for his abilities and experience, but the Independent Party, a coalition of former Liberal, Conservative and Unity Party members, was "without a known platform other than the desire to oust the [Aberhart] Government,"⁹⁶ and the Social Credit candidate, Clarence E. Gerhart, defeated Johnston by a slim margin.[†]

Johnston's wife Ada passed away in August 1947.⁹⁷ Eight years later, in 1955, Johnston moved in with his friend George McFetridge, who was also a widower. The two 'Irishmen' resided together harmoniously for 10 years, their home a gathering place for locals.⁹⁸ Johnston enjoyed travelling extensively in his later years, visiting the United States, Mexico, the British Isles, Europe and the Soviet Union.⁹⁹ In 1965, the requirement for surgery necessitated a move to Edmonton but, by 1967, Johnston was again in Consort, residing in a suite in the Consort Hotel and once more entertaining his friends.¹⁰⁰

* This Chair was used in the 1939 Royal Visit to Edmonton by King George VI and Queen Elizabeth.

† Gerhart received 2,297 votes to Johnston's 1,963 votes.



By 1974, Johnston had moved to Edmonton once more and was residing at the Parkland Nursing Home.¹⁰¹ At the age of 90, he still retained a keen interest in politics, as was evidenced by an interview that he gave in 1975. In this interview, Johnston said that he “still follow[ed] political life through newspapers and magazines” and proclaimed his admiration for former Prime Ministers John G. Diefenbaker (1957–1963) and Lester B. Pearson (1963–1968).¹⁰² He criticized the provincial Progressive Conservative Government for “trying to eliminate the opposition” and indicated that he himself would “be voting for an effective opposition” in the 1975 election.¹⁰³

Death

George Norman Johnston died in the Edmonton General Hospital from congestive heart failure on September 28, 1977, at the age of 93.¹⁰⁴ He is buried in the Lakeroad Cemetery in Consort, Alberta, beside his wife.¹⁰⁵ The funeral service was held at the Knox United Church in Consort with Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986) among those in attendance.¹⁰⁶

Tributes

Johnston was described as a very generous man who was particularly interested in financially sponsoring young people with strong aspirations for furthering their education.¹⁰⁷ He was well-known for his considerable “insight into world affairs” as well as for his “charming Irish wit.”¹⁰⁸ Johnston’s service as Speaker was highly praised by his colleagues. George H. Webster, Member for Calgary and leader of the Liberal Party (1930–1932), stated that Johnston “had brought to the Speaker’s Throne an infinite capacity for taking pains and a clear unclouded vision of the conduct of legislative matters.”¹⁰⁹

Notes

¹ “G. N. Johnston Will Be Speaker of Alberta Legislature,” *The U.F.A.* (Calgary), 1 February 1927, p. 6.

² “George Norman Johnston,” Ontario, County of Huron, Division of Turnberry, 13 September 1884, no. 012989, [Birth Registration].

³ 1891 Census shows nine children, but John Ratledge, nephew of Johnston, states that there were 10 children in the family. Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Ellen Johnston household, 1891 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 76, Huron East, sub-district g, Wingham Town, schedule 1, p. 1, household 2, microfilm T-6344, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa; Personal communication with John Ratledge, [nephew of George Norman Johnston], Red Deer, AB, 6 April 2003.

⁴ “George Norman Johnston,” [Birth Registration].

⁵ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, William Johnston household, 1871 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 26, Huron North, sub-district k-2, Township of Turnberry, schedule 1, p. 69, microfilm C-9933, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.

⁶ *Ibid.*

⁷ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Ellen Johnston household, 1891 Census of Canada.

⁸ Duncan McFetridge, “The George Norman Johnstons,” in *The Sunny Side Of The Neutrals: Stories Of Consort and District in Alberta—Canada*, ed. Bessie Smith (Consort, AB: The Association of Consort and District Seniors, 1983), p. 292.

⁹ George Johnston [sic], Interview by J. E. Cook and F. A. Johnson, 8 October 1971, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, 72.405; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Ealnor [sic] Johnston household, 1901 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 73, Huron (East), sub-district g-1, Town of Wingham, schedule 1, p. 1, household 9, microfilm T-6474, *ArchiviaNet: Census of Canada, 1901* [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), RG31, Statistics Canada, accessed 27 March 2003, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/02012203_e.html

¹⁰ *William Johnston-Ellenor Green Family Group Record*, FamilySearch International Genealogical Index v5.0, British Isles, [Internet], (Salt Lake City, UT: Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints), accessed 1 April 2003, available from <http://www.familysearch.org>

¹¹ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, William Johnston household, 1871 Census of Canada; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Ealnor [sic] Johnston household, 1901 Census of Canada, [Internet].

¹² *Huron Cemeteries: 3259 Wingham Cemetery, Concession 9, Lot 26, Turnberry Tp., Huron County* (Goderich, ON: Ontario Genealogical Society. Huron County Branch, n.d.).

¹³ A. Leopold Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1928 ed. (Ottawa: Mortimer Co., 1928), p. 339.

¹⁴ George Johnston, Interview by Una McLean Evans, 20 January 1967, Glenbow Archives, Calgary, United Farmers of Alberta Oral History Project Collection, Tape Number: RCT-37; McFetridge, "The George Norman Johnstons," p. 292.

¹⁵ McFetridge, "The George Norman Johnstons," p. 292.

¹⁶ Ibid.

¹⁷ Ibid; "George Johnston," in *Wind, Willows and Prairie Wool: 1867-1967, A Centennial Project* (Naco, AB: Naco Farm Women's Union of Alberta, 1967), p. 124.

¹⁸ Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.

¹⁹ Ibid.

²⁰ "George Johnston," p. 124; "Funeral Oct. 1 for Former Speaker of the House G. N. Johnston," *Consort Enterprise*, 6 October 1977, p. 1.

²¹ "George Johnston," p. 124.

²² Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.

²³ "A Quiet Wedding," *The Innisfail Province*, 26 June 1913, p. 2.

²⁴ "Ada Catherine McDougall," Ontario, County of Glengarry, Township of Kenyon, 24 June 1884, no. 034263, [Birth Registration].

²⁵ "Obituary—Mrs. George Johnston," *Consort Enterprise*, 21 August 1947, p. 1.

²⁶ Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.

²⁷ "Obituary—Mrs. George Johnston," p. 1; Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.

²⁸ "Ada Catherine McDougall," [Birth Registration]; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Peter McDougall record, 1871 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 74, Glengarry, sub-district c-2, Kenyon, schedule 1, p. 42, microfilm C-10,009, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa, RG31 - Statistics Canada.

²⁹ "Ada Catherine McDougall," [Birth Registration]; Royce MacGillivray and Ewan Ross, *A History of Glengarry* (Belleville, ON: Mika Publishing Company, 1979), map inside front cover.

- ³⁰ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Peter P. McDougall household, 1901 Census of Canada, Ontario, district no. 62, Glengarry, sub-district g, Village of Maxville, schedule 1, p. 9, microfilm T-6468, *ArchiviaNet: Census of Canada, 1901*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), RG31, Statistics Canada, accessed 10 February 2004, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/02012203_e.html
- ³¹ "Peter McDougall—Ellen Robertson," Ontario, County of Stormont, Town of Cornwall, 23 September 1879, no. 010163, [Marriage Registration].
- ³² Ibid.; Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Peter P. McDougall record, 1901 Census of Canada, [Internet].
- ³³ Maxville Historical Committee, *Maxville: Its Centennial Story 1891–1991* (Maxville, ON: Centennial Book Committee of the Village of Maxville, 1991), p. 631; *Peter Peter MacDougall—Ellen Robertson Family Group Record*, FamilySearch International Genealogical Index v5.0, North America, [Internet], (Salt Lake City, UT: Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints), accessed 27 March 2003, available from <http://www.familysearch.org>
- ³⁴ Royce MacGillivray, *Glengarrians in England in the 1920s: A Note*, Three Articles on the History of Glengarry, Canada, [Internet], (1 April 1999, updated 4 September 1999), accessed 1 April 2003, available from <http://members.tripod.com/~GLENGARRY/gleneng.html>
- ³⁵ Maxville Historical Committee, *Maxville: Its Centennial Story 1891–1991*, p. 630.
- ³⁶ "A Quiet Wedding," p. 2.
- ³⁷ "Funeral Oct. 1 for Former Speaker of the House G. N. Johnston," p. 1.
- ³⁸ Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.
- ³⁹ McFetridge, "The George Norman Johnstons," p. 293.
- ⁴⁰ "Broadview School District #2290," in *The Sunny Side of the Neutrals: Stories of Consort and District in Alberta—Canada*, ed. Bessie Smith (Consort, Alberta: The Association of Consort and District Seniors, 1983), p. 280.
- ⁴¹ McFetridge, "The George Norman Johnstons," p. 294.
- ⁴² "G. N. Johnston Will Be Speaker of Alberta Legislature," p. 6.
- ⁴³ Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.
- ⁴⁴ Ibid.
- ⁴⁵ Ibid.
- ⁴⁶ Ibid.
- ⁴⁷ Tom Monto, *The United Farmers of Alberta: A Movement, a Government* (Edmonton: Crang Publishing, 1989), [p. 27].
- ⁴⁸ Carl F. Betke, "Farm Politics in an Urban Age: The Decline of the United Farmers of Alberta After 1921," in *Essays on Western History*, ed. Lewis H. Thomas (Edmonton: University of Alberta Press, 1976), pp. 177, 180.
- ⁴⁹ Ibid., p. 181.
- ⁵⁰ Leslie A. Pal, "The Political Executive and Political Leadership in Alberta," in *Government and Politics in Alberta*, eds. Allan Tupper and Roger Gibbins (Edmonton: University of Alberta Press, 1992), pp. 12–13.
- ⁵¹ Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.
- ⁵² Ibid.

- ⁵³ "Brownlee Succeeds Greenfield as Premier," *Calgary Daily Herald*, 23 November 1925, p. 1; Betke, "Farm Politics in an Urban Age," p. 188.
- ⁵⁴ Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report on Alberta Elections 1905-1982* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1983), pp. 33, 38.
- ⁵⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 6th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XXIV, 10 February 1927, p. 8.
- ⁵⁶ Ibid.
- ⁵⁷ Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.
- ⁵⁸ W. A. de Graves, "Around the Corridors," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 10 March 1927, p. 1.
- ⁵⁹ Ibid.
- ⁶⁰ Ibid.
- ⁶¹ Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.
- ⁶² Ibid.
- ⁶³ Alberta. Treasury Department, *Estimates of Revenue and Amounts to be Voted for the Public Service of Alberta for Twelve Months Ending December 31st 1927 and the Three Months Ending March 31st 1928* (Edmonton: Treasury Dept.), p. 22.
- ⁶⁴ "Allowance for Speaker Reduced," *Edmonton Journal*, 16 March 1927, p. 7.
- ⁶⁵ "Speaker Johnston Rules Against Government on Conservative Motion to Strike Running Trades from W.C.A.," *Letbridge Herald*, 9 March 1928, p. 1; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 6th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. XXV, 8 March 1928, pp. 102-103.
- ⁶⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 6th Legislature, 2nd Session*, 8-9 March 1928, pp. 102-107.
- ⁶⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 7th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XXVIII, 29 January 1931, p. 8.
- ⁶⁸ "Speaker is Re-Elected Unanimously," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 30 January 1931, p. 7.
- ⁶⁹ "Wetaskiwin M.L.A. Retracts Statement About Magistrates," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 28 February 1931, p. 2.
- ⁷⁰ Ibid.
- ⁷¹ Ibid.
- ⁷² "Assembly Approves of Alberta Fiscal Agency: Howson Motion is Rejected; Premier Refutes Charges," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 17 March 1931, p. 9.
- ⁷³ "D. M. Duggan 'Deceiver' Howson Says," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 14 March 1931, p. 1.
- ⁷⁴ Ibid.
- ⁷⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 7th Legislature, 1st Session*, 16 March 1931, p. 130.
- ⁷⁶ "Two Edmonton M.L.A.'s Stage Brief Drama," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 17 March 1931, p. 9.
- ⁷⁷ Ibid.
- ⁷⁸ "House Fortunate In Its Speaker," [Editorial], *Edmonton Journal*, 18 March 1931, p. 4.
- ⁷⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 7th Legislature, 5th Session*, vol. XXXII, 17 April 1935, p. 254.
- ⁸⁰ "Mayor Clarke Arouses Solons: Shouts Epithet From Gallery to O. L. McPherson," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 18 April 1935, p. 1.

- ⁸¹ Ibid.
- ⁸² "Mayor Clarke Debarred At Legislature," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 18 April 1931, p. 2.
- ⁸³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 7th Legislature, 5th Session*, 17 April 1935, p. 254.
- ⁸⁴ Ibid.
- ⁸⁵ Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.
- ⁸⁶ McFetridge, "The George Norman Johnstons," p. 294.
- ⁸⁷ "Gooseberry Lake Provincial Park," in *The Great Lone Land: Consort's Fifty Years of Progress, 1912-1962*, ed. Betty Coulton and others (Consort: s.n., 1962), p. 41.
- ⁸⁸ "[Report from U.F.A. Nominating Convention, Coronation Constituency Association, 4 February 1935]," *Coronation Review*, 7 February 1935, p. 1.
- ⁸⁹ Johnston, Interview by Evans, 20 January 1967.
- ⁹⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 7th Legislature, 5th Session*, 23 April 1935, p. 314.
- ⁹¹ "Speaker's Chair Goes to Johnston," *Coronation Review*, 2 May 1935, p. 8.
- ⁹² "Social Credit Will Do Harm, Believes Geo. N. Johnston," *Coronation Review*, 2 May 1935, p. 1.
- ⁹³ R. Ross Annett, "The Grass and Rye Club," in *The Great Lone Land: Consort's Fifty Years of Progress, 1912-1962*, ed. Betty Coulton and others (Consort: s.n., 1962), p. 43.
- ⁹⁴ Ibid., pp. 43-44.
- ⁹⁵ "George Johnston Veteran in U.F.A.: Spent 14 Years as Alberta M.L.A.," *Calgary Herald*, 23 February 1940, p. 10.
- ⁹⁶ "The Provincial Situation," [Editorial], *Edmonton Bulletin*, 27 February 1940, p. 4.
- ⁹⁷ McFetridge, "The George Norman Johnstons," p. 293.
- ⁹⁸ Duncan McFetridge, "The McFetridges of Consort," in *The Sunny Side of the Neutrals: Stories of Consort and District in Alberta—Canada*, ed. Bessie Smith (Consort, Alberta: The Association of Consort and District Seniors, 1983), p. 138; McFetridge, "The George Norman Johnstons," p. 293.
- ⁹⁹ McFetridge, "The George Norman Johnstons," p. 294.
- ¹⁰⁰ Ibid.
- ¹⁰¹ John Barr, "Ex-Speaker Thinks Socreds Finished," *Edmonton Journal*, 25 March 1975, p. 6.
- ¹⁰² Ibid.
- ¹⁰³ Ibid.
- ¹⁰⁴ McFetridge, "The George Norman Johnstons," p. 294.
- ¹⁰⁵ Johnston, George Norman (1884-28 September 1977) Cemetery Report, Alberta Genealogical Society Master Databank, [Cemetery Report], [Electronic Database], (Edmonton: Alberta Genealogical Society), accessed 25 October 2001.
- ¹⁰⁶ "Funeral Oct. 1 for Former Speaker of the House G. N. Johnston," p. 1.
- ¹⁰⁷ McFetridge, "The George Norman Johnstons," p. 294.
- ¹⁰⁸ Ibid.
- ¹⁰⁹ "Speaker is Re-Elected Unanimously," p. 7.

Inspired confidence



Tanner 1936-1937



Nathan Eldon Tanner, fifth Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, had the distinction of being the first Speaker of the “world’s first Social Credit legislature.”¹ Tanner, who was known as ‘Eldon,’ became Speaker with no political experience. Tanner had presided over only 46 sitting days of the Legislative Assembly, the fewest of all Alberta Speakers, when he was appointed Minister of Lands and Mines.² It was in this Cabinet post that Tanner sponsored the legislation that led to the development of Alberta’s natural resources, including oil,³ and consequently paved the way for Alberta to emerge as one of Canada’s most prosperous provinces.⁴ “Never be afraid of work” was the advice that he once offered in an interview,⁵ and this creed guided Tanner’s varied career, which has been called “one of the strangest stories in the history of Canadian business.”⁶ As Speaker, Tanner served with Premier William Aberhart (1935–1943), and as a Cabinet Minister with both Premier Aberhart and Premier Ernest C. Manning (1943–1968).

Family History

Nathan Eldon Tanner was born May 9, 1898,⁷ at the home of his maternal grandparents in Salt Lake City, Utah.⁸ He was the eldest of the nine children* of Nathan William Tanner and Sara Edna Brown.⁹ Both of his parents were born in the vicinity of Salt Lake City,¹⁰ descendants of pioneer families of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints.¹¹ Tanner’s family joined the Church in 1832, just two years after it had been established, and have been members ever since.¹² The Tanner family tree has been traced back 12 generations to the arrival of one of Eldon’s ancestors on the *Mayflower*.¹³

Tanner’s father visited the Cardston area of the Alberta District, North-West Territories, in the summer of 1896 and “bought shares in the Alberta Land and Livestock Company [before returning] to Salt Lake City for the winter.”¹⁴ Tanner’s parents married in April 1897 in Salt Lake City and left for the Cardston area⁸ just over a month later.¹⁵ The newly married couple established their first home, a dugout reinforced with logs,¹⁶ southeast of the future village of

* Eldon (b. 1898), William Irwin (1900), Leroy Brown (1902), unnamed stillborn child (1904), Hugh Henry (1905), Lucy Lydia (unknown), Evelyn Edna (unknown), James Lynn (1911) and Beth (1913). Heath Nielson and Stephanie Nielson, *Ancestors of Heath Nielson*, [Internet], (South Jordan, UT: Ancestral Quest, updated 28 February 2004), accessed 14 June 2004, available from <http://students.cs.byu.edu/~heath/family/ancquest/aqwg72.htm>

[†] Nathan William Tanner was born in 1870 in Wanship, Summit County, Utah, and Sara Edna Brown was born in 1878 in Salt Lake City.

[‡] The followers of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints are known as Mormons. Latter-day Saints is sometimes abbreviated LDS.

[§] Tanner’s parents were Americans who became British subjects by naturalization. Canada. Dominion Lands Office, Application for Entry for a Homestead Patent, by Nathan William Tanner, for NE 4 2 25 W4, 1904, Provincial Archives of Alberta.



Aetna, Alberta.¹⁷ Later, expecting their first child, Sara returned to her parents' home in Salt Lake City to give birth in more comfortable surroundings.¹⁸ Six weeks after his birth, Eldon and his mother travelled by train to Lethbridge and then by wagon to the homestead. Even though the train was robbed en route, they arrived home safely.¹⁹ Tanner's father, Nathan William, was a bishop of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints and presided over the Aetna Ward from 1902 to 1918.²⁰ He was the postmaster in the village of Aetna from 1904 to 1908.²¹

Education

Eldon Tanner attended public school in a two-room schoolhouse in Aetna before the family moved to Cardston, where he completed Grade 10. His Grade 11 education took place at Knight Academy, a church school in nearby Raymond.²² At age 15, Eldon broke three fingers in an accident while herding cattle and straightened the bones himself before reaching medical help. This incident has been cited as an indication of the kind of 'spunk' that led to his success in later life.²³ Eldon worked at a slaughterhouse and at other odd jobs to finance his way through school.²⁴ He had dreams of becoming a lawyer, but they never came to fruition because of other responsibilities and the lack of financial resources.²⁵

Tanner enrolled at Calgary Normal School in 1918²⁶ and obtained his qualification to teach elementary school. In January 1919, he began his first teaching job in a three-room school in Hill Spring, 32 kilometres from Cardston.²⁷ Tanner served as principal of this school from 1919 to 1928.²⁸ During the winter of 1922–1923, he moved temporarily to Cardston, where he completed Grade 12 in order to be qualified to teach high school courses at the Hill Spring school.²⁹ To complete his teacher training, he attended summer school at the Universities of Alberta and Utah during the early 1930s.³⁰

Marriage and Family

On December 20, 1919, Tanner married Sara 'Sally' Isabelle Merrill* in Lethbridge.³¹ Sally was born on October 8, 1898, at Lehi, Utah,³² one of the 11 children of John Booth Merrill, born in 1866, at Addlethorpe, Lincolnshire, England, and Isabelle Elizabeth Gibb, born in 1870, at Newport, Monmouthshire, Wales.³³ John and Isabelle were married on December 20, 1893, in Salt Lake City.³⁴ The Merrills later moved to Magrath, Alberta, and then to Hill Spring. John was a carpenter and farmer who, among other achievements, built the staircase in the Prince of Wales Hotel in Waterton Lakes National Park, Alberta, in 1928.³⁵ Sally had attended Calgary Normal School³⁶ and was a teacher at the same school in Hill Spring where Tanner was the principal.³⁷ Their marriage was sealed at the Alberta Temple in Cardston when the temple was dedicated in 1923.³⁸ The couple had five daughters: Ruth Merrill (b. 1920) [Clifford Walker, Roy Doxey];³⁹

* The two had been acquaintances since Grade 11. George Homer Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service* (Salt Lake City, UT: Deseret Book Co., 1982), p. 21.

† In 1887, Charles Ora Card, son-in-law of Brigham Young, moved to the District of Alberta, North-West Territories and established the community of Cardston, the first permanent LDS settlement in Canada. The Alberta Temple was the first Mormon temple built outside of the United States. Geographic Board of Canada, *Place-Names of Alberta* (Ottawa: Dept. of the Interior, 1928), p. 30; V. A. Wood, *The Alberta Temple: Centre and Symbol of Faith* (Calgary: Detselig Enterprises, 1989), preface.

Isabelle (1922) [Willard Jensen];⁴⁰ Zola (1925) [Howard Rhodes];⁴¹ Beth (1927) [Grant Spackman];⁴² and Helen (1931) [Lowell Williams, Jack Beaton].⁴³

Early Career

In late 1927, Tanner was offered a teaching position at Cardston High School, where he subsequently served as principal from 1928 to 1935.⁴⁴ Finding that he could not support his family on his salary, which was often paid in kind or with promissory notes,⁴⁵ Tanner purchased a general store.⁴⁶ During the Depression, he sold suits and insurance policies in his spare time,⁴⁷ and bought a small farm to help feed his family.⁴⁸ The family also ran a small milk route.⁴⁹

Along with his strong work ethic, Tanner had a talent for leadership and a desire to serve. He was a member of the Cardston Town Council from 1933 to 1934.⁵⁰ Residents described him as being “one of the busiest men in town, serving as school principal, selling clothing and insurance, bishop of the Mormon Church, Scoutmaster, and councillor.”⁵¹

Political Career

By 1935, the Social Credit movement had become political, and representatives began to tour the province to explain the principles of its economic theory. Tanner, who had arranged a meeting place in the basement of the Cardston stake tabernacle (when the original meeting place became unavailable), was asked to chair the meeting. During the meeting, he found that he became ‘mildly interested’ in Social Credit ideas and agreed to be the chair of a new group formed to study these concepts further.⁵² Tanner was initially reluctant to enter provincial politics,⁵³ but found himself propelled by his concern for improving the condition of young people in the province.⁵⁴ He was also impressed with Social Credit’s economic proposals, which were aimed at easing the effects of the Depression.⁵⁵ Promoters of Social Credit in Cardston welcomed Tanner’s support of their movement and included his name on a list of potential candidates that the Social Credit leadership would be reviewing to choose its candidate for the constituency of Cardston. Tanner was chosen by Premier William Aberhart and his advisors* to run in the provincial general election on August 22, 1935, and went on to secure a convincing victory.[†]

* At two Social Credit conventions held in 1935, Aberhart convinced delegates to accept an unorthodox and ‘undemocratic’ method of candidate selection. There was a two-level nomination process. The local constituency organization would draw up a list of three or four possible candidates. Then a committee, led by Aberhart, would interview the nominees and make the final selection of the Social Credit candidate for the constituency. Alvin Finkel, *The Social Credit Phenomenon in Alberta* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1989), p. 31; John A. Irving, “The Social Credit Movement in Alberta,” in *Social Credit in Alberta: Its Background and Development*, ed. S. D. Clark (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1959), p. 130.

† Of the 63 Social Credit candidates who stood for election in 1935, four were Mormons. Of these, all, including Tanner, were elected in their respective constituencies: Solon E. Low (Member for Warner), Hans E. Wight (Member for Lethbridge) and James Hansen (Member for Taber). Also, of the 56 Social Credit Members elected, 24 held normal school or university degrees. George Homer Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service* (Salt Lake City, UT: Deseret Book Co., 1982), pp. 57–58.



As Speaker

On February 6, 1936, at the beginning of the First Session of the Eighth Legislature, Nathan Eldon Tanner was nominated as Speaker through a motion by Premier William Aberhart. The motion was seconded by Attorney General John W. Hugill.⁵⁶ Tanner had ordered a suit and robe from Toronto, but the clothing failed to arrive in time for the opening of the Legislature; “there was no consternation . . . , however, for legislature officials already had prepared for such an emergency by preparing a judge’s robe to be used as a substitute during the opening ceremonies.”⁵⁷ Tanner, who was 37 years old at the time of his election as Speaker, was thought to be the first Mormon Speaker in the British Commonwealth.⁵⁸

None of the Social Credit Members had any previous experience in the Legislative Assembly.⁵⁹ In fact, Tanner “had never attended a session of the legislature—and now he found himself moderating its deliberations.”⁶⁰ Tanner set out to excel in his new position and began studying the rules of order. His wife, Sally, later recalled: “We were given an elegant suite of rooms in the legislative buildings, to use as we liked . . . [however] only he and I knew the hours, day and night, that he spent studying parliamentary procedure.”⁶¹ During Session, Tanner was coached by the Clerk of the Legislative Assembly, Robert A. Andison (1923–1955).⁶² Leonidas A. Giroux,* Liberal Member for Grouard and a senior Member of the Legislative Assembly (1924–1936), often prompted Tanner with instructions on parliamentary procedure.⁶³

Almost immediately, Tanner was required to keep order in the Legislative Assembly between those Members who were hard-line Douglas† followers and those who supported Aberhart’s pragmatic and gradualist approach, which advocated caution regarding which Social Credit policies could realistically be implemented, given that matters of banking and currency were exclusively in the federal jurisdiction.⁶⁴ Thus, in addition to facilitating proceedings for inexperienced Members, Tanner also had to deal with opposition coming from within the government caucus itself. In response to increasing pressure from the Douglas supporters within his caucus to move more aggressively towards the implementation of Social Credit policy, Aberhart introduced legislation that would increase his Government’s control over banking.⁶⁵ This was opposed by a number of Cabinet Ministers who, despite their concerns with Social Credit monetary policies, had been recruited by Aberhart for their expertise and their stature within the community.⁶⁶ Tanner had to mediate some difficult Sessions in the Legislative

* Giroux was the first Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta to campaign by airplane. “L. A. Giroux, K.C., Dies in Rochester,” *Edmonton Journal*, 7 September 1938, p. 2.

† Major Clifford H. Douglas was a Scottish engineer who developed a theory that economic depression was a result of faulty monetary policy. Douglas was a capitalist who opposed the concept of the redistribution of wealth advocated by socialist reformers. He believed that an insufficient money supply undermined the market economy. In order to address these economic problems, Douglas proposed that every citizen receive dividends calculated on the basis of the nation’s real wealth, and/or that price discounts on products be invoked. He also declared that a just price for all goods must be established. Bob Hesketh, *Major Douglas and Alberta Social Credit* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1997), p. 33.

‡ *The Reduction and Settlement of Debts Act*, S.A. 1936 (2nd Sess.), c. 2 and *The Debt Adjustment Act*, 1936, S.A. 1936 (2nd Sess.), c. 3 were both passed in the Second Session of the Eighth Legislature.

Assembly in which both Opposition Members and the more moderate group within the Social Credit caucus argued that the Government's proposed legislation was unconstitutional.⁶⁷

On March 16, 1936, Tanner ruled that the use of the words 'camouflage' and 'deception' were unparliamentary.⁶⁸

Members of the Legislative Assembly were enthusiastic in their praise of Tanner's performance in the role of Speaker. Provincial Secretary and future Premier Ernest C. Manning observed that Tanner was "an excellent Speaker. He was completely fair and scrupulously careful not to be biased to one side or the other. He inspired confidence. I would say he was one of our best Speakers."⁶⁹

When the Social Credit League* purchased the *Calgary Albertan* in 1936, Tanner was responsible for overseeing the sale of the newspaper's stock to the public.⁷⁰ Tanner had warned Aberhart of the general lack of availability of investment money, but Aberhart persisted. Time proved Tanner right, and by 1939, the paper had returned to its original ownership, forcing Aberhart "to think of other ways of obtaining 'fair' news coverage."⁷¹

At the close of each Session of the Legislative Assembly, Tanner would return to Cardston to teach school. He also retained his position as bishop of the Cardston First Ward and would drive the 523 kilometres to Cardston on weekends to take care of ward business.⁷²

While Speaker, Tanner served on the *Standing Committee on Agriculture, Colonization, Immigration and Education* and the *Standing Committee on Railways, Telephones and Irrigation*.

Later Political Career

After only two Sessions as Speaker,[†] Tanner resigned on January 5, 1937, when Premier Aberhart appointed him as Minister of Lands and Mines to replace Charles C. Ross.⁷³ Ross' resignation from Cabinet was described as "the first break in the ranks of the Social Credit cabinet since it took office on September 3, 1935."⁷⁴ Although hesitant at first to accept the Cabinet appointment,⁷⁵ Tanner later admitted that he felt more comfortable out of the Speaker's Chair.⁷⁶ Because of the brevity of his term as Speaker, Tanner had no opportunity to host any royal visits. However, during the 1939 visit of King George VI and Queen Elizabeth, he attended, as a member of Cabinet, the formal dinner held at the Hotel Macdonald.⁷⁷ After Tanner's appointment to Cabinet, his family moved to Edmonton and lived there until 1952.⁷⁸

Tanner was returned to the Legislative Assembly for the constituency of Cardston in the general elections of 1940, 1944 and 1948. His most notable contributions to the province were made

* The Social Credit League grew out of the grassroots groups initially formed to study Social Credit. As the number of groups increased, a central council was established in Calgary, Alberta, with representatives from each study group. It was from this council that the political party sprang. Finkel, *The Social Credit Phenomenon in Alberta*, pp. 30–31.

† Tanner was Speaker for the First Session (February 6, 1936–April 7, 1936) and Second Session (August 25, 1936–September 1, 1936) of the Eighth Legislature.



during the 15 years (1937–1952) in which he held the Cabinet portfolio of Lands and Mines (later Mines and Minerals), as he played a central role in the development of Alberta's fledgling oil and gas industry. Tanner conceived "an enlightened conservation policy," and the province moved from its bankrupt state in the 1930s to the position of one of Canada's wealthiest provinces by the 1950s.⁷⁹ In 1936, Tanner toured the United Kingdom to attract capital investment⁸⁰ and was instrumental in the negotiations with the federal government which led to the 1938 supplemental agreement* that "for the first time [gave] the Alberta government ... indisputable authority over [its natural] resources."⁸¹ Tanner served as Chair of the Alberta Post-War Reconstruction Committee[†] in 1943 and 1944⁸² and as Chair of the Alberta Research Council in 1946 and 1947.⁸³

Tanner was present on February 13, 1947 when Leduc No. 1 struck oil, and he had the honour of turning the valve that directed the first surge of oil into the storage tanks.⁸⁴ From July 4 to 7, 1949, a Special Session of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta was convened to pass legislation dealing with the development of oil and natural gas resources. Tanner introduced five of the eight bills that were passed.⁸⁵ Alfred J. Hooke, Member for Rocky Mountain House, remarked that Tanner was viewed "almost as a miracle worker, as hundreds of millions of dollars poured into the Provincial coffers."⁸⁶ It was also under Tanner's guidance that the Eastern Rockies Forest Conservation Board was established.⁸⁷ The Act that created the Board was an agreement between the Dominion and Alberta Governments to protect forests and watersheds on the eastern slope of the Rockies.

Hooke remarked that Tanner did not seem to be a true adherent to Social Credit philosophy. More than once, Hooke "actually cringed as [he] listened to [Tanner's] espousal of programs [that were] at complete variance with Social Credit ideas, while being labelled by [Tanner] as Social Credit."⁸⁸

In 1949, Tanner's portfolio was split into the Ministry of Lands and Forests and the Ministry of Mines and Minerals, and he continued to oversee both departments. He worked diligently to benefit all Albertans, indicating that "he wished the legislature were more concerned with the welfare of the people and less concerned with politics."⁸⁹

As early as 1947, Tanner's journals show that, although he was contemplating retirement from politics, he had also turned down "some tempting offers from private firms."⁹⁰ When Tanner left politics in 1952, he moved to Calgary. In his farewell speech to the staff of his two departments, Tanner said, "I would ask you to remember that the service we give is the price we pay for the

* Although rights to natural resources were transferred to Alberta in 1930, it was an amending Act in 1938 that removed any doubts as to the rights of the province in regard to water and water power. *Alberta Natural Resources Act*, S.C. 1930, c. 3; *Natural Resources Transfer (Amendment) Act*, S.C. 1938, c. 36.

† The *Alberta Post-War Reconstruction Committee* was established in 1943 and dissolved in 1945. *Post-War Reconstruction Act*, S.A. 1943, c. 8; *Department of Economic Affairs Act*, S.A. 1945, c. 2, s. 10. Its purpose was to recommend strategies for making the transition from a war-time to a peace-time economy and for re-absorbing returning soldiers into the province.

privilege of living in this world. The type of service we give will determine the kind of world we live in.⁹⁹ It was during his tenure as a Cabinet Minister that Tanner earned the nickname 'Mr. Integrity.'⁹²

Later Career

Over the next eight years, Tanner held positions with many private companies, including Merrill Petroleums Limited (president and chair of the board), Sturdie Propane Limited (director), Toronto-Dominion Bank (director), Page-Hersey Tubes Limited (director), Watrous Equipment Limited (director), Jenkins Groceteria Limited (director), Alberta Gas Trunk Line Company (director), Inland Cement Company Limited (director), Alberta Yrongo Manufacturing Company Limited (director), National Trust Company (member of the Advisory Board)⁹³ and Canadian Gas Association (president).⁹⁴ When Tanner joined the Board of Directors of the Dominion Bank (now TD Canada Trust) in 1953, former Social Credit colleagues, including Premier Manning, were mystified as to how he was able to reconcile Social Credit philosophy, which fervently opposed the existing banking system, with his acceptance of the position.⁹⁵ Tanner also served on the Board of Governors of the University of Alberta from 1959 to 1961.⁹⁶



Dedication of Boy Scouts' Hall, Calgary. N.E. Tanner, Provincial Scout Commissioner, at microphone (Nov. 1948).

In March 1954, Tanner became president of Trans-Canada Pipelines Limited⁹⁷ and directed the construction of a \$350 million, 3,200 kilometre pipeline from Edmonton to Montreal.⁹⁸ In early 1957, Tanner exercised his stock options and made almost \$1 million.⁹⁹ In October 1957, the federal government created the Borden Commission to review the increasingly important energy industry in Canada. Among the instructions provided to the Commission was that "an investigation be made now into a number of questions relating to sources of energy in order to assist in determining the principles and procedures to be applied in the administration of certain aspects of energy policy."¹⁰⁰ In October 1958, the first report of the Commission suggested that Tanner should have shown better judgment in regard to exercising his Trans-Canada stock options after the federal government pledged financial assistance to the project.¹⁰¹ Although Tanner resigned as chair of Trans-Canada Pipelines Limited in December 1958,¹⁰² he remained a director until 1961.¹⁰³ When he addressed Toronto's Empire Club in 1958, Tanner became the only person to have held the position of Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta to do so.¹⁰⁴ The topic of Tanner's speech was the benefits of the pipeline both to Canada and to North America as a whole.

The Mormon Church played a very significant role in Tanner's life. He was bishop, Cardston Ward; president of the Edmonton Stake; and president of the Calgary Stake prior to making the Church his full-time occupation in 1960.¹⁰⁵ At that time, Tanner moved to Salt Lake City and became a general authority of the Church when he was called as an assistant to the Quorum of the Twelve Apostles, the advisory body to the First Presidency.¹⁰⁶ In October 1962, he was ordained an apostle and became a member of the Council of the Twelve Apostles.¹⁰⁷ From 1961 to 1963, he was president of the West European Mission in England.¹⁰⁸ Upon his return, he



served as president of the Genealogical Society.¹⁰⁹ In 1963, he was called as a second counselor in the First Presidency, and in 1972, he was called as a first counselor.¹¹⁰ Tanner's business and financial skills were described in 1982 as very "important to the church over the last two decades, when the faith's membership tripled to more than five million from 1.7 million in 1960."¹¹¹ Many of Tanner's teachings have been collected and are quoted as 'Tannerisms' by the missionaries of the Northeast British Mission. Examples of his philosophy include: "Remember who you are wherever you are"; "Have a good opinion of yourself, but have a reason for it"; and "Don't preach sermons—live them."¹¹²

Community Activities and Personal Interests

Tanner was very actively involved in the Scouting movement. After joining the Scouts at the age of 14,¹¹³ Tanner eventually became a Scoutmaster,¹¹⁴ and as such he was 'an exacting disciplinarian.'¹¹⁵ He continued to assume more responsibilities in the movement, eventually serving as Provincial Scout Commissioner of Alberta from 1946 to 1953.¹¹⁶ He was given several Scouting awards. In Canada, he was presented with the Silver Acorn (for Alberta, presented by Lieutenant Governor and Chief Scout for Alberta, John C. Bowen, 1937–1950), the Silver Wolf¹¹⁷ and the Thanks Badge.¹¹⁸ The Boy Scouts of America bestowed upon him the Silver Beaver and the Silver Buffalo for distinguished service to youth.¹¹⁹ In 1963, he was presented with an award from the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints for his 50 years of service with the Scouts.¹²⁰ Once when asked why he, a man with no sons, became so involved with the Boy Scouts, Tanner replied, "I want to help boys to be worthy of my daughters."¹²¹

On May 2, 1966, Tanner acquired American citizenship.¹²² Tanner's daughter Isabelle explained her father's decision by stating that "[h]e's always maintained, and that's the way we have been raised, that if you are going to live in a country and you are going to make your living there, then you owe a loyalty to that country—it is now your country."¹²³

Honours and Awards

Tanner was the recipient of many honours and awards in both the United States and Canada. In 1946, he was presented with a lifetime membership in the Alberta Fish and Game Association.¹²⁴ He was named 'Man of the Year' in 1958 by the *Journal of Trade and Commerce in Western Canada*.¹²⁵ In 1978, Tanner was honoured by the Salt Lake Area Chamber of Commerce and received the 'Giant in Our City' award.¹²⁶ In 1980, he was named the 'International Executive of the Year' by the Brigham Young University School of Management.¹²⁷ He also received recognition from the Salt Lake Golden Eagles hockey team for his support of professional hockey.¹²⁸

In 1969, Tanner received an honorary Doctorate of Laws from the University of Utah¹²⁹ and, in 1981, an honorary Doctorate of Humane Letters from Westminster College in Salt Lake City.¹³⁰ In 1980, the University of Utah established a \$1 million endowment fund in his name¹³¹ and, the next year, presented him with the Honorary Alumnus Award, the highest award given to an individual who has not attended the university.¹³² He also received a Distinguished Service Award from Utah Technical College.¹³³

In 1979, the *Torvosaurus tanneri*, a large Jurassic-era carnivorous dinosaur, was named in Tanner's honour by the Brigham Young University scientists who first identified it.¹³⁴ In 1983, the granite building housing the Marriott School—Brigham Young University's management school—was named after Tanner.¹³⁵ The building was the first academic structure on the campus that was totally funded by donations.¹³⁶ In 2000, Tanner was the recipient in the 'Posthumous Legacy' category for the Days of '47 Pioneers of Progress Awards.¹³⁷

Death

On November 27, 1982, at the age of 84, Nathan Eldon Tanner died of cardiac arrest at his home in Salt Lake City, Utah, and was buried in Salt Lake City Cemetery.¹³⁸ Tanner had suffered from Parkinson's Disease in his later years.¹³⁹ At the time of his death, he had 24 grandchildren and 50 great-grandchildren.¹⁴⁰

Sally Tanner had been an able supporter in the many phases of her husband's career. In 1951, while Tanner was an Alberta Cabinet Minister, Sally had the honour of christening the tanker *Imperial Leduc*.¹⁴¹ She also participated in many activities in the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. She served as Relief Society president and Young Women's president.¹⁴² She was a member of the Cleofan and Cannon Hinckley Church History Society.¹⁴³ She received the Golden Gleaner Award, and was named Woman of the Year at Ricks College, Brigham Young University and Utah State University.¹⁴⁴ Sally died on May 17, 1992, and is buried beside her husband. At her death, she left behind 29 grandchildren and 90 great-grandchildren.¹⁴⁵

Tributes

Tanner was described as "a man with [a] strong personality, reserved and unassuming; he never speaks until it is absolutely necessary and then with considerable effect. He is a good organizer, has a fine head for business and enjoys the happy faculty of winning popularity without seeking it."¹⁴⁶ Ernest S. Watkins, Member for Calgary-Glenmore (1957–1964), described Tanner as 'a provincial C. D. Howe'.¹⁴⁷ Upon his resignation as Speaker in 1937, the *Edmonton Journal* had reported that "the way in which he quickly familiarized himself with the onerous duties of his position and his fairness in administering the rules of the assembly won him the praise of those in all sections of the house."¹⁴⁸



Notes

- ¹ Wilf Bennett, "Nathan Tanner Owes a Lot to Aberhart," [Editorial], *Vancouver Province*, 11 March 1957, p. 6.
- ² "Resignation of Minister is Regretted," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 6 January 1937, p. 9.
- ³ Ernest G. Mardon and Austin A. Mardon, *Alberta Mormon Politicians* (Edmonton: Fisher House Pub., 1992), p. 54.
- ⁴ "N. Eldon Tanner, 84, Dies at Home in S. L.: Counselor in LDS Presidency," *Deseret News* (Salt Lake City, UT), 27 November 1982, p. A3.
- ⁵ Paul Wright, "Nathan Eldon Tanner Facing Major Hurdle in His Career: This Former School-Teacher, Store Clerk and Politician Fights His Biggest Battle," *Western Business and Industry* vol. 30, no. 5 (May 1956): p. 16.
- ⁶ William Kilbourn, *Pipeline: TransCanada and the Great Debate: A History of Business and Politics* (Toronto: Clarke, Irwin & Co., 1970), p. 44.
- ⁷ Canada. Dominion Bureau of Statistics, Nathan E. Tanner, 1901 Census of Canada, North-West Territories, district no. 202, Alberta, sub-district a, Aetna, schedule 1, p. 2, microfilm T-6550, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa.
- ⁸ "Nathan Eldon Tanner [and] Sara Isabelle (Merrill) Tanner," in *Chief Mountain Country: A History of Cardston and District*, ed. Keith Shaw (Cardston, AB: Cardston and District Historical Society, 1978), p. 491.
- ⁹ *Nathan William Tanner* (AFN: 28XR-82) *Family Group Record*, FamilySearch Ancestral File v4.19, [Internet], (Salt Lake City, UT: Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, 2002), accessed 18 February 2004, available from <http://www.familysearch.org>
- ¹⁰ *Nathan Eldon Tanner* (AFN: 2SDK-7H), FamilySearch Ancestral File v4.19, [Internet], (Salt Lake City, UT: Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, 2002), accessed 15 June 2004, available from <http://www.familysearch.org>
- ¹¹ *Ibid.*
- ¹² "Top Mormon An Ex-Oil Magnate, Cabinet Minister," *Edmonton Journal*, 4 November 1972, p. 23.
- ¹³ George Homer Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service* (Salt Lake City, UT: Deseret Book Co., 1982), p. 11.
- ¹⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 7.
- ¹⁵ *Ibid.*
- ¹⁶ Sara I. Tanner, "Eldon and Sara M. Tanner," in *Hill Spring and Its People* (Hill Spring, AB: Hill Spring Cultural Society, 1975), p. 334.
- ¹⁷ Canada. Dept. of the Interior, [Confirmation of Patent Issue NE 4 2 25 W4 to Nathan Wm Tanner, ref. no. 948085], 29 March 1904, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa, microfilm reel C-6089.
- ¹⁸ "Legal Land Description, NE 4 2 25 W4, Nathan Wm Tanner, microfilm C-6089," *ArchiviaNet: Western Land Grants (1870-1930)*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 20 January 2004, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020111_c.html; "Nathan Eldon Tanner [and] Sara Isabelle (Merrill) Tanner," p. 491.
- ¹⁹ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 10.

- ²⁰ Kelvin Jensen and James Hansen, "The Hamlet of Aetna," in *Chief Mountain Country: A History of Cardston and District*, ed. Keith Shaw (Cardston, AB: Cardston and District Historical Society, 1978), p. 53.
- ²¹ "Postmaster Information, Aetna, Lethbridge, Alberta, N.W. Tanner," *ArchiviaNet: Post Offices and Postmasters*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 20 February 2004, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020109_e.html
- ²² Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, pp. 18–21.
- ²³ "A Character Borne of Lofty Expectations," *Deseret News* (Salt Lake City, UT), 27 November 1982, p. A4.
- ²⁴ Kilbourn, *Pipeline: TransCanada and the Great Debate*, p. 47.
- ²⁵ Ibid.; Wright, "Nathan Eldon Tanner Facing Major Hurdle In His Career," pp. 16–17.
- ²⁶ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, pp. 19–20; "N. E. Tanner Succeeds Ross: Cardston Member Sworn in to Post," *Calgary Albertan*, 6 January 1937, p. 2.
- ²⁷ "Nathan Eldon Tanner [and] Sara Isabelle (Merrill) Tanner," p. 491.
- ²⁸ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 27; "Nathan Eldon Tanner [and] Sara Isabelle (Merrill) Tanner," p. 491.
- ²⁹ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 27; "Nathan Eldon Tanner [and] Sara Isabelle (Merrill) Tanner," p. 491.
- ³⁰ "Home Folks Proud of New Lands Minister," *Lethbridge Herald*, 6 January 1937, p. 2; Mardon and Mardon, *Alberta Mormon Politicians*, p. 54; "[Tanners Return From Salt Lake City]," *Cardston News*, 27 July 1933, p. 1.
- ³¹ "Tanner–Merrill," [Wedding Announcement], *Lethbridge Daily Herald*, 22 December 1919, p. 19.
- ³² "Sara Isabelle Tanner," [Obituary], *Deseret News* (Salt Lake City, UT), 20 May 1992, p. B4.
- ³³ Milton Magrath Merrill, "Magrath Merrill," in *Hill Spring and Its People* (Hill Spring, AB: Hill Spring Cultural Society, 1975), p. 295; Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 22.
- ³⁴ John Booth Merrill (AFN: ISR9-C6) *Family Group Record*, FamilySearch Ancestral File v4.19, [Internet], (Salt Lake City, UT: Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, 2002), accessed 23 October 2001, available from <http://www.familysearch.org>
- ³⁵ Magrath Merrill, "Magrath Merrill," p. 295; Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 22.
- ³⁶ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 22.
- ³⁷ Ibid.; "Mormon Official Former Alta. Politician," *Edmonton Journal*, 28 November 1982, p. A8.
- ³⁸ Tanner, "Eldon and Sara M. Tanner," p. 334.
- ³⁹ "Doxey, Ruth Merrill Tanner Walker," [Obituary], *Lethbridge Herald*, 17 April 2001, p. B10.
- ⁴⁰ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 27; "Isabelle Tanner, Willard Jensen Wed Here at Home Ceremony," [Wedding Announcement], *Edmonton Bulletin*, 16 December 1942, p. 11.
- ⁴¹ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 33; "Rhodes–Tanner Vows Taken at Cardston," [Wedding Announcement] *Edmonton Bulletin*, September 13 1949, p. 11.
- ⁴² Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 34; "Beth Tanner Bride at Cardston Temple," [Wedding Announcement], *Edmonton Bulletin*, 2 August 1949, p. 11.



- ⁴³ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 39; "Helen Tanner Weds Lowell M. Williams," [Wedding Announcement], *Edmonton Bulletin*, 18 August 1950, p. 15; "N. Eldon Tanner, 84, Dies at Home in S. L.," p. A3.
- ⁴⁴ "N. E. Tanner Succeeds Ross," p. 2.
- ⁴⁵ Kilbourn, *Pipeline: TransCanada and the Great Debate*, p. 47.
- ⁴⁶ Wright, "Nathan Eldon Tanner Facing Major Hurdle In His Career," pp. 16–17.
- ⁴⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 17.
- ⁴⁸ Nathan Eldon Tanner, Interview by Charles Ursenbach, n.d., Glenbow Archives, Calgary, RCT-781-12; Kilbourn, *Pipeline: TransCanada and the Great Debate*, p. 47.
- ⁴⁹ Tanner, Interview by Ursenbach.
- ⁵⁰ "N. E. Tanner Succeeds Ross," p. 2.
- ⁵¹ Wright, "Nathan Eldon Tanner Facing Major Hurdle In His Career," p. 17.
- ⁵² Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 48.
- ⁵³ Kilbourn, *Pipeline: TransCanada and the Great Debate*, p. 48.
- ⁵⁴ "Lee, Tanner and Thomas Named by Social Creditors," *Cardston News*, 16 May 1935, p. 1.
- ⁵⁵ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, pp. 56–57.
- ⁵⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 8th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XXXIII, 6 February 1936, p. 8.
- ⁵⁷ "Speaker's Robes Fail to Arrive," *Edmonton Journal*, 6 February 1936, p. 9.
- ⁵⁸ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 71.
- ⁵⁹ Bennett, "Nathan Tanner Owes a Lot to Aberhart," p. 6.
- ⁶⁰ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 62.
- ⁶¹ *N. (Nathan) Eldon Tanner, 1898–1982*, Grampa Bill's G.A. Pages, [Internet], accessed 24 February 2004, available from <http://personal.atl.bellsouth.net/w/o/wol3/tannene1.htm>
- ⁶² Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 62.
- ⁶³ "L. A. Giroux, Veteran M.L.A., Dies in South," *Edmonton Journal*, 8 September 1936, p. 2.
- ⁶⁴ Bennett, "Nathan Tanner Owes a Lot to Aberhart," p. 6; Bob Hesketh, *Major Douglas and Alberta Social Credit* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1997), pp. 117, 133, 138.
- ⁶⁵ Hesketh, *Major Douglas and Alberta Social Credit*, pp. 117, 128, 133.
- ⁶⁶ Alvin Finkel, *The Social Credit Phenomenon in Alberta* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1989), pp. 61–62; Hesketh, *Major Douglas and Alberta Social Credit*, p. 104.
- ⁶⁷ Four of Aberhart's nine original Cabinet Ministers had resigned by the end of 1937. "Barnes Raps Gov't Legislation Methods," *Calgary Daily Herald*, 27 August 1936, p. 3; Finkel, *The Social Credit Phenomenon in Alberta*, p. 61; Hesketh, *Major Douglas and Alberta Social Credit*, p. 167; David H. Breen, *Alberta's Petroleum Industry and the Conservation Board* (Edmonton: University of Alberta Press, 1993), p. 106.
- ⁶⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 8th Legislature, 1st Session*, 16 March 1936, pp. 93–95.
- ⁶⁹ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 64.

- ⁷⁰ David Raymond and Iris Miller Elliot, *Bible Bill: A Biography of William Aberhart* (Edmonton: Reidmore, 1987), p. 247.
- ⁷¹ Ibid.
- ⁷² Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, pp. 109–110.
- ⁷³ “Resignation of Minister is Regretted,” p. 9; J. F. Sanderson, “Premier Aberhart Refuses [To] Give Reason for Ross Resignation,” *Lethbridge Herald*, 6 January 1937, p. 1.
- ⁷⁴ “Ross Quits Cabinet: Tanner is Appointed: Premier Keeps Silent,” *Edmonton Bulletin*, 6 January 1937, p. 1.
- ⁷⁵ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 70.
- ⁷⁶ H. H. R., “Under The Dome,” *Edmonton Journal*, 26 February 1937, p. 18.
- ⁷⁷ “175 Albertans Will Be Presented Friday to British Monarchs,” *Edmonton Bulletin*, 1 June 1939, pp. 1–2.
- ⁷⁸ “Nathan Eldon Tanner [and] Sara Isabelle (Merrill) Tanner,” p. 491.
- ⁷⁹ Peter C. Newman, *Promise of the Pipeline* (Calgary: TransCanada Pipelines, 1993), p. 10.
- ⁸⁰ Wright, “Nathan Eldon Tanner Facing Major Hurdle In His Career,” p. 17.
- ⁸¹ Ernest Watkins, *The Golden Province: Political Alberta* (Calgary: Sandstone Publishing Ltd., 1980), p. 133.
- ⁸² University of Alberta Archives, *Alberta Post-War Reconstruction Committee, 1943–1945*, [Internet], (Edmonton: University of Alberta Archives), accessed 24 June 2003, available from <http://www.ualberta.ca/ARCHIVES/guide/7ORGAN/159.htm>
- ⁸³ University of Alberta Archives, *Alberta Research Council, 1921–*, [Internet], (Edmonton: University of Alberta Archives), accessed 24 June 2003, available from <http://www.ualberta.ca/ARCHIVES/guide/6COLLEGE/150.htm>; John Wilcock, “Who’s Who in Business [Nathan Tanner],” *Saturday Night*, 9 January 1954, p. 20.
- ⁸⁴ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 97.
- ⁸⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 11th Legislature, 2nd Session (Special)*, vol. LII, 4 July 1949, p. 9, and 7 July 1949, p. 18.
- ⁸⁶ Hooke, 30+5: *I Know, I Was There*, p. 201.
- ⁸⁷ Wallace R. Hanson and Eastern Rockies Forest Conservation Board, *History of the Eastern Rockies Forest Conservation Board, 1947–1973* (Calgary: Eastern Rockies Forest Conservation Board, 1973), p. 7; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 10th Legislature, 4th Session*, vol. XLIX, 24 March 1947, pp. 87–88.
- ⁸⁸ Alfred John Hooke, 30+5: *I Know, I Was There* (Edmonton: Institute of Applied Arts Ltd., 1971), p. 194; Watkins, *The Golden Province: Political Alberta*, p. 133.
- ⁸⁹ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 73.
- ⁹⁰ Ibid., p. 105.
- ⁹¹ “Retirement of Honorable N. E. Tanner,” *Civil Service Bulletin* vol. 32, no. 9 (October 1952): p. 6.
- ⁹² N. (Nathan) Eldon Tanner, 1898–1982, [Internet]; “President N. Eldon Tanner Dies,” *Ensign*, January 1983, p. 10; “President N. Eldon Tanner, May 9, 1898–November 27, 1982,” *New Era*, January–February 1983, p. 15; Leonard Arrington, “N. Eldon Tanner, Man of Integrity,” *Dialogue: A Journal of Mormon Thought* vol. 15 (Winter 1982): pp. 8–10.



⁹³ Wright, "Nathan Eldon Tanner Facing Major Hurdle In His Career," p. 18.

⁹⁴ "N. Eldon Tanner, 84, Dies at Home in S. L.," p. A3.

⁹⁵ Hooke, 30+5: *I Know, I Was There*, p. 202.

⁹⁶ "N. Eldon Tanner, 84, Dies at Home in S. L.," p. A3; University of Alberta, *University of Alberta Calendar, 52nd Session, 1959-1960* (Edmonton: University of Alberta, 1959), p. 13; University of Alberta, *University of Alberta Calendar, 53rd Session, 1960-1961* (Edmonton: University of Alberta, 1960), p. 580.

⁹⁷ Wright, "Nathan Eldon Tanner Facing Major Hurdle In His Career," p. 17.

⁹⁸ "Mormon Official Former Alta. Politician," p. A8. The Trans-Canada Pipeline covers approximately 4,000 kilometres at a cost of nearly \$400 million. "Where It All Began," *The Source: The Source of Information for Employees and Retirees of TransCanada* (June 2001): pp. 3, 4. By the end of 1957, almost 2,200 kilometres of the pipeline had been laid. Another 1,372 kilometres had been scheduled to be completed in 1958. "\$1.89 A Share: Interprovincial Pipe Net Pared," *Globe and Mail* (Toronto), 25 March 1958, p. 22.

⁹⁹ Bennett, "Nathan Tanner Owes a Lot to Aberhart," p. 6.

¹⁰⁰ P.C. 1957-1386, Canada.

¹⁰¹ Canada. Royal Commission on Energy, *First Report* (Ottawa: The Commission, 1958), p. 82.

¹⁰² "Heads Gas Association," *Financial Post* (Toronto), 18 July 1959, p. 6.

¹⁰³ E-mail from Kathleen Bell, TransCanada Pipelines Ltd., 8 August 2003; E-mail from Elizabeth McNamara, TransCanada, 11 August 2003.

¹⁰⁴ A search of the Empire Club Addresses yielded no other names of Speakers of the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories or Alberta. Empire Club of Canada, *The Empire Club Addresses: Index of Speeches*, [Internet], (Toronto: Empire Club of Canada), accessed 20 January 2004, available from <http://www.empireclubfoundation.com/search.asp>

¹⁰⁵ "N. Eldon Tanner, 84, Dies at Home in S. L.," p. A3; "New Edmonton Stake," *Mormon News*, [Internet], (S.L.: Kent Larsen), accessed 23 November 2004, available from <http://www.mormonstoday.com/010921/D1EdmontonStake01.shtml>

¹⁰⁶ "Nathan Eldon Tanner [and] Sara Isabelle (Merrill) Tanner," p. 491; "Mormon Official Former Alta. Politician," p. A8.

¹⁰⁷ "Nathan Eldon Tanner [and] Sara Isabelle (Merrill) Tanner," p. 491.

¹⁰⁸ "Mormon Official Former Alta. Politician," p. A8.

¹⁰⁹ "N. Eldon Tanner, 84, Dies at Home in S. L.," p. A3.

¹¹⁰ "Nathan Eldon Tanner [and] Sara Isabelle (Merrill) Tanner," p. 491.

¹¹¹ "Mormon Official Former Alta. Politician," p. A8.

¹¹² Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, pp. 312, 316.

¹¹³ Tanner, Interview by Ursenbach.

¹¹⁴ "Tanner Leader of Alberta Scouts," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 3 January 1946, p. 9; Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 175.

¹¹⁵ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 174.

¹¹⁶ Arthur Leonard Tunnell, ed., *Canadian Who's Who, vol. VIII, 1958-60* (Toronto: Trans-Canada Press, 1960), p. 1081.

¹¹⁷ E-mail from Lena Wong, Scouts Canada, Ottawa, 26 January 2004.

¹¹⁸ "N. Eldon Tanner, 84, Dies at Home in S. L.," p. A3.

¹¹⁹ "Salt Lake Council Scouter Receives Silver Buffalo Award," *TeleScout* vol. 3, no. 7 (July 1969): p. 1.

¹²⁰ The Young Men's Mutual Improvement Association of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints Recognizes Scouter Nathan E. Tanner for 50 Years of Registered Service to Boys Through Scouting in the Church, 15 June 1963, Certificate, Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints Archives, Salt Lake City.

¹²¹ *N. (Nathan) Eldon Tanner, 1898–1982*, [Internet].

¹²² Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 223; "Mormon Official Former Alta. Politician," p. A8.

¹²³ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 223.

¹²⁴ "Honored [N. E. Tanner]," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 14 March 1946, p. 9.

¹²⁵ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, pp. 163–164.

¹²⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 4.

¹²⁷ "N. Eldon Tanner, 84, Dies at Home in S. L.," p. A3.

¹²⁸ *Ibid.*

¹²⁹ University of Utah. University Administration, *Honorary Degrees Conferred by the University of Utah, June 1892 through June 2000*, Institutional Analysis, [Internet], (Salt Lake City: University of Utah, 2000), accessed 23 February 2004, available from <http://www.admin.utah.edu/ia/ss/ss99-00/tab50.pdf>

¹³⁰ "N. Eldon Tanner, 84, Dies at Home in S. L.," p. A3.

¹³¹ *Ibid.*

¹³² *Founders Day Honorary Alumnus Award Past Recipients*, [Internet], (Salt Lake City, UT: University of Utah Alumni Association, 2004), accessed 23 November 2004, available from http://www.alumni.utah.edu/services/u-news/september04/images/hon_recipients.pdf

¹³³ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, pp. 284–285.

¹³⁴ Brigham Young University, *First-Ever Display of BYU-Discovered Dinosaur Now Available*, [News Release], [Internet], (Provo, UT: Brigham Young University, 7 June 2000), accessed 5 January 2004, available from <http://www.byu.edu/news/releases/archive00/Jun/dinosaur.htm>

¹³⁵ Brigham Young University. Marriott School, *N. Eldon Tanner*, [Internet], (Provo, Utah: Brigham Young University), accessed 11 April 2003, available from <http://marriottschool.byu.edu/story/netanner.cfm>

¹³⁶ "2003 Marks the 20th Anniversary of the Tanner Building," *Marriott Alumni Magazine*, Winter 2003, preface.

¹³⁷ "Huntsman, Majerus Among 6 Honorees," *Deseret News*, 29 May 2000, p. B2.

¹³⁸ *Cemeteries and Burials Database*, [Internet], (Salt Lake City, UT: Utah State Historical Society), accessed 25 February 2004, available from <http://webapps.dced.state.ut.us/burials/execute/searchburials>

¹³⁹ "N. Eldon Tanner, 84, Dies at Home in S. L.," p. A1; Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 278.

¹⁴⁰ "N. Eldon Tanner, 84, Dies at Home in S. L.," p. A3.



¹⁴¹ "Sara Isabelle Tanner," p. B4; "Imperial Oil Proudly Announces the Arrival in Ontario of the First Alberta Crude Oil," [Advertisement], *Globe and Mail* (Toronto), April 25, 1951, p. 10.

¹⁴² "Sara Isabelle Tanner," [Obituary], p. B4.

¹⁴³ Ibid.

¹⁴⁴ Ibid.

¹⁴⁵ Ibid.

¹⁴⁶ Durham, *N. Eldon Tanner: His Life and Service*, p. 72.

¹⁴⁷ Watkins, *The Golden Province: Political Alberta*, p. 133.

¹⁴⁸ "Ross Resigns, Tanner Sworn As Successor," *Edmonton Journal*, 6 January 1937, p. 2.

A just balance



Dawson 1937-1983



PETER DAWSON

Peter Dawson was the sixth Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. He has the distinction of being the longest-serving Speaker of the Legislative Assembly to date, with a tenure of 26 years. He held an exemplary record of 'near-perfect'¹ attendance in the Assembly.* At the time of his death, Dawson was said to have been the second longest-serving Speaker[†] in the British Commonwealth.² With seven elections as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Dawson has the second highest number of election victories of any Speaker to date.[‡] Dawson served all but the first two years of his legislative career as Speaker, serving with Premiers William Aberhart (1935–1943) and Ernest C. Manning (1943–1968). Dawson was the only Alberta Speaker to die in office while the Legislative Assembly was in Session.[§]

Family History

Peter Dawson was born on April 11, 1892, in Slateford, Ayrshire, Scotland.³ Peter and his twin sister, Jane, were the eighth and ninth of the 10 children** of John Dawson and Jane 'Jeanie' McMurray.⁴ Peter's parents were married on December 8, 1876, at Whitehill, Patna, in the parish of Straiton, Ayrshire.⁵ John Dawson, who had been a police constable at the time of his marriage, was by 1879 working as a blacksmith.⁶ By 1891, the Dawson family, which at that time included six children, had settled in the town of Maybole.⁷ Peter's twin sister died of whooping cough at the age of five months.⁸ Peter was eight years old when his father died in 1900, at the age of 50.⁹

Education

Peter Dawson was educated at public school and Carrick Academy in Maybole.¹⁰ He had apprenticed as a butcher¹¹ and worked as a farm labourer before immigrating to Canada in

* His first absence came in 1954 after 17 years as Speaker, in order to officiate at a friend's funeral.

† The longest-serving Speaker was Arthur Onslow of the British House of Commons who presided for 33 years from 1728 to 1761. United Kingdom. House of Commons Information Office, *The Speaker*, rev. ed., Factsheet M2, Members Series, (London: House of Commons Information Office, 2003). Sir Robert Nicholls, who served as Speaker in the House of Assembly of South Australia for 22 years (1933–1956), was considered a close runner-up to Dawson during Dawson's lifetime. E-mail from Rob Lundie, Information Specialist, Department of the Parliamentary Library, Australia, 18 June 2003.

‡ The Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–) is the Speaker with the greatest number of election victories as a Member to date (eight).

§ Charles W. Fisher, first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta (1906–1919), also died in office, but the Legislative Assembly was not in Session at the time.

** James McGill (b. 1877), Hugh (1879), Alexander (1880), William (1882), Agnes (1884), James (1886), Christina (1890), Peter and Jane (1892), and Stewart (1895). David G. Dawson, "John Dawson," [Unpublished Manuscript], 2002, p.1.



1911.¹² Peter was 18 years old when he and his older brother James sailed from Glasgow on the S.S. *Ionian*, arriving at Halifax, Nova Scotia, in March after a nine-day voyage.¹³ Peter settled first in Ontario, relocating to Alberta approximately seven years later.

After his move to Edmonton, Alberta, Dawson enrolled at Robertson College,* a Presbyterian seminary, in 1923.¹⁴ While studying arts and theology at what was to become St. Stephen's College, located on the University of Alberta campus, Dawson "served in the summer months as a missionary in various parts of the province."¹⁵ During the 1925–1926 academic year, Dawson was the president of the first Students' Council at St. Stephen's College¹⁶ and was one of the first graduates of the college in 1927. After graduation, he was ordained as an United Church Minister on May 29, 1927, at Knox United Church, Calgary.¹⁷

Early Career

When he first arrived in Canada, Dawson had found employment at the Tudhope-Anderson Carriage Works, an early automobile manufacturer, which was located in Orillia, Simcoe County, Ontario.¹⁸ Outside of work, Dawson took a 'great interest' in the church.¹⁹ A visit to two of his brothers in Edmonton, where they were employed as blacksmiths,²⁰ "changed the pattern of his life" as he became interested in missionary work.²¹ In 1918, Dawson moved to Calgary, Alberta, where he was employed for several years by the Burns Company as a butcher.²²

Marriage and Family

While serving as a missionary during the summer of 1923, Dawson met his future wife, Hildegard 'Hilde' Christina Hallonquist.²³ They were married at First Baptist Church in Calgary on December 26, 1923.²⁴ Hilde was born on July 24, 1896, at Bergen, Manitoba.²⁵ She was the fifth of the eight children of Swedish immigrants Johannes 'John' Hallonquist and Hanna Christina Larson.²⁶ John Hallonquist was a 'colonial agent,'† helping parties of Swedish immigrants settle in Manitoba.²⁷ Later, he became a section foreman at Bergen for the Canadian Pacific Railway (CPR). John paid for Hanna's passage from Sweden and married her at the Scandinavian Church in Winnipeg, on April 5, 1889.²⁸ The Hallonquists were Lutheran.²⁹ The family moved several times while Hilde was growing up; she graduated from high school in Port Alberni on Vancouver Island, moved to Irricana, Alberta, and, finally, to Calgary, in about 1911.³⁰ Hilde studied accounting at a Calgary business college and was later employed as a bookkeeper, initially in a bookstore in downtown Calgary³¹ and then, after her marriage, in the Bursar's Office at the University of Alberta in Edmonton.³²

* After the formation of the United Church of Canada in 1925, Robertson Theological College (Presbyterian) and Alberta College South (Methodist) merged to become the United Theological College, which was located on the campus of the University of Alberta. United Theological College was renamed St. Stephen's College in 1927 and was incorporated on April 2, 1927. *St. Stephen's Fonds, 1903–*, [Description of Fonds, University of Alberta Archives], [Internet], (University of Alberta Archives, 1999, updated December 1998), accessed 15 June 2004, available from <http://www.ualberta.ca/ARCHIVES/guide/6COLLEGE/148.htm>

† Other family stories claim that John was an 'immigrant runner' for the CPR who brought Swedish immigrants to work for the railway. David G. Dawson, "Johannes Hallonquist," [Unpublished Manuscript], 2002, p. 2.



Peter and Hilde Dawson had two sons. Their first son, Earland 'Earl' McMurray Dawson, was born in Calgary in 1928.³³ A second son, David Gilmour Dawson, was born in 1933 at the Vulcan Hospital while the family was living in the manse at Champion, Alberta.³⁴

Peter Dawson's first call as an ordained minister was to the rural community of Sedgewick, Alberta.³⁵ He remained there for just over two and a half years before receiving a call from Champion United Church in 1930.³⁶ For 30 years, he conducted services in various venues including churches, schoolhouses and halls in this area of southern Alberta. Dawson had a strong baritone voice and sometimes performed solos or participated in duets during church services and on special occasions in the community.³⁷ Dawson continued to serve as a clergyman while performing his duties as a Member and as Speaker of the Legislative Assembly.³⁸

Political Career

Initially, Dawson had little interest in a political career, but responded to pressure from a citizens' group to allow his name to stand.* Of his nomination for the constituency of Little Bow in July 1935, he later recalled:

A group of citizens came to my home and asked that [I] run as a Social Credit candidate. ... I had read a little on the new movement but contesting a seat was the last thing I would have thought of. However, after a little encouragement, I thought it over and decided it would be interesting to let my name stand—just to see what would happen. I got elected. I have represented the riding ever since but I never became a politician.³⁹

Dawson's opponent in the August 22, 1935 provincial general election was former Speaker (1922-1926) and United Farmers of Alberta (UFA) Cabinet Minister Oran L. McPherson, whom Dawson defeated with 66 per cent of the vote. Dawson thus became the first Speaker in Alberta to defeat a former Speaker in an election.† Dawson went on to win a total of seven consecutive general elections in the constituency of Little Bow.

* In 1935, two Social Credit clergymen were elected to represent Vulcan: Dawson to the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and Rev. Ernest G. Hansell, from the Vulcan Church of Christ, to the House of Commons. Paul Voisey, Associate Professor of History at the University of Alberta, suggests that the local Social Credit provincial constituency association may have strategically chosen Dawson and Hansell to appeal to the religious convictions of Social Credit Leader William Aberhart. Paul Voisey, *Vulcan: The Making of a Prairie Community* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1988), pp. 195-198. The two-level nomination process that was instituted meant that first the local constituency organization would nominate three or four possible candidates, and then a provincial committee, consisting of Aberhart and his advisors, would interview the nominees and make the final selection of the Social Credit candidate for the constituency. Finkel, *The Social Credit Phenomenon in Alberta*, p. 31. Dawson and Hansell, along with two others, were Social Credit nominees for the provincial constituency of Little Bow. Once Dawson was chosen as the successful candidate, Hansell was encouraged to let his name stand for the federal constituency of Macleod. John A. Irving, "The Social Credit Movement in Alberta," in *Social Credit in Alberta: Its Background and Development*, ed. S. D. Clark (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1959), p. 130.

† The only other like occurrence took place on March 14, 1979, when David J. Carter (1986-1993) defeated Arthur J. Dixon (1963-1972) in the constituency of Calgary-Millican.



As Speaker

On February 25, 1937, because of an exceptionally large number of requests from the public wanting to attend the Opening Session of the Legislature, Speaker-Designate Dawson announced that arrangements had been made to broadcast the proceedings over CJCA radio.⁴⁰ Consequently, the opening of the Third Session of the Eighth Legislature was the first opening of the Alberta Legislature to be broadcast. That day, Premier William Aberhart moved the nomination of Peter Dawson as Speaker, and the motion was seconded by Attorney General John W. Hugill.⁴¹ Dawson, who became Speaker at the age of 44, believed that "his training as a minister had something to do with his election as Speaker because his knowledge of parliamentary rules was just about nil at that time."⁴² During this period, the formal reception to celebrate the opening of the Legislature was held in the Speaker's Suite.⁴³ In 1937, the tea table was presided over by Mrs. Peter Dawson, Mrs. Robert A. Andison, wife of the Clerk of the Legislative Assembly, Edith H. Gostick,* Member for Calgary, and Edith B. Rogers, Member for Ponoka.⁴⁴

In 1941, Dawson was re-elected Speaker, again through a motion by Premier Aberhart. Premier Ernest C. Manning nominated Dawson in 1945, 1949, 1953, 1955 and 1960. On February 22, 1945, the Leader of the Opposition and future Lieutenant Governor (1959–1966), J. Percy Page, seconded Premier Manning's nomination of Dawson as Speaker.⁴⁵ This was the first time in Alberta that the Opposition officially signaled its support for the selection of the Speaker.

As had happened only once before in the province's history, two Members were nominated for the position of Speaker in 1949.† Arthur H. Wray, Independent-Social Credit Member for Banff-Cochrane, with Hugh J. MacDonald, Liberal Member for Calgary, as seconder, nominated Leonard C. Halmrast, Social Credit Member for Warner.⁴⁶ Wray justified the nomination of another candidate by indicating that Dawson was not sufficiently non-partisan.⁴⁷ Halmrast declined the nomination and later, outside of the Chamber, indicated that he had been "flabbergasted" at the mention of his name.⁴⁸

During Session, Dawson's family regularly took up residence in the Speaker's Suite in the Legislature Building, thereby enabling the Speaker to be easily available. At this time, the Legislative Assembly would usually meet for a two-month period between New Year's Day and Easter. Dawson's son, David, later recalled the unique experiences that he and his brother Earl

* Edith H. Gostick later held the position of Alberta's fourth and longest-serving Legislature Librarian (1940–1959).

† On February 2, 1922, after Oran L. McPherson was nominated Speaker through a motion by Premier Herbert Greenfield (1921–1925), Independent Conservative Member Dr. John S. Stewart was nominated through a motion by United Farmers of Alberta (UFA) Member Alexander Moore.

‡ The Opposition in the Legislative Assembly was much smaller than in the previous Legislature. From 1940 to 1944, there were 36 Social Credit Members in the Legislative Assembly with 19 Independent Members, one Cooperative Commonwealth Federation (CCF) Member and one Liberal Member. From 1944 to 1948, there were 51 Social Credit Members, three Independent Members, two CCF Members and one Veteran Representative. David Bryon, "The Recognition of Leaders of the Opposition in Alberta, 1905–1983," *Prairie Forum* vol. 9, no. 1 (Spring 1984), p. 57.

had had, exploring the building after hours and flying paper airplanes from the fifth floor railing.⁴⁹ Throughout his 28 years as a Member of the Legislative Assembly, Dawson continued to preach every Sunday in Champion and various surrounding communities, and subsequently, in Carmangay and Prairieville, Alberta. He would leave Edmonton on the overnight train on Friday evenings and return Sunday, again on the overnight train.⁵⁰

David Dawson recalls that his father was responsible for writing the Speech from the Throne for delivery by the Lieutenant Governor at the beginning of each Session. Dawson would compile information received from various government departments into a cohesive speech outlining government initiatives.⁵¹ This practice is not traditionally part of the Speaker's role* and may have simply been a matter of convenience at the time based on the talents of an individual.

In the early years of the Eighth Legislature, some members of the Social Credit caucus became impatient waiting for changes promised by Premier William Aberhart to be implemented, resulting in the development of a group of anti-Aberhart 'insurgents' within caucus ranks.⁵² By March 1937, events that threatened to split the governing caucus led to tumultuous Sessions in the House. In one such sitting, several Cabinet Ministers were accused of a breach of faith with the remainder of the Social Credit caucus. Dawson received a written motion 'of urgent public importance'⁵³ from Alfred J. Hooke, Social Credit Member for Red Deer and a member of the insurgent group,[†] that he read aloud to the Assembly. This was the first time that the Speaker "was not advised ahead of time as to the introduction of [such] a motion."⁵⁴ The motion was defeated.⁵⁵

September of 1937 was the first time in the history of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta in which "the act of members 'crossing the floor' was witnessed. On previous occasions, members asked for their seats to be moved and merely occupied their new seats at the next sitting, without any ceremony in connection."⁵⁶ Two former Cabinet Ministers, William N. Chant, Member for Camrose and Minister of Agriculture, and John W. Hugill, Member for Calgary and Attorney General, joined the Opposition as Independents.⁵⁷ By the end of 1937, Charles C. Cockroft, Member for Stettler and Provincial Treasurer, and Charles C. Ross, Member for Athabasca and Minister of Lands and Mines, had also resigned their Cabinet portfolios due to the Social Credit Government's attempts to legislate matters outside of the province's jurisdiction, bringing the total number of Cabinet resignations to four out of Aberhart's original nine Cabinet Ministers.⁵⁸ The new Social Credit Government believed itself to be 'treated scornfully' by the press,⁵⁹ and, as a result, it attempted to ensure that the coverage was 'fair.'⁶⁰ One way to achieve this objective

* Today, writing the Speech from the Throne would be seen as too partisan a practice for a Speaker to undertake.

† The Social Credit infighting led Dawson to comment after reading the motion: "In my opinion, this is really a concern of a party rather than the assembly." "Breach of Faith by Government Charged by Insurgent Group: A. J. Hooke of Red Deer Spokesman in Legislature," *Edmonton Journal*, 8 April 1937, p. 15. There were basically three factions within the Social Credit Government: Aberhart loyalists; hard-line Douglasites who wanted to force Aberhart's hand; and Cabinet Ministers chosen by Aberhart because of their obvious talent and credibility with the electorate, even though they were not keen on Social Credit monetary policy. Alvin Finkel, *The Social Credit Phenomenon in Alberta* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1989), pp. 61–62.



was by owning a newspaper. To this end, the Social Credit League purchased the *Calgary Albertan* in 1936.*⁶¹ In October 1937, the Aberhart Government passed Bill 9, *An Act to Ensure the Publication of Accurate News and Information*.[†] Among other things, the Bill required that newspapers print government rebuttals to stories deemed objectionable by the Social Credit caucus, and that sources for stories be revealed upon request.⁶² This Bill was ultimately declared *ultra vires* of the Legislative Assembly (not within Alberta's jurisdiction to legislate) by the Supreme Court on March 4, 1938, a decision that was affirmed by the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council[‡] on July 14, 1938.⁶³

On March 24, 1938, the *Committee on Privileges and Elections* found reporter Don Brown[§] in breach of the privileges of the House for an article published in the *Edmonton Journal* on March 17, in which, in the view of the Committee, he misrepresented remarks by Dr. John L. Robinson, Member for Lethbridge.⁶⁴ The Committee called for a warrant to be issued for Brown's arrest and detention.**⁶⁵ Fortunately for Brown, the Assembly accepted a motion to release the reporter before he was arrested.⁶⁶

After the 1949 election, during the First Session of the 11th Legislature, Dawson announced that he would not be recognizing an Official Opposition.⁶⁷ The Liberal Party and the Cooperative Commonwealth Federation (CCF) had each returned two Members and had equal claim to the status of Official Opposition.

In March 1949, Dawson ruled that the comments of Liberal Leader J. Harper Prowse were unparliamentary.^{††} During a debate on child welfare, Prowse had said, "Members of the Government, not content with hiding behind the skirts of unfortunate women, now cloak themselves behind the diapers of even more unfortunate babies."⁶⁸ Other terms deemed unparliamentary during Dawson's tenure were 'deaf' and 'trickery.'⁶⁹

In 1951, Dawson was appointed Chair of the *Special Legislative Committee set up to Revise the Rules of the Assembly*.

* By 1939, the paper had returned to its original owners.

† It was one of three Bills passed that day that were ultimately declared *ultra vires*. The other two were: Bill 1, *An Act respecting the Taxation of Banks* and Bill 8, *An act to amend and consolidate The Credit of Alberta Regulation Act*. Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 8th Legislature, 5th Session*, vol. XXXVII, 5 October 1937, p. 56.

‡ The Judicial Committee of the Privy Council, located in the United Kingdom, was the highest court of appeal in Canada until 1949.

§ Don Brown was the reporter behind the pseudonym 'Decibels', author of the *Edmonton Journal* column "Under the Dome."

** Dawson did not sign the warrant. "House Orders 'Release' of Journal Reporter: Warrant for His Arrest Never Was Signed," *Edmonton Journal*, 26 March 1938, p. 1.

†† Often rulings on unparliamentary language depend on the intention and context of a Member's statements. See the Background section, *Unparliamentary Language*, for more information.

On March 21, 1952, Dawson named* Arthur H. Wray, Independent-Social Credit Member for Banff-Cochrane. Wray had refused to apologize to the House for remarks made about a provincial official during a meeting of the *Committee of Supply*.⁷⁰ Deputy Speaker James Hartley was in the Chair at the time. When Dawson resumed the Chair, he requested that Wray withdraw his statement. Wray's refusal caused Dawson to name him and have him removed from the Chamber. Former Speaker N. Eldon Tanner (1936–1937), seconded by Alfred J. Hooke, Member for Rocky Mountain House, Minister of Public Works and Minister of Economic Affairs, moved that Wray be suspended for two sitting days, and until Wray was ready to withdraw the statement and apologize to the Assembly. The motion passed unanimously.⁷¹ Wray was the first Member ever to be expelled "by the unanimous vote of other members" of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.⁷² He returned on March 25, withdrew his statement and apologized.⁷³

In February 1956, the Legislative Assembly of Alberta became the first parliament in any jurisdiction in Canada to employ a Black student as a Page. Jesse Jones was a Grade 9 student from Spruce Avenue School in Edmonton.⁷⁴

On February 21, 1958, Opposition Leader J. Harper Prowse accused Dawson of overstepping his authority when he permitted a government photographer on the floor of the Chamber.⁷⁵ Prowse raised this issue "with the traditional 'I spy strangers ...'"†⁷⁶ The photographer, Charles Ross, had come to take photographs of Edgar H. Gerhart, Social Credit Member for Edmonton, and Henry A. Ruste, Social Credit Member for Wainwright, during their replies to the Speech from the Throne. Dawson explained that he had announced the presence of the photographer just as the sitting began and that that was when any objections should have been raised.⁷⁷

The Speaker's impartiality as presiding officer was occasionally called into question as Dawson attempted to maintain a balance with his role as the representative for Little Bow. On March 11, 1958, in response to questions from Abe W. Miller, Liberal Member for Edmonton, Premier Manning defended the Speaker by indicating that "Mr. Speaker attends some but not all Government caucuses not as the Speaker of the Assembly but as the elected representative for the Constituency of Little Bow for the purpose of presenting the views of his constituents with respect to government policy and legislation inasmuch as he is prevented from presenting the viewpoint of his constituents in the Assembly by reason of his position as Speaker."⁷⁸ In response to a second question, the Premier noted, "Mr. Speaker does not attend any meetings of the Cabinet."⁷⁹

* A disciplinary measure used at the discretion of the Speaker. For more information, see the Glossary.

† The tradition comes from the Parliament of the United Kingdom (UK) as a means of excluding strangers from the galleries. In 1875, the UK *Standing Orders* were amended to formalize this procedure. If Members draw notice to strangers, the Speaker must put the question to the Members. The Speaker can also on his own authority order the withdrawal of strangers from any part of the House. The usual way for the Members to give notice is to call out 'I spy strangers.' After 1998, this procedure was no longer followed in the UK. Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), p. 211n3.



Dawson was once asked if being Speaker was a disadvantage in terms of representing his constituents appropriately. He indicated that since he was unable, by virtue of his position, to raise issues in the House, his method of serving his constituents was to communicate directly with Ministers outside of the Chamber.⁸⁰ When working in Little Bow on behalf of his constituents, Dawson made numerous telephone calls to offices in Edmonton. To show his appreciation for the cheerful assistance of the local telephone operators, he would often leave boxes of chocolates in their offices.⁸¹

Liberal Member for Calgary (1955–1960) and future Lieutenant Governor of Alberta (1966–1974) J. W. Grant MacEwan was impressed that Dawson's daily prayer changed each day and was "[w]ritten with ministerial skill."⁸² MacEwan also praised Dawson for his comprehensive knowledge of parliamentary procedure and his endeavour to "maintain a just balance between freedom of speech on the one hand and such restraint as might be necessary to ensure legislative progress on the other."⁸³ Upon his re-election as Speaker in 1960, Dawson remarked that although his tenure had "many ups and downs, depending on the temperament of the boys," he felt "greatly honored in being elected Speaker of the Assembly."⁸⁴

In September 1958, Dawson attended the 'first and founding meeting' of the Canadian Region of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association (CPA) in Halifax, Nova Scotia.⁸⁵ The host of the conference, Speaker Walter S. K. Jones (1957–1960) of Nova Scotia, was unable to attend because of illness, and Premier Robert L. Stanfield (1956–1967) was elected to chair the meeting.

During the 1959 budget debate in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Liberal Leader J. W. Grant MacEwan, former Liberal Leader J. Harper Prowse, and Liberal Members Hugh J. MacDonald and Abe W. Miller were caught in the midst of an 'almost unprecedented tangle.'⁸⁶ Prowse proposed an amendment to the motion to go into the *Committee of Supply*, which, the *Calgary Herald* reported, was tantamount to a vote of no-confidence in the Government. Confusion arose over what was actually being debated—the original motion or the amendment. When Dawson ruled that Members must confine their discussion to the amendment, MacDonald appealed the ruling and a division* was called. Dawson told the four Members that they must vote or leave the Chamber. The four did not vote on the motion, claiming that Dawson read the question differently when calling the vote than he had when he made the ruling. Dawson's ruling was sustained, and the Assembly then proceeded to defeat Prowse's amendment.⁸⁷

A highlight of Dawson's tenure as Speaker occurred immediately after the opening of the Second Session of the 13th Legislature on February 9, 1956. The Civil Service Association of Alberta presented the Legislative Assembly with a new Mace on the occasion of the Golden Jubilee of the

* The process of separating into two groups for voting in the Legislative Assembly. See the Glossary for more information.

province.* Dawson accepted the Mace and thanked the Association on behalf of the Legislative Assembly and the people of the Province of Alberta.⁸⁸

Another highlight of Dawson's tenure was a series of royal visits beginning with that of King George VI and Queen Elizabeth in June 1939. Dawson played a major role in the ceremonies at the Alberta Legislature. As their Majesties entered the Chamber, they were met by Dawson and his wife, who acted as "host and hostess when the sovereigns came as guests of the people of Alberta."⁸⁹ The two identical thrones used by their Majesties on their June 2 visit to the Chamber were the Chairs of Dawson and former Speaker George N. Johnston (1927–1935).⁹⁰ After Premier Aberhart presented honoured guests to the Royal Couple, he called on Dawson to introduce Members of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.⁹¹ The festivities were brought to a close with a formal dinner in the main dining room of the Hotel Macdonald, which was attended by many prominent Albertans, including the Dawsons.⁹²



*P. Dawson in kitchen of Speaker's Suite
(1950s).*

On March 25, 1941, the Dawsons sat at the head table during a luncheon held in Edmonton in honour of the Earl of Athlone, Governor General of Canada (1940–1946), and Princess Alice, Countess of Athlone, granddaughter of Queen Victoria.⁹³ Their Excellencies were touring Western Canada. When Princess Elizabeth and Prince Philip visited Edmonton in October of 1951, a state dinner was held at the Hotel Macdonald and was attended by the Dawsons.⁹⁴ On July 20, 1959, when Queen Elizabeth II and Prince Philip visited Edmonton once more, a luncheon was held in their honour at the site of old Fort Edmonton. To commemorate their visit, the fountain† in the rotunda of the Legislature Building was installed.⁹⁵ Their route to the luncheon took them through the Legislature Library and out onto the balcony on the south side of the Building, where Premier Manning addressed the Royal Couple and the crowd gathered below. After the luncheon, Premier Manning presented Dawson, Members of the Cabinet, and their wives, to the Royal Couple.⁹⁶

In 1960, after 33 years as an ordained clergyman in the United Church, Dawson retired from active ministry. At the end of June 1960, Dawson and his wife moved to Vulcan, Alberta, where they were pleased to be able to purchase a home of their own for the first time during their marriage.⁹⁷ After so many years of living in church manses, Hilde Dawson was thrilled to be able to 'fix and paint' without needing the approval of the manse committee.⁹⁸

* The previous Mace had been intended as a very temporary fixture, but remained in use for 50 years. See the Background section on the Mace for more information.

† A temporary fountain had been installed in the same location for the 1939 visit of King George VI and Queen Elizabeth, but was subsequently removed.



Honours and Awards

On April 5, 1962, on the occasion of Dawson's 25th year as Speaker, John A. Wingblade, Social Credit Member for Wetaskiwin, presented Dawson with a silver-banded gavel on behalf of all of the Members.⁹⁹ Also in 1962, Dawson was honoured with a "life membership in the Alberta Legislative Press Gallery Association of which he had been honorary president through the years."¹⁰⁰ In 1964, Vulcan's new Senior Citizens Centre was named Peter Dawson Lodge in memory of the late Speaker. The Kinsmen Club had sponsored a contest to 'Name the Home,' and this name was chosen from among many entries.¹⁰¹

Community Activities and Personal Interests

Dawson's recreational pursuits included golf, curling and badminton.¹⁰² He also enjoyed gardening at his Vulcan home.¹⁰³ He belonged to various church associations and the Social Credit League.¹⁰⁴ In the early 1950s, Dawson was active in the planning and establishment of Little Bow Provincial Park,* about 32 kilometres east of Champion.¹⁰⁵

Dawson was an active member of the fraternal organization the Grand Lodge of Alberta, Ancient, Free and Accepted Masons. He served 'in the office of Worshipful Master' of Champion Lodge in 1947. He was elected grand chaplain of the Grand Lodge in 1949 and 1950, and served as grand master in 1954 and 1955.¹⁰⁶ In addition, Dawson was a member of the Shrine and Scottish Rite Lodges, as well as the Order of the Eastern Star, a Masonic affiliate.¹⁰⁷

Death

On Sunday, March 24, 1963, at age 70, Peter Dawson suffered a sudden heart attack in his Suite on the fourth floor of the Legislature Building. He had just returned from a speaking engagement to the Masons at the Lodge of Perfection, Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite, in Red Deer where, ironically, the title of his speech was "We know not the Hour!"¹⁰⁸ Dawson was attended by Dr. J. Donovan Ross, Minister of Health, and rushed to the University Hospital, dying on the way there.¹⁰⁹ It was the first and only time in the history of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta that a Speaker has died in office while the Legislative Assembly was in Session.^{†110}

On Monday, March 25, 1963, the announcement of the Speaker's death was made by the Clerk of the Legislative Assembly, Raymond A. A. Crevolin. According to William Patterson, Member for Lac Ste. Anne, "the House paid tribute to Mr. Dawson on Monday and then adjourned the shortest session I have seen during my term of office."¹¹¹ On Wednesday morning, the body lay

* Little Bow Provincial Park was designated on January 20, 1954.

† Charles W. Fisher (1906–1919) was the other Speaker of the Legislative Assembly to die in office. However, the Assembly was not in Session at the time of Fisher's death.



in state in the Legislature Chamber. It was the first lying-in-state held for a Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.* Several hundred people, including many young people employed in the Legislature complex, queued to pay their respects. An honour guard of members of the RCMP acted as pallbearers when the body was conveyed from the Legislature Building to Robertson United Church for the state funeral that afternoon with “[j]udicial, ministerial and administrative officials from across the province ... among [the] 300 persons attending funeral services.”¹¹² Premier Ernest C. Manning acted as one of the officiating clergy.¹¹³ Following the state service, the body was taken by train to Vulcan for a second service, and burial in the Vulcan Cemetery.¹¹⁴

As was customary, Dawson's widow was offered the Speaker's Chair, but she did not accept it, as it would not 'fit well' in her house in Vulcan.¹¹⁵ Instead, she was presented with the silver tea service—engraved with the Alberta Crest and the words 'Mr. Speaker'—which the Dawson family had used in the Speaker's Suite.¹¹⁶

Hilde Dawson was a strong supporter of her husband's parliamentary and church careers. Her contributions ranged from those of bookkeeper to church janitor. She was active in the Women's Institute, Imperial Order Daughters of the Empire (IODE), the United Church women's group, and was matron of the Champion Eastern Star Lodge.¹¹⁷ Hilde Dawson died at age 90 on June 15, 1987, and is buried beside her husband.¹¹⁸

Tributes

Dawson's son David recalls that his father talked easily with complete strangers, and “would strike up a conversation with everyone he met, on the street or in a shop, and particularly when travelling. Peter always wanted to learn about everyone he met.”¹¹⁹ Premier Manning paid tribute to Dawson saying, “In his passing not only Alberta, but all of Canada has lost one of its outstanding figures. The reputation he built with his fair judgments and honest ability won him the confidence and respect of all members of the Assembly and extended beyond the borders of Alberta.”¹²⁰ Former Member for Edmonton (1942–1955) and Mayor of Edmonton (1960–1963) Elmer E. Roper remarked, “I doubt if there has ever been anyone who occupied the Speaker's chair in Canada who was more fair and efficient in chairmanship over an assembly than the late speaker.”¹²¹ A tribute in the *Calgary Albertan* noted that the qualities that enabled Dawson to remain in the role of Speaker for so many years were that he held “a quiet office” that achieved “a satisfactory balance ... between the freedom of speech which is necessary if issues are to be raised or causes argued and the restraint on debate which is necessary if anything practical is to be accomplished.”¹²² On the occasion of Dawson's 25th anniversary as Speaker, John A. Wingblade,

* The Hon. Philip C. H. Primrose, Lieutenant Governor of Alberta (1936–1937), received the first state funeral in the history of the province. His lying-in-state took place in the Chamber. “Col. Primrose Lies In State,” *Edmonton Journal*, 20 March 1937, p. 1. The Hon. John J. Bowlen, Lieutenant Governor (1950–1959), was the second official to have a state funeral. His lying-in-state was also held in the Chamber. “Last Rites Held,” *Edmonton Journal*, 19 December 1959, p. 2. The Hon. J. W. Grant MacEwan, Lieutenant Governor of Alberta (1966–1974), was the fourth dignitary honoured with a lying-in-state. This portion of MacEwan's state funeral was held in the rotunda of the Legislature Building on June 19, 2000, after he died on June 15 in Calgary, Alberta. Alberta. Office of the Premier, State Funeral to be held for Grant MacEwan, 16 June 2000, [News Release].



Social Credit Member for Wetaskiwin, had expressed “a unanimous feeling of appreciation for [Dawson’s] having enhanced this legislature with a sense of loyalty and decorum on all matters dealing with parliamentary procedure.”¹²³ Lieutenant Governor (1966–1974) and Liberal Member for Calgary (1955–1960) J. W. Grant MacEwan described sitting in the Legislative Assembly under Dawson “like attending the school of a strict but well-qualified and kindly teacher.”¹²⁴

Notes

¹ “Mr. Speaker Dawson,” [Editorial], *Lethbridge Herald*, 26 March 1963, p. 4; “Speaker Dawson Absent First Time in 17 Years,” *Edmonton Journal*, 2 April 1954, p. 28; Bors Miskew, “Serves 23 Years as Alberta Speaker: Quarter Century in Politics Peter Dawson Not Politician,” *Lethbridge Herald*, 25 May 1960, p. 9.

² “Speaker Since 1937, Peter Dawson Dead,” *Calgary Albertan*, 25 March 1963, p. 1. Sir Charles Kerruish surpassed Dawson’s 26 years, serving 28 years as Speaker from 1962 to 1990 in the Manx Parliament. Tynwald. Parliament of the Isle of Man. House of Keys, *House of Keys Official Report Proceedings (Hansard)*, vol. 121, no. 1, 28 October 2003, p. 3. Sir Howard Fergus came close to Dawson’s record. Fergus served as Speaker of the Monserrat Legislative Council from October 2, 1975 until September 20, 2001 (25 years and 11 months as opposed to Dawson’s 26 years and one month). E-mail from Howard A. Fergus, Montserrat, 25 June 2003.

³ Scotland. General Register Office, “Peter Dawson,” District of Maybole, County of Ayr, 25 April 1892, [Certified Copy of Birth Registration], reproduced 14 December 2001; David G. Dawson, “Peter Dawson,” [Unpublished Manuscript], 2002, p. 1.

⁴ David G. Dawson, “John Dawson,” [Unpublished Manuscript], 2002, p. 1; “Jane McMurray,” Ayrshire, Straiton, 14 February 1854, no. LDS Film # 1041471, [Birth Registration], [Microfilm].

⁵ Scotland. General Register Office, “John Dawson–Jeanie McMurray,” District of Maybole, County of Ayr, Parish of Straiton, 9 December 1876, [Certified Copy of Marriage Registration], reproduced 14 December 2001.

⁶ *Ibid.*; Dawson, “John Dawson,” p. 1; Scotland. General Register Office, “John Dawson,” District of Kelvin, Burgh of Glasgow, 11 June 1900, no. 811, [Certified Copy of Death Registration], reproduced 21 February 2000.

⁷ Scotland. General Register Office, Dawson household, 1891 Scotland Census, County of Ayr, District of Maybole, Sec ID 2, Scots Origins, [Internet Subscription Service], accessed 2003.

⁸ “Jane Dawson,” in *Register of Book of Deaths*, District of Maybole, County of Ayr, 4 October 1892, no. 105, [Death Registration Transcription].

⁹ Scotland. General Register Office, “John Dawson,” [Certified Copy of Death Registration].

¹⁰ “Who’s Who: Rev. P. Dawson, M.L.A.,” *Edmonton Bulletin*, 13 February 1937, p. 11.

¹¹ Dawson, “Peter Dawson,” p. 1.

¹² Passenger List, S.S. *Ionian*, 24 March 1911, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa, microfilm no. T-4739; E-mail from David G. Dawson, 14 January 2002.

¹³ Passenger List, S.S. *Ionian*, 24 March 1911. The passenger list indicates that Peter Dawson was 19 years old; however, he was born April 11, 1892, and the ship sailed on March 18, 1911, meaning that he was actually 18 years old.



¹⁴ "Provincial Government: Dawson, Reverend Peter. MLA 1935–1963," in *Champion and District*, ed. Racille Ellis and Hannah McDonald (Champion, AB: Champion Historical Society, 1999), p. 114.

¹⁵ Miskew, "Serves 23 Years as Alberta Speaker," p. 9.

¹⁶ First Students Council, United Theological College, Edmonton, 1925–26, Photograph, [Personal collection of David G. Dawson].

¹⁷ Alberta Conference Minutes 1963. Archives Biographical Files Collection, United Church/Victoria University Archives, Toronto.

¹⁸ Dawson, "Peter Dawson," p. 1.

¹⁹ Boris Miskew, "Alberta Speaker Says He Is No Politician," *Red Deer Advocate*, 24 May 1960, p. 12.

²⁰ Phil Adler, "Scottish Butcher Now 'Rev. Mr. Speaker'," *Vancouver Province*, 7 September 1955, p. 7.

²¹ Ibid.

²² "Provincial Government: Dawson, Reverend Peter. MLA 1935–1963," p. 114.

²³ Adler, "Scottish Butcher Now 'Rev. Mr. Speaker,'" p. 7.

²⁴ David G. Dawson, "Hildegard Christina Dawson," [Unpublished Manuscript], 2002, p. 1.

²⁵ Ibid.

²⁶ David G. Dawson, "Johannes Hallonquist," [Unpublished Manuscript], 2002, p. 2.

²⁷ Ibid., p. 1.

²⁸ Manitoba. Vital Statistics Agency, "John Hallonquist–Hanna Christine Larson," Winnipeg, 5 April 1889, [Certified Copy of Marriage Registration], reproduced 15 August 2001; Dawson, "Johannes Hallonquist," p. 1. Family records specify the marriage date as April 6, 1889, but the record from Manitoba Vital Statistics provides the date of marriage as April 5, 1889.

²⁹ Manitoba. Vital Statistics Agency, "John Hallonquist–Hanna Christine Larson,"

³⁰ Dawson, "Hildegard Christina Dawson," p. 1.

³¹ Ibid.

³² Dawson, "Peter Dawson," p. 1.

³³ David G. Dawson, *Descendants of John Dawson*, [Genealogy Chart], produced in Family Treemaker, 20 January 2002; E-mail from Earland M. Dawson, 21 January 2002.

³⁴ E-mail from David G. Dawson, Edmonton, 21 January 2002.

³⁵ "Provincial Government: Dawson, Reverend Peter. MLA 1935–1963," p. 114.

³⁶ "Reverend Peter Dawson," in *Cleaverville Champion 1905 to 1970: A History of Champion and Area*, ed. Cleaverville Pioneer Club History Book Committee (Champion, Alberta: Champion History Committee, 1972), p. 24.

³⁷ Mrs. Peter Dawson, quoted in "History of the United Church in Champion," in *Cleaverville Champion 1905 to 1970: A History of Champion and Area*, ed. Cleaverville Pioneer Club History Book Committee (Champion, Alberta: Champion History Committee, 1972), p. 117; Dawson, "Peter Dawson," p. 2.

³⁸ "Rev. Dawson Will Remain as Pastor," *Champion Chronicle*, 19 September 1935, p. 1.

³⁹ Miskew, "Alberta Speaker Says He Is No Politician," p. 12.

⁴⁰ "To Broadcast House Opening on Thursday: Widespread Interest Dictates Unprecedented Policy," *Calgary Albertan*, 25 February 1937, p. 1.



- ⁴¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta*, 8th Legislature, 3rd Session, vol. XXXV, 25 February 1937, p. 7.
- ⁴² Adler, "Scottish Butcher Now 'Rev. Mr. Speaker,'" p. 7.
- ⁴³ "Mrs. Aberhart Receives Guests at Official Tea," *Edmonton Journal*, 26 February 1937, p. 20.
- ⁴⁴ "150 Attend Reception in Speaker's Room," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 26 February 1937, p. 8.
- ⁴⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta*, 10th Legislature, 1st Session, vol. XLVI, 22 February 1945, p. 8.
- ⁴⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta*, 11th Legislature, 1st Session, vol. LI, 17 February 1949, pp. 6–7.
- ⁴⁷ "Dawson Returned Speaker of House," *Edmonton Journal*, 18 February 1949, p. 3.
- ⁴⁸ "Incidents Disturb Tradition as 11th Legislature Opens," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 18 February 1949, p. 13.
- ⁴⁹ David G. Dawson, "Living in a Big House," [Unpublished Manuscript], 1999, p. 1.
- ⁵⁰ Dawson, "Peter Dawson," pp. 1, 3.
- ⁵¹ *Ibid.*, p. 2.
- ⁵² *Aberhart and the Alberta Insurrection, 1935–1940*, Alberta in the 20th Century: A Journalistic History of the Province, vol. 7, ed. Ted Byfield (Edmonton: United Western Communications, 1998), p. 26; Alvin Finkel, *The Social Credit Phenomenon in Alberta* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1989), pp. 59–62; Bob Hesketh, *Major Douglas and Alberta Social Credit* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1997), pp. 139–140.
- ⁵³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta*, 1 vol. (Edmonton: W. D. McLean, King's Printer, 1928), Standing Order 23.
- ⁵⁴ "Breach of Faith by Government Charged by Insurgent Group: A. J. Hooke of Red Deer Spokesman in Legislature," *Edmonton Journal*, 8 April 1937, p. 15.
- ⁵⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals*, 8th Legislature, 3rd Session, 8 April 1937, p. 92.
- ⁵⁶ "History is Made as Floor Crossed," *Edmonton Journal*, 25 September 1937, p. 3.
- ⁵⁷ *Ibid.*
- ⁵⁸ Finkel, *The Social Credit Phenomenon in Alberta*, pp. 61–62.
- ⁵⁹ Le Roy Peter Vernon Johnson and Ola J. MacNutt, *Aberhart of Alberta* (Edmonton: Institute of Applied Art, 1970), pp. 163–164.
- ⁶⁰ David Raymond and Iris Miller Elliot, *Bible Bill: A Biography of William Aberhart* (Edmonton: Reidmore, 1987), p. 247.
- ⁶¹ *Ibid.*; Gloria M. Strathern, *Alberta Newspapers 1880–1982: An Historical Directory* (Edmonton: University of Alberta Press), pp. 31–32.
- ⁶² Bill 9, *An Act to Ensure the Publication of Accurate News and Information*, 8th Legislature, 5th Session, Alberta, 1937.
- ⁶³ *Reference re: Alberta Legislation* [1938] S.C.R. 100, 2 D.L.R. 81 and *Reference re: Alberta Legislation* (1938) 4 D.L.R. 433, [1938] 3 W.W.R. 337 (J.C.R.C.).
- ⁶⁴ Decibels (a.k.a. Don Brown), "Under the Dome," *Edmonton Journal*, 17 March 1938, p. 11.



- ⁶⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 8th Legislature, 6th Session*, vol. XXXVIII, 24 March 1938, p. 114–115.
- ⁶⁶ *Ibid.*, 25 March 1938, p. 128; "House Orders 'Release' of Journal Reporter: Warrant for His Arrest Never Was Signed," *Edmonton Journal*, 26 March 1938, pp. 1–2.
- ⁶⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 11th Legislature, 1st Session*, 17 February 1949, p. 14.
- ⁶⁸ "No Diapers In Legislature," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 16 March 1949, p. 3.
- ⁶⁹ "Minister 'Deaf': Charges from Wray Irk House Speaker," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 23 February 1949, p. 11.
- ⁷⁰ "House Expels Arthur Wray," *Edmonton Journal*, 22 March 1952, pp. 1, 16; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 11th Legislature, 5th Session*, vol. LV, 21 March 1952, pp. 84–85.
- ⁷¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 11th Legislature, 5th Session*, 21 March 1952, p. 85.
- ⁷² "House Expels Arthur Wray," p. 1.
- ⁷³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 11th Legislature, 5th Session*, 25 March 1952, p. 86.
- ⁷⁴ "New Page Boys To Serve House," *Edmonton Journal*, 10 February 1956, p. 4.
- ⁷⁵ "House Photography Rouses Liberals' Ire," *Edmonton Journal*, 22 February 1958, p. 1.
- ⁷⁶ *Ibid.*
- ⁷⁷ *Ibid.*
- ⁷⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 13th Legislature, 4th Session*, vol. LXII, 11 March 1958, pp. 45–46.
- ⁷⁹ *Ibid.*
- ⁸⁰ Miskew, "Alberta Speaker Says He Is No Politician," p. 12.
- ⁸¹ Dawson, "Peter Dawson," p. 2.
- ⁸² Grant MacEwan, *Poking Into Politics* (Edmonton: Institute of Applied Art, Ltd., 1966), p. 145.
- ⁸³ *Ibid.*
- ⁸⁴ "Speaker Shatters Record," *Edmonton Journal*, 12 February 1960, p. 27.
- ⁸⁵ Gary Levy, "Origin of Regional Parliamentary Conferences," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 8, no. 2 (1985): p. 2.
- ⁸⁶ "4 Liberal MLAs Almost Ejected in Unprecedented House Tangle," *Calgary Herald*, 5 March 1959, p. 53.
- ⁸⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 13th Legislature, 5th Session*, vol. LXIII, 4 March 1959, pp. 75–78; "4 Liberal MLAs Almost Ejected in Unprecedented House Tangle," p. 53.
- ⁸⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 13th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. LX, 9 February 1956, p. 10.
- ⁸⁹ A. C. Ballantine, "Queen and Nurse Chat in Capital Formalities," *The Albertan*, 3 June 1939, pp. 1–2.
- ⁹⁰ "Throne Chairs Made Ready for Royal Visitors," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 26 May 1939, p. 12.



- ⁹¹ "Ceremonial Marks Presentations at Capital Buildings," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 3 June 1939, p. 5.
- ⁹² "Happy Day of Royal Visit Is Climaxed by Formal Government Dinner," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 3 June 1939, p. 10; Dawson, "Hildegarde Christina Dawson," p. 3.
- ⁹³ "Edmonton Welcomes Vice-Regal Visit," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 26 March 1941, p. 2.
- ⁹⁴ "250 Meet Princess and Duke in Attending State Dinner," *Edmonton Journal*, 29 October 1951, p. 32.
- ⁹⁵ "Legislative Fountain Nearing Completion," *Edmonton Journal*, 2 July 1959, p. 32.
- ⁹⁶ "City Greets Queen," *Edmonton Journal*, 21 July 1959, p. 7.
- ⁹⁷ "Retires From Ministry After 30 Years Service," *Vulcan Advocate*, 29 June 1960, p. 1; "Provincial Government: Dawson, Reverend Peter. MLA 1935–1963," p. 114.
- ⁹⁸ Dawson, "Hildegarde Christina Dawson," p. 3.
- ⁹⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 14th Legislature, 4th Session*, vol. LXVII, 5 April 1962, p. 117.
- ¹⁰⁰ "Peter Dawson: Alberta Speaker Dies Suddenly," *Calgary Herald*, 25 March 1963, p. 2.
- ¹⁰¹ "Peter Dawson Lodge is Name Chosen for Home," *Vulcan Advocate*, 11 March 1964, p. 1.
- ¹⁰² "Who's Who: Rev. P. Dawson, M.L.A.," p. 11.
- ¹⁰³ Dawson, "Hildegarde Christina Dawson," p. 3.
- ¹⁰⁴ "Who's Who: Rev. P. Dawson, M.L.A.," p. 11.
- ¹⁰⁵ Dawson, "Peter Dawson," p. 2.
- ¹⁰⁶ Ancient Free and Accepted Masons Grand Lodge of Alberta, *Grand Lodge of Alberta Annual Proceedings* (Calgary: Grand Lodge of Alberta, 1963), p. 179.
- ¹⁰⁷ Dawson, "Peter Dawson," p. 3.
- ¹⁰⁸ Grand Lodge of Alberta, *Grand Lodge of Alberta Annual Proceedings*, p. 179.
- ¹⁰⁹ "Speaker Dawson Dies, 70," *Edmonton Journal*, 25 March 1963, p. 1. There are conflicting accounts of Dawson's death. Some accounts report that he died at the University Hospital (for example: "Alberta House Speaker Dies After Seizure," *Medicine Hat News*, 25 March 1963, p. 1), while his son, David G. Dawson, says "My understanding [is] that he died in the ambulance. The death certificate notes D.O.A." E-mail from David G. Dawson, 30 April 2003.
- ¹¹⁰ "Honor Dawson Memory," *Calgary Albertan*, 26 March 1963, p. 1.
- ¹¹¹ William Patterson, "Report from the Legislature," *Lac Ste Anne Chronicle*, 6 April 1963, p. 8.
- ¹¹² "Services Held for House Speaker," *Edmonton Journal*, 28 March 1963, p. 3.
- ¹¹³ Alberta Conference Minutes 1963.
- ¹¹⁴ "Dawson [Peter]," [Obituary], *Edmonton Journal*, 26 March 1963, p. 24; "Services Held for House Speaker," p. 3.
- ¹¹⁵ E-mail from Earland M. Dawson, 30 April 2003.
- ¹¹⁶ E-mail from David G. Dawson, 29 April 2003; Personal communication with Earland M. Dawson, 6 July 2004.
- ¹¹⁷ "Provincial Government: Dawson, Reverend Peter. MLA 1935–1963," p. 115.

¹¹⁸ Dawson, *Hildegarde Christine*, Alberta Genealogical Society Master Databank, [Electronic Database], (Edmonton: Alberta Genealogical Society), accessed 23 January 2002. Plot number 4,399,04 (Hildegarde Christine Dawson) and 4,399,03 (Peter Dawson).

¹¹⁹ Dawson, "Peter Dawson," p. 2.

¹²⁰ "Peter Dawson: Alberta Speaker Dies Suddenly," p. 2.

¹²¹ "Quiet House Ceremony A Tribute to Speaker," *Edmonton Journal*, 26 March 1963, p. 19.

¹²² "Hon. Peter Dawson," [Editorial], *Calgary Albertan*, 26 March 1963, p. 4.

¹²³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 14th Legislature, 4th Session*, 5 April 1962, p. 117.

¹²⁴ MacEwan, *Poking Into Politics*, p. 144.

Expediter of the business of the House



Dixon 1963-1972



ARTHUR JOHNSON DIXON

Arthur Johnson¹ Dixon was the seventh Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and the first to have previously held the post of Deputy Speaker (1955–1963).^{*} He was the last Social Credit Member in 20th-century Alberta to become Speaker. Dixon, who has been characterized as an ‘enthusiast in whatever he does,’² made the transition to Speaker easily. He had the reputation of being approachable, and Members were encouraged to visit him, as “[h]is method for maintaining ... impartiality was to be friendly and accessible to both sides of the House.”³ As Speaker, Dixon served with Premiers Ernest C. Manning (1943–1968) and Harry E. Strom (1968–1971). Dixon was a Private Member from 1952 to 1955 and from 1971 to 1975, during the tenures as Premier of both Manning and E. Peter Lougheed (1971–1985).

Family History

Arthur ‘Art’ Dixon was born December 1, 1919, at Windlestone, County of Durham, England.⁴ Art was the third⁵ of the seven children[†] of John William ‘Jack’ Dixon⁶ and Margaret Ann ‘Meg’⁷ Mawson.⁸ Jack and Meg, both of whom were born just east of Bishop Auckland in the County of Durham, England,⁹ were married on April 11, 1914, in the Coundon Parish Church, Auckland, Durham.¹⁰ Art’s great-grandfather Samuel Mawson¹¹ was involved in the English co-operative movement¹² in the mid-19th century.¹³

Jack Dixon, like his father before him,^{‡14} was a coal miner in the County of Durham.¹⁵ Jane Ann and John Dand,¹⁶ Meg’s aunt and uncle, who were already established in Okotoks, Alberta, encouraged Jack and Meg to immigrate as there were jobs available in the area.¹⁷ The Dixon family, including six children, sailed from Liverpool, England, on the S.S. *Doric*, which docked at Quebec City eight days later, on September 29, 1928.¹⁸ Art later recalled the “nice, long train trip” and speculated that his parents must have marvelled at “all the open space there”¹⁹ as they travelled inland on the Canadian Pacific Railway (CPR) to their destination of Okotoks.²⁰

Once in Okotoks, Jack Dixon was employed at the Royalite warehouse and pipe yard, and on various road and construction jobs.²¹ Jack was also “an early member and worker in the Social Credit Party.”²² During the Second World War, he served in the Veterans’ Guard of Canada.²³ In 1944,²⁴ the Dixon family moved to Calgary, Alberta, where Jack worked for several construction companies.²⁵ The family became active members of St. Mark’s Anglican Church.²⁶

In the early 1930s, Jack Dixon lost his job. Art, later reminiscing with a reporter, remarked, “[T]hat’s when the Depression started for us.”²⁷ Meg Dixon, who was an avid listener to the

^{*} Archibald B. Gillis, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories (1903–1904) and Stanley S. Schumacher, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta (1993–1997) were the other two Speakers to have served as Deputy Speaker prior to being elected Speaker.

[†] Margaret, Phoebe, Arthur, Samuel, John Noel, George and Mary.

[‡] Meg’s father, Samuel Mawson, was a clerk at the mines.



Sunday radio broadcasts of William Aberhart (Premier 1935–1943), introduced her family to Social Credit ideas.²⁸ When Okotoks formed a Social Credit study group, Meg was named the secretary-treasurer, and Art would frequently accompany his mother to these meetings.²⁹ Meg Dixon was a member of St. Mark's Anglican Church Women's Auxiliary; a pioneer member of the Alberta Social Credit Party; and a life member of Social Credit Women's Auxiliary.³⁰ At a 1959 meeting of the Young Social Credit Association, Art explained that he had joined the Social Credit movement "because [he] could not understand why we should have starvation and near-starvation in the midst of plenty."³¹

Education

Art Dixon attended primary school in England. After emigrating with his family, he completed Grades 2 to 9 in Okotoks.³² He subsequently took high school correspondence courses with the Alberta Department of Education. In a 2002 interview, Dixon declared that his was a "grassroots" or "down-to-earth" education, that he was an avid reader and that he considered himself to be 'self-educated.'³³ In 1940, he had planned to attend the Southern Alberta Institute of Technology (SAIT) and enrol in motor mechanics, but instead he decided to join the Royal Canadian Air Force (RCAF).³⁴

Military Career

While waiting to be called up, Dixon attended volunteer military training at Mewata Armoury in Calgary.³⁵ Sergeant Dixon³⁶ was stationed, as part of the ground crew,³⁷ at the No. 2 Wireless School in Calgary, which "was a training school for wireless air-gunners."³⁸ During his time with the RCAF, Dixon travelled to various parts of Ontario, Manitoba and Saskatchewan, and then returned to Calgary.³⁹

Marriage and Family

During his first RCAF posting to Calgary, Dixon met his future wife, Dorothea Jewel Evans,⁴⁰ who was born in 1921.⁴¹ Dorothea was the youngest of the four children of Thomas Millard Evans, a railway fireman, steam engineer and farmer, and Edna Margaret Corcoran, both from the midwestern United States.⁴² The Evans family had been pioneer homesteaders in the Acme area of the North-West Territories (Alberta) in 1903. During the winter months, when Thomas Evans was employed as a steam engineer, the family moved as work became available. It was during this time that Dorothea was born in Burnaby, British Columbia.⁴³ In the early 1940s, the family moved to Calgary.⁴⁴ Dorothea graduated from Henderson Business College⁴⁵ in February 1942 and began work as a civilian stenographer in the Hospital Orderly Room at No. 2 Wireless School.⁴⁶

Sgt. Dixon and Dorothea Evans married at the Pro Cathedral Church of the Redeemer in Calgary on July 10, 1944, and spent their honeymoon in Banff, Alberta.⁴⁷ The Dixons have two sons, Thomas Evan (b. 1947) and Donald Arthur (1950).⁴⁸

Dorothea Dixon was active in her community, as a member of the Kiwanis Club and of the First Church of Christ, Scientist, Calgary, and as a volunteer with the Meals on Wheels program.⁴⁹ She assisted her husband ably during both his parliamentary and community service careers.⁵⁰



Dorothea Dixon died January 23, 1992,⁵¹ and is buried at Queen's Park Cemetery in Calgary alongside her parents in the Evans family plot.⁵² In the fall of 1996, Dixon remarried. He and his second wife, Marguerite Hodgkinson, solemnized their marriage at Knox United Church, Calgary.⁵³ They are both members of First Church of Christ, Scientist in Calgary.⁵⁴

Early Career

After his discharge from the RCAF in 1946, Dixon and a partner opened two small businesses in succession, but neither succeeded due to the shortage of goods after the war.⁵⁵ He subsequently changed course and became a real estate agent in Calgary.⁵⁶ Dixon felt more confident in this venture, as he saw a 'bigger opportunity' due to the growth of the city during the post-war period.⁵⁷

Political Career

Dixon entered the political arena as a Social Credit candidate for the constituency of Calgary-West in the 1949 federal election⁵⁸ and in a 1951 by-election,⁵⁹ but was unsuccessful each time. Traditionally, the federal constituency of Calgary-West was a Conservative stronghold, held from 1925 to 1939 by prominent Conservative Richard B. Bennett (Prime Minister 1930–1935) and from 1945 to 1951 by well-known Calgary lawyer Arthur L. Smith.⁶⁰ It was Smith who encouraged Dixon to stay in politics.⁶¹

Turning his attention to provincial politics, Dixon ran in the general election of August 5, 1952 as a Social Credit candidate. He was elected as one of six Members representing Calgary as the Social Credit Party won 53 of the 60 seats in the election. He was returned to the Legislative Assembly for the Calgary multi-Member constituency in the 1955 general election, which saw a downturn in Social Credit popularity with the party winning 16 fewer seats than in the previous election. Although Social Credit policies generally remained popular, in 1954 and 1955 public trust was shaken by Opposition criticism about "the government's procurement policies regarding both land and materials, its tendering practices, and the treasury branch's alleged favouritism to MLAs in the granting of loans."⁶² While the Opposition pushed for judicial investigations of the allegations, Premier Manning responded by calling an early election that resulted in a 10 per cent decline in Social Credit's share of the popular vote.⁶³ The party rallied during the elections of 1959, 1963 and 1967, winning overwhelming majorities. As a result of changes to the electoral divisions of Calgary, Dixon ran for the single-Member constituency of Calgary-South East in the election of 1959, securing a comfortable majority of the vote. Dixon was the successful candidate in 1963 for the constituency of Calgary-South. The election of 1967 was a closely contested race against Progressive Conservative candidate C. Joseph 'Joe' Clark (Prime Minister 1979–1980),* which Dixon won by a margin of fewer than 500 votes.⁶⁴ This would be the last Alberta Legislature in the 20th century in which the Social Credit Party formed the Government. Dixon's final election success was his victory in the general election of 1971 for the constituency of Calgary-Millican. Dixon once stated that the most rewarding part of his job as a Member was the opportunity to serve the people whom he represented.⁶⁵

* This was Joe Clark's only candidacy in a provincial election.



Dixon served as Deputy Speaker of the Legislative Assembly from 1955 to 1963.⁶⁶ The role required that he act in the absence of the Speaker—Peter Dawson (1937–1963)—and as Chair when the Legislative Assembly went into *Committee of the Whole*.⁶⁷ Dixon remarked that he rarely had the opportunity to act as Chair while serving as Deputy Speaker, largely because of Dawson's exemplary attendance record. Therefore he “made a point when [he] was Speaker to get the Deputy Speaker up,” and on other occasions, to select individual Members to act as Chair.⁶⁸ In 1962, Premier Manning announced a Cabinet shuffle, at which time there was considerable speculation that Dixon would be appointed to a Cabinet post as Minister without Portfolio. When the appointment did not occur, the *Calgary Herald* reported that “the premier apparently felt it would be a little unfair to ask a man of Dixon's calibre to take a new job with a drop in salary.”^{*69}

As Speaker

On March 26, 1963, during the Fifth Session of the 14th Legislature, following the unexpected death of long-time Speaker Peter Dawson, Arthur Johnson Dixon, at age 43, was elected Speaker. Dixon was nominated through a motion by Premier Ernest C. Manning, which was seconded by Municipal Affairs Minister Alfred J. Hooke.⁷⁰ He was re-elected Speaker at the First Session of the 15th Legislature on February 13, 1964, again nominated through a motion by Premier Manning, which was seconded by Hooke.⁷¹ His final election as Speaker came on February 15, 1968 when Premier Manning nominated him, seconded by the Leader of the Opposition, E. Peter Loughheed.⁷²

During his tenure as Speaker, Dixon served on the *Standing Committee on Public Affairs, Agriculture and Education*, 1965–1969; *Special Committee to Arrange the Area Conference of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association* (Chair), 1965; *Special Committee to Revise Rules 74 to 104 of the Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta* (Chair), 1965; and *Special Committee to Select an Ombudsman*, 1967. Dixon was a strong supporter of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association (CPA) and encouraged participation in its activities by the Members, a tradition that remains in place to the present day.⁷³

During Dixon's tenure, parliamentary dinners were held in the Legislature Building.⁷⁴ Various cultural groups living in Alberta were often feted at these dinners.⁷⁵ Alberta culinary arts students would frequently have the honour of creating the meals for the guests. Dixon recalled that the staff in the Legislative Assembly, including Clerks Raymond A. A. Crevolin and William H. ‘Bill’ MacDonald and Sergeant-at-Arms James A. Reed, would work hard to ensure the events were successful.⁷⁶

* In 1962, the Deputy Speaker had a sessional indemnity of \$4,000 plus an expense allowance of \$2,000 (*Legislative Assembly Act*, R.S.A. 1955, c. 174, s. 35. as am. by S.A. 1960, c. 55, s. 2), whereas a Minister without Portfolio would receive the \$3,000 sessional indemnity plus an expense allowance of \$1,500, which was paid to Members in addition to a subsistence allowance and any travelling expenses incurred as a result of performing duties as a member of the Executive Council. *Legislative Assembly Act*, R.S.A. 1955, c. 174, s. 52. as am. by S.A. 1960, c. 55, s. 3.



Dixon held an unassuming view of his role as Speaker, seeing himself "as an 'expediter' of the business of the House"⁷⁷ and stating modestly, "I'm the servant of the House, not the master."⁷⁸ He felt his duty was "to administer the rules rather than to make the rules."⁷⁹ Dixon considered that he was very fortunate throughout his years as Speaker because the Social Credit Members, having formed the government since 1935, had a great deal of parliamentary experience and knew the rules.⁸⁰

Dixon observed that the size of the Opposition greatly impacted the overall climate of the Legislative Assembly. In his opinion, a small Opposition was not ideal "because the Speaker [might] have a tendency to try to compensate for there being only three or four of them."⁸¹ Accordingly, with the approval of the Members, Dixon occasionally relaxed the *Standing Orders* so that 'democracy could be carried out.'⁸² He allowed Members of the Opposition extra time in debate, or allowed debate to continue without a seconder so that the Opposition would not be hindered.⁸³ "The government has its majority to protect it; the opposition has the rules and the Speaker," Dixon explained.⁸⁴ The wide range of Dixon's responsibilities as Speaker was illustrated by a 1967 photograph in which he was shown in his Speaker's robes at the end of Session removing a plant that stood on the Table in the Chamber.⁸⁵ He explained that it was one of his duties every year to move the plant to the Speaker's Suite when the Legislative Assembly was no longer in Session.

Dixon was sensitive to the mood of the House and the unpredictability of Members' actions, especially when an election was approaching. Dixon never expelled a Member from the Chamber, as his philosophy was to avoid naming* Members 'at all costs.'⁸⁶

On March 18, 1964, Dixon "had to call for order and cut off the question period after Hon. Fred Colborne, minister of public works, accused Liberal Opposition member William Dickie of attempting to 'skirt the rules of the House.'"⁸⁷ A question of proper procedure resulted from Dickie's attempt to table an unsigned letter regarding university residence fees. This method of introduction into the Legislative Assembly was considered out of order. Indeed, it was reported that Dixon subsequently stated, outside the Chamber, that "he would never have allowed Mr. Dickie to read the student's letter had he known it was unsigned."⁸⁸

On May 5, 1969, Dixon made a ruling on a matter of privilege by clarifying the facts of the Government's contention "that three Conservative opposition members had misled the house by stating it was common practice for cabinet ministers to be sworn in as witnesses at committee hearings."⁸⁹ The practices of other Legislative Assemblies and the federal Parliament were investigated by both the government and opposition caucuses. Dixon declared that two separate issues were being debated: the government had asked whether Cabinet Ministers are called as *sworn* witnesses to appear before Standing Committees, and the opposition had asked whether Cabinet Ministers appeared before Standing Committees as witnesses. Consequently, Dixon

* A disciplinary measure used at the discretion of the Speaker. For more information, see the Glossary.



concluded that these two questions were not the same. He ruled:

Study of the transcripts indicates that the House has misled itself and that the blame is to be allocated to the Standing Committee on Public Affairs, Agriculture and Education for not exercising its own powers. ... On the question of apologies that have been demanded, I feel that the only one due is to the Speaker of the House from the Committee, as they have attempted to involve him in a dispute that they had the power to both prevent and resolve. Needless to say the apology is accepted even before it is offered.⁹⁰



Jasper Place group visits A.J. Dixon, in Speaker's robes, back row, 2nd from left (Feb. 1968).
Cropped photo.

All 65 Members of the Legislative Assembly were members of the Committee.

The idea of broadcasting the proceedings of the Legislative Assembly was discussed during Dixon's tenure. On February 27, 1969, Donald R. Getty, Progressive Conservative Member for Edmonton-Strathcona West and future Premier (1985–1992), moved that there be an amendment to the *Standing Orders* to allow radio and television coverage of Session. After some debate, the motion was referred to the *Standing Committee on Privileges and Elections*.⁹¹ The issue continued to undergo investigation until the Committee submitted a report recommending the filming of a full day's proceedings. There was a clear understanding that the film would "not be used for news

purposes."⁹² Unanimous approval was given to the motion, although there was still some concern in the Social Credit caucus about allowing the proceedings to be broadcast.

In September 1969, the Association of Canadian Clerks-at-the-Table was established in Quebec City. The Association provides an opportunity for Clerks to network and exchange information. The second conference of this Association was held in Edmonton in August of 1970.⁹³

The most significant controversy of Dixon's tenure was the Bennett Dam affair, which took place in early 1971. The conflict was rooted in a petition presented by Opposition Leader E. Peter Lougheed on behalf of Fort Chipewyan resident and trapper Noel McKay. The petition claimed that McKay's livelihood was at risk due to falling water levels caused by the new Bennett Dam in British Columbia.⁹⁴ In response, Health Minister James D. Henderson disclosed McKay's employment and welfare records to prove that McKay was not making a living as a trapper. Henderson insinuated that Lougheed had misled the Legislative Assembly.⁹⁵ Lougheed in turn focused on the impropriety of releasing McKay's confidential records, and Dr. Hugh M. Horner, Progressive Conservative Member for Lac Ste. Anne, proposed a motion of privilege referring Henderson's actions to the *Standing Committee on Privileges and Elections*.⁹⁶ Subsequently, Henderson put forward a motion for an amendment in order to add Lougheed's actions to the privilege motion. Dixon ruled that there were two separate questions, thus two separate motions were required. In an unprecedented move, Members of the Legislative Assembly rejected Dixon's ruling by a vote of 44 to 14.⁹⁷ On March 22, 1971, Dixon proposed a motion from the floor to "clarify the position in which I now find myself."⁹⁸ The motion confirmed the unanimous

confidence of the Legislative Assembly in the Speaker and re-established his authority to preside over the business of the House.⁹⁹ The controversy ultimately concluded by following the course that Dixon had first suggested, with both questions being directed to the *Standing Committee on Privileges and Elections*.¹⁰⁰ The incident led to clarification of the way in which private petitions to the Legislative Assembly were managed. Dixon felt that the rules for receiving private citizens' petitions were inadequate and that Members introducing petitions should specify which committee should deal with them, since there was no Standing Committee charged with that responsibility.¹⁰¹

Although the Legislative Assembly has had Pages since its very first Session in 1906, it was not until 1971 that, for the first time, female students were hired to fill this role.¹⁰² Legislature Pages are selected from the ranks of Alberta high school students, of at least 15 years of age and 'of sound academic standing.'¹⁰³ Pages typically carry messages and documents between Members in the Chamber and between Members and the various offices in the Legislature complex. In Dixon's time, Members informally referred to Pages as 'penguins' because of their manner of dress.¹⁰⁴

In the August 30, 1971 provincial general election, after 36 years of Social Credit Governments, Dixon was one of only 25 successful Social Credit candidates. The Progressive Conservative Party won 49 of the 75 available seats and thus formed its first Government in Alberta, with E. Peter Lougheed as Premier (1971–1985).^{*} On March 2, 1972, when the First Session of the 17th Legislature convened, the Progressive Conservative caucus elected one of its own members, Gerard J. Amerongen, as Speaker (1972–1986).¹⁰⁵

By 1975, Dixon had represented the people of Calgary for 23 years, just over eight of those as Speaker. Dixon was defeated by Progressive Conservative candidate Thomas C. Donnelly in the 1975 general election. Only five Social Credit candidates were successful in that election; none of them represented either Edmonton or Calgary constituencies.¹⁰⁶ On March 14, 1979, Dixon ran in his last election against the successful Progressive Conservative candidate and future Speaker Dr. David J. Carter (1986–1993).[†] Dixon remained positive about his experience in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. In a 1982 interview, he said, "Despite what you hear about public life—all the derogatory remarks and so on—it's still a wonderful experience for anyone and I don't hesitate to recommend it."¹⁰⁷

Later Career

Dixon has been associated with the real estate business in Calgary for over 50 years and remains a broker for Dixon Real Estate Services Inc. Dixon is president of Mannington Resources Ltd., a private company in operation since 1987.¹⁰⁸

Dixon created the William Aberhart Historical Foundation in 2000 and currently acts as its president.¹⁰⁹ He has great admiration for Aberhart's leadership qualities, and in 1982, he was

* The New Democrat Party won one seat, its first in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

† Dixon became the second former Speaker to have been defeated by a future Speaker. Peter Dawson defeated Oran L. McPherson (1922–1926) in the 1935 provincial election.



quoted as saying, "What I'm waiting for now is another Aberhart to come along, whether it's a Social Credit Aberhart, a Liberal Aberhart or a Conservative Aberhart."¹¹⁰

Community Activities and Personal Interests

Dixon believes that those who lived through the Depression years "spent much of their mature lives trying to make things as good as they could get,"¹¹¹ and he has therefore been involved in many community organizations. In 1976, Dixon became president of the Calgary Tourist and Convention Association.¹¹² In the 1990s, Dixon served as a volunteer on the Board of Governors of the Alberta Real Estate Foundation.¹¹³ Other organizations in which Dixon has been actively involved over the years include the Calgary and Alberta Safety Councils and the Kiwanis Club.¹¹⁴ Dixon also worked with the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals (SPCA), lobbying for herds of wild horses to be permitted to continue to roam freely in the foothills of Alberta.¹¹⁵

Dixon was involved in the establishment of the University of Alberta at Calgary (later the University of Calgary)¹¹⁶ and has been a supporter of the Southern Alberta Institute of Technology (SAIT).¹¹⁷ He was on the Board of Governors for Mount Royal Junior College from 1962 to 1966.¹¹⁸ He played a role in the building of Court House No. 3 in Calgary (the Court of Queen's Bench Courthouse),¹¹⁹ Dream Haven (a seniors' home)¹²⁰ and the Foothills Hospital.¹²¹

Dixon remains actively interested in public policy issues¹²² and enjoys sports such as hockey and football.¹²³

Honours and Awards

Arthur Johnson Dixon was appointed as a Member of the Order of Canada on June 25, 1979. The investiture took place on October 24, 1979. He was recognized for "his contributions to the province of Alberta, whose Legislature he served for nearly 25 years including eight as Speaker, and for his community work in Calgary, particularly in projects involving young people."¹²⁴ Also in 1979, Dixon was presented with the Alberta Achievement Award in the Service Award Category by Premier E. Peter Lougheed in recognition of his long record of voluntary service with a variety of organizations.¹²⁵

On September 3, 1987, as part of the 75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building, Arthur Johnson Dixon and Gerard Joseph Amerongen (Speaker 1972–1986) were each presented with a replica of the Speaker's Chair.¹²⁶ Dixon's replica was presented by Raymond A. Speaker, Member for Little Bow (1963–1992), a long-time Social Credit colleague.*

* Amerongen's Chair was presented by David Russell, Deputy Premier. The Chairs were carved to reflect the different Coats of Arms of Alberta in place during their respective tenures as Speaker. The original Coat of Arms was assigned in 1907. In 1980, as part of the 75th anniversary of the Province of Alberta, an embellished Coat of Arms was adopted. Dixon's Chair had the original Coat of Arms on it, whereas Amerongen's Chair reflected the new Coat of Arms.



Dixon became an honorary member of the Calgary Real Estate Board in October 1981.¹²⁷ In 1988, SAIT presented Dixon with the first Distinguished Alumnus Award on the basis of his achievements in business and industry, his contributions to the community and his contributions to SAIT.¹²⁸ In 1992, Dixon Park in Okotoks was named in honour of the Dixon family, one of the prominent families in the community.¹²⁹ Dixon has received a life membership in the Salvation Army of Canada, for his work on its Citizens Advisory Board, and the Distinguished Service Award, the highest honour presented to a 'non-salvationist'.¹³⁰

In the fall of 2002, Dixon was a recipient of the "Golden Jubilee medal of Queen Elizabeth II [commemorating] the fiftieth anniversary of Her Majesty's reign as Queen of Canada. The medal [is] awarded to Canadians who have made a significant contribution to their fellow citizens, their community or to Canada."¹³¹

Tributes

At the unveiling of his official portrait in the Alberta Legislature Building, Dixon was honoured with a poem by Edgar W. Hinman, Member for Cardston and former Provincial Treasurer, which included the stanza:

T'were a real borrin job on occasions
On others excitin and rare
But our Arthur by gentle persuasion
Kept order and peace with a flare.¹³²

At the presentation of the replica Chairs in 1987, Amerongen said of Dixon and those who worked with him that "they left to us who followed a tradition of a good Parliament, a good Assembly, good manners and effective work methods."¹³³

Notes

¹ "Dixon—Evans," [Wedding Announcement], *Okotoks Review*, 4 August 1944, p. 1; Laurie Mackay, *Order in the House: A Historical Account of Two Past Speakers of the Alberta Legislature* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1992), p. 2.

² Jim Hume, "Speaker Faces Challenge," *Edmonton Journal*, 12 February 1964, p. 31.

³ Mackay, *Order in the House*, p. 3.

⁴ Pierre G. Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1972 ed. (Ottawa: Publication Office, 1972), p. 491.

⁵ Canadian Immigration Service, S.S. *Doric* Passenger List, 29 September 1928, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa, RG76—Immigration, series C-1-a, 1928, vol. 26, p. 208, microfilm T-14749; John N. Dixon, "Dixon Family," in *A Century of Memories: Okotoks and District 1883–1983* (Okotoks, AB: Okotoks and District Historical Society, 1983), p. 189.

⁶ "Dixon [John William (Jack)]," [Obituary], *Calgary Herald*, 26 January 1983, p. F1.

⁷ "Dixon [Mrs. Margaret Ann (Meg)]," [Obituary], *Calgary Herald*, 21 July 1980, p. A21.

⁸ England. County of Durham. District Register Office, "Margaret Ann Mawson," Auckland, Bishop Auckland, County of Durham, 20 August 1891, no. 338, [Certified Copy of Birth Registration], reproduced 23 July 2002.



- ⁹ England. County of Durham. District Register Office, "John William Dixon," Auckland, Bishop Auckland, County of Durham, 14 August 1890, no. 384, [Certified Copy of Birth Registration], reproduced 23 July 2002; England. County of Durham. District Register Office, "Margaret Ann Mawson," [Birth Registration].
- ¹⁰ England. County of Durham. District Register Office, "John William Dixon–Margaret Ann Mawson," Auckland, Bishop Auckland, County of Durham, Parish of Coundon, 11 April 1914, no. 326, [Certified Copy of Marriage Registration], reproduced 23 July 2002.
- ¹¹ United Kingdom. General Register Office, "Samuel Mawson–Phillis Taylor," Morpeth, Northumberland, 27 December 1843, no. 81, [Certified Copy of Marriage Registration], reproduced 19 January 2004.
- ¹² Arthur Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ¹³ Paul Lagasse, ed., *The Columbia Encyclopedia*, 6th ed. (New York: Columbia University Press, 2000), p. 678.
- ¹⁴ England. County of Durham. District Register Office, "John William Dixon," [Birth Registration].
- ¹⁵ Canadian Immigration Service, S.S. *Doric* Passenger List; Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ¹⁶ John N. Dixon, "Dand Family," in *A Century of Memories: Okotoks and District 1883–1983* (Okotoks, AB: Okotoks and District Historical Society, 1983), p. 186.
- ¹⁷ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ¹⁸ Canadian Immigration Service, S.S. *Doric* Passenger List.
- ¹⁹ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ²⁰ Canadian Immigration Service, S.S. *Doric* Passenger List.
- ²¹ Dixon, "Dixon Family," p. 189.
- ²² "Dixon [John William (Jack)]," p. F1.
- ²³ Ibid.
- ²⁴ "Dixon [Mrs. Margaret Ann (Meg)]," p. A21.
- ²⁵ Dixon, "Dixon Family," p. 189.
- ²⁶ Ibid; "Dixon [Mrs. Margaret Ann (Meg)]," p. A21.
- ²⁷ Don Truckey, "Politics Runs in Veins of Socred Stalwart," *Calgary Herald*, 14 August 1982, p. G3.
- ²⁸ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ²⁹ Ibid.
- ³⁰ "Dixon [Mrs. Margaret Ann (Meg)]," p. A21.
- ³¹ "Socred Claims Outlined," *Calgary Herald*, 26 August 1959, p. 25.
- ³² Dixon, "Dixon Family," p. 189; Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ³³ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ³⁴ Ibid.
- ³⁵ Ibid.
- ³⁶ "Dixon–Evans," p. 1.

- ³⁷ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ³⁸ Dorothea Jewel Evans Dixon, "Arthur J. and Dorothea Dixon," in *Acme Memories* (Acme, Alta.: Acme and District Historical Society, 1979), p. 231.
- ³⁹ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ⁴⁰ Dixon, "Arthur J. and Dorothea Dixon," pp. 230–231.
- ⁴¹ Ellwood Evans, "Thomas Millard Evans," in *Acme Memories* (Acme, Alberta: Acme and District Historical Society, 1979), p. 240.
- ⁴² *Ibid.*, pp. 239–240.
- ⁴³ *Ibid.*, p. 240.
- ⁴⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 241.
- ⁴⁵ "Dixon [Mrs. Dorothea Jewel]," [Obituary], *Calgary Herald*, 25 January 1992, p. H1.
- ⁴⁶ Dixon, "Arthur J. and Dorothea Dixon," p. 231.
- ⁴⁷ "Dixon–Evans," p. 1.
- ⁴⁸ Dixon, "Arthur J. and Dorothea Dixon," p. 231.
- ⁴⁹ "Dixon [Mrs. Dorothea Jewel]," p. H1.
- ⁵⁰ *Ibid.*
- ⁵¹ *Ibid.*
- ⁵² Dorothea Jewel Dixon headstone, 9 July 2001, Photograph, Queen's Park Cemetery, Calgary, Lot 19, block 10, section D.
- ⁵³ Personal communication with Arthur Dixon, 1 May 2002.
- ⁵⁴ Lynn Koziey, "Prayers and Uncertainty for Church-less Members: Optimism Rises From Historic Building's Ashes," *Calgary Herald*, 14 June 2002, p. B1.
- ⁵⁵ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ⁵⁶ Pierre G. Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1971 ed. (Ottawa: Publication Office, 1971), p. 475.
- ⁵⁷ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ⁵⁸ "Calgary West Votes: Member of Parliament to be Named in Third Riding Bye-Election," *Calgary Albertan*, 10 December 1951, p. 1.
- ⁵⁹ "Carl Nickle, P.C., Victorious: 2 Opponents Trail Far Behind," *Calgary Albertan*, 11 December 1951, p. 1.
- ⁶⁰ Canada. Parliament. Library. Information and Technical Services Branch, *History of the Federal Electoral Ridings, 1867–1992*, vol. 1—British Columbia, Alberta (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, 1993), AB Calgary West (1914–1952), pp. 3–6.
- ⁶¹ Personal communication with Arthur Dixon, 25 March 2004.
- ⁶² Alvin Finkel, *The Social Credit Phenomenon in Alberta* (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1989), p. 128.
- ⁶³ *Ibid.*, pp. 128–130.

- ⁶⁴ David L. Humphreys, *Joe Clark: A Portrait* (Ottawa: Deneau & Greenberg, 1978), pp. 68–69; Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report on Alberta Elections 1905–1982* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1983), p. 93.
- ⁶⁵ “Indemnity Boost Said Warranted,” *Edmonton Journal*, 16 March 1954, p. 15; Personal communication with Dixon, 25 March 2004.
- ⁶⁶ “Dixon Named Deputy Speaker,” *Edmonton Journal*, 20 August 1955, p. 2; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 14th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. LXIV, 26 February 1960, p. 36; Hume, “Speaker Faces Challenge,” p. 31.
- ⁶⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta* (Edmonton: A. Shnitka, Queen's Printer, 1954), Standing Order 45; *The Legislative Assembly Act*, R.S.A. 1942, c. 4, s. 33.
- ⁶⁸ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ⁶⁹ Doug Sagi, “Future Expected to Hold Dixon, Fimrite Promotions,” *Calgary Herald*, 1 December 1962, p. 22.
- ⁷⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 14th Legislature, 5th Session*, vol. LXVIII, 26 March 1963, pp. 88–89.
- ⁷¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 15th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. LXIX, 13 February 1964, pp. 2–3.
- ⁷² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 16th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. LXXIV, 15 February 1968, p. 2.
- ⁷³ Personal communication with Dixon, 25 March 2004.
- ⁷⁴ “Dinner on the Balcony,” *Edmonton Journal*, 16 March 1965, p. 13.
- ⁷⁵ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ⁷⁶ Personal communication with Dixon, 25 March 2004.
- ⁷⁷ Mackay, *Order in the House*, p. 2.
- ⁷⁸ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ⁷⁹ Mackay, *Order in the House*, p. 2.
- ⁸⁰ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.
- ⁸¹ Mackay, *Order in the House*, p. 3.
- ⁸² Ibid.
- ⁸³ Ibid.
- ⁸⁴ Truckey, “Politics Runs in Veins of Sacred Stalwart,” p. G3.
- ⁸⁵ “Carrier of the Plant,” *Edmonton Journal*, 12 April 1967, p. 1.
- ⁸⁶ Mackay, *Order in the House*, p. 3.
- ⁸⁷ “Lack of Signature Riles Legislature,” *Edmonton Journal*, 19 March 1964, p. 23.
- ⁸⁸ “Dickie Fails in Bid to Table Protest,” *Calgary Herald*, 19 March 1964, p. 40.
- ⁸⁹ Bob Bell, “Testimony Confusion Fault of the Legislature—Dixon,” *Edmonton Journal*, 6 May 1969, p. 27.



⁹⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 16th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. LXXV, 5 May 1969, pp. 179–180.

⁹¹ *Ibid.*, 27 February 1969, p. 55.

⁹² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 16th Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. LXXVI, 9 April 1970, pp. 162–163.

⁹³ Personal communication with Louise Kamuchik, Clerk Assistant, Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 21 January 2004.

⁹⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 16th Legislature, 4th Session*, vol. LXXVII, 16 February 1971, p. 15; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 16th Legislature, 4th Session*, 16 February 1971, p. 47.

⁹⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 16th Legislature, 4th Session*, 16 March 1971, pp. 587–591; Bob Bell, “Health Minister Accused of Impropriety,” *Edmonton Journal*, 19 March 1971, p. 1; “Even Blowing Up Dam Wouldn’t Help Fort Chip Residents,” *Edmonton Journal*, 17 February 1971, p. 39.

⁹⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 16th Legislature, 4th Session*, 18 March 1971, p. 633; Bell, “Health Minister Accused of Impropriety,” p. 1.

⁹⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 16th Legislature, 4th Session*, 19 March 1971, p. 93.

⁹⁸ *Ibid.*, 22 March 1971, p. 94.

⁹⁹ *Ibid.*, 22 March 1971, pp. 94–95.

¹⁰⁰ *Ibid.*, 23 March 1971, pp. 98–99.

¹⁰¹ *Ibid.*, 25 March 1971 p. 104; Richard Bronstein, “Citizens’ Petitions are ‘Undisputed’ Right,” *Calgary Albertan*, 26 March 1971, p. 2.

¹⁰² “Soon it’ll be Page-GIRLS in Legislature,” *Edmonton Journal*, 27 March 1971, p. 51.

¹⁰³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Human Resource Services, *Legislative Assembly Page Program—Online Brochure*, [Internet], (Edmonton: Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Human Resource Services), accessed 19 January 2004, available from http://www.assembly.ab.ca/lao/hr/page_info.htm

¹⁰⁴ “Soon it’ll be Page-GIRLS in Legislature,” p. 51.

¹⁰⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. LXXVIII, 2 March 1972, p. 2.

¹⁰⁶ Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report on Alberta Elections 1905–1982*, pp. 109–114.

¹⁰⁷ Truckey, “Politics Runs in Veins of Sacred Stalwart,” p. G3.

¹⁰⁸ *Arthur J. Dixon Real Estate and Insurance Co., Ltd*, Alberta Corporate Registration System, [Electronic Database], (Edmonton: Government of Alberta), accessed 6 April 2004.

¹⁰⁹ David Bly, “Foundation Puts Bible Bill’s Legacy into Perspective,” *Calgary Herald*, 16 November 2001, p. B4.

¹¹⁰ Truckey, “Politics Runs in Veins of Sacred Stalwart,” p. G3.

¹¹¹ *Ibid.*

¹¹² Glenbow Archives, *Calgary Convention and Visitor Bureau Fonds 1959–1999 Finding Aid*, [Internet], (Calgary: 2000), accessed 31 December 2003, available from <http://www.glenbow.org/archhtm/ccvb.htm>

¹¹³ Alberta Real Estate Foundation, *Building on the Foundation: Reflections on the First 10 Years*, [Internet], (Calgary: Alberta Real Estate Foundation, 2001), accessed 18 November 2003, available from <http://www.aref.ab.ca/resource/whatsnew/building%20on%20t%20founda%20final.pdf>



¹¹⁴ Truckey, "Politics Runs in Veins of Sacred Stalwart," p. G3.

¹¹⁵ Ibid.

¹¹⁶ Ibid.

¹¹⁷ E-mail from Karen Drummond, SAIT Alumni Relations & Student Awards, Calgary, 5 January 2004.

¹¹⁸ E-mail from Mount Royal College 'Ask a Pro,' Calgary, 6 January 2004.

¹¹⁹ E-mail from Sylvia Martin, Provincial Court Libraries, Edmonton, 22 August 2003.

¹²⁰ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.

¹²¹ Truckey, "Politics Runs in Veins of Sacred Stalwart," p. G3.

¹²² Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002.

¹²³ Ibid.

¹²⁴ *The Register of Canadian Honours=Registre des distinctions honorifiques canadiennes* (Toronto: Canadian Almanac & Directory Pub. Co., 1991), p. 94; Governor General of Canada, *Canadian Honours: Order of Canada: Art Dixon, C.M.*, [Internet], (Ottawa), accessed 4 February 2001, available from http://www.gg.ca/honours/order_e.asp

¹²⁵ Alberta. Dept. of Culture, *1979 Alberta Achievement Awards* (Edmonton: Dept. of Culture, 1979), p. 23.

¹²⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building, Thursday September 3, 1987* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1987), pp. 1, 4–5.

¹²⁷ Personal communication with Julie Hall, Membership Coordinator, Membership Records, Calgary Real Estate Board, 22 April 2003.

¹²⁸ Southern Alberta Institute of Technology (SAIT), *Distinguished Alumnus Award Winners*, [Internet], (Calgary: Southern Alberta Institute of Technology (SAIT), 2003, updated 16 October), accessed 18 November 2003, available from <http://www.sait.ab.ca/support/alumni/feature2a.htm>; E-mail from Drummond, 5 January 2004.

¹²⁹ Okotoks Parks History Brochure, Okotoks, AB, Town of Okotoks Museum and Archives, n.d.; Okotoks Town Council, Names Advisory Committee Report, 11 December 1992. Minutes of Okotoks Town Council Meetings, Okotoks, AB, Town of Okotoks Museum and Archives.

¹³⁰ Dixon, Interview by LAO Staff, 22 September 2002; E-mail from Brian Venables, Captain, Divisional Secretary for Public Relations and Development, Salvation Army, 7 April 2004.

¹³¹ Governor General of Canada, *The Commemorative Medal for the Golden Jubilee of Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth II*, [Internet], (Ottawa, updated 17 December 2003), accessed 31 December 2003, available from http://www.gg.ca/honours/golden-jubilee_e.asp; E-mail from Michael Charron, Office of the Secretary to the Governor General, Ottawa, 12 January 2004.

¹³² Mackay, *Order in the House*, p. 14.

¹³³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building, Thursday September 3, 1987*, p. 6.

Strengthening of the Speakership



Amerongen 1972-1986



GERARD JOSEPH AMERONGEN

Gerard Joseph Taets von Amerongen¹ became the eighth Speaker during a time of considerable change in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. The role of Speaker expanded under Amerongen's aegis with new developments in the administrative responsibilities of the Speaker, notably the publication of *Alberta Hansard*, the broadcasting of proceedings of the Legislative Assembly and a heightened awareness of security issues.* While he acknowledged that the majority of Members wanted to maintain the ceremony of parliament and what this represented, namely "civilized debate and the continual test of government action through argument,"² Amerongen oversaw many aspects of the modernization of the Assembly. Amerongen has the distinction of contesting the most provincial elections—nine in total—of any Member to have held the position of Speaker in Alberta to date. Amerongen is the second Speaker[†] to have served as Speaker for his entire period of service as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, and he was the first Speaker to administer the Legislative Assembly Office (LAO) on a full-time basis.³ During Amerongen's tenure, both the *Special Standing Committee on Members' Services* and the Legislative Intern Program were introduced. As Speaker, Amerongen served with Premiers E. Peter Lougheed (1971–1985) and Donald R. Getty (1985–1992).

Family History

Gerard Joseph[‡] Amerongen was born July 18, 1914, in Winnipeg, Manitoba.⁴ 'Gerry'⁵ is the eldest of the eight children[§] of Maximilian Ernst Wilhelm Taets von Amerongen and Maria Francesca⁷ Waas,⁸ who were married in Winnipeg on October 18, 1913.⁹

The Taets von Amerongen family descends from a line of barons originally from the Netherlands. Gerard Amerongen's great-great-grandfather Joost (Baron) Taets van Amerongen¹⁰ was born in the Netherlands, but when he relocated to Germany as a political refugee,¹¹ the 'van' was changed to 'von.'¹² Amerongen's great-grandfather was Grand-Ducal Hessian Forest-Master and his grandfather was Grand-Ducal Hessian Chamberlain.¹³ The family was Protestant, but some members of the family converted back to the family's original Roman Catholic faith when they reached adulthood.¹⁴

Gerry Amerongen's father, Maximilian, was born in 1875 in Bessungen, near Darmstadt in Hesse, Germany.¹⁵ He was an officer in the army of the Grand Duke of Hesse.¹⁶ He lived in Austria and England before immigrating to Canada in 1905, where he joined the Oblates of

* This awareness was based on events such as the FLQ Crisis in Quebec in 1970 and the assassination attempts on Governor of Alabama and U.S. Presidential candidate George C. Wallace in 1972.

† Charles W. Fisher (1906–1919) was the first.

‡ Gerard Joseph is the anglicized form of Gerhardt Josef.

§ Gerhardt Josef (b. 1914), Friedrich Karl Joseph (1916), Werner Wilhelm Joseph (1918), Margaret Mary Josephine (1921), Karl Anton Joseph (1924), twins Henry Joseph and Leo Joseph (1926), and Maximilian (1930).



Mary Immaculate* and became a teacher.¹⁷ He later left the Oblates and found employment as a forester.¹⁸ Fluent in French and German, he worked for the Department of the Interior, in Winnipeg,¹⁹ from which he subsequently resigned due to the outbreak of the First World War, the slowing of immigration and rising ethnic tensions.²⁰ Amerongen recalled that life for Germans “was uncomfortable in the big cities.”²¹ The Premier of Manitoba, Sir Rodmond Roblin (1900–1919), gave Maximilian a job as a caretaker at the Manitoba Legislature.²² Later, Maximilian moved his family to Saskatchewan and took up farming until the war was over.²³

At the end of the war, the Amerongen family moved to Regina, Saskatchewan,²⁴ where Maximilian became the editor-in-chief of the weekly German newspaper, *Der Courier*, and started a career in life insurance.²⁵ Relocations to Humboldt and Saskatoon, Saskatchewan,²⁶ preceded a final move to Edmonton, Alberta, in August 1928,²⁷ where Maximilian opened a branch of a life insurance company.²⁸ Maximilian campaigned in the provincial election as the Conservative candidate in Leduc, but was not successful as the Social Credit Party won a landslide victory in August 1935.²⁹ Election records at this time showed that he used the surname ‘von Amerongen.’³⁰

Amerongen’s mother, Maria ‘Mary’ Waas, was born in Pennsylvania in 1896 to Heinrich ‘Henry’ Waas of Hesse, Germany, and Maria Bundschuh, from Pennsylvania.³¹ Mary Amerongen did not permit English to be spoken in her family’s home, thereby ensuring her children’s fluency in German.³² When Gerry was 15, his mother died. She is buried in the family plot in St. Joachim’s Roman Catholic Cemetery in Edmonton.³³

Education

Gerry Amerongen started school in Regina in 1920, later continuing his education in Saskatoon and Humboldt, until his family moved to Edmonton in 1928.³⁴ In 1931, he was a member of the first graduating class at St. Joseph’s High School.³⁵ When he left school, he lacked some credits, which he later acquired in order to get his senior matriculation.³⁶

From 1931 to 1939, during the Great Depression, Amerongen caddied at the Mayfair Club, mowed lawns and worked on small repair jobs.³⁷ He was a member of the Young Conservatives Speakers’ Club.³⁸ In 1935, Amerongen worked as a driver on the federal election campaign of Prime Minister Richard B. Bennett (1930–1935).³⁹

An uncle who felt that Amerongen was drifting ‘nagged’ him into studying law.⁴⁰ In the fall of 1939, Amerongen enrolled in the Faculty of Arts at the University of Alberta, from which he earned a conjoint degree of Bachelor of Arts (1943) and Bachelor of Laws (1944).⁴¹ He also

* The Oblates of Mary Immaculate were founded in France in 1815 and arrived in Canada in 1841. A mission was established in Fort Chipewyan, North-Western Territory (Alberta) in 1849. As the West was settled, more missions were built. Brian M. Owens and Claude M. Roberto, *A Guide to the Archives of the Oblates of Mary Immaculate: Province of Alberta-Saskatchewan* (Edmonton: Missionary Oblates, Grandin Province, 1989), pp. 1–2; Katherine Barber, ed., *The Canadian Oxford Dictionary* (Toronto: Oxford University Press, 2001), p. 1002.



joined the Canadian Officers' Training Corps (COTC) and later became a COTC instructor.⁴² In 1942, he won the Lieutenant Governor's Gold Medal "for the highest mark in the corps."⁴³ Amerongen participated on the Students' Council, and was elected president for 1943–1944.⁴⁴ He also represented the university in several inter-varsity McGoun Cup debates.⁴⁵ He was president of the Literary Association on campus⁴⁶ and was active in the History Club and in the Newman Club, where he met his wife.⁴⁷ He served as president of the Macdonald-Cartier Club in Edmonton,⁴⁸ an association that promoted the Progressive Conservative Party and its ideas.

Military Career

After Amerongen graduated from Law School, he reported for duty in the Canadian Army. He was sent for military training to Brockville, Ontario, and St. Jean, Quebec. He attained the rank of second lieutenant in the infantry and became an instructor of recruits and a law instructor. While teaching at St. Jean, he was made a full lieutenant.⁴⁹ Amerongen was discharged after the end of the Second World War.⁵⁰

Marriage and Family

Amerongen married Elizabeth Helen 'Betty' Fetherstonhaugh on December 6, 1943, in the bride's hometown of Calgary.⁵¹ Betty had received a Bachelor of Arts from the University of Alberta in 1942.⁵² She is the daughter of Lieutenant-Colonel William Samuel Fetherstonhaugh and Helen Florence Butler.⁵³ Lt.-Col. Fetherstonhaugh was a divisional engineer with the Canadian Northern Railway in Calgary.⁵⁴ By 1908, he had surveyed the area west-southwest of Grande Cache where a mountain peak, a pass and a creek near the Alberta-British Columbia border were named after him.⁵⁵ Fetherstonhaugh was a Commander in the Order of the British Empire.⁵⁶

Gerry and Betty Amerongen have eight children: Mary, Peter, Margaret, Monica, Helen, Michael, Elizabeth and John.⁵⁷ Their first child was born in Brockville, and the other children were born in Edmonton.⁵⁸

Early Career

While waiting to be called up for military service, Amerongen began his law career by articling with George G. L. Moore.⁵⁹ Amerongen was called to the Alberta Bar in October 1946,⁶⁰ and started his own practice immediately thereafter. While building his practice, he supplemented his income by translating legal documents for German immigrants.⁶¹ In the early 1950s, he partnered with another lawyer, and the firm became known as Amerongen and Burger.⁶² He was appointed to the Board of Referees of the Unemployment Insurance Commission in 1958.⁶³ Amerongen chaired the Indian and Métis Study Committee for the Council of Community Services of Edmonton in 1961 and 1962.⁶⁴ On December 23, 1965, he was appointed Queen's Counsel.⁶⁵ The firm became Amerongen, Burger and Spencer in 1973,⁶⁶ and Amerongen, Burger, Spencer and Ross in 1977.⁶⁷ Amerongen's "aversion to 'legalese,' prolixity, and obscurity of meaning in legal drafting" resulted in an invitation to plan, chair and moderate two one-day seminars in December 1978 in Edmonton and Calgary under the aegis of the Legal Education Society of Alberta.⁶⁸



Early in his tenure as Speaker, Amerongen followed the routine of working in his law firm in the morning before heading to the Alberta Legislature. Once the decision was made to pay the Speaker the same salary as a Cabinet Minister, he ceased this practice as, in his view, “they [the Legislative Assembly] were entitled to [his] full time.”⁶⁹ Over time, Amerongen withdrew from the practice of law, then closed his practice completely “in 1984 when the Speaker’s duties became too time consuming.”⁷⁰ In 1986, he again began to take a few cases and “lectured from time to time on law relating to nursing and law relating to credit unions.”⁷¹

Political Career

Prior to his election as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Amerongen was very politically involved. He was president of the Progressive Conservative Association of Alberta,⁷² was on the National Executive of the Progressive Conservative Association of Canada⁷³ and was the first president of the Edmonton Centre Federal Progressive Conservative Association.⁷⁴ During the Social Credit period, he ran unsuccessfully as a Progressive Conservative candidate in the provincial general elections of 1955, 1959, 1963 and 1967. Amerongen prevailed upon future Premier E. Peter Lougheed to become the leader of Alberta’s Progressive Conservative Party,⁷⁵ and in 1998, was a member of the Northern Alberta Committee to Draft Joe Clark to run again for the leadership of the federal Progressive Conservative Party.⁷⁶

As Speaker

On August 30, 1971, Amerongen was elected as the first representative for the new provincial electoral division of Edmonton-Meadowlark. He was re-elected by large margins for this constituency in the general elections of 1975, 1979 and 1982.⁷⁷ On March 2, 1972, at the beginning of the First Session of the 17th Legislature, Gerard Joseph Taets von Amerongen was elected Speaker through the nomination by Premier E. Peter Lougheed, which was seconded by the Leader of the Opposition and former Premier (1968–1971), Harry E. Strom.⁷⁸ At age 58, Amerongen stood out as “an easy choice for Speaker of the Legislature. He had had legal training, he had more maturity than most of the relative youngsters who were forming the government, he had bearing and poise, and he was an independent thinker.”⁷⁹

In 1972, Amerongen faced a “new-look house” with a Social Credit Opposition that “sometimes [forgot that it was] no longer the government, and a new government that [had] a majority of inexperienced members.”⁸⁰ He dealt with this mix “with a firm hand and knowledge of the rules.”⁸¹ Amerongen was responsible for establishing an intern program in Alberta to give university graduates an opportunity to learn about the parliamentary process.⁸² Amerongen also removed all specific references to Christianity in the daily prayers in the Legislative Assembly, believing that he “did not have a right to impose his Christian beliefs on the House by method of Standing Orders.”⁸³

An extremely important advance that took place in March 1972 under Amerongen’s leadership was the introduction of *Alberta Hansard*, a printed verbatim record of the daily proceedings of

* In the 1982 general election, Amerongen received the most votes (10,817) of any Edmonton Member of the Legislative Assembly.



the Legislative Assembly. On March 8, Member for Calgary-Glenmore and Minister for Mines and Minerals William D. Dickie moved that *Alberta Hansard* “be compiled, edited, printed, distributed and administered under the direction and authority of the Speaker,” retroactive to March 2, 1972.⁸⁴ After some debate, the motion was passed the same day.⁸⁵

The Lougheed Government, as part of its ‘open government’ initiative,⁸⁶ was the first in Canada to allow the media to broadcast debates in the Chamber as a matter of routine.⁸⁷ On March 9, 1972, a motion, moved by Louis D. Hyndman, Member for Edmonton-Glenora and Minister of Education, was passed to allow the broadcast media, “under the guidance and advice of Mr. Speaker,” to record or broadcast audiovisual proceedings.⁸⁸ On March 15, 1972, the live proceedings of the Assembly were televised for the first time.⁸⁹ After this first live telecast, only Friday’s Question Period was regularly televised,⁹⁰ with a summary of proceedings broadcast on the following Sunday afternoon. ‘Gavel-to-gavel’ coverage of the proceedings began October 11, 1978, at the beginning of the fall sitting of Fourth Session of the 18th Legislature, but eventually coverage was reduced to include only Question Period, which remains the current practice.⁹¹

On May 3, 1973, Amerongen became the second* Speaker in Alberta to exercise his casting vote.⁹² It was a Private Members’ afternoon† when Albert W. Ludwig, Social Credit Member for Calgary-Mountain View, moved to adjourn debate on proposed legislation dealing with the decline of the elk and moose populations in the province. When the motion was put to a vote, the resulting tie required that Amerongen vote on the motion. In a 2001 interview, Amerongen recalled his thoughts at the time:

I thought: my gosh, I’ve got a tie here; I’m going to have to vote. You know, it was something that had never crossed my mind with the House divided with such a big government majority that I would ever have to vote. ... So then I started to talk to give myself time to think. I think I said: ‘The principle on which the Speaker should vote on the motion is that the topic should be preserved for further discussion. This is a Private Member’s resolution, and if I vote in favour of the motion to adjourn, this motion that’s being debated will drop to the bottom of the Order Paper, and it won’t be reached again at this sitting. It’ll die on the Order Paper.’ I’m not sure if I said that, but that was my reasoning. So therefore I’ll vote against the motion so that debate may continue, and I did. I was immediately accused of siding with the government.⁹³

* Speaker Oran L. McPherson (1922–1926) was the first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta to exercise a casting vote, on April 14, 1923.

† A certain amount of time is set aside each week to deal with Private Members’ business. Private Members are Members of the Legislative Assembly who are not members of Executive Council and do not hold specific positions within the Legislative Assembly such as Speaker, Deputy Speaker or Caucus Leaders. See the Glossary for more information. Private Members’ business is the discussion and debate of bills and motions presented and sponsored by Private Members. Robert Marleau and Camille Montpetit, eds. *House of Commons Procedures and Practice* (Ottawa: Chenelière/McGraw-Hill, 2000), pp. 889–891. Following the *Standing Orders* of 1969, in 1973, the Legislative Assembly of Alberta designated Tuesday and Thursday afternoons as Private Members’ time. Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly, 1969), Standing Order 13. Private Members’ business is currently considered on Mondays. Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 17, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Order 8.



During his tenure as Speaker, Amerongen served on many committees: the *Select Standing Committees on Public Affairs*;^{*} *Agriculture; Education; Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly*; Chair of the *Special Select Committee on Members' Services* (1973–1974); Chair of the *Select Standing Committee on Members' Services* (1975–1986); and Chair of the *Special Committee on the Constitution* (1980). In addition, he was Chair of the *Legislative Internship Advisory and Selection Committee*; Chair of the *Select Special Committee to Study and Communicate Constitutional Issues*;[†] and a member of the Executive Committee of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association (CPA).

In 1973, a committee was struck to review and update the *Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly*. A report was released outlining all the Standing Orders and proposing modifications, additions and deletions along with a rationale for these changes. While all the rules were examined, particular areas of concern were: hours of sitting, time limits on debate, the ordering of business in the Assembly, facilities for Members, order and privilege and the consideration of estimates and private bills.⁹⁴ The committee concluded its work and submitted its report for approval on December 11, 1973. In the 1974 *Standing Orders*, the Speaker's rulings were no longer subject to appeal without debate; the ability to appeal a ruling by the Speaker now required "a substantive motion of which notice [had] been given."⁹⁵ On October 25, 1974, another committee was struck that made recommendations for further corrections and changes to the *Standing Orders*.⁹⁶ The report of this committee was adopted on November 5, 1974.

On May 15, 1975, Amerongen's second nomination for the position of Speaker marked a departure from the traditional motion for nomination by the Premier.[‡] This nomination was made through a motion by James E. 'Bud' Miller, Progressive Conservative Member for Lloydminster, which was seconded by Frederick T. Mandeville, Social Credit Member for Bow Valley.⁹⁷ Amerongen's third election on May 24, 1979 came through the nomination by Dr. Kenneth R. H. Paproski, Progressive Conservative Member for Edmonton-Kingsway, seconded by Frederick Mandeville, on behalf of the Opposition.⁹⁸ In his fourth election as Speaker on March 10, 1983, Amerongen was nominated by two Private Members from the Progressive Conservative caucus, Henry Kroeger, Member for Chinook, and Alois P. Hiebert, Member for Edmonton-Gold Bar,⁹⁹ due to the fact that the Official Opposition had yet to be designated.

Commenting on the expectation that the Speaker be politically neutral, Amerongen noted, "I said when I was appointed that I had never been politically neutral—but I would be procedurally neutral."¹⁰⁰ Although Amerongen attended committee meetings during his tenure as Speaker, since he felt it was important for him to stay informed, the only caucus meetings that he attended were those that occurred in the period after a general election and prior to his re-election as Speaker.¹⁰¹

* All Members of the Legislative Assembly served on the *Select Standing Committee on Public Affairs*.

† The basic mandate of the committee was "to assess the impact of the Charter of Rights and Freedoms." Gerard Amerongen, Interview by Ken Tingley, 19 March 2001, Legal Archives Society of Alberta. Edmonton.

‡ The change in the nomination procedure had been made at Amerongen's request.



Amerongen left a strong personal mark on the role of the Speaker. Philip A. C. Laundry, former Clerk Assistant in the Canadian House of Commons (1983–1994) and author of several books on Parliaments of the British Commonwealth, notes that, “from the beginning [Amerongen] applied himself to the strengthening of the speakership.”¹⁰² He changed some of the traditional elements of the role in order to make the legislative process more meaningful to modern times. Amerongen saw the “need to plug into contemporary times and social values ... [whilst] ... maintain[ing] traditions that are rich and have withstood the test of time.”¹⁰³ Amerongen welcomed modern initiatives, such as the televising of proceedings, but he also ensured that the essential historical elements of parliamentary proceedings were retained. Ceremony in the Legislature was enhanced as Amerongen “tried to add dignity to the office by inaugurating the more formal Speaker’s procession into the Assembly through the main doors, instead of the Speaker entering the chamber alone through a side door.”¹⁰⁴ In addition, the Procession would pass closest to the Government desks on days dealing with Government business and to the Opposition desks on days dealing with Opposition business.^{*105} In a 2002 interview, Amerongen noted: “When I first got in, the building used to be called the ‘Legislative Building.’ Gee, it ain’t a legislative building; it doesn’t legislate. It’s a ‘Legislature Building.’ Well, the government accepted it ... and it was all changed.”¹⁰⁶ Another innovation he introduced was permitting questions to be addressed to a Private Member when that Member was in a position of authority as a result of an appointment to a departmental board or committee.^{†107}



G.J. Amerongen seated front row middle, with Sergeant-at-Arms Oscar Lacombe and Pages (n.d.).

Stemming from an incident in which a Member believed that confidential memos had been taken from his jacket pocket in the Members’ Lounge,^{‡108} Amerongen banned the press from this Lounge in 1976.¹⁰⁹

Several royal visits occurred while Amerongen was Speaker. In June 1978, Princess Margriet of the Netherlands visited the Legislature Building, and Amerongen attended a luncheon held in her honour at Government House by Lieutenant Governor Ralph G. Steinhauer (1974–1979) and Mrs. Steinhauer.¹¹⁰ In August 1978, Queen Elizabeth II and Prince Philip came to Edmonton to open the Commonwealth Games.¹¹¹ Amerongen was among those who greeted the Royal Couple when they landed at CFB Namao,¹¹² and was present during their visit to the Legislature Building.¹¹³ In July 1980, Princess Margaret, younger sister of Queen Elizabeth II, visited Saskatchewan and Alberta on the occasion of the 75th anniversary of the entry of these provinces into Confederation. Amerongen was presented to Her Royal Highness at the

* Currently, the Procession alternates between the Government side and the Opposition side.

† Rulings by subsequent Speakers have since reversed this decision.

‡ It was later discovered that the Member’s drycleaner had removed them.



Legislature Building.¹¹⁴ In 1983, the Prince and Princess of Wales visited Edmonton.*¹¹⁵ On June 29, Amerongen and his wife were presented by Premier Lougheed to their Royal Highnesses at the Alberta Legislature Building, and later attended a dinner held in their honour at Government House.¹¹⁶ As part of this royal tour of Canada, on July 1, their Royal Highnesses opened the World University Games in Edmonton.¹¹⁷ In July 1985, Her Majesty, Queen Elizabeth, the Queen Mother, visited Ontario, Saskatchewan and Alberta. Amerongen was presented to and escorted Her Majesty upon her visit to the Legislature Building.¹¹⁸ During her three-day visit, the Queen Mother was a guest in a private home in Edmonton, attended Klondike Days and opened the Fifth World Angus Forum.¹¹⁹

Amerongen's efforts to make delegations from foreign countries, such as Romania and Japan, feel welcome by greeting them in their own language was indicative of his "flair for the duties of his dignified and important office ..., his instinct for courtesy and friendliness, and of his stylish expertise and capacity for taking pains."¹²⁰

Many Canadian parliamentary branch associations were formed during Amerongen's tenure as Speaker. In 1973, the Hansard Association of Canada/L'Association canadienne des éditeurs de journaux des débats was established. Alberta has been a member since the inception of this association which, in August 1977, held its annual conference for the first time in Edmonton.¹²¹ It was also during Amerongen's tenure that the Association of Parliamentary Librarians in Canada/L'Association des bibliothécaires parlementaires au Canada (APLIC/ABPAC) was founded.† The first APLIC/ABPAC conference to be held in Alberta occurred in October 1980.¹²² Amerongen was a keen supporter of the Legislature Library.¹²³ He was a strong advocate of the microfilming of the Library's comprehensive collection of community newspapers from around the province as a way of preserving the history of Alberta,¹²⁴ and he instituted a specialized research branch, under the administration of the Legislature Librarian, to provide non-partisan research and writing services to Members.¹²⁵ The Canadian Association of Sergeants-at-Arms was founded in 1980 by Major General (Retired) Maurice Gaston Cloutier, Sergeant-at-Arms of the House of Commons; Major (Retired) René Jalbert, Sergeant-at-Arms of the Assemblée nationale du Québec; and Thomas Stelling, Sergeant-at-Arms of the Legislative Assembly of Ontario. The Association's first meeting in Alberta took place in Edmonton in August of 1990.¹²⁶

Amerongen was able to arrange for the establishment of the position of Parliamentary Counsel in Alberta. Amerongen believed that Private Members, especially those in Opposition, should not have to consult the Government's Legislative Counsel for parliamentary advice.‡ Michael W. J. Clegg was the first lawyer to fill the position of Parliamentary Counsel for the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.§ In 1981, Clegg undertook a Canada-wide survey of his counterparts.¹²⁷

* It was the first visit to Canada by Diana, Princess of Wales and Prince Charles' first visit to Edmonton.

† APLIC/ABPAC was established at a meeting in Toronto on June 14, 1975.

‡ Glendon Acorn, QC, Legislative Counsel at the time, said to Amerongen, "[I]t was like baking a cake for the village fair and then judging the contest." Fax from Gerard J. Amerongen, 28 May 2004.

§ Clegg was previously Law Clerk from 1975 to 1979, and Law Clerk and Counsel to the Assembly from 1979 to 1983.



The survey led to the creation of the Association of Parliamentary Counsel/L'Association des conseillers parlementaires au Canada in 1982. Clegg served as president of the Association, and in 1984, in Edmonton, hosted the first meeting at which a representative of every Canadian parliament was present.¹²⁸

The 1981 fall sitting of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta was an eventful one. On October 26, Opposition Members held the Legislative Assembly's first filibuster. Debate centred on access to information concerning the way that the Heritage Fund was being managed, particularly in regard to a \$60 million loss in short-term investments by the Fund. The filibuster was initiated by Independent Member for Calgary-Buffalo Thomas L. Sindlinger, and strengthened when Opposition Leader Raymond A. Speaker and New Democrat Leader W. Grant Notley¹²⁹ joined forces to prevent any votes on Heritage Fund matters.¹³⁰ Nicknamed the 'Alamo' filibuster, it was characterized by the *Edmonton Journal* as "the most impressive display of opposition co-operation in years."¹³¹ On November 4, in an effort to counter-filibuster, Energy Minister C. Mervin Leitch spent the entire afternoon reading the text of a contract into the record of the Assembly.¹³² The filibuster tactics continued until December 14 when the Lougheed Government invoked closure* for the first time in the history of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.¹³³ This particular fall sitting, which lasted 45 days, remains the longest on record in Alberta.

During this same sitting, on November 24, 1981, Amerongen also faced a challenge to his impartiality from the small group of Opposition Members. He refused to hear a point of privilege raised by New Democrat Leader Grant Notley, who alleged that there were contradictions between remarks that Premier Lougheed had made in the House about a water diversion plan and remarks recorded in leaked government documents. Notley was not allowed to complete his question because Amerongen ruled that it would be unfair to read the charge when the Premier was out of the province, and that he needed more time to examine the documents provided by Notley. Amerongen stated that the point of privilege could proceed once the Premier was in the Chamber.¹³⁴ This ruling prompted a storm of protest from Opposition Members who claimed that free speech was being thwarted, and that "Amerongen [had] lost the confidence of Opposition MLAs."¹³⁵ The issue led to a motion of non-confidence in the Speaker, one that was defeated by the Progressive Conservative caucus.¹³⁶

In June 1983, Amerongen's strict adherence to the rules of debate led once again to a clash between the small group of Opposition Members and the Speaker. New Democrat Member Ray Martin, New Democrat Leader Grant Notley, and Independents Ray Speaker and Dr. Walter A. Buck 'boycotted' Question Period by remaining silent in response to what they felt were restrictive questioning guidelines.¹³⁷ In response to overall criticism by Opposition Members and the media, Amerongen later said, "Question Period is nothing more than a media event. It's much more effective to stick to the business of the House and avoid personal attacks. I was constantly badgered for depriving the media of easy stories. It's easier to write up a riot."¹³⁸ Amerongen believes that during his 14 years as Speaker he interpreted the rules 'rather freely,'¹³⁹ allowing discussion during Question Period to flow on both sides of the House.

* The notice of motion to adjourn was made on December 14, and the motion itself was made by Neil S. Crawford, Member for Edmonton-Parkallen, Attorney General and Government House Leader, on December 15.



During Amerongen's tenure, the number of Members in Opposition dwindled from 26 in the First Session of the 17th Legislature to four in the Fourth Session of the 20th Legislature. Hence, one of the most difficult issues that the Speaker faced was that of designating the Official Opposition. As a result of the November 2, 1982 general election, the 75-Member Progressive Conservative caucus faced two New Democrat Members and two Independents. When the Legislative Assembly met in March 1983, the New Democrat Members, Grant Notley and Ray Martin, argued that they should receive the designation because they were members of the same political party. Independents Ray Speaker and Walter Buck argued that Ray Speaker's experience as leader should result in his continuance in this role. Amerongen sought precedents from other parliamentary jurisdictions, but was unable to come up with any clear guidelines. Amerongen reasoned that "[i]n the preceding election the NDP contested every seat in the province with possibly one or two exceptions. The so-called Independents contested two seats,"¹⁴⁰ and therefore Notley and Martin would be able to use the accompanying funding "more effectively."¹⁴¹ Consequently, he recognized New Democrat Member Grant Notley as the Leader of the Official Opposition until 'a significant change of circumstances'¹⁴² occurred.* An unfortunate 'change of circumstances' came less than one year later when Notley died in a plane crash on October 19, 1984.¹⁴³ In the face of this tragedy, Amerongen once again had the difficult task of designating a Leader of the Opposition. Amerongen outlined the possibilities and then noted, "None of these would be totally wrong; neither would any of them be totally right."¹⁴⁴ After due consideration, he recognized the one remaining New Democrat representative, Ray Martin, Member for Edmonton-Norwood, as Leader of the Opposition, pending the outcome of the forthcoming by-election.¹⁴⁵

Amerongen once explained a Speaker's duty with respect to ruling on *prima facie* cases of privilege in the following amusing fashion: "A mere *prima facie* case of privilege may turn out not to be a real case of privilege just as a bottle labelled 'whiskey' may turn out to contain tea."¹⁴⁶ Amerongen was able to deal with all Members in such a manner that during his 14 years as Speaker, he never expelled a Member from the Chamber. He indicated that his first consideration was for the Albertans who were represented by each Member. He did not wish to deny any constituents the right of representation.¹⁴⁷

Amerongen was defeated in the general election on May 8, 1986 by Liberal newcomer D. Grant Mitchell, who would go on to become the Leader of the Opposition in Alberta. This election resulted in the Progressive Conservatives losing 15 seats, with Opposition Members being elected in 13 out of 17 Edmonton constituencies.¹⁴⁸

* Amerongen's ruling has been analyzed in-depth, and three important principles have been identified as stemming from that ruling: that any precedents that do not recognize an Official Opposition should be rejected; that when there is an equal number of Members vying for the designation of Official Opposition, preference should go to those Members in a political party; and finally, that it is the exclusive role and the duty of the Speaker to recognize the Official Opposition. David Byron, "The Recognition of Leaders of the Opposition in Alberta, 1905-1983," *Prairie Forum* vol. 9, no. 1, (Spring 1984): pp. 54-55.



Later Career

In March 1987, Amerongen resumed his practice in the new firm of Amerongen Spencer.¹⁴⁹ Amerongen, aged 72 at the time, conceded that there had “been a lot of changes in the law ... but not so many [that] he [doubted] his ability to handle them.”¹⁵⁰

On September 3, 1987, during celebrations for the 75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building, Amerongen and Arthur J. Dixon (Speaker 1963-1972) were each presented with a replica of the Speaker's Chair.¹⁵¹ Deputy Premier David J. Russell presented the replica to Amerongen and unveiled Amerongen's portrait. He introduced Amerongen in glowing terms, declaring that he had become the “dean of Canadian parliamentary Speakers during his term in the Alberta Chair.”¹⁵² By the time of the 1986 election, Amerongen was the longest-serving Speaker of those serving at that time in any Canadian jurisdiction. Amerongen had served as Speaker for over 14 years.

Community Activities and Personal Interests

Amerongen was a member of the founding Board of Directors of Alberta's first Canadian Native Friendship Centre, Edmonton,¹⁵³ and remained the personnel director for six years.¹⁵⁴ He assisted in the establishment of the Alberta Native Court Worker Program.¹⁵⁵ He served on the Social Justice Commission of the Catholic Archdiocese of Edmonton.¹⁵⁶ Amerongen served on Advisory Boards of the Misericordia and the Edmonton General Hospitals, and on the Misericordia Hospital Nursing Board. He was also a member of the Board of Trustees of St. Joseph Hospital, Edmonton.¹⁵⁷ From 1976 to 1978, Amerongen was co-chair of the Board of Directors of the Government House Foundation.¹⁵⁸ He was director of the Edmonton City Centre Church Corporation from 1987 to 1993¹⁵⁹ and was on the Board of Trustees of the Forum for Young Albertans from 1986 to 1993.¹⁶⁰ In 1996, Amerongen received a plaque and certificate from the Law Society of Alberta marking his 50th anniversary in the profession.¹⁶¹

On June 26, 2004, a celebration was held at St. John the Evangelist Church in Edmonton to mark both the 60th wedding anniversary of Gerry and Betty Amerongen and Gerry's 90th birthday.¹⁶² Over the years, Amerongen has enjoyed many pastimes including jogging,¹⁶³ hiking, woodworking and reading.¹⁶⁴ He is currently writing his autobiography.¹⁶⁵

Reflections and Tributes

Amerongen is known for his ‘ready, but kindly wit.’¹⁶⁶ Reflecting on his role as Speaker, Amerongen listed several qualities essential for success. “Among these: a thick hide to take criticism, especially from the media, without attempting to defend yourself publicly; above all, a good sense of humour. ... Almost any situation can be cooled with kindly humour.”¹⁶⁷ He indicated that one of the greatest challenges of the Speaker's role was proving “the value of assembly and orderly debate.”¹⁶⁸ At the unveiling of his official portrait, Amerongen was described as a “very serious gentleman with a nice intellectual sense of humour” whose “very distinguished career” mirrored the “careful balance throughout his life.”¹⁶⁹



Notes

- ¹ Gerard Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, Alberta Legislature Library, 24 April 2002; *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, *Genealogisches Handbuch Des Adels* (Limburg a.d. Lahn: C.A. Stark, 1962), p. 378.
- ² John Lindblad, "Security in Age of Violence Threatens an Old Tradition," *Edmonton Journal*, 23 May 1972, p. 3.
- ³ Neil Crawford, *White Paper Respecting the Re-Enactment of the Legislative Assembly Act* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1983), pp. 8–9.
- ⁴ Given names from pedigree chart in *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, p. 378.
- ⁵ Gerard Amerongen, Interview by Ken Tingley, 19 March 2001, Legal Archives Society of Alberta, Edmonton.
- ⁶ *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, pp. 378–381; "Frau Maria von Amerongen Gestorben," [Obituary], *Der Herald*, 23 January 1930, p. 8; "Mrs. Mary Amerongen," [Obituary], *Edmonton Bulletin*, 23 January 1930, p. 10; "Taets von Amerongen, [Maximilian Ernst]," [Obituary], *Edmonton Journal*, 21 November 1968, p. 32. The obituaries of Maria Waas indicate that there were eight children (one daughter and seven sons); however, the obituary of Maximilian Ernst Wilhelm Taets von Amerongen lists seven children (one daughter and six sons).
- ⁷ Manitoba. Vital Statistics Agency, "Hal [sic] Ernest William Baron von Amerongen–Mary Francesca Waas," [Marriage Registration].
- ⁸ *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, p. 378.
- ⁹ Manitoba. Vital Statistics Agency, "Hal [sic] Ernest William Baron von Amerongen–Mary Francesca Waas," Manitoba, Winnipeg, 18 October 1913, no. 1913 - 059141, [Marriage Registration], Vital Statistics [Internet], Manitoba Dept. of Finance, accessed 16 December 2003, available from <http://web2.gov.mb.ca/ccal/vital/Query.php>
- ¹⁰ *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, p. 376.
- ¹¹ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002; *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, p. 376.
- ¹² Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001; *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, p. 376.
- ¹³ Leo Van den Pas, "[Amerongen Ancestor List]," [Unpublished Manuscript], 22 April 2002, pp. 1–2.
- ¹⁴ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ¹⁵ Ibid; *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, p. 378.
- ¹⁶ "Gerard Amerongen–ein Deutschstämmiger Wird Geehrt," *Kanada Kurier (Alberta Ausgabe)* (Winnipeg), 21 December 1989, p. 13; Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ¹⁷ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ¹⁸ *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, p. 378.
- ¹⁹ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ²⁰ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ²¹ Ibid.
- ²² Ibid.

- ²³ Ibid.
- ²⁴ Ibid.
- ²⁵ Ibid; "Gerard Amerongen—ein Deutschstämmiger Wird Geehrt," p. 13.
- ²⁶ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ²⁷ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ²⁸ Ibid.
- ²⁹ "Political Candidates in Alberta Have Had Varied Careers," *Vilna Bulletin*, 12 June 1950, p. 4.
- ³⁰ Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report on Alberta Elections 1905–1982* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1983), p. 51.
- ³¹ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002; *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, p. 378.
- ³² Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ³³ "Mrs. Mary Amerongen," [Obituary], p. 10; *Amerongen, Mary V. (–18 Jan 1930)*, Alberta Genealogical Society Master Databank, [Electronic Database], (Edmonton: Alberta Genealogical Society), accessed 22 April 2002.
- ³⁴ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ³⁵ Bob Gilmour, "St. Joe's First Grads Meet 65 Years Later," *Edmonton Journal*, 12 May 1996, p. B1.
- ³⁶ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ³⁷ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ³⁸ "City Barrister Wins Tory Nomination," *Edmonton Journal*, 12 March 1959, p. 29.
- ³⁹ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ⁴⁰ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ⁴¹ University of Alberta, *Alumni Directory 1996* (Edmonton: University of Alberta, 1996), p. 6; Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ⁴² Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ⁴³ "Gerard Amerongen Admitted to Bar," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 22 October 1946, p. 9.
- ⁴⁴ "University Students' Council Names New Slate of Officers," *Edmonton Bulletin*, 12 March 1943, p. 3.
- ⁴⁵ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ⁴⁶ "Gerard Amerongen Admitted to Bar," p. 9.
- ⁴⁷ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ⁴⁸ "City Barrister Wins Tory Nomination," p. 29.
- ⁴⁹ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ⁵⁰ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002; "Gerard Amerongen Admitted to Bar," p. 9.
- ⁵¹ "Quiet Cathedral Wedding for Miss Fetherstonhaugh," *Calgary Herald*, 6 December 1943, p. 6.
- ⁵² University of Alberta, *Alumni Directory 1996*, p. 6.
- ⁵³ *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, p. 378.



- ⁵⁴ James L. Swanson, *Place Names in the Canadian Rockies*, Spiral Road: Digital Banff, [Internet], (Banff: 2002, updated 16 December 2003), accessed 3 December 2003, available from <http://www.spiralroad.com/sr/pn/listing.html>
- ⁵⁵ Aphrodite Karamitsanis, ed., *Place Names of Alberta, vol. I, Mountains, Mountain Parks and Foothills*, (Edmonton: Alberta Community Development, Friends of Geographical Names of Alberta Society and University of Calgary Press, 1991), p. 86.
- ⁵⁶ Hugh Halliday, *Canadians Serving With British Flying Services During WWI*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Air Force Association of Canada, 2001), accessed 16 December 2003, available from <http://www.airforce.ca/index.php3?page=wwi>
- ⁵⁷ Gerard Joseph Amerongen, Progressive Conservative Association of Alberta, Candidate Biographical Resume, c. 1972-1975. Gerard Amerongen File, Biographical Newspaper Clipping Files, City of Edmonton Archives; Pierre G. Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1979 ed. (Ottawa: Publication Office, 1979), p. 536; Lorne V. Silverstein, ed., *Alberta Business Who's Who and Directory 1985/86*, 2nd ed. (Edmonton: Alberta Business Research, 1985), p. 41.
- ⁵⁸ *Genealogisches Handbuch Der Adeligen Häuser*, p. 378.
- ⁵⁹ "Gerard Amerongen Admitted to Bar," p. 9; Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ⁶⁰ "Gerard Amerongen Admitted to Bar," p. 9.
- ⁶¹ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ⁶² Henry Cartwright, ed., *The Canadian Law List 1951* (Agincourt, ON: Canada Law Book, 1951), p. 328.
- ⁶³ "City Barrister Wins Tory Nomination," p. 29.
- ⁶⁴ E-mail from Sonja Carmichael, Junior League of Edmonton, 15 October 2003.
- ⁶⁵ *Alberta Gazette*, vol. 62, no. 1, 15 January 1966, p. 12.
- ⁶⁶ Patricia Egan, ed., *The Canadian Law List 1973* (Agincourt, ON: Canada Law Book, 1973), p. 551; Patricia Egan, ed., *The Canadian Law List 1972* (Agincourt, ON: Canada Law Book, 1972), p. 543.
- ⁶⁷ Patricia Egan, ed., *The Canadian Law List 1976* (Agincourt, ON: Canada Law Book, 1976), p. 565; Patricia Egan, ed., *The Canadian Law List 1977* (Agincourt, ON: Canada Law Book, 1977), p. 571.
- ⁶⁸ Fax from Gerard Amerongen, 3 June 2004, (2nd); *The Good, the Bad, the Ugly in Legal Drafting*, Papers presented at a workshop held in Edmonton, 7-8 December 1978 (Edmonton: Legal Education Society of Alberta, 1978), [p. 1].
- ⁶⁹ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ⁷⁰ Phillipa Dean, "Amerongen Hangs Out Shingle Again," *Edmonton Examiner West*, 15 March 1987, p. 605.
- ⁷¹ Amerongen, Progressive Conservative Association of Alberta, Candidate Biographical Resume.
- ⁷² Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ⁷³ Lorne V. Silverstein, ed., *Who's Who in Alberta Business, Finance and Government: The Key Decision Makers 1984-1985*, 1st ed. (Edmonton: Tridon Publications, 1985), p. 13.
- ⁷⁴ *Who's Who in Alberta: An Illustrated Biographical Record of Men and Women of the Time*, 1978/79 ed. (Edmonton: L.U.L. Publications, 1979), p. 7; Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ⁷⁵ Alan Hustak, *Peter Lougheed: A Biography* (Toronto: McClelland and Stewart, 1979), p. 60.

- ⁷⁶ Larry Johnsrude, "Joe Why? Joe Clark Has Too Much History to be Still Called Joe Who?," *Edmonton Journal*, 27 June 1998, p. G1.
- ⁷⁷ Laurie Mackay, *Order in the House: A Historical Account of Two Past Speakers of the Alberta Legislature* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1992), p. 5; Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report on Alberta Elections 1905–1982*, p. 129.
- ⁷⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. LXXVIII, 2 March 1972, p. 2.
- ⁷⁹ David Wood, *The Lougheed Legacy* (Toronto: Key Porter Books, 1985), p. 96.
- ⁸⁰ Lindblad, "Security in Age of Violence Threatens an Old Tradition," p. 3.
- ⁸¹ Ibid.
- ⁸² Frank Joseph Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration* (Edmonton: Plains Publishing Inc., 1987), p. 46.
- ⁸³ Mackay, *Order in the House*, p. 7.
- ⁸⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, 8 March 1972, pp. 5–18–5–23.
- ⁸⁵ Ibid., p. 5–41.
- ⁸⁶ Ibid., 2 March 1972, pp. 1–3, 1–4.
- ⁸⁷ "Legislature Approves Live Coverage," *Edmonton Journal*, 10 March 1972, p. 70; Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 35.
- ⁸⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals, 17th Legislature, 1st Session*, 9 March 1972, p. 36.
- ⁸⁹ John Lindblad, "No Bloopers in Session Televising," *Edmonton Journal*, 16 March 1972, p. 57.
- ⁹⁰ Ibid.
- ⁹¹ D. Blake McDougall, Assistant Deputy Minister/Legislature Librarian, "Televising Alberta's Legislative Proceedings," [Internal Document], 4 October 1990, Alberta Legislature Library, Edmonton, p. 1.
- ⁹² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 17th Legislature, 2nd Session*, 3 May 1973, p. 52–2788.
- ⁹³ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ⁹⁴ Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Select Committee on the Rules, *Report on House Rules*, vol. 1 (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1973), p. iv.
- ⁹⁵ Ibid., p. 11a.
- ⁹⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Special Select Committee to Review the Standing Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and Frank Appleby, *Report of the Special Select Committee to Review the Standing Orders and Forms Of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta* (Edmonton: Legislature Library, 1974).
- ⁹⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 18th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. LXXXII, 15 May 1975, p. 2.
- ⁹⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 19th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. LXXXVI, 24 May 1979, p. 2.
- ⁹⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 20th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XC, 10 March 1983, p. 2.



- ¹⁰⁰ Lindblad, "Security in Age of Violence Threatens an Old Tradition," p. 3.
- ¹⁰¹ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.
- ¹⁰² Philip Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth* (London: Quiller Press, 1984), p. 138.
- ¹⁰³ Lindblad, "Security in Age of Violence Threatens an Old Tradition," p. 3.
- ¹⁰⁴ Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 46.
- ¹⁰⁵ Ibid; Brian Hodgson, Interview by LAO Staff, 26 August 2003.
- ¹⁰⁶ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ¹⁰⁷ Laundy, *The Office of Speaker in the Parliaments of the Commonwealth*, p. 138.
- ¹⁰⁸ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ¹⁰⁹ "Press Council Supports Reopened MLAs' Lounge," *Edmonton Journal*, 26 October 1976, p. 22.
- ¹¹⁰ "Heavy Social Calendar to Fill Princess' Day," *Edmonton Journal*, 20 June 1978, p. A2; Fax from Gerard J. Amerongen, 3 June 2004 (1st).
- ¹¹¹ "Queen's Schedule from Thursday to Sunday," *Edmonton Journal*, 31 July 1978, p. E14.
- ¹¹² "Crowd of 2,500 Waits Patiently to Greet Royalty," *Calgary Herald*, 1 August 1978, p. A3.
- ¹¹³ "Queen's Schedule from Thursday to Sunday," p. E14.
- ¹¹⁴ Canada. Dept. of External Affairs, *The Visit of Her Royal Highness The Princess Margaret, Countess of Snowdon, to Saskatchewan and Alberta 18–28 July 1980, On the Occasion of the 75th Anniversary of Their Entry Into Confederation* (Ottawa: Minister of Supply and Services Canada, 1980), p. 47.
- ¹¹⁵ Mindelle Jacobs, "Royal Visitors," *Edmonton Sun*, 17 February 1983, p. 2.
- ¹¹⁶ Canada. Dept. of External Affairs, *The 1983 Visit to Canada of Their Royal Highnesses, the Prince and Princess of Wales, 14 June–1 July 1983* (Ottawa: Minister of Supply and Services Canada, 1983), pp. 116–117, 124; Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 47.
- ¹¹⁷ "Opening Spectacular on the Ground, in Air," *Edmonton Journal*, 2 July 1983, p. B1.
- ¹¹⁸ Canada. Dept. of External Affairs, *The Visit of Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth The Queen Mother to Ontario, Saskatchewan, and Alberta, July 12–19, 1985* (Ottawa: Minister of Supply and Services Canada, 1985), p. 52; Fax from Gerard Amerongen, 28 May 2004.
- ¹¹⁹ Edward Romaine, "Queen Mom's Trip Will Lack Pomp of Past Royal Tours," *Edmonton Journal*, 10 July 1985, p. B1.
- ¹²⁰ Harry Midgley, "Speaker: Good Man, Tough Job," *Edmonton Journal*, 25 April 1973, p. 4; Fax from Amerongen, 28 May 2004.
- ¹²¹ E-mail from Vivian Loosemore, Public Information Branch, Legislative Assembly Office, 22 January 2004.
- ¹²² "APLIC/ABPAC: Who We Are and What We Do," *APLIC ABPAC Bulletin: The Association of Parliamentary Librarians in Canada* vol. 2 (April 1984): p. 6.
- ¹²³ A. Hoyano and D. Blake McDougall, *A History of the Legislature Library* (Edmonton: Legislature Library, 1979), p. 28.
- ¹²⁴ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.
- ¹²⁵ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001.



¹²⁶ Personal communication with Brian Hodgson, Sergeant-at-Arms, Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 19 January 2004.

¹²⁷ Michael Clegg, "The Association of Parliamentary Counsel in Canada," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 8, no. 1 (1985): p. 16.

¹²⁸ Ibid. p. 17.

¹²⁹ Paul De Groot, "Fall Sitting Broke Old Debate Record," *Edmonton Journal*, 18 December 1981, p. H1.

¹³⁰ Yvonne Zacharias, "Lid Closed on Fund Debate," *Calgary Herald*, 4 December 1981, p. A1.

¹³¹ De Groot, "Fall Sitting Broke Old Debate Record," p. H1.

¹³² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 19th Legislature, 3rd Session*, 4 November 1981, pp. 1453–1469.

¹³³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 19th Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. LXXXVIII, 14 December 1981, pp. 212–213; Susan Ruttan, "Filibuster Tactics Forced a Series of 'Firsts'," *Calgary Herald*, 17 December 1981, p. E1.

¹³⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 19th Legislature, 3rd Session*, 24 November 1981, pp. 1803–1846.

¹³⁵ Susan Ruttan, "Amerongen's Resignation Demanded," *Calgary Herald*, 25 November 1981, p. A1; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 19th Legislature, 3rd Session*, 24 November 1981, p. 1811.

¹³⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 19th Legislature, 3rd Session*, 25 November 1981, p. 1858; Allan Mayer, "Censure Motion Crushed," *Edmonton Journal*, 26 November 1981, A1.

¹³⁷ "Question Period Boycotted," *Calgary Herald*, 1 June 1983, p. F12.

¹³⁸ Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 48.

¹³⁹ Ibid.

¹⁴⁰ Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.

¹⁴¹ Fax from Amerongen, 28 May 2004; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 20th Legislature, 1st Session*, 11 March 1983, p. 9.

¹⁴² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 20th Legislature, 1st Session*, 11 March 1983, p. 10.

¹⁴³ Tom Barrett and Allan Mayer, "Grant Notley Killed. 6 Dead, 4 Hurt in Crash," *Edmonton Journal*, 21 October 1984, p. A1.

¹⁴⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 20th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. XCI, 6 November 1984, p. 197.

¹⁴⁵ Ibid., p. 198.

¹⁴⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 17th Legislature, 2nd Session*, vol. LXXIX, 12 April 1973, p. 125.

¹⁴⁷ Mackay, *Order in the House*, pp. 9–10.

¹⁴⁸ Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *The Report of the Chief Electoral Officer on the General Election of the Twenty-First Legislative Assembly Thursday, May 8th, 1986* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1986), pp. B1-B12, D3.

¹⁴⁹ Patricia Egan, ed., *The Canadian Law List 1987* (Aurora, ON: Canada Law Book, 1987), p. 576; Patricia Egan, ed., *The Canadian Law List 1988* (Aurora, ON: Canada Law Book, 1988), p. 590.



¹⁵⁰ Dean, "Amerongen Hangs Our Shingle Again," p. 605.

¹⁵¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building, Thursday September 3, 1987* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1987), pp. 1, 5–6.

¹⁵² Ibid., p. 5.

¹⁵³ "Speakers Re-Elected. Alberta: Honourable Gerard J. Amerongen, Q.C., M.L.A.," *Canadian Regional Review* vol. II, no. 2 (June 1979): p. 55; E-mail from Carmichael, 15 October 2003.

¹⁵⁴ Elizabeth Lumley, ed., *Canadian Who's Who 1996*, vol. XXXI (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1996), p. 18.

¹⁵⁵ Norm Owenden, "Can Speaker Keep Pace?," *Edmonton Journal*, 6 May 1986, p. H7.

¹⁵⁶ Darrell Harvey, "Low-Income Housing Sought for \$1.3 Million: Council Flooded with Demands for Provincial Funds," *Edmonton Journal*, 26 November 1999, p. B3.

¹⁵⁷ Lumley, ed., *Canadian Who's Who 1996*, p. 18.

¹⁵⁸ *Government House; Heritage Day, 1 August 1977*, (Edmonton: Alberta Government House Foundation, 1977), p. 2; O.C. 549/76 (Government House Act), Alberta; O.C. 1223/78 (Government House Act), Alberta.

¹⁵⁹ Lumley, ed., *Canadian Who's Who 1996*, p. 18.

¹⁶⁰ Ibid.

¹⁶¹ Amerongen, Interview by Tingley, 19 March 2001; E-mail from Jessi-Ann Riddell, Law Society of Alberta, 30 December 2003.

¹⁶² E-mail from D. B. McDougall, 26 June 2004.

¹⁶³ Kieran Simpson, ed., *Canadian Who's Who 1986*, vol. XXI (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1986), p. 23; Amerongen, Interview by LAO Staff, 24 April 2002.

¹⁶⁴ Lumley, ed., *Canadian Who's Who 1996*, p. 18.

¹⁶⁵ E-mail from Margaret Amerongen, Toronto, 2 August 2002.

¹⁶⁶ Midgley, "Speaker: Good Man, Tough Job," p. 4.

¹⁶⁷ Dolphin, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, p. 46.

¹⁶⁸ Lindblad, "Security in Age of Violence Threatens an Old Tradition," p. 3.

¹⁶⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building, Thursday September 3, 1987*, pp. 6, 5.



Defending the rights and privileges of parliament



Carter 1986-1993



DAVID JOHN CARTER

David John Carter served as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta for 14 years, seven of those as Speaker. He was the second ordained clergyman to serve as Speaker; Speaker Peter Dawson (1937–1963) was the first. Carter's desire to work for the public good stemmed from observing his father in his role as an Anglican clergyman.¹ As the ninth Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Carter increased the visibility of the Legislative Assembly and the understanding of the role of the Speaker in a parliamentary democracy by undertaking several speaking engagements in U.S. state legislatures and by defending the rights and privileges of parliament all the way to the Supreme Court. Known across Canada as an historian, poet and writer, Carter is without doubt the most prolific author of all Alberta Speakers to date. As Speaker, Carter served with Premiers Donald R. Getty (1985–1992) and Ralph P. Klein (1992–), and with Premier Getty and Premier E. Peter Lougheed (1971–1985) during his seven years as a Private Member.

Family History

David John Carter was born on April 6, 1934, in Moose Jaw, Saskatchewan, the son of John Wilfred Carter and Mabel Louise Sheward.² John and Mabel had been introduced in Moose Jaw by one of Mabel's brothers, who, like John, was training to be a clergyman.³ On September 21, 1932, the couple was married in St. John's Anglican Church in Moose Jaw.⁴ The Carters had three children: David was the eldest child and only son, with two younger sisters, Anne and Patricia.⁵

John Wilfred Carter was born November 5, 1901,⁶ in West Bromwich, England, and immigrated to Canada in 1926.⁷ In England, he had been an engineer,⁸ and had some additional training "as a pharmacist and as a motion picture projectionist."⁹ When he immigrated to Canada, his destination was Emmanuel College in Saskatoon, Saskatchewan,¹⁰ where he trained to be an Anglican clergyman.¹¹ From Emmanuel College, he was granted a diploma in Theology in 1929, and from St. Chad's College in Regina, Saskatchewan, he obtained a Licentiate in Theology in 1935 and a Doctor of Divinity degree in 1959.¹²

Archdeacon John W. Carter served in the ministry of the Anglican Church for 60 years in parishes in the Dioceses of Qu'Appelle in Saskatchewan and Calgary in Alberta.¹³ He had a long association with the Canadian military as Chaplain to the Royal Canadian Navy with HMCS *Queen Regina*, Padre to the Royal Canadian Legion in Medicine Hat, Alberta, and to the Navy League in Calgary.¹⁴ He served the Parish of St. Barnabas Anglican Church in Medicine Hat from June 1949 until his retirement in February 1972, at which time he moved to Calgary and became a part-time assistant on staff at the Cathedral Church of the Redeemer, where his son David was Dean.¹⁵ At the time of his death, on January 3, 1990, he was "Rector of St. Clement's Church, Balzac, Honorary Assistant of the Cathedral Church of the Redeemer, Calgary and Registrar for the Diocese of Calgary."¹⁶ His father's example influenced David Carter's choice of theological and parliamentary careers.¹⁷



Mabel Louise Sheward was born May 27, 1911,¹⁸ in Cheltenham,¹⁹ Gloucestershire, England, the daughter of George Sheward, born in 1877,²⁰ and Esther Ann²¹ Deeley, born in 1874.²² From a family of 11 children, George Sheward was one of five brothers who immigrated to Canada between 1893 and 1913.²³ George departed Liverpool on April 20, 1912 and sailed for Canada with his wife and five children.²⁴ He joined one of his brothers near Maple Creek, Saskatchewan, where he tried homesteading for a time.²⁵ The family “lived in a sod hut south east of Maple Creek ... and later moved into that town.”²⁶ He later relocated his family to Moose Jaw,²⁷ “where he operated a bicycle shop and later an Imperial Oil garage near the CPR [depot] until his death.”²⁸

Education

Due to the nature of Archdeacon Carter’s career, the family moved frequently until David was in his mid-teens.²⁹ The Carters first lived in Rockglen and Shaunavon, Saskatchewan.³⁰ Subsequently, from 1937 to 1940, they resided in Gull Lake, Saskatchewan,³¹ and in Regina, from December 1940 to June 1949.³² In school, David enjoyed Social Studies and English; his “least favourite subject was math.”³³

The Carter family moved to Medicine Hat at the end of June 1949.³⁴ That fall, David enrolled at Alexandra Composite High School, where he became involved in student politics. He was elected president of the Students’ Union and served as class valedictorian in 1952.³⁵ David graduated from high school in 1952 and was hired immediately to teach* in a one-room schoolhouse at Gros Ventre-Tothill in the Cypress Hills.³⁶ He was also, at various times, an undertaker’s assistant, a worker in the glass factory in Redcliff, Alberta, and an employee at Canadian Pacific Express.³⁷ Later, while attending university, he had several more jobs, including working on the railway and with the post office.³⁸

Carter began his post-secondary education at the University of Manitoba, in Winnipeg, obtaining a Bachelor of Arts degree in 1958.³⁹ He was active in the Students’ Union serving as junior representative (1955–1956), senior representative (1956–1957), and vice-president (1957–1958), as well as chair of various committees.⁴⁰ When Carter continued his studies at St. John’s College, Winnipeg,[†] he also continued his participation in student affairs: he was Vice Stick (class vice-president), and Senior Stick (class president)—twice.⁴¹ In addition to his involvement in student government, Carter was active in sports, particularly enjoying curling.⁴² Carter obtained his Licentiate in Theology from St. John’s College in 1960.⁴³ Upon graduation, he received the James Frost Cross Memorial Trophy, given annually to the outstanding student at the College.⁴⁴ The Student Council also presented Carter with a Canadian Hymn Book (the first time this award was bestowed) for his years of service on the Council and on the university newspaper, *The Manitoban*, as news editor.⁴⁵

* David was only 18 and fresh out of high school with no formal teacher training. Realizing that he could not provide the help these students required, he resigned after six weeks.

† One of Carter’s fellow students at St. John’s College was Edward R. Schreyer, later Premier of Manitoba (1969–1977) and Governor General of Canada (1979–1984).



Carter was ordained deacon in 1960 and priest in 1961; both ordinations took place on Ascension Day at St. John's Cathedral, Winnipeg, in the Diocese of Rupert's Land.⁴⁶ His father, Archdeacon of Medicine Hat at that time, assisted and preached at the second ordination.⁴⁷ While working as a clergyman, Carter continued his studies, obtaining his Bachelor of Sacred Theology degree in 1968 from the Anglican Theological College, University of British Columbia.⁴⁸ His thesis was entitled "A History of the Anglican Diocese of Calgary," which he published privately in 1968 as a small book entitled *Where the Wind Blows: A History of the Anglican Diocese of Calgary 1888-1968*.⁴⁹ He also completed all course requirements towards a Master of Sacred Theology degree in Western Canadian Church History, at the Vancouver School of Theology. His thesis was published in 1977 as *Samuel Trivett, Church Missionary to the Blood Indians*.⁵⁰

Military Career

While in Winnipeg, Carter joined the Royal Canadian Naval Reserve as a sub-lieutenant.⁵¹ He took naval training at: HMCS Cornwallis, Nova Scotia; HMCS Esquimaux, British Columbia; and Canadian Forces Base, Kingston, Ontario.⁵² From 1964 to 1968, he served as Chaplain (Reserve), Royal Canadian Navy, to HMCS Chippewa, Winnipeg.⁵³

Early Career

In 1960, Carter was deacon in charge of St. Catherine's, Bird's Hill, Manitoba, a few kilometres northeast of Winnipeg. Following his ordination as a priest in 1961, he was in charge of both St. Catherine's and St. Saviour's, in East Kildonan, Manitoba. During this period of Carter's ministry, a church hall was built at St. Catherine's and a new church at St. Saviour's.⁵⁴ From May 1961 to August 1965, Carter was "the sole counsellor in individual and group therapy" to the Church Home for Unwed Mothers in Winnipeg, a joint Anglican and United Church initiative.⁵⁵ During this time, he wrote "a paper dealing with the problem of unwed mothers."⁵⁶ Carter was also vice-chair of the Board of the Church Home for Girls.⁵⁷

In 1965, Carter and his family* moved to Calgary, where, from 1965 to 1969, he served as Anglican Chaplain to the University of Alberta at Calgary,[†] to Mount Royal Junior College and to the Southern Alberta Institute of Technology (SAIT).⁵⁸ From 1967 to 1968, he was founding chair of the Chaplains' Association, at the University of Calgary, which was notable for being "the first interdenominational team chaplaincy at a university in Canada."⁵⁹ Carter also acted as editor of *The Sower*, which featured regional news and features from the Anglican Diocese of Calgary.⁶⁰

In June 1969, Carter was named Rector of the Cathedral Church of the Redeemer in downtown Calgary and Dean of the Anglican Diocese of Calgary. At the time of his appointment, he was the youngest Anglican dean in the world.⁶¹ He served in these roles from 1969 to 1979.⁶² From 1974 to 1979, he was the only liaison from the Canadian Doctrine and Worship Committee to

* At Dr. Carter's request, no additional family information is being provided.

† The University of Alberta at Calgary attained full autonomy in 1966 and became the University of Calgary.



the Standing Liturgical Commission of the Protestant Episcopal Church (U.S.), as the latter developed its new prayer book.⁶⁵ Carter was the archivist for the Anglican Diocese of Calgary from 1966 to 1988,⁶⁴ and assistant archivist for the Ecclesiastical Province of Rupert's Land.⁶⁵ He also worked for better housing and services for seniors and inner-city residents in Calgary.⁶⁶

From 1971 to 1977, Carter served two terms as a member of the Senate of the University of Calgary.⁶⁷ In 1974, he was a member of the University of Calgary's Honourary Degree Committee and Chancellor's Nominating Committee.⁶⁸ Carter was employed by Foothills Pipe Lines (Yukon) in community relations from 1979 to 1982,⁶⁹ and by NOVA, an Alberta Corporation, from 1982 to 1986.⁷⁰

Political Career

Carter was first elected to the Legislative Assembly of Alberta on March 14, 1979 as the Progressive Conservative Member for the constituency of Calgary-Millican, defeating former Speaker Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972) of the Social Credit Party.* Carter was re-elected as Member for Calgary-Egmont in 1982, 1986 and 1989.

Carter was a member of the *Alberta Health Care Facilities Review Committee* from 1979 to 1980⁷¹ and was the first Chair of the *Social Care Facilities Review Committee* from 1982 to 1986.⁷² From 1979 to 1986, Carter served as a Special Advisor on Urban Native Education to the Minister of Education.⁷³

In May 1986, Premier Donald R. Getty announced that he was nominating Carter for the position of Speaker of the Legislative Assembly. Carter believes that one of the major reasons for his nomination was his extensive service on various legislative committees.⁷⁴ He had served: on the *Select Standing Committees on Public Accounts; Public Affairs; and Legislative Offices*; as Deputy Chair of the *Legislative Offices Committee*; and as Chair of three special legislative committees to select the Ombudsman, Chief Electoral Officer and Auditor-General.⁷⁵ He was one of the first Members to be appointed as a government liaison with the Calgary Exhibition and Stampede Company.⁷⁶

As Speaker

David John Carter was elected Speaker on June 12, 1986 in the First Session of the 21st Legislature and subsequently re-elected on June 1, 1989. On both occasions, it was through the nomination by Premier Getty, which was seconded by the Leader of the Opposition, New Democrat Member Raymond Martin.⁷⁷ Carter was 52 years old at the time of his first election as Speaker. In an interview following the announcement, Carter said, "There's the spirit of the law as well as the letter of the law. I would be more inclined to the spirit of the law."⁷⁸ Reflecting on his terms as Speaker, Carter indicated that the composition of the Legislative Assembly was

* Carter became the second Speaker to defeat a former Speaker in an election. Speaker Peter Dawson (1937–1963) defeated former Speaker Oran L. McPherson (1922–1926) in the constituency of Little Bow on August 22, 1935.



among “the most ‘complicated’ ... in Alberta history ... with more parties in opposition and with larger numbers seated in the opposition benches.”⁷⁹ He recalls that “because of many new Members with little background in parliamentary practice the Chair/Speaker was called upon more frequently in terms of maintaining order and dealing with an increased demand for decisions by the Chair.”⁸⁰ Carter has characterized Question Period as “both scary and exhilarating,” but found that his initial nervousness quickly disappeared as he “came to enjoy [its] intellectual thrust, flow and challenges.”⁸¹ He has compared the intellectual stimulation involved to “playing chess with 82 opponents plus the media all at the same time!”⁸²

While Speaker, Carter oversaw a revitalization of services to the Members of the Legislative Assembly and to the public. He continued and expanded educational initiatives such as the mock and student parliaments that had been introduced under Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen (1972-1986).⁸³ Additionally, “a mobile display was taken to schools, conventions and community fairs to attempt to take the Legislative Assembly to the ‘grassroots.’”⁸⁴ By the late 1980s, a plan was put in place “to bring the Assembly to the forefront in terms of word processing, electronic mail and other services.”⁸⁵ In 1987, the Legislative Assembly Office (LAO) went through some ‘challenging times,’ resulting in a reorganization and relocation of staff.⁸⁶ Carter takes pride in the fact that by 1988, three of the LAO’s senior managers were women.⁸⁷ Carter was responsible for sponsoring the publication of four books on the history of Alberta: *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration* (1987); *Princess Louise Caroline Alberta* (1988); *Lieutenant-Governors of the Northwest Territories and Alberta, 1876–1991* (1991); and *Premiers of the Northwest Territories and Alberta, 1897–1991* (1991). Educational videos about *Alberta Hansard*, the Legislature Building and the Legislative Assembly were also produced. Carter increased awareness of and communication within the LAO with the publication of annual reports beginning in 1987, and a staff newsletter entitled *Under the Dome*, first published in February of 1988. In 1991, he and Sergeant-at-Arms Oscar J. Lacombe were instrumental in the placement on the Legislature Grounds of a cenotaph in honour of Korean War Veterans.⁸⁸

Following his election as Speaker, Carter chaired the *Special Standing Committee on Members’ Services*. During his tenure, discussions regarding the reform of the Members’ pension plan took place. These discussions, as introduced by government caucus members, led to the *Members of the Legislative Assembly Pension Plan Amendment Act, 1993*, which received Royal Assent on May 14, 1993.⁸⁹ The Amendment Act effectively eliminated pensions for Members first elected from 1989 onwards and limited the benefits of those serving Members who had been elected prior to 1989. Carter also served on the *Standing Committee on Public Affairs*.

The year 1987 marked the first time in 35 years that the Chamber, the rotunda and surrounding areas of the Legislature Building had been renovated and upgraded. Carter personally supervised all aspects of this project, sometimes staying overnight in the Speaker’s Suite to monitor the construction.⁹⁰ These renovations provided improved wheelchair access to the Building and the galleries⁹¹ and restored the architectural integrity of the Chamber.* Carter was also responsible

* Carter recognized that at some point in the Assembly’s history, the original green carpet in the Chamber had been replaced with a royal red one—a colour inappropriate to an elected House. In deference to parliamentary history and tradition, Carter reintroduced the original green colour of carpets and upholstery, thus restoring the Chamber to its original ‘correct’ hue.



for enlarging and naming the Confederation Room.⁹² As part of the renovations, the Alberta Coat of Arms was placed over the Speaker's Chair and over the main door to the Chamber, and the Canadian Coat of Arms was moved to the Confederation Room.⁹³ During Carter's term, the security of the Legislature Building was enhanced by the installation of metal detectors at the entrance to the galleries.⁹⁴

During Question Period on April 7, 1987, one of the most controversial incidents during Carter's tenure as Speaker occurred when New Democrat Member for Athabasca-Lac La Biche Leo Piquette addressed the Legislative Assembly in French. Carter ruled that there was no precedent for the use of French during Question Period and that Piquette must ask his question in English. This ruling elicited a torrent of debate locally and nationally. Carter ruled that the language issue was a *prima facie* question of privilege, and the issue was referred to the *Standing Committee on Privileges and Election, Standing Orders and Printing*. On November 25, 1987, this Committee tabled a report,⁹⁵ which reached the following four conclusions: conducting proceedings solely in English did not constitute a breach of privilege; with prior approval from the Speaker all languages could be used in the Assembly for matters except proceedings for which immediate response was required; Piquette had breached the privileges of all Members by challenging the Speaker's authority and "by casting certain reflections upon the Speaker and his actions;" and an *Edmonton Journal* editorial of April 9, 1987 constituted a gross breach of the privileges of the Assembly.⁹⁶ In 1988, in response to the Saskatchewan case (*R. v. Mercure*) before it, the Supreme Court of Canada ruled that section 110 of *The North-West Territories Act* of 1886, regarding the ability to use French or English, continued to apply to the Legislative Assembly of Saskatchewan.⁹⁷ The Legislative Assembly of Alberta consequently followed the binding decision and passed the *Languages Act*[†] (1988), which states that Members of the Legislative Assembly may use either English or French in the Assembly.⁹⁸

On September 3, 1987, Carter hosted the 75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building.⁹⁹ Over 160 Members and former Members attended the day's festivities, which consisted of the official unveiling by the Hon. W. Helen Hunley, Lieutenant Governor of Alberta (1985–1991), of the Coat of Arms above the entrance to the main doors of the Chamber; presentations of carved replica Speaker Chairs to former Speakers Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972) and Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986); and a presentation of the book, *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration*, to the Lieutenant Governor.[‡] In addition, the official portraits of the Hon. Frank C. Lynch-Staunton, Lieutenant Governor (1979–1985) and Speaker Gerard J. Amerongen were unveiled. Finally, four ceremonial trumpets and banners were presented to the Legislative Assembly by the City of Calgary, and, with the presentation of a new sword by Wilkinson Sword Canada Inc., the original sword was retired by Sergeant-at-Arms Oscar Lacombe.

* The editorial employed strong language to express opinions about the way that Carter was handling the issue. "Bilingual Rights," *Edmonton Journal*, 9 April 1987, p. A6.

† This is the only Statute of Alberta to be published in both English and French.

‡ *The Alberta Legislature: A Celebration* was written by Frank Dolphin in honour of the 75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building.



On April 9, 1990, Carter became the first Speaker in 38 years to name* a Member when he named New Democrat Member for Edmonton-Centre, Rev. William Roberts. The incident began when the *Committee of the Whole* began debating Bill 8, the *Individual's Rights Protection Amendment Act*. Marie Laing, New Democrat Member for Edmonton-Avonmore, raised the issue of including sexual orientation in the Bill. Chair of Committees Stanley S. Schumacher stated that Laing was "straying past the principle as was approved in second reading"¹⁰⁰ and would not accept an amendment to include it.¹⁰¹ An appeal of the ruling was made immediately, adjourning the *Committee of the Whole*. Carter, following the *Standing Orders*, put the question to the Assembly that Chair Schumacher's ruling be confirmed. The ruling was confirmed resulting in a protest by Roberts, who complained of the lack of further debate on the issue. Carter warned Roberts to curb his remarks, but when Roberts persisted, Carter responded by banning him from the Assembly for a day.¹⁰²

On May 13, 1991, Nicholas W. Taylor, Member for Westlock-Sturgeon and Leader of the Opposition, was named by Carter for repeatedly calling 'shame' in the House. Taylor was reacting to the voting down of a motion to convey a special message of congratulations to the first Canadian of the Sikh faith to graduate from the RCMP Training Academy.¹⁰³ Taylor apologized to the Assembly the next day for his conduct, and Carter explained his action by quoting a precedent from *Erskine May* that specifically refers to cries of 'shame' in the House.¹⁰⁴

On June 20, 1991, Nick Taylor and Liberal Member for Edmonton-Meadowlark, D. Grant Mitchell, were named after repeatedly being called to order by Carter.¹⁰⁵ On June 21, 1991, Laurence Decore, Liberal Member for Edmonton-Glengarry, was named for refusing to withdraw an unparliamentary expression and for not following proper parliamentary procedure.¹⁰⁶

On April 11, 1990, New Democrat House Leader Pamela Barrett asked to view a document that had been filed by Member for Redwater-Andrew Steve Zarusky. Zarusky had filed documents in response to allegations against him of exerting improper influence in regard to the future development of lands that he owned. Barrett was denied access to the documents. She asked that a *prima facie* case of breach of privilege in the Assembly be found, charging that Carter "did not: a) Allow the documents to be laid on the Table b) Allow Members of the Assembly to look at the documents."¹⁰⁷ Carter indicated that he had been investigating a possible discrepancy between Zarusky's description of what had been filed and what actually had been filed. Carter recalls that he attempted to contact Barrett later in the day, but was unsuccessful.¹⁰⁸ In the Assembly the next day, Carter commented: "[O]n reflection I would admit [that] the decision to withhold the release of the documents was an error of judgment."¹⁰⁹ Carter ruled that Barrett had raised a *prima facie* case of breach of privilege and that if a motion for the matter were to be referred to the *Standing Committee on Privileges and Elections*, Deputy Speaker Stanley S. Schumacher would take over the proceedings.¹¹⁰ A motion was not forthcoming, and the matter was dropped.¹¹¹

* A disciplinary measure used at the discretion of the Speaker. For more information, see the Glossary. Speaker Peter Dawson was the first Speaker to name a Member in the Legislative Assembly when he named Arthur H. Wray, Independent-Social Credit Member for Banff-Cochrane, on March 21, 1952.



In 1991, Carter instituted the Westminster practice whereby the Lieutenant Governor (the monarch's representative) seeks permission to enter the Chamber by having the Sergeant-at-Arms knock on the door.¹¹² Prior to this time, the Sergeant-at-Arms would simply announce the entrance of the Lieutenant Governor. In the words of New Democrat House Leader Pam Barrett, "It makes it perfectly clear: the people own this place."¹¹³

In the early 1990s, Carter became the only Canadian Speaker¹¹⁴ to address both the Idaho¹¹⁵ and Washington state¹¹⁶ Senates and Houses of Representatives. Dressed in full regalia, Carter was introduced by Sergeant-at-Arms Oscar Lacombe with the cry, "Order, Make way for Mr. Speaker!", a spectacle not usually seen in the United States. On these occasions, Carter spoke on cross-border cooperation.¹¹⁷ The speeches were the groundwork for what is now a cooperative project known as the Pacific North West Economic Region.¹¹⁸

Carter was active in helping to obtain provincial funding for a number of inner-city housing projects, especially for the Calgary Chinese community. He assisted with the Wah Ying Mansion, a senior citizens' housing project completed in 1988, and with the Calgary Chinese Cultural Centre, which was completed in 1992.¹¹⁹

When a Session of the Legislative Assembly was disrupted from the Public Gallery on March 27, 1991, six people were taken into custody, but no formal charges were laid.¹²⁰ The protestors were frustrated by not being permitted to meet with the Minister responsible for the Workers' Compensation Board. The six were barred from the Public Gallery, but Carter met with the group to discuss their concerns.¹²¹ It was the first time since March of 1938 that a Speaker had ordered individuals be taken into custody.*

Carter ruled on a significant number of unparliamentary terms during his time as Speaker. As is frequently the case, at issue was the fact that, while the words themselves were innocuous, the context in which they were used rendered them unparliamentary. He banned the use of terms that, as Parliamentary Counsel explained, would debase 'the dignity of the institution.'¹²² One such incident occurred on Thursday, February 4, 1993, when New Democrat Member Tom Sigurdson used the term 'scab' when asking about a union decertification vote at Zeidler Forest Industries. When Carter ruled the term unparliamentary,¹²³ Sigurdson, upset at the Speaker's decision, walked out of the Chamber. Carter then ruled that he would not recognize Sigurdson for questions until he apologized to the Assembly.¹²⁴ Sigurdson apologized four days later on Monday, February 8.¹²⁵

One of the tools Carter occasionally employed to maintain order in the Assembly was the calling of short adjournments, during which the Speaker left the Chair and the Chamber. These breaks served to cool the heated atmosphere in the Legislative Assembly during some Question Periods.

* The *Committee on Privileges and Elections* called for a warrant to be issued for *Edmonton Journal* reporter Don Brown's arrest and detention on March 24, 1938. However, the situation was resolved prior to Speaker Peter Dawson's actually issuing the warrant. In the March 27, 1991 incident, no warrant for arrest was issued.



On January 21, 1993, the Supreme Court of Canada released its decision in *New Brunswick Broadcasting v. Nova Scotia (Speaker)*.¹²⁶ Carter cites the Supreme Court decision, which “entrenched Parliamentary Privilege as beyond the scope of the Charter of Rights,” as one of the most significant and important events that occurred during his tenure.¹²⁷ The case arose when camera operators for a television station were prohibited from filming the proceedings of the Nova Scotia Legislative Assembly. The issue before the Supreme Court was whether the freedom of the press guaranteed under the *Canadian Charter of Rights and Freedoms* overrode the ancient privilege of parliaments to exclude strangers. In its decision, the majority of the Supreme Court held that the inherent privileges necessary for the functioning of an Assembly enjoyed constitutional status. As one part of the Constitution cannot override another part, the authority to eject strangers was upheld. Thus, the majority of the Supreme Court affirmed the exclusive jurisdiction of Assemblies over the application of their inherent privileges.¹²⁸ The decision was a major watershed in recognizing the status of parliamentary privilege in Canadian law.¹²⁹ Under Carter, the Alberta Speaker intervened in the case and made arguments before the Supreme Court in support of parliamentary privilege. Alberta’s Counsel also represented the Speakers of the Yukon and the Northwest Territories.

In a news release on March 13, 1993, Carter announced that he would not seek re-election.¹³⁰ Although he ceased to be a Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta after the election of June 15, Carter remained Speaker until the First Session of the 23rd Legislature began in August 1993, and a new Speaker was elected.¹³¹

During his tenure as Speaker, Carter served as the first vice-chair,¹³² president¹³³ and past president¹³⁴ of the Executive Committee of the Canadian Region, Commonwealth Parliamentary Association (CPA); and chair of the Second Commonwealth Parliamentary Seminar, held in Ottawa. In 1984, Alberta hosted the first Canadian Presiding Officers’ Conference.¹³⁵ In July 1989, Carter welcomed over 60 delegates from all over Canada as the Alberta Legislative Assembly hosted the 29th Canadian Regional Conference of the CPA.¹³⁶ Carter also initiated the planning process for Alberta’s role in the Commonwealth-wide CPA conference held in Banff, Alberta, in the fall of 1994.¹³⁷

Reflecting on his seven years as Speaker, Carter described the qualities necessary for the role:

... [T]he Speaker must be that rarest of birds—calm, collected, wise with an even disposition. ... One needs to be a combination of traffic controller, judge, counsellor, organizer-extraordinaire. You must be a defender of parliament as well as a facilitator. Outside the House you are an administrator of a service oriented department, an ambassador for the province, a parliamentary salesperson and all that in addition to your work on behalf of your constituents as an MLA or MP.¹³⁸

In order to cope with controversy, both in the Legislative Assembly and in the press, Carter feels that a Speaker must have “sufficient strength of character to ‘take the heat’ from all parts of the Assembly and from the ever watchful media as well.”¹³⁹

Later Career

Today Carter still maintains a busy schedule. He continues to serve as an Anglican clergyman in Alberta, Saskatchewan and Montana. He is the author of a number of books on Western



Canadian history and several works of poetry. He started writing poetry in Regina when he was 12 years old, then gave it up, feeling it was 'a sissy occupation.'¹⁴⁰ He returned to this activity a few years later, and it became one of his lifelong interests. His poetry collection *Prairie Profiles* has been set to music by Violet Archer, an internationally renowned Canadian composer from Edmonton.¹⁴¹ Carter has written detailed histories of the Anglican Diocese of Calgary and the Cathedral Church of the Redeemer within that Diocese. Topics of his other books include: enemy alien, refugee and prisoner of war camps in Canada; the British Commonwealth Air Training Plan; and Inspector Francis Jeffrey Dickens, the third son of Charles Dickens and a member of the North-West Mounted Police. Carter maintains a website that features his current interests and activities.¹⁴²

Community Activities and Personal Interests

Carter served as director of Trinity Place Foundation of Alberta. He was a very active director of the Calgary Canucks, Alberta Junior 'A' Hockey Club, from 1984 to 1996, and "helped establish a sound financial footing for the club."¹⁴³ He continues as an honorary director of the team.¹⁴⁴

Carter is "[a]n amateur astronomer who likes to spend time looking at the stars from his land in the Cypress Hills."¹⁴⁵ This hobby influenced Carter to try to obtain more funding for "Calgary's planetarium and space and aeronautics museum."¹⁴⁶ Other activities include curling, canoeing, chess¹⁴⁷ and volunteering as weather observer for Environment Canada.¹⁴⁸ In addition, Carter designed the Pioneer Window in the Cathedral Church of the Redeemer in Calgary.¹⁴⁹

Carter enjoys spending time outdoors, and finding, restoring and maintaining abandoned cemeteries in southeastern Alberta as a way of honouring the province's pioneers.¹⁵⁰ In 1977, he formed the non-profit Medicine Lodge Coulee Heritage Society. The Society was involved in an historical project to raise money for the erection of a proper monument over the grave of Inspector F. J. Dickens.¹⁵¹ Carter was the honorary chair of the Lupus Erythematosus Society of Alberta in 1978.¹⁵² He has also served on the Board of Directors for the Calgary Exhibition and Stampede.¹⁵³

Since his retirement as Speaker, Carter has kept a watchful eye on political events in the province, not hesitating to comment upon or get involved in public policy issues. He still regularly listens to Question Period from the House of Commons and from the Ontario, British Columbia and Alberta Legislative Assemblies.¹⁵⁴ In 2001, Carter unsuccessfully challenged the Alberta Government¹⁵⁵ for its use of the Risk Management Fund to pay the legal fees incurred by Stockwell B. Day, Provincial Treasurer at the time, as a result of a defamation suit brought against him in 1999.¹⁵⁶ Carter believes that it is his duty "because of [his] continuing interest and love of 'things parliamentary'" to continue to monitor proceedings in Canadian parliaments—"in defence of parliament."¹⁵⁷



Dr. D.J. Carter in his role as Anglican Dean of the Cathedral Church of the Redeemer, Calgary (Feb. 1975).

Honours and Awards

In 1968, just prior to becoming the youngest Anglican dean in the world, Carter was named one of 10 outstanding young men in the Province of Alberta by the Junior Chamber of Commerce.¹⁵⁸ At its 110th Annual Convocation on November 1, 1976, St. John's College bestowed on David Carter its honorary degree of Doctor of Divinity.¹⁵⁹ Carter Place, a senior citizens' apartment tower next door to the Cathedral Church of the Redeemer, was named after David J. Carter in appreciation for his work with the Trinity Place Foundation of Alberta. Carter "steered the proposal through the bureaucracies of the two churches, as well as three levels of government."¹⁶⁰ This apartment tower provides accommodation for seniors living in downtown Calgary and was built on land owned by the Anglican Diocese, the Cathedral Church of the Redeemer and the Roman Catholic Diocese of Calgary.

Tributes

In 1986, at the time of Carter's first election as Speaker, Premier Donald R. Getty was enthusiastic in his praise of Carter: "David Carter has the qualities a Speaker needs. He has considerable Legislative experience, he has the respect of both sides of the House, and is known for his sense of fairness."¹⁶¹

Publications

"Archbishops' Western Canada Fund." *Alberta Historical Review* vol. 16, no. 1 (Winter 1968): pp. 10-17.

"The Archbishops' Western Canada Fund and the Railway Mission." *Saskatchewan History* vol. 22, no. 1 (Winter 1969): pp. 13-28.

Behind Canadian Barbed Wire: Alien, Refugee and Prisoner of War Camps in Canada, 1914-1946. Calgary: Tumbleweed Press, 1980. 334 pp.

Behind Canadian Barbed Wire: Alien, Refugee and Prisoner of War Camps in Canada, 1914-1946. Elkwater, AB: Eagle Butte Press, 1998. Reprint, January 2004. 253 pp.

Calgary's Anglican Cathedral: The Cathedral Church of the Redeemer, Calgary, Alberta. Calgary: n.p., 1973. 64 pp.

"Calgary's Early Anglicans." In *Frontier Calgary: Town, City, and Region 1875-1914*, eds. Anthony W. Rasporich and Henry C. Klassen, pp. 190-202. Calgary: McClelland and Stewart West, 1975.

"A History of the Anglican Diocese of Calgary." BTh thesis, University of British Columbia, 1968. 105 pp. Published as *Where the Wind Blows*.

Inspector F. J. Dickens of the North-West Mounted Police, 1844-1886. Elkwater, AB: Eagle Butte Press, 2003. 247 pp.

Prairie Profiles. N.p., [1977]. 32 pp.

Prairie Wings: Royal Air Force Training Base #34, Service Flying Training School, British Commonwealth Air Training Plan, Medicine Hat, Alberta, Canada, February 1941-November 1944. Elkwater, AB: Eagle Butte Press, 2001. 198 pp.

Reflections. Calgary: Tumbleweed Press, 1979. 36 pp.

"The Rev'd. Samuel Trivett (Part 1)." *Alberta Historical Review* vol. 21, no. 2 (1973): pp. 13-19.



- "The Rev'd. Samuel Trivett (Part 2)." *Alberta Historical Review* vol. 21, no. 3 (1973): pp. 18–27.
- Samuel Trivett, *Missionary with the Blood Indians: Or, What's a Nice Boy Like You Doing in a Place Like This?* Calgary: n.p., 1974. 92 pp.
- Introduction to "Selections from the Unpublished Autobiography of the Right Reverend William Cyprian Pinkham (1844–1928): First Bishop of Calgary," by William Cyprian Pinkham. *Manitoba Pageant* vol 19, no. 1 (1973): pp. 12–20.
- "Seven Years in the Speaker's Chair." *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 17, no. 1 (Spring 1994): pp. 16–17.
- Where the Wind Blows: A History of the Anglican Diocese of Calgary, 1888–1968.* N.p., [1968]. 52 pp.
- Carter, David John, Eileen Adames, and Arthur Linnington. *100th Anniversary of the Cathedral Church of the Redeemer, Calgary, Alberta.* Calgary: Sandstone Publishing, 1984. 104 pp.
- Carter, David John, and John W. Carter, eds. *The Anglican Episcopate in Canada: Volume III.* Toronto: Anglican Book Centre, 1977. 115 pp.
- Howson, Peggy, Rae McKinnon, Mavis Clark, Mary McIntosh and David John Carter. *Tour Guide: The Cathedral Church of the Redeemer, the Mother Church of the Anglican Diocese of Calgary.* Calgary: n.p., 1977. 29 pp.

Unpublished Manuscripts

- Death Walks the Halls—Riots, Fists, Fire and Murder: Legislature Security Threats.* 1996. 13 pp.
- The Legislature Ghost.* 1993. 6 pp.

Notes

- ¹ Ingrid C. Langhammer, "Focus [Interview with Dr. David Carter]," *Under the Dome: A Newsletter Prepared By and For the Staff of the Legislative Assembly Office* vol. 1, no. 5 (December 1988): p. 1.
- ² *Who's Who in Alberta: An Illustrated Biographical Record of Men and Women of the Time, 1978/79* ed. (Edmonton: L.U.L. Publications, 1979), p. 76.
- ³ David J. Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ⁴ "Sheward or Shuard Family History," in *Maple Creek & Area: Where Past is Present*, vol. 2 (Maple Creek, SK: Maple Creek & Area History Committee, 2000), p. 1012; Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ⁵ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004; "Carter—Archdeacon John Wilfred," [Obituary], *Calgary Herald*, 5 January 1990, p. D5.
- ⁶ *Reverend David Carter*, [Description of Fonds, Medicine Hat Museum and Art Gallery, M78.2.1-.6 M92.21.1-.2], [Internet], (Archives Network of Alberta, 1992), accessed 30 December 2003, available from <http://asalive.archivesalberta.org:8080/access/asa/archaa/>
- ⁷ "Carter—Archdeacon John Wilfred," p. D5.
- ⁸ Canadian Immigration Service, John Carter entry, S.S. *Montrose* Passenger List, 9 November 1926, Library and Archives Canada, Ottawa, RG76 - Immigration, series C-1-a, 1926, vol. 17, p. 120, line 5, microfilm T-14726.
- ⁹ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.



- ¹⁰ Canadian Immigration Service, John Carter entry, S.S. *Montrose* Passenger List, 9 November 1926.
- ¹¹ *Reverend David Carter*, [Description of Fonds, Medicine Hat Museum and Art Gallery, M78.2.1-.6 M92.21.1-.2], [Internet].
- ¹² *Crockford's Clerical Directory 1977-79*, 87th ed. (London: Oxford University Press, 1979; reprint, 1980), p. 167.
- ¹³ "Carter-Archdeacon John Wilfred," p. D5.
- ¹⁴ Ibid.
- ¹⁵ David John Carter, *Calgary's Anglican Cathedral: The Cathedral Church of the Redeemer, Calgary, Alberta* (Calgary: n.p., 1973), p. 42.
- ¹⁶ "Carter-Archdeacon John Wilfred," p. D5.
- ¹⁷ Langhammer, "Focus [Interview with Dr. David Carter]," p. 1; Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003-February 2004.
- ¹⁸ "Sheward or Shuard Family History," p. 1012.
- ¹⁹ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003-February 2004.
- ²⁰ "Sheward or Shuard Family History," p. 1012.
- ²¹ Ibid.
- ²² Great Britain. Public Records Office, John Deeley household, 1881 British Census, England, Worcester, Lye, Engine Lane, Public Records Office Reference RG11, piece 28888, folio 124, p. 23, microfilm 1341692, FamilySearch, [Transcription], [Internet], Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, Salt Lake City, UT; Family History Library, accessed 22 December 2003, available from <http://www.familysearch.org>
- ²³ "Sheward or Shuard Family History," p. 1011.
- ²⁴ Ibid., p. 1012.
- ²⁵ "Legal Land Description, NE 22 9 23 W3, George Sheward J H Sheward the late, microfilm no. C-6576," *ArchiviaNet: Western Land Grants (1870-1930)*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 17 December 2003, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020111_e.html
- ²⁶ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003-February 2004.
- ²⁷ "Sheward or Shuard Family History," p. 1012.
- ²⁸ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003-February 2004.
- ²⁹ Georgette Boyer, "A Celebrity Profile: The Hon. Dr. David J. Carter," *Heritage Link*, November/December 1988, p. 53; Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003-February 2004.
- ³⁰ David John Carter, The Very Reverend David John Carter, ca. 1971, [Curriculum Vitae]. David J. Carter Fonds, University of Calgary, Calgary, UARC 94.003 / file 3.01, p. 2.
- ³¹ David John Carter, "Memories ..." in *Prairie Profiles* (n.p., [1977]), p. 22.
- ³² Roy Norberg and The Anglican Church of St. Mary the Virgin, *Previous Rectors at St. Marys: From Our First Rector to Current Time*, [Internet], (Regina: The Anglican Church of St. Mary the Virgin, 2001, updated 2 January), accessed 22 December 2003, available from <http://uregina.ca/~norberg/stm-rtrs.htm>
- ³³ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003-February 2004.
- ³⁴ Boyer, "A Celebrity Profile: The Hon. Dr. David J. Carter," p. 54.



- ³⁵ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ³⁶ David John Carter, “Gross Ventre Schoolhouse,” in *Prairie Profiles* (n.p., [1977]), p. 23; Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ³⁷ Carter, The Very Reverend David John Carter, [Curriculum Vitae], p. 2; Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ³⁸ Carter, *Calgary's Anglican Cathedral*, p. 41.
- ³⁹ Ibid., p. 55.
- ⁴⁰ E-mail from Lewis Stubbs, University of Manitoba Archives and Special Collections, 5 June 2003; E-mail from Lewis Stubbs, University of Manitoba Archives and Special Collections, 17 June 2003; Carter, *Calgary's Anglican Cathedral*, p. 55; H. S. Martin, et al., eds., *Who's Who in Alberta: A Biographical Directory*, 2nd ed. (Saskatoon: Lyone Publications, 1974), p. 54.
- ⁴¹ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004; E-mail from Stubbs, 5 June 2003; E-mail from Stubbs, 17 June 2003; Carter, *Calgary's Anglican Cathedral*, p. 55; Martin, et al., eds., *Who's Who in Alberta, 1974 ed.*, p. 54.
- ⁴² Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ⁴³ Carter, The Very Reverend David John Carter, [Curriculum Vitae], p. 1.
- ⁴⁴ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004; E-mail from Lewis Stubbs, University of Manitoba Archives and Special Collections, 12 December 2003.
- ⁴⁵ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004; E-mail from Stubbs, 5 June 2003.
- ⁴⁶ *Who's Who in Alberta, 1978/79 ed.*, p. 76; Carter, *Calgary's Anglican Cathedral*, pp. 41, 55.
- ⁴⁷ Martin, et al., eds., *Who's Who in Alberta, 1974 ed.*, p. 54.
- ⁴⁸ Carter, *Calgary's Anglican Cathedral*, p. 55.
- ⁴⁹ David John Carter, *Where the Wind Blows: A History of the Anglican Diocese of Calgary, 1888–1968* (n.p., [1968]).
- ⁵⁰ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004; David John Carter, *Samuel Trivett, Missionary With the Blood Indians: Or, What's a Nice Boy Like You Doing in a Place Like This?* (Calgary: n.p., 1974).
- ⁵¹ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ⁵² Ibid.
- ⁵³ Carter, *Calgary's Anglican Cathedral*, p. 55; Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ⁵⁴ Carter, The Very Reverend David John Carter, [Curriculum Vitae], p. 1.
- ⁵⁵ Martin, et al., eds., *Who's Who in Alberta, 1974 ed.*, p. 54.
- ⁵⁶ Carter, The Very Reverend David John Carter, [Curriculum Vitae], p. 1.
- ⁵⁷ Ibid., p. 1.
- ⁵⁸ Carter, *Calgary's Anglican Cathedral*, p. 55.
- ⁵⁹ Ibid., p. 41; Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ⁶⁰ Carter, *Calgary's Anglican Cathedral*, p. 55.
- ⁶¹ “Former Dean Unites Religious Outlook With Political Role,” *Calgary Herald*, 30 June 1979, p. E15; *Who's Who in Alberta, 1978/79 ed.*, p. 76.

- ⁶² Elizabeth Lumley, ed., *Canadian Who's Who 2003*, vol. XXXVIII (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 2003), p. 222.
- ⁶³ *Who's Who in Alberta, 1978/79 ed.*, p. 76; Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ⁶⁴ Lumley, ed., *Canadian Who's Who 2003*, p. 222.
- ⁶⁵ Carter, The Very Reverend David John Carter, [Curriculum Vitae], p. 2.
- ⁶⁶ Patrick Tivy, "Poet Who Preaches Now Turning to Politics," *Calgary Herald*, 30 June 1979, p. E8; Carter, The Very Reverend David John Carter, [Curriculum Vitae], pp. 1–2.
- ⁶⁷ Fax from Lisa Atkinson, University Archives, University of Calgary, 10 June 2003.
- ⁶⁸ E-mail from Lisa Atkinson, University Archives, University of Calgary, 4 June 2003.
- ⁶⁹ Lorne V. Silverstein, ed., *Who's Who in Alberta Business, Finance and Government: The Key Decision Makers 1984–1985*, 1st ed. (Edmonton: Tridon Publications, 1985), p. 73; Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ⁷⁰ "People: New Speaker in Alberta," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 9, no. 3 (Autumn 1986): p. 42.
- ⁷¹ O.C. 0696/79 (Alberta Health Facilities Review Committee Act), Alberta; O.C. 0605/80 (Alberta Health Facilities Review Committee Act), Alberta.
- ⁷² O.C. 0615/82 (Social Care Facilities Review Committee Act), Alberta; O.C. 1165/82 (Social Care Facilities Review Committee Act), Alberta; O.C. 0746/85 (Social Care Facilities Review Committee Act), Alberta; O.C. 0398/86 (Social Care Facilities Review Committee Act), Alberta.
- ⁷³ Lumley, ed., *Canadian Who's Who 2003*, p. 222.
- ⁷⁴ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004; Duncan Thorne, "New Speaker Leans to Sense of Fair Play," *Edmonton Journal*, 28 May 1986, p. B8.
- ⁷⁵ Thorne, "New Speaker Leans to Sense of Fair Play," p. B8.
- ⁷⁶ Calgary Exhibition & Stampede, *95th Annual Report* (Calgary: Calgary Exhibition & Stampede, 1980), p. 21.
- ⁷⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 21st Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XCIV, 12 June 1986, p. 2; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 22nd Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. XCVII, 1 June 1989, pp. 2–3.
- ⁷⁸ Thorne, "New Speaker Leans to Sense of Fair Play," p. B8.
- ⁷⁹ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004; Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report on Alberta Elections 1905–1982* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1983), pp. 10–18; Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report of the Chief Electoral Officer on the General Election of the Twenty-Third Legislative Assembly. Tuesday, June 15th, 1993* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1993), pp. 21–22.
- ⁸⁰ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ⁸¹ Ibid.
- ⁸² Ibid.
- ⁸³ Ibid.

⁸⁴ David John Carter, "Seven Years in the Speaker's Chair," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 17, no. 1 (Spring 1994): p. 16.

⁸⁵ *Ibid.* p. 17.

⁸⁶ Langhammer, "Focus [Interview with Dr. David Carter]," p. 2.

⁸⁷ *Ibid.*

⁸⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office Annual Report 1991* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 1992), p. 32; Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.

⁸⁹ *Members of the Legislative Assembly Pension Plan Amendment Act, 1993*, S.A. 1993, c. 5; Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Special Standing Committee on Members' Services, *Minutes of the Special Standing Committee on Members' Services Meeting*, 1992, 10 March 1992, pp. 61.92–64.92.

⁹⁰ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.

⁹¹ Carter, "Seven Years in the Speaker's Chair," p. 17.

⁹² Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Special Standing Committee on Members' Services, *Minutes of the Special Standing Committee on Members' Services Meeting*, 1990, p. 7; Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.

⁹³ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.

⁹⁴ David John Carter, "Death Walks the Halls—Riots, Fists, Fire and Murders: Legislature Security Threats," [Unpublished Manuscript], 28 July 1996, p. 6.

⁹⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Standing Committee on Privileges and Elections. Standing Orders and Printing, "Report in Response to Government Motion No. 9 in Relation to Matters Dealing With Order and Privileges of the Assembly," *Sessional Paper*, no. 343/87, 25 November 1987.

⁹⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 5.

⁹⁷ *R. v. Mercure*, [1988] 1 S.C.R. 234; *The North-West Territories Act*, R.S.C. 1886, c. 50, s. 110.

⁹⁸ *Languages Act*, S.A. 1988, c. L-7.5.

⁹⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *75th Anniversary of the Official Opening of the Legislature Building, Thursday September 3, 1987* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1987), pp. 1–7.

¹⁰⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 22nd Legislature, 2nd Session*, 9 April 1990, p. 620.

¹⁰¹ *Ibid.*, pp. 621–622.

¹⁰² *Ibid.*, p. 622.

¹⁰³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 22nd Legislature, 3rd Session*, 13 May 1991, p. 1165.

¹⁰⁴ *Ibid.*, 14 May 1991 p. 1212; Sir Thomas Erskine May, *Erskine May's Treatise on the Law, Privileges, Proceedings and Usage of Parliament*, 23rd ed., ed. W. R. McKay (London: LexisNexis UK, 2004), p. 446n4.

¹⁰⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 22nd Legislature, 3rd Session*, 20 June 1991, pp. 1852–1853.

¹⁰⁶ *Ibid.*, 21 June 1991, pp. 1902–1903.

¹⁰⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 22nd Legislature, 2nd Session*, 11 April 1990, p. 689.

¹⁰⁸ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.

¹⁰⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 22nd Legislature, 2nd Session*, 11 April 1990, p. 689.



¹¹⁰ Ibid., 11 April 1990, p. 690.

¹¹¹ Ibid.

¹¹² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Presentation of the Black Rod to the Legislative Assembly of Alberta by Alberta-Northwest Territories Command, Royal Canadian Legion. Tuesday, January 27, 1998* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1998), p. 2; Brian Hodgson, Interview by LAO Staff, 26 August 2003.

¹¹³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Presentation of the Black Rod*, p. 2.

¹¹⁴ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.

¹¹⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office 1990 Annual Report* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1991), p. 30; Idaho. House of Representatives, *Journal of the House of Representatives, 100th Legislature, 2nd Regular Session*, 22 February 1990, pp. 154–156; Idaho. State Senate, *Journal of the State Senate, 100th Legislature, 2nd Regular Session*, 22 February 1990, p. 141.

¹¹⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *1991 Annual Report*, p. 35; Washington. House of Representatives, *Journal of the House of Representatives, 52nd Legislature, Regular Session*, 27 February 1991, pp. 545–547; Washington. State Senate, *Senate Journal, 52nd Legislature, Regular Session*, 27 February 1991, pp. 449–451.

¹¹⁷ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004; “Hello There,” [Photo Caption], *Olympian* (Olympia, Washington), 28 February 1991, p. C3.

¹¹⁸ Carter, “Seven Years in the Speaker’s Chair,” p. 17.

¹¹⁹ Letter from Victor Mah, President, Calgary Chinese Cultural Centre and Calgary Chinatown Senior Housing Society, 3 February 2004.

¹²⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 22nd Legislature, 3rd Session*, vol. XCIX, 27 March 1991, p. 89; Brian Laghi and Roy Cook, “Speaker Orders Protesting Workers Arrested,” *Edmonton Journal*, 28 March 1991, p. A1.

¹²¹ Laghi and Cook, “Speaker Orders Protesting Workers Arrested,” p. A1.

¹²² Sheldon Alberts, “Legislature Language: It’s Just Too Unspeakable,” *Calgary Herald*, 5 February 1993, p. A1.

¹²³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 22nd Legislature, 4th Session*, 4 February 1993, p. 2094.

¹²⁴ Ibid., 4 February 1993, p. 2098.

¹²⁵ Ibid., 8 February 1993, p. 2152.

¹²⁶ *New Brunswick Broadcasting Co. v. Nova Scotia (Speaker of the House of Assembly)*, [1993] 1 S.C.R. 319.

¹²⁷ Carter, “Seven Years in the Speaker’s Chair,” p. 17.

¹²⁸ *New Brunswick Broadcasting Co. v. Nova Scotia (Speaker of the House of Assembly)*, [1993] 1 S.C.R. 319.

¹²⁹ Robert Reynolds, “Parliament and Democracy in the 21st Century: Parliamentary Privilege,” *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 25, no. 4 (Winter 2002–2003): p. 2.

¹³⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, [Announcement by David J. Carter not to seek re-election], 13 March 1993, [News Release].

¹³¹ *Legislative Assembly Act*, S.A. 1983, c. L-10.1, s. 16(4).

- ¹³² Pierre G. Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1989 ed. (Ottawa: Normandin, 1989), p. 607.
- ¹³³ Lumley, ed., *Canadian Who's Who 2003*, p. 222.
- ¹³⁴ Ibid.
- ¹³⁵ Ian Imrie, "Canadian Region of CPA: A Personal Memoir," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 21, no. 2 (Summer 1998): p. 4.
- ¹³⁶ "CPA Activities: The Canadian Scene: CPA Regional Conference in Alberta," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 12, no. 3 (Autumn 1989): p. 24.
- ¹³⁷ Gary Levy, "Canada Hosts 40th CPA Conference," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 17, no. 3 (Autumn 1994): p. 11; Carter, "Seven Years in the Speaker's Chair," p. 17.
- ¹³⁸ Carter, "Seven Years in the Speaker's Chair," p. 16.
- ¹³⁹ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ¹⁴⁰ Boyer, "A Celebrity Profile: The Hon. Dr. David J. Carter," p. 54.
- ¹⁴¹ Canadian Music Centre, *Listen Up*, [Internet], (Canadian Culture Online Program of Canadian Heritage and Canada Council of the Arts), accessed 18 February 2004, available from <http://www.musiccentre.ca/home.cfm>
- ¹⁴² David John Carter, *David J. Carter's Website*, [Internet], (Elkwater, AB: Merriman Webpages, 1998), accessed 23 December 2003, available from <http://www2.memlane.com/djcarter>
- ¹⁴³ E-mail from Ken Bracko, President, Calgary Canucks Junior "A" Hockey Booster Club, 3 June 2003; Mark Lowey, "City Ridings: Calgary Egmont [Results of 8 May 1986 Provincial Election]," *Calgary Herald*, 9 May 1986, p. C3.
- ¹⁴⁴ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ¹⁴⁵ Lowey, "City Ridings: Calgary Egmont [Results of 8 May 1986 Provincial Election]," p. C3.
- ¹⁴⁶ Ibid.
- ¹⁴⁷ Langhammer, "Focus [Interview with Dr. David Carter]," p. 1; Martin et al., eds., *Who's Who in Alberta, 1974 ed.*, p. 55.
- ¹⁴⁸ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ¹⁴⁹ Cathedral Church of the Redeemer, *Virtual Tour of the Cathedral*, [Internet], (Calgary: Cathedral Church of the Redeemer (Anglican), updated 9 October 2003), accessed December 29 2003, available from <http://www.nucleus.com/~cathedral/virtual.html>
- ¹⁵⁰ Edith Wagner, *Cemeteries Are Alive!*, [Internet], (Sacramento, California: Genealogy.com, 23 March 2000), accessed 29 December 2003, available from http://www.genealogy.com/66_reunion.html?Welcome=1072718958
- ¹⁵¹ David Bly, "Setting the Record Straight on Francis Dickens," *Calgary Herald*, 20 September 2002, p. B9.
- ¹⁵² Normandin, ed., *CPG 1989*, p. 607.
- ¹⁵³ Calgary Exhibition & Stampede, *1991 Annual Report* (Calgary: Calgary Exhibition & Stampede, 1991), p. 14.
- ¹⁵⁴ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.
- ¹⁵⁵ *Carter v. Alberta*, (2002) 317 A.R. 299, 222 D.L.R. (4th) 40, 9 Alta L.R. (4th) 18 (C.A.).



¹⁵⁶ *Carter v. Alberta*, (2003) 18 Alta. L.R. (4th) 7, [2004] 1 W.W.R. 585 (S.C.C.).

¹⁵⁷ Carter, Interview by LAO Staff, October 2003–February 2004.

¹⁵⁸ Carter, The Very Reverend David John Carter, [Curriculum Vitae], p. 2.

¹⁵⁹ *Who's Who in Alberta, 1978/79 ed.*, p. 76; E-mail from Stubbs, 5 June 2003; "St. John's to Honor Three," *Winnipeg Tribune*, 27 October 1976, p. 4.

¹⁶⁰ Tivy, "Poet Who Preaches Now Turning to Politics," p. E8.

¹⁶¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, [Announcement by Premier Don Getty Recommending David Carter for Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta], 27 May 1986, [News Release].

Fair, consistent and honourable



Schumacher 1993-1997



STANLEY STANFORD SCHUMACHER

Stanley Stanford Schumacher, the 10th Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, was the first Speaker to have been born in Alberta. Schumacher has the distinction of being the first Alberta Speaker to be elected through secret ballot. Some of the procedural issues that were raised at the time of his election were resolved in the revision of the *Standing Orders* in 1995. Schumacher is the only Speaker of Alberta and the North-West Territories to have had prior experience as a Member of Parliament—as part of the Progressive Conservative Opposition under Robert L. Stanfield (1967–1976) and C. Joseph ‘Joe’ Clark (1976–1979). Schumacher believed that this experience gave him a better understanding of the role of the Opposition in a parliamentary democracy.¹ Schumacher is the second* Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta to have served as Deputy Speaker (1989–1993). One important innovation under Speaker Schumacher was the introduction of formal orientation sessions for newly elected Members. As a Private Member, Schumacher served with Premier Donald R. Getty (1985–1992) and, as Speaker, with Premier Ralph P. Klein (1992–).

Family History

Stanley Stanford† Schumacher was born on June 12, 1933, in the Hanna Municipal Hospital, the closest hospital to his parents’ home in Sunnynook, Alberta.² ‘Stan’ is the eldest child and only son of Louis Peter ‘Louie’ Schumacher, a businessman, and Gladys Geraldine Knudson, a schoolteacher.³ Two years after Stan’s birth, twin daughters, Mary June and Mabel Jean, were born to the Schumachers.⁴ Schumacher is of the Anglican faith.⁵

Stan Schumacher’s family can be traced back to Luxembourg, where his great-great-grandfather John Schumacher was born.⁶ John and his family immigrated to Wisconsin⁷ in 1855.⁸ John’s descendants moved west to present-day North Dakota,⁹ where Louis Peter Schumacher, Stan’s father, was born in 1908.¹⁰ The family relocated to Alberta in about 1909, obtaining patents for homesteads east of Sunnynook, in central Alberta,¹¹ in 1912 and 1913.¹²

In 1925, Louie moved to the hamlet of Sunnynook, about 45 kilometres southeast of Hanna, where he worked at the grain elevator.¹³ In 1928, he took charge of the new Alberta Wheat Pool elevator at Scapa, north of Hanna.¹⁴ Louie married Gladys Knudson on July 20, 1932, and the couple returned to Sunnynook.¹⁵ In July 1933, when Stan was about three weeks old, Louie was transferred to Dorothy, Alberta, a hamlet southeast of Drumheller.¹⁶ Louie left the employ of the Alberta Wheat Pool in 1938 and started a trucking business.¹⁷ In 1946, the family moved to Drumheller, where Louie owned a farm machinery business until 1963. He homesteaded near

* Speaker Arthur J. Dixon served as Deputy Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta from 1955 to 1963. Speaker Archibald B. Gillis served as Deputy Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories from 1899 to 1902.

† Schumacher was named Stanley and Stanford after two of his father’s cousins who lived in the United States. Stanley Stanford Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 16 April 2002.



Valleyview, Alberta, in 1965.¹⁸ Louie Schumacher died in Valleyview, on June 16, 1978, at the age of 70,¹⁹ and is buried in the Masonic Section of the Drumheller Cemetery.²⁰

Gladys Geraldine Knudson was born in Ellendale, North Dakota, the youngest of the six children²¹ of Peter Christian Knudson, who had immigrated to North Dakota from Maribo County, Denmark, south of Copenhagen, and of Mary West,²² also of Scandinavian descent.²³ The Knudson family arrived in Alberta in 1909.²⁴ In 1910, a school district in the Chain Lakes area was named 'Knudson,' in all likelihood to honour this homesteading family, the only Knudsons in the area.²⁵ A school, built in 1912, was also named Knudson School.²⁶ Peter Knudson was one of the first three school trustees for the district.²⁷

Education

Stan Schumacher started his elementary school education in Dorothy in the fall of 1938.²⁸ When the family moved to Drumheller in June 1946, Stan had just turned 13. Although he "was the youngest pupil in Grade 9 in the Drumheller system," he found that he "was so far ahead of everybody" that he did not need to work hard and consequently "lost any and all study habits [that he] had."²⁹ Schumacher indicated that, as a result, he "had a great deal of difficulty in high school"³⁰ and was unable to attend the University of Alberta because he did not have his matriculation or French-language requirements.³¹ After leaving high school in June 1951, Schumacher was employed as a rod man for Canadian Gulf Oil, a small subsidiary of a large American company. Having decided to return to school, Schumacher enrolled at the University of British Columbia (UBC) in September 1952, where he completed a conjoint degree program in seven years, graduating in April 1959.³² In 1958, he received his Bachelor of Commerce and in 1959, his Bachelor of Laws.³³ While attending UBC, Schumacher became a member of the campus Conservative Club.³⁴

Military Career

Schumacher joined the Canadian Officers' Training Corps (COTC) in the fall of 1954 and served until 1958. He spent several summers in training at Camp Borden in Ontario. Looking back, he believes that joining the COTC "was the best thing [he] ever did" and that "it was just excellent training."³⁵ He was commissioned second lieutenant, Royal Canadian Armoured Corps, in 1957,³⁶ and in 1958, he served for about five months in Soest, Germany, with the Royal Canadian Dragoons.³⁷ From September 1958 until his graduation in 1959, Schumacher served with two armoured regiments, the British Columbia Regiment (Duke of Connaught's Own), and later, the King's Own Calgary Regiment (Royal Canadian Armoured Corps).³⁸ His military service ended in March of 1962.³⁹

Marriage and Family

Stan Schumacher met Virginia Mae Brodie of Calgary, Alberta, while they were both involved in the Young Progressive Conservative Club.⁴⁰ Virginia had worked as a secretary and economics research assistant in Calgary.⁴¹ She is the daughter of Dr. Ian Hamilton Brodie and Elana Louise Shearer, a registered nurse.⁴² Schumacher married Virginia Brodie on June 22, 1968, at St. Stephen's Anglican Church in Calgary. Due to an unexpected early election call, the 1968 federal



general election, in which Schumacher was a candidate, and the wedding, which had been planned for some time, took place within three days of each other.⁴³ The reception for 150 people, originally scheduled for the Calgary Golf and Country Club, had to be transferred to the Glencoe Club due to a disastrous fire that had occurred just prior to the wedding day.⁴⁴

The Schumachers have two children, David Brodie and Sandra Claire, who were born almost two years apart.⁴⁵

Early Career

When he graduated from UBC, Schumacher already knew that he wanted to enter politics, but he “couldn’t get a handle on B.C. politics,” so he returned to Calgary, choosing to article under Eldon M. Woolliams, QC, Member of Parliament for Bow River.⁴⁶ He became the constituency president for Woolliams, helping to raise funds and laying the groundwork for his own political career. “It was like articling for politics,” Schumacher later said.⁴⁷ One of Schumacher’s heroes was W. J. Cameron Kirby, known as ‘Cam,’ Member for Red Deer (1954–1959), leader of the provincial Progressive Conservative Party (1958–1959) and Justice of the Supreme Court of Alberta, Trial Division* (1960–1984).⁴⁸

In 1966, Schumacher joined the firm of Willard R. ‘Sandy’ Sandercock, QC, in Drumheller, and they formed the partnership of Sandercock and Schumacher. Although in poor health, the elderly Sandercock ‘continued to practice,’ but much of the workload was delegated to Schumacher.⁴⁹ Finally, in 1969, Sandercock had to retire due to declining health, and Schumacher became sole proprietor of the firm.⁵⁰ Schumacher’s law firm, a general practice firm typical of small towns, changed in name over the years as various partners came and went. This firm still exists in Drumheller as Schumacher, Gough and Pedersen. Schumacher was appointed Queen’s Counsel (QC) on December 31, 1981.⁵¹

Political Career

Schumacher was elected as the Progressive Conservative Member of Parliament for the Calgary-Palliser constituency in the federal general election of 1968.⁵² He was the first resident of Drumheller to be elected to Parliament.⁵³ While Stan was a Member of Parliament, the Schumacher family spent winters in Ottawa.⁵⁴ In the 1972 federal general election, Schumacher received “the biggest absolute majority in English Canada”⁵⁵ and was re-elected in 1974.⁵⁶ In the mid-1970s, Schumacher chaired the Alberta Progressive Conservative caucus and also served for a year or two as secretary of the national caucus.⁵⁷ In 1978, Schumacher faced pressure to withhold his name from nomination for the newly amalgamated constituency of Bow River in order to make the riding available for federal Progressive Conservative Leader Joe Clark, whose hometown of High River was now part of this constituency.⁵⁸ Schumacher, whose hometown of Drumheller was also part of the riding, resisted, and Clark eventually relented, running instead in the Yellowhead riding, west of Edmonton. Wishing to continue in his role as Member of Parliament, Schumacher chose to stand for the Progressive Conservative nomination in Bow

* In 1979, the Supreme Court of Alberta, Trial Division was renamed the Court of Queen’s Bench of Alberta.

River. Unsuccessful in his bid to win the nomination against long-time former provincial Social Credit Member Gordon E. Taylor, Schumacher ran as an Independent candidate. Defeated in the May 1979 election, Schumacher returned to private life.⁵⁹

Schumacher entered Alberta provincial politics on May 8, 1986, and was elected as the Progressive Conservative Member for the Drumheller constituency.⁶⁰ He was re-elected in the general election of March 20, 1989.⁶¹ Schumacher served as Deputy Speaker in the 22nd Legislature (1989–1993), and was elected for his third term as a Member of the Legislative Assembly on June 15, 1993.⁶²

As Speaker

Stanley Stanford Schumacher's election as Speaker took place on August 30, 1993 through nomination by Deputy Premier and Member for Barrhead-Westlock Kenneth R. Kowalski.* Schumacher was 60 years old when he was elected Speaker in the First Session of the 23rd Legislature. In the first contested election for the position of Speaker in Alberta history, he was successful against Elizabeth 'Bettie' J. Hewes, Liberal Member for Edmonton-Gold Bar, who was nominated through a motion by Leader of the Opposition Laurence Decore.⁶³

There was some degree of uncertainty in the Legislative Assembly on the occasion of Schumacher's election. Although beginning in November of 1992 the *Select Special Committee on Parliamentary Reform* had discussed in some detail all of the procedural issues surrounding the election of a Speaker, referring to the practice in other jurisdictions in the process,⁶⁴ by the time of Schumacher's election there were as yet no changes to the *Standing Orders*. Opposition Members raised concerns about the procedures, arguing that the process for the election of a Speaker needed to be established in the *Standing Orders*. They asked that the Member with the longest period of service preside over the election procedures.[†] In addition, they wanted all Members, with the exception of Ministers and party leaders, to be considered nominees unless they expressly wished not to stand. They argued that this measure would eliminate the possibility of special treatment for those who nominated successful candidates, or of reprisals for those whose nominees were unsuccessful. Also, this process would have the virtue of following the election process undertaken in the House of Commons of Canada. Debate continued until the Assembly ultimately followed the precedent set by the previous election of the Deputy Chair of Committees and, after the nominations, the Speaker was elected by secret ballot.⁶⁵

Despite some dissatisfaction with the election process, Members of the Legislative Assembly were in agreement about Schumacher's suitability for the role of Speaker. According to a newspaper report, many Liberals described him as 'fair, consistent and honorable.'⁶⁶ Schumacher believes that his prior experience as a federal Member of Parliament and as Deputy Speaker in Alberta was a considerable asset upon assuming the Chair, as through this experience he had garnered a comprehensive knowledge of parliamentary procedure, of the role of the Opposition and of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.⁶⁷

* Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta (1997–).

† Ultimately, the Clerk, Dr. W. J. David McNeil, presided. Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 23rd Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. CI, 30 August 1993, pp. 2–3.



A notable aspect of Schumacher's term as Speaker was that the Legislative Assembly over which he presided had the largest number of Opposition Members in Alberta's history.⁶⁸ Premier Ralph P. Klein led 51 Progressive Conservatives facing Laurence Decore's 32 Liberals. This Liberal Opposition would come to be known informally as the 'Raucous Caucus' due to its highly vocal demonstrations during debates.⁶⁹ An example of one such display occurred in April 1995, when the issue of privatized health care arose during Question Period. The Session became so unruly that "Speaker Stan Schumacher adjourned the proceedings for four minutes after some Liberals started singing the American anthem."⁷⁰



From left to right: Speakers S.S. Schumacher, D.J. Carter, G.J. Amerongen and A.J. Dixon at the installation of Lieutenant Governor H.A. Olson (1996).

Schumacher never named* a Member during his tenure as Speaker. Instead, during particularly volatile Sessions, he would employ short adjournments for the purpose of restoring order. Schumacher would adjourn Question Period, but keep the clock running to encourage Members to hasten their compliance with the rules of the Assembly.⁷¹ Schumacher once commented that the need to recess would result in the Members "effectively deny[ing] themselves the right to ask questions. [That] would be an absolute disgrace for the conduct of public business in this province."⁷²

In 1993, 'sweeping amendments'⁷³ were made to the *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta*.⁷⁴ Government and opposition caucus members agreed to a range of revisions, and on September 9, 1993, "the Assembly approved a whole new set of Standing Orders. ... The Assembly also established a Parliamentary Reform Committee to look at even further changes."⁷⁵ These reforms were aimed at increasing the influence of Private Members through more open debate and additional opportunities for free votes. From this point forward, there was an increased probability that Private Members' Public Bills would be passed.[†] Friday sittings were eliminated for the purpose of permitting Members to spend one day per week in their constituency offices. Sitting hours were consequently extended on the other four days, increasing the total sitting time by one hour per week. Schumacher saw these reforms as a "quantum leap" towards being "more responsive to voters' concerns."⁷⁶ In order to ensure that his own constituency's issues were addressed, he frequently brought concerns to the attention of the Minister or to senior staff of the department in question.⁷⁷

On November 9, 1993, Schumacher presided over the longest sitting day in Alberta Legislative Assembly history to that point.[‡] The Assembly sat from 1:30 p.m. to 5:30 p.m. (four hours), had

* A disciplinary measure used at the discretion of the Speaker. For more information, see the Glossary.

† As a result, Alberta is one of the few jurisdictions in Canada where Private Members' Public Bills stand a good chance of being passed.

‡ The Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski, Speaker (1997–), presided over the longest sitting day on May 28–29, 2001, which lasted 25 hours and 18 minutes.

a two-hour-and-30 minute break, and then sat again from 8 p.m. until 4:11 p.m. the next day (20 hours and 11 minutes), for a total of 24 hours and 11 minutes.⁷⁸ The Legislative Assembly passed 12 bills during this marathon Session.

For Schumacher, the highlight of his tenure as Speaker was the 1994 Commonwealth Parliamentary Association (CPA) conference held in Banff, Alberta.⁷⁹ As a member of the Executive Committee of the CPA and conference co-host, Schumacher and his staff worked with the staff from the Parliament of Canada to plan and hold this conference, attended by 500 parliamentary officials from 60 countries.⁸⁰ Schumacher was presented with a 1905 gold sovereign by the British parliamentary delegation at the conference. Eventually, this coin would form the end piece of the ceremonial Black Rod,* which was constructed from a piece of ebony donated by the Parliament of Sri Lanka.⁸¹

Schumacher has indicated that the most challenging times in his chairing of the proceedings of the Legislative Assembly came during debate on the Multi-Corp issue.⁸² In the fall of 1995, questions were raised in the Assembly about the purchase of shares by Premier Klein's wife, Colleen, in a Calgary software company. The Multi-Corp issue "dominated dozens of question periods"⁸³ in the spring of 1996, as Opposition House Leader and Liberal Member for Calgary-North West Frank Bruseker raised the topic on a number of occasions, and as other Members of the Opposition joined in to challenge the Government. Schumacher was required to ensure that the procedural rules of the Legislative Assembly were being followed.⁸⁴ The matter culminated in two investigations and reports, by Ethics Commissioner Robert C. Clark, which exonerated Premier Klein.⁸⁵

In December 1995, Schumacher arranged to fly the Union Flag (the Union Jack†) from the roof of the Alberta Legislature Building. It had been more than 20 years since the Union Jack was flown at the Legislature. Schumacher said, "By law, Canada has two flags ... and I wanted to get them both up there."⁸⁶

In 1996, Schumacher found a *prima facie* case of privilege concerning a letter written by an Edmonton lawyer to the Leader of the Opposition D. Grant Mitchell. On March 19, 1996, Opposition House Leader Frank Bruseker raised a question of privilege regarding the contents of the letter.⁸⁷ The author of the letter threatened legal action if Mitchell raised certain issues in the Assembly regarding the Hotel de Health.⁸⁸ On March 21, Schumacher commented that "the Chair [had] been unable to locate any previous Speaker's ruling in Alberta on this matter" and ruled that there was "technically a *prima facie* question of privilege."⁸⁹ On March 25, the

* The Black Rod was introduced in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta in 1998. The Black Rod is a ceremonial baton that the Sergeant-at-Arms uses when accompanying the Lieutenant Governor on such occasions as the Speech from the Throne, or when the Lieutenant Governor grants Royal Assent.

† The Union Jack is the national flag of the United Kingdom and symbol of Canada's allegiance to the Crown.

‡ In the mid-1990s, a group of Alberta physicians proposed running part of a hospital as a for-profit clinic through a private company called Hotel de Health. "Private Clinic Called Threat To Medicare," *Edmonton Journal*, 15 June 1995, p. A1.



Assembly moved that if an apology were received from the lawyer on behalf of his client, then the matter would not be referred to the *Standing Committee on Privileges and Elections, Standing Orders and Printing*.⁹⁰ The lawyer sent a letter to Schumacher apologizing to the Legislative Assembly, thereby ending the incident.⁹¹

As Speaker, Schumacher served on several committees. In addition to chairing the *Special Standing Committee on Members' Services*, he was an ex-officio member of the *Select Special Committee on Parliamentary Reform* from September 1993 to February 1994. In 1995, Schumacher was elected as the Canadian Regional representative to the Executive Committee of the CPA.⁹²

In 1996, electoral boundary redistribution merged Schumacher's Drumheller constituency with the Chinook constituency represented by Shirley McClellan, Minister of Health. On October 5, 1996, Stanley S. Schumacher announced that he would not seek the nomination for the newly formed electoral district of Drumheller-Chinook,⁹³ ending his 22 years of federal and provincial service as an elected Member.

One of Schumacher's last duties, prior to the election of a new Speaker on April 14, 1997, was the guiding of 52 Members, 26 of whom were new, through a three-hour orientation session, "including procedures and traditions in the assembly. ... [It was] the first of its kind given by the speaker."⁹⁴ The purpose of the orientation for Members was to "let them know, really, how the system works and what individual MLAs could do if they wanted to."⁹⁵ One message that Schumacher particularly wanted to convey to new Members was the importance of their role as representatives of their constituents.⁹⁶

Schumacher remarked that "when [he] was Speaker, [he] was busier than at any other time in [his] political life."⁹⁷ Despite this, he recalled that he had always preferred the role of Speaker to the possibility of a Cabinet position and firmly believes that "[i]t was the best job that [he had] ever had."⁹⁸ He credits the Table Officers who worked with him for ensuring that proceedings in the Assembly went smoothly, and consequently for making his job easier.⁹⁹

Later Career

After he retired from politics, Schumacher returned to Drumheller to practice law at the firm of Schumacher, Gough and Pedersen.¹⁰⁰ Since October 1998, Schumacher has served as a member of the Surface Rights Board and the Land Compensation Board.¹⁰¹ He has served as Chair of both of these Boards since September 1, 2001.¹⁰²

Community Activities and Personal Interests

Schumacher continues to serve the people of Alberta. He has been a member of the: Regional Advisory Committee of the Big Country Educational Consortium, 1980–1985; Calgary Diocese Executive Committee of the Anglican Church, 1984–1989; Drumheller Chamber of Commerce; Kinsmen Club; Grand Lodge of Alberta, Ancient Free and Accepted Masons; Ranchmen's Club; and was past potentate of the Al Azhar Shrine Temple.¹⁰³ Schumacher is a director of the

Conservative Party of Canada Crowfoot Electoral District Association, representing Drumheller (Urban).¹⁰⁴ Schumacher also serves as president of the Sir Winston Churchill Society of Edmonton.¹⁰⁵

Honours and Awards

Schumacher is the honorary patron of Action on Smoking and Health (ASH).¹⁰⁶ While serving as a Member of the Legislative Assembly, Schumacher “sponsored several private member’s bills* to restrict tobacco sales and marketing in Alberta.”¹⁰⁷ In 2000, he was elected to the Board of Directors of the Alberta Tobacco Reduction Alliance.¹⁰⁸ Schumacher is a representative of the Capital Health Authority and serves as honorary patron for this region on the Alberta Provincial Tobacco Reduction Advisory Group.¹⁰⁹ In 1980, he was awarded an Honorary Life Membership in the Monarchist League of Canada.¹¹⁰ In 2002, Schumacher received a “Free Dominion Principled Conservative Lifetime Achievement Award” from the Free Dominion, a “Canadian conservative political news forum.”¹¹¹

Reflections and Tributes

Reflecting on his time as Speaker, Schumacher was quick to acknowledge the support that he had received from the staff of the Legislative Assembly Office (LAO), and the importance of this support to achieving his goal of having “the business of the Assembly conducted in as efficient and productive a way as possible.”¹¹² He noted, “[M]y greatest challenge was to try to achieve the level of decorum among the MLAs that I felt was appropriate for the Assembly.”¹¹³ At the end of the 23rd Legislature, Schumacher declared with a strong sense of pride that “during this Legislature the government achieved its agenda with the least fuss and feathers possible.”¹¹⁴ He expressed his desire to continue his association with the Legislative Assembly, and indicated that it was with a sense of sadness that he would be leaving.¹¹⁵ At the time of Schumacher’s retirement, Frank Work, Parliamentary Counsel, paid tribute to Schumacher in verse, a portion of which reads:

Heckling to the right of him,
Jeering to the left of him,
With cameras rolling,
Volleyed and thundered.
 He is patience personified,
 He would let them say ‘He lied’,
 He would fly the Union Jack,
 He might send the Charter back,
But he would preside with grace and tact,
Would Speaker Schumacher.¹¹⁶

* Examples include: Bill 259, *Tobacco Control Act, 1990*; Bill 214, *Tobacco Control Act, 1991*; and Bill 207, *Tobacco Control Act, 1992*.



Publications

"Unpopular Forum: Revising the Standing Orders to Reform Alberta's Legislature," *The Parliamentarian: Journal of the Parliaments of the Commonwealth* vol. 75, no. 2 (April 1994): pp. 105–107.

Notes

¹ Stanley Stanford Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 27 January 2004.

² Louis Schumacher, "The Schumacher Story," in *Roads to Rose Lynn: A History of the Rose Lynn, Halladay, Sheerness, Stanmore, Scotfield, Richdale and Berry Creek Areas*, ed. Agnes Gordon (Hanna, AB: Rose Lynn Book Club, 1981), p. 536; Stanley Stanford Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 16 April 2002.

³ Kathryn O'Handley, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1995 ed. (Toronto: Gale Canada, 1995), p. 576; Gladys Schumacher, "The L. P. Schumacher Family," in *The Grass Roots of Dorothy 1895–1970*, 2nd ed., ed. Hazel B. Roen (Calgary: Northwest Printing & Lithographing, 1972), p. 175.

⁴ Schumacher, "The L. P. Schumacher Family," p. 175.

⁵ Ernest G. Mardon, *Who's Who In Federal Politics from Alberta* (Lethbridge, AB: University of Lethbridge, 1972), p. 58.

⁶ Sarah J. Adams, *Descendents of Matthias Schumacher*, [Genealogy Chart], GEDCOM File produced in Family Tree Maker, Fargo, North Dakota, 2003, p. 1.

⁷ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 16 April 2002; United States. Census Office, Peter Suennen household record, 1860 U.S. Census, Wisconsin, Ozaukee, Fredonia, Reel no. M653-1425, p. 7, USGenWeb Census Project, [Transcription], [Internet], accessed 24 July 2003, available from <http://www.us-census.org/pub/ftp/wi/ozaukee/1860/pg00697.txt>

⁸ United States. Census Office, John Schumacher record, 1900 U.S. Census, Minnesota, Clay County, Moorhead City, enumeration district no. 313, supervisor's district 7, sheet 1, ward 1, Population schedule, p. 141, Ancestry.com, [Transcription], [Internet Subscription Service], MyFamily.com, Inc, Provo, Utah, accessed 23 July 2003, available from <http://www.ancestry.com>

⁹ United States. Census Office, Louis Schumacher record, 1885 Dakota Territory Census, Traill County, enumeration district 13-006, microfilm HA631 1885.D34, 1885 Dakota Territory Census Database, [Transcription], [Internet], North Dakota State University Libraries, Institute for Regional Studies, Fargo, North Dakota, accessed 5 January 2003, available from <http://www.lib.ndsu.nodak.edu/ndirs/databases/census.php>

¹⁰ "Schumacher [Louis Peter]," [Obituary], *Drumheller Mail*, 21 June 1978, p. 12.

¹¹ Canada. Dominions Lands Office, Application for Entry for a Homestead, a Pre-emption or a Purchased Homestead, no. 25231, by Matthias Schumacher, for NW 23 27 12 W4, 11 May 1909, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, microfilm no. 2108, file no. 1879009.

¹² Canada. Dept. of the Interior, [Land Grant to Matthias Schumacher, NW 23 27 12 W4], 31 October 1912, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, microfilm no. 2108, file no. 1879009; Canada. Dept. of the Interior, Application for Entry for a Homestead, a Pre-emption or a Purchased Homestead, no. 57888 and 27937, by Ida Schumacher, for SE 23 27 12 W4, 1913, Provincial Archives of Alberta, Edmonton, microfilm no. 2132, file no. 1927719.

¹³ Louis Schumacher, "Louis Schumacher," in *Hanna North: [A Rural History, 1908–1978]*, ed. Jean James (Hanna, AB: Hanna North Book Club, 1978), p. 554.

- ¹⁴ Edna Weich, "Scapa," in *Hanna North: [A Rural History, 1908–1978]*, ed. Jean James (Hanna, AB: Hanna North Book Club, 1978), p. 543; Schumacher, "Louis Schumacher," p. 554.
- ¹⁵ Austin Ludlow and Ida Grosse, "The Chain Lakes District," in *Hanna North: [A Rural History, 1908–1978]*, ed. Jean James (Hanna, AB: Hanna North Book Club, 1978), p. 536.
- ¹⁶ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 16 April 2002; Schumacher, "The L. P. Schumacher Family," p. 174.
- ¹⁷ Schumacher, "Roads to Rose Lynn," p. 536.
- ¹⁸ Ibid.
- ¹⁹ Virginia Schumacher, "The Schumacher Family," [Genealogy Chart], 2003, [Personal Collection of Virginia Schumacher], Drumheller, AB.
- ²⁰ "Schumacher [Louis Peter]," p. 12.
- ²¹ "Schumacher, Gladys Geraldine," [Obituary], *Drumheller Mail*, 3 December 2003, p. B13.
- ²² Sarah J. Adams, *Matthias Schumacher* WI>ND>SK>AB, Ancestry.com, [Message Board Posting, 29 September 2002], [Internet], (Provo, Utah: MyFamily.com), accessed 20 June 2003, available from <http://boards.ancestry.com>
- ²³ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 16 April 2002.
- ²⁴ "Schumacher, Gladys Geraldine," p. B13.
- ²⁵ Dale Holtslander, *School Districts of Alberta: A Listing of All Public School Districts Organized in the Province of Alberta*, rev. ed. (Edmonton: Alberta. Dept. of Culture. Provincial Archives, 1979).
- ²⁶ Ludlow and Grosse, "The Chain Lakes District," p. 432.
- ²⁷ Ibid.
- ²⁸ Schumacher, "The L. P. Schumacher Family," p. 175.
- ²⁹ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 16 April 2002.
- ³⁰ Ibid.
- ³¹ Ibid.
- ³² Ibid.
- ³³ Elizabeth Lumley, ed., *Canadian Who's Who 1999*, vol. XXXIV (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1999), p. 1123.
- ³⁴ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 16 April 2002.
- ³⁵ Ibid.
- ³⁶ Lorne V. Silverstein, ed., *Alberta Business Who's Who and Directory 1992*, 4th ed. (Edmonton: Alberta Business Research, 1992), p. 345.
- ³⁷ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 27 January 2004.
- ³⁸ Stanley S. Schumacher, QC: MLA Drumheller, 1993, Biography; E-mail from Brian Hodgson, Sergeant-at-Arms, Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Edmonton, AB, 10 December 2003.
- ³⁹ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 27 January 2004.
- ⁴⁰ "Schumacher Marries in Style," *Calgary Albertan*, 24 June 1968, p. 16.



- ⁴¹ Judi Freeman, "Successful Candidate's Wife Has 2 New, Important Roles," *Calgary Herald*, 26 June 1968, p. 69.
- ⁴² "Brodie [Elana Louise]," [Obituary], *Calgary Herald*, 30 October 1993, p. D22.
- ⁴³ "Schumacher Marries in Style," p. 16.
- ⁴⁴ Ibid.
- ⁴⁵ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 16 April 2002.
- ⁴⁶ Ibid.; Pierre G. Normandin, ed., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1960 ed. (Ottawa: Publication Office, 1960), p. 288.
- ⁴⁷ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 16 April 2002.
- ⁴⁸ Louis A. Knafla, Richard Klumpenhouwer, and Legal Archives Society of Alberta, *Lords of the Western Bench: A Biographical History of the Supreme and District Courts of Alberta, 1876–1990* (Calgary: Legal Archives Society of Alberta, 1997), p. 82; Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 27 January 2004.
- ⁴⁹ Mary Lou Richardson, "Willard R. (Sandy) Sandercock," in *The Hills of Home: Drumheller Valley*, 2nd ed., ed. Drumheller Valley History Association (Drumheller, AB: Drumheller Valley History Association, 1974), p. 357.
- ⁵⁰ Ibid.
- ⁵¹ *Alberta Gazette*, vol. 78, no. 3, 15 February 1982, p. 491; "Appointed Queen's Council," *Drumheller Mail*, 13 January 1982.
- ⁵² Canada. Parliament. Library. Information and Technical Services Branch, *History of the Federal Electoral Ridings, 1867–1992*, vol. 1—British Columbia, Alberta (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, 1993), AB Palliser (1966–1976), p. 3.
- ⁵³ "Schumacher Tops Poll in Palliser," *Drumheller Mail*, 26 June 1968, p. 1.
- ⁵⁴ Schumacher, "The L. P. Schumacher Family," p. 175.
- ⁵⁵ Martin O'Malley, "The Tory Monarchist from Palliser: Sweet Campaign of a Western Winner," *Globe and Mail* (Toronto), 29 May 1974, p. 8; Canada. Parliament. Library. Information and Documentation Branch, *History of the Federal Electoral Ridings since 1867*. [Internet], (Ottawa: Library of Parliament), accessed 5 January 2004, available from http://www.parl.gc.ca/information/about/process/house/hfer/hfer.asp?Language=E&Search=G&Source=SenatorsMembers_house
- ⁵⁶ Canada. Parliament. Library. Information and Technical Services Branch, *History of the Federal Electoral Ridings, 1867–1992*, AB Palliser (1966–1976), p. 3.
- ⁵⁷ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 16 April 2002; Personal communication with Stanley Stanford Schumacher, 3 March 2004.
- ⁵⁸ "The Fall of Bad Boy Stan: Here's What Happens If You Cross Joe C.," *Saint John's Edmonton Report* vol. 6, no. 26 (1 June 1979): p. 22.
- ⁵⁹ Ibid.
- ⁶⁰ Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *The Report of the Chief Electoral Officer on the General Election of the Twenty-First Legislative Assembly Thursday, May 8th, 1986* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1986), p. B5.
- ⁶¹ Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report of the Chief Electoral Officer on the General Election of the Twenty-Second Legislative Assembly. Monday, March 20th, 1989* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1989), p. B4.

- ⁶² Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report of the Chief Electoral Officer on the General Election of the Twenty-Third Legislative Assembly. Tuesday, June 15th, 1993* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1993), p. 15.
- ⁶³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 23rd Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. CI, 30 August 1993, pp. 2–3.
- ⁶⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly. Special Select Committee on Parliamentary Reform Meeting, *Minutes of the Special Select Committee on Parliamentary Reform Meeting*, 17 November 1992, p. 32.
- ⁶⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 23rd Legislature, 1st Session*, 30 August 1993, p. 3.
- ⁶⁶ Corinna Schuler, “Schumacher Ready for Speaker’s Job,” *Edmonton Journal*, 31 August 1993, p. A1.
- ⁶⁷ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 27 January 2004.
- ⁶⁸ Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report on Alberta Elections 1905–1982* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1983), pp. 10–18; Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *Report of the Chief Electoral Officer on the General Election of the Twenty-Third Legislative Assembly. Tuesday, June 15th, 1993*, pp. 21–22.
- ⁶⁹ Joan Crockatt, “Speaker Calls for Recess to Quell Unruly Politicians: Question Period a ‘Raucous Caucus’ over Schools, Previous Adjournments,” *Edmonton Journal*, 15 February 1994, p. A6; Helen Plischke, “Speaker Advises New MLAs to Shun Liberals’ ‘Raucous Caucus’ Tactics,” *Edmonton Journal*, 18 March 1997, p. A5; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 23rd Legislature, 2nd Session*, 9 May 1994, p. 1811.
- ⁷⁰ “Health Care Continues to Dominate Alberta Politics,” *Canadian Press News Wire* (Toronto), 6 April 1995; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 23rd Legislature, 3rd Session*, 6 April 1995, p. 1093.
- ⁷¹ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 27 January 2004.
- ⁷² Crockatt, “Speaker Calls for Recess to Quell Unruly Politicians,” p. A6.
- ⁷³ Stan Schumacher, “Unpopular Forum: Revising the Standing Orders to Reform Alberta’s Legislature,” *The Parliamentarian: Journal of the Parliaments of the Commonwealth* vol. 75, no. 2 (April 1994): p. 105.
- ⁷⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective September 13, 1993* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1993).
- ⁷⁵ Schumacher, “Unpopular Forum: Revising the Standing Orders to Reform Alberta’s Legislature,” p. 105.
- ⁷⁶ *Ibid.* p. 107.
- ⁷⁷ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 27 January 2004.
- ⁷⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 23rd Legislature, 1st Session*, 9 November 1993, pp. 1337–1490.
- ⁷⁹ Gary Garrison, “Farewell to the Speakership: A Conversation with Speaker Stan Schumacher,” *Under the Dome: A Newsletter Prepared By and For the Staff of the Legislative Assembly Office* vol. 10, no. 1 (February 1997): p. 4.
- ⁸⁰ Jeff Adams, “Coin to Brighten Black Rod,” *Calgary Herald*, 11 October 1994, p. B3; Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office 1994 Annual Report* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 1995), p. 31.
- ⁸¹ Adams, “Coin to Brighten Black Rod,” p. B3.
- ⁸² Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 27 January 2004.

⁸³ "For Klein and Clark, The Last Multi-Corp Report Means Vindication," *Calgary Herald*, 20 December 1996, p. A21.

⁸⁴ For example, Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 23rd Legislature, 4th Session*, 31 October 1995, pp. 2248–2249.

⁸⁵ Alberta. Office of the Ethics Commissioner, *Report of Investigation into Allegations Relating to the Hon. Ralph Klein, Premier: November 10, 1995* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1995), p. 16; Alberta. Office of the Ethics Commissioner, *Report to the Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the Investigation by the Ethics Commissioner into Allegations Involving the Honourable the Premier*, December 19, 1996 (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1996), pp. 14–18.

⁸⁶ Colby Cosh, "New Life for the Old Flag: Alberta's Legislature Flies the Union Jack Anew After 20 Years," *Alberta Report* vol. 23, no. 5 (15 January 1996): p. 9.

⁸⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 23rd Legislature, 4th Session*, 19 March 1996, p. 662.

⁸⁸ Robert Reynolds, "Threatening a Member: Recent Cases of Privilege From Alberta," [Paper presented at the Association of Parliamentary Counsel in Canada], 21–25 August 1996, Victoria, p. 2.

⁸⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 23rd Legislature, 4th Session*, 21 March 1996, p. 743.

⁹⁰ *Ibid.*, 25 March 1996, pp. 770–771.

⁹¹ *Ibid.*, 28 March 1996, p. 911.

⁹² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, [Stanley S. Schumacher elected Canadian Regional Representative to the Executive Committee of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association], 13 October 1995, [News Release].

⁹³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, [Announcement by Stanley S. Schumacher not to seek the Progressive Conservative nomination for Drumheller-Chinook], 5 October 1996, [News Release].

⁹⁴ Plischke, "Speaker Advises New MLAs to Shun Liberals' 'Raucous Caucus' Tactics," p. A5; Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office 1997 Annual Report & 1997 Annual Report of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association, Alberta Branch* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 1998), p. 1.

⁹⁵ Schumacher, Interview by LAO Staff, 27 January 2004.

⁹⁶ *Ibid.*

⁹⁷ *Ibid.*

⁹⁸ *Ibid.*

⁹⁹ *Ibid.*

¹⁰⁰ Judy Antoniadis, ed., *Canadian Law List 2003* (Agincourt, ON: Canada Law Book, 2003), p. G45.

¹⁰¹ O.C. 443/98 (Surface Rights Act; Expropriation Act), Alberta; O.C. 332/2001 (Surface Rights Act; Expropriation Act), Alberta; O.C. 364/2003 (Expropriation Act), Alberta; O.C. 365/2003 (Surface Rights Act), Alberta.

¹⁰² O.C. 332/2001 (Surface Rights Act; Expropriation Act), Alberta.

¹⁰³ Silverstein, ed., *Alberta Business Who's Who and Directory 1992*, p. 345.

¹⁰⁴ *Conservative Party of Canada, Crowfoot Electoral District Association: Directors*, [Internet], (Castor, AB: 2002), accessed 3 May 2004, available from <http://www.crowfoot.ca/directors>

¹⁰⁵ *ChurchillSociety.com: About Us*, [Internet], accessed 13 February 2004, available from <http://www.churchillsociety.com/AboutUs-ns4.html>; E-mail from Robert Dunn, Edmonton, 7 August 2004.

¹⁰⁶ "ASH Nominates Former Alberta Speaker to the ATRA Board," *ash.ca: Action on Smoking & Health Newsletter*, July–August 2000, p. 3, [Internet], accessed 1 June 2004, available from <http://www.ash.ca/Newsletters/NewsletterJulAug2000.pdf>

¹⁰⁷ Ibid.

¹⁰⁸ Ibid.

¹⁰⁹ *New Advisory Group to Guide Alberta Tobacco Reduction Strategy*, [News Release], [Internet], (Edmonton: Alberta Alcohol and Drug Abuse Commission (AADAC), 25 April 2002), accessed 6 January 2004, available from http://corp.aadac.com/whoweare/PressReleases/PDF/2002/nr_provadis-final.pdf

¹¹⁰ Monarchist League of Canada, *Canadian Monarchist News: League Honours*, [Internet], (Toronto, updated 18 January 1999), accessed 6 January 2004, available from <http://www.monarchist.ca/cmn/honours.htm>

¹¹¹ Mr. Connie Wilkins, [*Pic 24*], *Free Dominion: The Voice of Principled Conservatism*, [Message Board Posting, 6 April 2002], [Internet], accessed 6 January 2004, available from <http://www.freedominion.ca/phpBB2/viewtopic.php?t=6261>

¹¹² Garrison, "Farewell to the Speakership: A Conversation with Speaker Stan Schumacher," p. 3.

¹¹³ Ibid.

¹¹⁴ Ibid.

¹¹⁵ Ibid., p. 4.

¹¹⁶ Frank Work, *The Procession of Speaker Schumacher*, 3 April 1997, Poem.



Meticulously fair, parliamentary precise



Kowalski 1997-



THE HON. KENNETH REGINALD KOWALSKI

Kenneth Reginald Kowalski is the 11th Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and the longest-serving Member of all of those serving in the 26th Legislature.* Also, of current Speakers in Canada, he is the longest-serving (eight years) and has the longest continuous service as a Member (25 years). Kowalski's prominent political career has spanned the terms of three Alberta Premiers: E. Peter Lougheed (1971–1985), Donald R. Getty (1985–1992), and Ralph P. Klein (1992–). As Speaker, he has served with Premier Klein. Kowalski is the first Speaker in Alberta whose term was preceded by service as a Cabinet Minister. He is also the first Speaker to represent a constituency north of Edmonton. As of the beginning of the 26th Legislature, Kowalski has had eight election victories as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, the greatest number of any Alberta Speaker to date.

Family History

Kenneth 'Ken' Kowalski was born on September 27, 1945 in Bonnyville, Alberta.¹ He is the eldest of the six children^{†2} born to Paul Kowalski, a Bonnyville businessman, and Mary Chachula, a homemaker.³ Kowalski is a Roman Catholic.⁴

Ken Kowalski's grandfather Peter Kowalski was born in 1888⁵ in Ternopil's'ka Oblast, near Ternopil in what is now Ukraine.⁶ He immigrated to Canada at the turn of the century "primarily because there was no opportunity for him in Eastern Europe."⁷ Speaking of his own ambition from an early age to become a politician, Ken Kowalski once said, "My grandfather and my father's message always was that we are no less citizens than anyone else is, even though our own name may be an ethnic name. This is the country of opportunity, so go for it."⁸

When Peter Kowalski and his son Paul arrived in Bonnyville in 1929, they were among the first immigrants from Eastern Europe, and among the first non-Francophones, to settle there.⁹ Peter found employment in nearby lumber camps and sawmills. With the lumber obtained over a five-year period, he was able "to build a store, living quarters, and a small livery barn."¹⁰ Peter operated his own general store in Bonnyville from 1935 until 1950, when it was sold.¹¹

Due to the nature of Peter Kowalski's work, his son Paul learned to be self-sufficient at a young age. He worked hard at various jobs in the late 1930s, sometimes earning as little as 50 cents a day for cutting and hauling wood.¹²

In 1942, Paul married Marjanna¹³ 'Mary' Chachula at LaCorey, Alberta.¹⁴ After his marriage, Paul ran his father's store for five years, worked as a partsman in a garage, and then became the owner/operator of a school bus. In 1950, he opened 'Paul's Men's Wear,' a successful business on

* Information is current to May 31, 2005.

† Ken, Wayne, Linda, Paula, Connie and Richard.



the main street of Bonnyville, which he operated for over 30 years.¹⁵ In November 1967, Paul and Mary Kowalski were honoured at a reception and dance on the occasion of their 25th wedding anniversary, a celebration that took place only two days before the death of Paul's father.¹⁶

Ken Kowalski's maternal grandparents were Stanislaw 'Stanley' Chachula and Marjanna 'Mary' Niedospal of the Iron River-LaCorey area of Alberta.¹⁷ The Chachula family emigrated from Poland in 1930 and settled on the north side of the Beaver River in the Merton School District.¹⁸

Education

After Ken Kowalski reached school age in the early 1950s, he attended two Catholic schools in Bonnyville: Notre Dame Elementary School and École Notre Dame High School.¹⁹ As often happens, he and his classmates were asked by their junior high teacher what they wanted to be when they grew up. Ken's response was that he would like "to be an elected person," using John Diefenbaker as an illustration.²⁰ As a young boy "without television," Ken found that "listening to the House of Commons reports on radio was enthralling."²¹ Ken became involved in student politics in high school, running unsuccessfully for student president in Grade 10, but achieving his goal on his second attempt when he was in Grade 11.²² Since that time, he has never lost an election.²³

After graduating from high school in 1963, Kowalski enrolled at the University of Alberta and took courses in European, American and East Asian history.²⁴ He earned a Bachelor of Arts degree in 1966.²⁵ At age 21, he decided he wanted to teach, so he continued his studies at the University of Alberta, earning a diploma in Education in 1969.²⁶ In 1970, Kowalski completed a Master of Arts degree in Chinese History.²⁷ He found that his studies were particularly interesting and relevant at this time, since "Canada had just recognized Red China, and there was [a] great spirit of internationalism that went with it."²⁸ Kowalski's MA thesis is entitled, "The West China Mission of the Methodist Church of Canada, Szechwan, China, 1891–1911."²⁹

Marriage and Family

In 1968, Ken Kowalski married Jeannine Leona³⁰ Campeau, the third of the 10 children of Jean-Paul Campeau and Maria Chartrand of the Fort Kent/Bonnyville area of Alberta.³¹ The Campeau family traces its roots back to St. Lazare, Vaudreuil County, Quebec. In 1917, the family began homesteading in Fort Kent, two months after Jean-Paul, Jeannine's father, was born.³² Jeannine Kowalski started her teaching career in Barrhead, Alberta, in 1969³³ and received her Bachelor of Education in 1971.³⁴ The Kowalskis have two children, Lori Ann and Michael Paul.³⁵ The couple divorced in 2002. Michael received his primary and secondary education in Barrhead and, in 2003, attained a Master of Science degree from the University of Alberta, specializing in Statistics. He is currently a Faculty Lecturer in the Department of Mathematical and Statistical Sciences (Faculty of Science) at the University of Alberta. Lori Ann leads an active life in Edmonton, Alberta, and is a client of the Winnifred Stewart Association.³⁶ In 2004, Ken Kowalski became engaged to Kristina F. White, a small business consultant and an active supporter of children and the arts in Alberta. The wedding is planned for August 27, 2005.



Early Career

Prior to entering politics, Ken Kowalski taught Social Studies from 1969 to 1974 at Lorne Jenken High School in Barrhead. There, he coached a team of high school students to compete in *Reach for the Top*, a popular Canadian television quiz show for students. Kowalski and the students worked for two years to develop the team. In July 1973, the team won the *Reach for the Top* national championship. Kowalski later designed a credit course at the high school for quiz writing, in which students spent time researching and developing possible questions. Kowalski wrote so many practice questions for his students that he sold a whole season's worth to the show.³⁷

Kowalski promised himself in his early twenties that he would never do the same thing for more than five years at a time.³⁸ Consequently in 1974, after five years of teaching, Kowalski resigned from his position at Lorne Jenken High School. Instead of enrolling at another university and continuing his studies of East Asian history at the PhD level as he had planned, or alternatively, travelling "to the Aegean" and writing "the great mystery novel," Kowalski moved his life in a completely new direction,³⁹ beginning a career in public service.

Political Career

In 1974, following his decision to leave the teaching profession, Kowalski was approached by Dr. Hugh M. Horner, Deputy Premier, Minister of Agriculture and Progressive Conservative Member for Barrhead, to run his Legislature office. From 1975 to 1977, Kowalski was executive assistant to Horner, who also served as Minister of Transportation (1975–1979). Kowalski was appointed Chair, Regional Transportation Services in 1977. In 1979, he was appointed Deputy Minister, Regional Transportation Services, becoming at that time the youngest person ever to have held the position of Deputy Minister in Alberta.⁴⁰ Shortly after this appointment, Horner announced that he would be retiring from politics, and Kowalski made the decision to seek elected office. Kowalski later reflected, "The pay wasn't as good, but the future was promising."⁴¹

Kowalski resigned his position in the Transportation Department to run in the Barrhead constituency. He went on to win the nomination, and fought what many considered an uphill battle against former Liberal Leader Nicholas W. Taylor, defeating him in a by-election on November 21, 1979.⁴² Kowalski was elected in the subsequent general elections of 1982, 1986 and 1989 for the constituency of Barrhead, of 1993, 1997 and 2001 for the constituency of Barrhead-Westlock, and of 2004, for the constituency of Barrhead-Morinville-Westlock. With the exceptions of the 1997 and 2004 elections, Kowalski has in each instance secured his victory with a greater number of votes than in the previous election. In the 2004 election, Kowalski won all 74 polls in the newly formed constituency.⁴³

Kowalski has been appointed to many committees during his service as a Member including: *Privileges and Elections*, *Standing Orders and Printing*; *Public Accounts*; *Public Affairs*; *Select Standing Committee on Surface Rights* (Chair); *Law and Regulations*; *Special Committee to prepare and report lists of Members to serve on the Select Standing Committees*; *Standing Committee on Alberta Heritage Savings Trust Fund Act* (Chair); *Members' Services*; *Legislative Offices*; and *Private Bills*. He also served on the Syncrude Board of Directors. In 2003, Kowalski served as an ex-officio member of the *Alberta Official Song Committee*, which was assigned the task of selecting an official song for the centennial celebrations of the province.⁴⁴



Kowalski earned the nicknames 'Mr. Everything' and 'Minister of Everything' from the press, due to the number of portfolios he held. In addition to serving as Minister of the Environment (1986–1988), Kowalski went on to become Minister of Career Development and Employment (1988–1989) and Minister of Public Works, Supply and Services (1989–1993). While Kowalski was Minister of the Environment, the construction of the Alberta Special Waste Management Corporation (ASWMC) facility in Swan Hills was completed. Unique in North America,⁴⁵ it is a "fully integrated special wastes treatment facility"⁴⁶ that handles hazardous waste. The Alberta Special Waste Management System (ASWMS) employed at the Swan Hills plant was jointly developed by the ASWMC and a private company, BOVAR Inc.⁴⁷ At the time, Kowalski came under fire in the press for a provincial loan guarantee that was provided to BOVAR and for the fact that the plant was built in his constituency.⁴⁸ He has remained philosophical about the media: "If you're not criticized, you're not doing anything. That's the basic rule of politics."⁴⁹

Another major project in which Kowalski takes pride was the construction of the Oldman River Dam, begun in 1987.⁵⁰ The dam was the subject of several legal challenges from 1987 to 1992, culminating in a Supreme Court of Canada decision on January 23, 1992. The decision dismissed an appeal brought by environmental and Native groups as well as the Attorneys General of six other provinces on the basis of the validity of the federal environmental guidelines and the jurisdiction of the federal government over the dam.⁵¹ Kowalski explained:

The fact is that southern Alberta was dry and becoming drier. ... Without a constant supply of water—and by that I mean a twelve-month guaranteed flow—nothing could live, nothing would grow. That was the fundamental reason for the dam. ... That has been one of the most difficult things to explain ever since 1986. Anybody opposed to the dam could simply say it made no economic sense because we were just building it for a few farmers. In that context alone, it didn't make sense. But the dam wasn't being built for that purpose alone. It was for life—for the preservation of all those southern Alberta communities.⁵²

Looking back a decade later, Kowalski remained adamant about the value of the project, stating that it has "had significant lasting benefit for one-third of the province."⁵³ As Minister of Public Works, Kowalski commissioned a book about the Oldman River Dam and provided its preface.⁵⁴ While serving in this Cabinet position, he also provided support for the public use of the reflecting pool, located in front of the Legislature Building, as a wading pool.⁵⁵

In addition to these portfolios, Kowalski was Minister of Economic Development and Tourism (1993–1994) and Minister Responsible for: Public Safety Services (1986–1988 and 1989–1991); Lotteries and Financial Assistance to Major Exhibitions and Fairs (1988–1992); Alberta Gaming Commission (1991–1993 and 1994); Lotteries and Gaming (1992–1993); Alberta Racing Commission (1992–1993 and 1994); Wild Rose Foundation (1992–1993); Public Affairs Bureau (1992–1993); ACCESS Corporation (1992–1993); Technology, Research and Telecommunications (1993–1994); International Trade Offices (1993–1994); and Lotteries (1993–1994).

Kowalski served as Government House Leader from June 15, 1993 to December 15, 1993 and was instrumental in the changes made to the *Standing Orders* in 1993. In the most extensive revision of the Alberta *Standing Orders* to date, government and opposition caucus members agreed to more than 80 changes. The Legislative Assembly approved these revisions on



September 9, 1993. One of the most significant changes concerned Private Members' Public Bills. The provision to allow free votes resulted in an increased probability that a Private Member's Public Bill would be passed. Accordingly, in 1993 alone, Parliamentary Counsel assisted with the drafting of 74 Private Members' Public Bills. On November 3, 1993, Bill 204, the *Stray Animals Amendment Act*, passed third reading,* making it the first Private Member's Public Bill to be passed in Alberta.⁵⁶ Kowalski was Deputy Premier from December 15, 1992 to October 20, 1994.

In October 1994, Kowalski left Cabinet. There was much speculation in the press about this unexpected departure. Colleagues tended to defend Kowalski. Progressive Conservative Member for Calgary-Shaw Jonathan N. Havelock was quoted at the time as saying: "[Kowalski] was placed in a position where he was given responsibility for some very difficult issues. And by simply being given responsibility for that you do create the impression trouble is following you."⁵⁷ Interim Liberal Leader and Member for Edmonton-Gold Bar Elizabeth 'Bettie' J. Hewes said: "He's been a very powerful minister, and no doubt the premier owes a good deal of success in winning the leadership to him."⁵⁸ Five years later, Premier Klein suggested that he had "removed Kowalski from cabinet in October 1994 because of a power struggle."⁵⁹

As Speaker

In what to some was a surprising comeback after a couple of years as a Private Member, Kenneth Reginald Kowalski was elected Speaker on April 14, 1997, at the beginning of the First Session of the 24th Legislature, having been nominated through a motion by Progressive Conservative Member for Airdrie-Rocky View Carol L. Haley.⁶⁰ Progressive Conservative Members Donald Tannas (Highwood) and M. Glen Clegg (Dunvegan) also received nominations for the position, as did Liberal Member for Edmonton-Mill Creek Gene Zwodzesky, who declined. This election for the position of Speaker was markedly different in nature from all previous elections. There would be no guaranteed result, due to the fact that there were three strong contenders, all members of the Progressive Conservative caucus. After the first vote concluded with no clear majority, Tannas' name was dropped from the ballot as he had received the fewest votes. On the second ballot, Kowalski was elected and became the second Speaker to have been elected by secret ballot. He was 51 years old at the time. Kowalski thanked the Members and declared, "You are looking at perhaps the most surprised person in Alberta today."⁶¹ At the conclusion of the election process, Kowalski noted, "You've elected for the first time in the history of this Assembly, someone has told me, a Speaker from north of Highway 16 or the city of Edmonton."⁶² *The Globe and Mail* reported, "Flamboyant and popular among rural MLAs, Mr. Kowalski is seen as one of the cagiest politicians in the province and his victory yesterday solidified that view."⁶³ Years later, Kowalski declared that his unexpected victory in 1997 "really established a dramatic independence for the role of the Speaker."⁶⁴

Kowalski was able to swiftly assume the role of Speaker, with the First Session of the 24th Legislature proceeding the day after his election. Kowalski's 18 years as a Member of the

* The Bill received Royal Assent on November 15, 1993. *Stray Animals Amendment Act*, S.A. 1993, c. 25.



Legislative Assembly “enabled him to move into his new role confidently and minimized the procedural orientation he required to perform his duties.”⁶⁵

Kowalski quickly impressed Members with his willingness to build bridges between the different political parties in the Legislative Assembly.⁶⁶ He invited Liberal Member Gene Zwozdesky to take the Chair in the *Committee of the Whole* on May 26, 1997. Zwozdesky became the first Opposition Member to preside over the Assembly.⁶⁷ On that historic occasion, Leader of the Opposition and Member for Edmonton-McClung D. Grant Mitchell congratulated Zwozdesky and commended Kowalski, who had the “foresight, the commitment to openness in this Legislature to suggest that an opposition member could play a role in chairing committees.” Mitchell also expressed his appreciation for “the sense of balance and fairness that [Kowalski] brings to [the] Legislative Assembly, personified and captured in this Chair.”⁶⁸

The media were impressed with Kowalski’s commitment and his ability to run the Legislative Assembly in an orderly manner. *Calgary Herald* columnist Don Martin noted, “He’s meticulously fair. He’s parliamentary precise. He’s even funny at times. The only sign of ruthlessness is his stubborn adherence to the rules of order he quotes by memory.”⁶⁹ His dedication is evidenced by his presence in the Chamber during late night sittings when it is not required that he be in the Chair.⁷⁰ He is well-known for his respect for the democratic process and the honour he feels at being an elected representative.⁷¹ He is able to conduct the business of the Assembly through his firm knowledge of the rules and his commitment to adhering to them.⁷² A personal challenge he has abided by is to conduct the business of the Assembly without ever using the word “Order!”⁷³

The ability of a Speaker to maintain impartiality is always an issue in jurisdictions like Canada where Speakers must contest their seats.* Kowalski has referred to this requirement for Speakers to sell themselves to constituents as ‘retail politics’: “In retail politics, you sell the fact that being Speaker is a good thing. It is above the melee. It provides dignity.”⁷⁴ Kowalski has said that he has discovered that his constituents are in fact very proud of his being Speaker. He indicates that he carefully selects meetings and events to attend, ensuring that both his responsibilities to his constituents and his impartiality as Speaker are addressed equally.⁷⁵ Never referring to an “opponent” in a speech allows him to avoid “partisan arguments.”⁷⁶ Kowalski believes “the Speaker must be a servant, not a slave.”⁷⁷ After speaking at the 2004 Alberta Order of Excellence presentations, Kowalski received a letter from a distinguished attendee† who commented that he “lent ... [d]ignity to such a [s]pectacular [o]ccasion.”⁷⁸

* Unlike Speakers in the United Kingdom, a Speaker in Canada does not resign from his or her political party upon becoming Speaker. An interesting discussion of the impartiality of the Speakership and how various Canadian Speakers seek to preserve this non-partisanship is found in Kenneth Kowalski et al., “The Impartiality of the Speakership: A Round Table,” *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 27, no. 2 (Summer 2004): pp. 4–12.

† The attendee was Edmonton writer and philanthropist Cécile F. Mactaggart (wife of businessman Sandy Mactaggart). In the same letter, she commented that her belief that the Speaker is elected based on his “ability to mediate between opposing forces [rather] than for [the] gift of [o]ratory” was mistaken, since Kowalski, she suspected, was “[m]aster of [b]oth.”



As Speaker, Kowalski serves as president of the Alberta Branch of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association (CPA). He is the past president, Regional Executive Committee of the CPA.⁷⁹ In 1998, the Alberta Branch of the CPA became an associate member of l'Assemblée parlementaire de la Francophonie.⁸⁰

An historic first occurred on April 23, 1997, when the Presiding Officer and the Table Officers in the Legislative Assembly were all women. Member for Lacombe Judith D. Gordon was in the Speaker's Chair. To mark "their participation in this event, on December 9 Speaker Kowalski presented a commemorative plaque to Judy Gordon, Deputy Chairman of Committees; Louise Kamuchik, Clerk Assistant; and Shannon Dean, Parliamentary Counsel."⁸¹

Kowalski was responsible for making Alberta the first jurisdiction in Canada to hang the flags of all the provinces and territories in its Legislative Chamber. On February 12, 1998, in honour of Flag Day,* the flags were hung permanently on the south wall of the Chamber.⁸² In 2000, Kowalski also instituted the practice of singing the national anthem in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta on the first day of each sessional week.⁸³

On January 27, 1998, the Legislative Assembly held a presentation ceremony to receive the Black Rod,† a gift from the Royal Canadian Legion. Kowalski accepted the gift and recognized its significance and symbolism.⁸⁴

In recent years, Kowalski has demonstrated a strong commitment to educating Alberta's youth about the role of parliament and the democratic process. In 1999, he instituted *Mr. Speaker's Alberta Youth Parliament*. This was an annual event in which 83 Grade 10 students were able to experience life as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta and learn about the parliamentary process. This program was replaced in 2003 by *Mr. Speaker's MLA for a Day* program. On November 20, 2000, Kowalski initiated the *School-at-the-Legislature* program, "offering grade 6 students hands-on knowledge about the Assembly, government, and the parliamentary process."⁸⁵ The annual Edmonton Regional Heritage Fair is also held in the Legislature pedway.

Kowalski has made the Legislature Building more publicly accessible in a number of ways. Despite the increased security measures implemented as a result of the events of September 11, 2001, Kowalski is dedicated to ensuring that all Albertans feel welcome in the Building. The hosting of Christmas choirs in the rotunda⁸⁶ and the provision of access to the floor of the Chamber on Canada Day⁸⁷ are examples of initiatives begun under his leadership. Kowalski welcomes the opportunity to host multicultural groups in the Legislature. A reception for l'Association canadienne-française de l'Alberta and the Muslim Festival of Eid-ul-Adha are two of the many cultural events that are regularly held at the Legislature. Kowalski has a set of principles by which he lives that centres on sustaining "our motivation to serve all the people

* Flag Day is actually February 15, but since it fell on a Sunday in 1998 this event was held on Thursday (February 12), the final sitting day of the week.

† The Black Rod is a ceremonial baton that the Sergeant-at-Arms uses when accompanying the Lieutenant Governor on such occasions as the Speech from the Throne, or when the Lieutenant Governor grants Royal Assent.



realizing our strength lies not only in the skills and talents of our people, but in the diversity of cultural heritage and experience inherited from our forefathers.”⁸⁸

The administrative skills that Kowalski acquired in his Cabinet positions have contributed greatly to the efficient and effective way in which he directs the operations of the Legislative Assembly Office (LAO). He is known for “being an effective manager, a real consideration in a job overseeing the assembly and the operation of the legislature building.”⁸⁹ As Speaker, Kowalski has supported the enhancement of the administrative infrastructure that allows the LAO to function more independently of the Alberta Government. Initiatives have included the implementation of a new payroll system and the utilization of the Legislative Assembly Management Information System, which allows the LAO to manage its own financial information. Kowalski is a keen supporter of the Legislature Library, regularly promoting new library initiatives at the annual *Spring Tea and Open House*, begun in 1999. He has encouraged Members, their constituency staff and LAO staff to utilize new technology in the course of their work and for regular communication and research. In 2001, Kowalski spearheaded the creation of the Canadian Association of Parliamentary Administration/Association canadienne d’administration parlementaire (CAPA/ACAP). CAPA/ACAP provides a forum for senior administrative officers from all Canadian parliaments to exchange information and to foster cooperation between legislative bodies. The first annual conference was held in Alberta in November 2001.⁹⁰



Hon. K.R. Kowalski assists a student at the launch of the School-at-the-Legislature program (Nov. 20, 2000).

In 2000, the Progressive Conservative Government introduced Bill 11, the *Health Care Protection Act*, which reassessed the provision of publicly funded health care in the province. Public demonstrations were held outside the Legislature Building, and exchanges in the Assembly became heated. On April 19, 2000, Kowalski adjourned Question Period after only 20 minutes, “after ... at least three, now four, interjections from the Speaker about the tone of question period today.”⁹¹ Kowalski had repeatedly reminded Members about the purpose and rules of Question Period. Eventually, he declared a recess to restore equilibrium, and to deal with six points of order and two points of privilege that had arisen. When the Assembly reconvened, it was at the conclusion of the scheduled Question Period. Hugh F. MacDonald, Liberal Member for Edmonton-Gold Bar, remarked that Kowalski had “created an unacceptable precedent when he simply cancelled Oral Question Period.”⁹² The next day, Kowalski noted that he had received “the longest list of questions that [he had] been advised hon. Members would like to ask since [he had] been in the chair of the Speaker.”⁹³ An *Edmonton Journal* editorial praised Kowalski’s handling of the situation, stating that “he has performed admirably as Speaker—a sentiment shared in the past by opposition MLAs—and there is no evidence to suggest that performance has ever been compromised by his opinions.”⁹⁴ On the evening of May 10, CBC television cameras filmed protestors in the Public Gallery. Protocol dictates that visitors attending Session not cause any disruption to proceedings, and “it is not in order to have them filmed.”⁹⁵ Based on a recommendation from the Sergeant-at-Arms, who is responsible for security in the Chamber, Kowalski prohibited CBC cameras from filming in the Chamber for the remainder of the year.⁹⁶

Kowalski's second election to the position of Speaker was by acclamation on April 9, 2001.⁹⁷ During her nomination remarks, Progressive Conservative Member for Airdrie-Rocky View Carol Haley pointed out the qualities that make him a successful Speaker: "[K]nowledge of the parliamentary system, [a] sense of history, and ... work as an MLA as well as ... pride in being a parliamentarian."⁹⁸ She noted that he had contributed to making the Legislature a 'marvellous' place not only for Members of the Legislative Assembly, but also for the public.

Kowalski's third election as Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta occurred on March 1, 2005, at the beginning of the First Session on the 26th Legislature. As with his second election, this one was also by acclamation. His nomination, again through a motion by Carol Haley, Progressive Conservative Member for Airdrie-Chestermere, included a brief recounting of the history of the role of Speaker and the importance of the independence of the Legislative Assembly in a parliamentary democracy. Haley praised Kowalski's previous eight years of service as Speaker as having brought "respect, honour and dignity" to Assembly proceedings, "allowing all of us to function freely and with integrity on behalf of our constituents."⁹⁹ In his acceptance remarks, Kowalski reminded the Members of the "tremendous responsibility placed upon all of us as Members of the Legislative Assembly" and the unusual opportunity that they would have to make a difference as Alberta's second century unfolded.¹⁰⁰

Kowalski has presided over the Legislative Assembly of Alberta's longest sitting day to date on May 28–29, 2001. Members sat from 1:30 p.m. to 5:28 p.m. (three hours and 58 minutes), took a two-hour-and-32-minute break, and then resumed sitting from 8 p.m. until 5:20 p.m. the next day (21 hours and 20 minutes) for a total of 25 hours and 18 minutes. This sitting day broke, by one hour and seven minutes, the previous record of 24 hours and 11 minutes, set on November 19, 1993,¹⁰¹ during Speaker Stanley S. Schumacher's tenure (1993–1997).

On March 18, 2002, Prince Michael of Kent, while on a private cross-Canada visit, was granted the rare honour of addressing the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.*¹⁰² Kowalski introduced His Royal Highness' remarks.¹⁰³

To commemorate the 60th anniversary of Victory in Europe Day (VE-Day) and the Year of the Veteran, three veterans of the Second World War—Commodore Doug Learoyd, Royal Canadian Navy Volunteer Reserve, Captain Stu Lindop, South Alberta Regiment, Canadian Army, and Squadron Leader Mr. Justice Sam Lieberman, Royal Canadian Air Force—were permitted on the floor on May 5, 2005.¹⁰⁴ Kowalski introduced the three strangers, welcomed the many veterans in attendance in the galleries, and on behalf of the Legislative Assembly and the people of Alberta expressed appreciation to all veterans for their service. Mr. Justice Lieberman addressed the Legislative Assembly, paid tribute to his fellow veterans and highlighted their sacrifices that upheld and strengthened the democratic principles that guide Members today.

On September 1, 2004, at the ceremony to mark the countdown to Alberta's Centennial celebrations, Kowalski brought greetings on behalf of the Members of Legislative Assembly. Kowalski is an Honourary Centennial Ambassador.¹⁰⁵ To highlight the importance of the

* For more information, see the Background section, *Strangers Addressing the Assembly*.



Province's Centennial, Kowalski intends, during each sitting day of the First Session of the 26th Legislature, to relate a brief vignette about Alberta's history.

On May 24, 2005, as part of a royal visit to Saskatchewan and Alberta to celebrate the Centennials of both provinces, Queen Elizabeth II addressed the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, the first reigning monarch to do so.¹⁰⁶ That day, Speaker Kenneth R. Kowalski and Premier Ralph P. Klein greeted the Queen and escorted her to the main doors of the Legislature Building, where the unveiling of six stained glass windows took place, five of which commemorate the monarchs who have reigned since Alberta became a province in 1905, and the last of which displays the various emblems of Alberta. The Queen was escorted to the Chamber by the Speaker, who in welcoming her spoke warmly "of the values that have been the personal hallmarks of [her] reign: devotion to duty, an abiding concern for all, courage, stability, a sense



Hon. K.R. Kowalski welcomes Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth II.

of continuity, and above all grace and dignity."¹⁰⁷ In her address, Her Majesty spoke of Alberta's pioneering history, its dynamic spirit and its bright future. She reaffirmed the commitment of the Crown "to represent everything that is best and most admired in the Canadian ideal" and wished Albertans a happy 100th birthday.¹⁰⁸ On exiting the Chamber, the Queen was accompanied by Klein and Kowalski, as she made her way out to a walkabout on the south Legislature Grounds.

Kowalski remains committed to being a Member. Prior to the 2004 provincial election, Kowalski confirmed:

I am doing this because I want to do this. I want to be re-elected and be speaker. I enjoy being an MLA. It is the most important job. And in this constituency, there are 19 municipalities. If we work together, we can make magic.¹⁰⁹

In an orientation to new Members of the Legislative Assembly on November 30, 2004, Kowalski declared that "being a parliamentarian is the noblest of all things."¹¹⁰

Community Activities and Personal Interests

Kowalski has been active in many community organizations. In 1972, he acted as the secretary of the Alberta Provincial Kinsmen Association and, in 1973, he received a National Award as the editor of the best Kinsmen's Club Magazine in Canada.¹¹¹ He has been a member of the Alberta Teachers' Association, several Chambers of Commerce, the Alberta Fish and Game Association and the Royal Canadian Legion.¹¹² He has served as the president of the Board of the Winnifred Stewart Foundation.¹¹³ Kowalski lists "reading, being a parliamentarian, and golf" as his passions.¹¹⁴

Honours and Awards

Kowalski has received numerous awards during his career. He received a Government of Alberta Achievement Award in 1973,¹¹⁵ and was honoured with an Alberta Teachers' Association Teacher Profile that same year.¹¹⁶ In 1992, he was awarded the Alberta Provincial Council Special



Achievement Award from the Ukrainian Canadian Congress,¹¹⁷ and the Governor General's Commemorative Medal for the 125th Anniversary of the Confederation of Canada.¹¹⁸

Kowalski was honoured on April 24, 1993, when the Alexis First Nation bestowed upon him the title of Honourary Chief Wa-she-zu-Chada-oo-sheqe-na (White Man with a Kind Heart). He has indicated that "[t]his is one of the most significant honors that [he has] ever received."¹¹⁹ Later, he was also presented with an Aboriginal headdress, which is displayed prominently in the Speaker's Suite. Foreign dignitaries visiting the Suite enjoy having their photographs taken with this headdress.

On November 26, 1999, more than 600 friends and dignitaries filled a Westlock hall to honour Ken Kowalski on the 20th anniversary of his service as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. Premier Ralph Klein, whom Kowalski mentioned as the first person to have accepted an invitation to this celebration, delivered the keynote address. Kowalski used this occasion to announce his intention to seek a sixth term as a Member and a second as Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. He indicated that he very much wanted to be Speaker on the occasion of Alberta's 100th birthday in 2005.¹²⁰

On February 27, 2004, the University of Alberta's Graduate Students' Association presented Kowalski with its Distinguished Alumnus Award. He is the first Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta or Member of Parliament to receive this recognition.¹²¹

On November 20, 2004, Kowalski celebrated the 25th anniversary of his service as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. He was presented with a collage portrait by Tag Kim depicting Kowalski's various roles as a Member from 1979 to 2004. Among the guests were: Speaker of the Senate Daniel P. Hays (2001–); Member for Edmonton-McClung and Minister of Economic Development Mark Norris; and Member for Airdrie-Rockyview Carol Haley.¹²² Messages of congratulations were sent by the three Premiers with whom Kowalski has served as a Member of the Legislative Assembly: Premiers Lougheed, Getty and Klein.¹²³ On December 1, 2004, at the annual Employee Recognition Dinner and Christmas Celebration, Dr. W. J. David McNeil, Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, presented a 25-year commemorative Mace pin to the Hon. Ken Kowalski in recognition of his years of service to the people of Alberta as a Member of the Legislative Assembly.

Tributes

Kowalski has always been known as 'an exceptionally hard-working MLA'¹²⁴ and has received praise from all parts of the political spectrum. Premier Klein has stated that "he [Kowalski] certainly knows politics and procedure inside and out and he also knows administration."¹²⁵ Former Progressive Conservative Member for Bonnyville Ernie Isley has said of Kowalski that "he's one (of the most), if not *the* most, capable persons in [the Legislature] building."¹²⁶ Don Martin of the *Calgary Herald* has said, "This is a former house leader who can quote obscure procedural law from memory and has an amazing grasp of political strategy and protocol."¹²⁷ D. Grant Mitchell, former Liberal Leader, indicated that "[Kowalski] has a deep understanding of the importance of the legislative assembly and of its traditions and I think he truly respects



it.”¹²⁸ On the occasion of Kowalski’s 25th anniversary as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Premier Klein, in sending his congratulations, declared:

Your steadfast devotion and your commitment to a stronger, better Alberta continually gains you the respect and admiration of your colleagues. As a truly great Albertan, your talents, values and actions benefit your family, community and fellow citizens.¹²⁹

Publications

“The West China Mission of the Methodist Church of Canada, Szechwan, China, 1891–1911.”

University of Alberta, MA thesis, 1970.

Weekly column. *Barrhead Leader*. December 4, 1979–May 27, 1991.

Notes

¹ Kathryn O’Handley and Caroline Sutherland, eds., *The Canadian Parliamentary Guide*, 1997 ed. (Toronto: Gale Canada, 1997), p. 568; Kenneth Reginald Kowalski, Interview by LAO Staff, 15 August 2001.

² “Kowalski, Peter,” in *Échos d’autrefois: Histoire de Bonnyville et district—Echoes of the Past: History of Bonnyville and District*, ed. Henri Bourgoïn and Réal Girard (Bonnyville, AB: Bonnyville Historical Book Committee, 1981), p. 346.

³ *Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (PC): MLA for Barrhead-Westlock*, Elected Members, [Internet], (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, updated 7 May 2001), accessed 13 January 2004, available from <http://www.assembly.ab.ca/lao/mla/mlabio.asp?RNumber=45>; Personal communication with Kenneth R. Kowalski, 2 December 2004.

⁴ Paul Bucci, “Backgrounder: Clues to Kowalski,” [Interview], *Edmonton Sun*, 14 November 1993, p. 21.

⁵ *Kowalski, Peter* (1888–1967), Alberta Genealogical Society Master Databank, [Electronic Database], (Edmonton: Alberta Genealogical Society), accessed 20 December 2001.

⁶ Personal communication with Kenneth R. Kowalski, 24 November 2003.

⁷ Bucci, “Backgrounder: Clues to Kowalski,” p. 21.

⁸ *Ibid.*

⁹ “Kowalski, Peter,” p. 346; Kowalski, Interview by LAO Staff, 15 August 2001.

¹⁰ “Kowalski, Peter,” p. 346.

¹¹ *Ibid.*

¹² *Ibid.*

¹³ “Chachula, Marjanna (Age 7),” *ArchiviaNet: Immigration Records (1925–1935)*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 12 December 2003, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020118_e.html

¹⁴ “Kowalski, Peter,” p. 346.

¹⁵ *Ibid.*

¹⁶ “Mr., Mrs. Kowalski Married 25 Years,” *New Bonnyville Tribune*, 18 November 1967, p. 2; “Kowalski, Peter,” p. 346.



- ¹⁷ Marianna Katasina Niedospal (AFN: 41ML-BC), FamilySearch Ancestral File v4.19, [Internet], (Salt Lake City, UT: Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, 2002), accessed 12 December 2003, available from <http://www.familysearch.org>; Stanislaw Chachula (AFN: 41ML-96), FamilySearch Ancestral File v4.19, [Internet], (Salt Lake City, UT: Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, 2002), accessed 12 December 2003, available from <http://www.familysearch.org>
- ¹⁸ "Chachula, Stanley," in *Coal Oil to Crude: Iron River-La Corey and Surrounding Areas*, ed. Iron River-La Corey History Committee (Iron River, AB: Iron River-La Corey History Committee, 1980), p. 205; Sharon Fersovitch, "Merton School District #3532," in *Coal Oil to Crude: Iron River-La Corey and Surrounding Areas*, ed. Iron River-La Corey History Committee (Iron River, AB: Iron River-La Corey History Committee, 1980), p. 104.
- ¹⁹ Mike Lamb, "Environment Minister Ken Kowalski: A Man in His Element," *Sunday: Calgary Herald Magazine*, [Supplement to the Calgary Herald newspaper], 29 May 1988, p. 8; Personal communication with Kowalski, 2 December 2004.
- ²⁰ Kowalski, Interview by LAO Staff, 15 August 2001.
- ²¹ Brian Champion, "Ken Kowalski—Can We Talk? 'White Man with Kind Heart' Tells Tales out of School. A Former Deputy Premier Reflects on 15 Years of Alberta Politics," *Edmontonians* vol. 8, no. 6 (June 1995): p. 6; Lamb, "Environment Minister Ken Kowalski: A Man in His Element," p. 8.
- ²² Kowalski, Interview by LAO Staff, 15 August 2001; Lamb, "Environment Minister Ken Kowalski: A Man in His Element," p. 8.
- ²³ Lamb, "Environment Minister Ken Kowalski: A Man in His Element," p. 8.
- ²⁴ Personal communication with Kowalski, 24 November 2003.
- ²⁵ University of Alberta, *Alumni Directory 1996* (Edmonton: University of Alberta, 1996), p. 184.
- ²⁶ Lorne V. Silverstein, ed., *Who's Who in Alberta Business, Finance and Government: The Key Decision Makers 1984–1985*, 1st ed. (Edmonton: Tridon Publications, 1985), p. 235.
- ²⁷ Ibid.
- ²⁸ Kowalski, Interview by LAO Staff, 15 August 2001.
- ²⁹ Kenneth Reginald Kowalski, "The West China Mission of the Methodist Church of Canada, Szechwan, China, 1891–1911" (MA thesis, University of Alberta, 1970).
- ³⁰ University of Alberta, *Alumni Directory 1996*, p. 184.
- ³¹ Léonie Campeau, "Campeau, Jean-Paul," in *Échos d'autrefois: Histoire de Bonnyville et district=Echoes of the Past: History of Bonnyville and District*, ed. Henri Bourgoin and Réal Girard (Bonnyville, AB: Bonnyville Historical Book Committee, 1981), pp. 218–219.
- ³² "Legal Land Description, NE 19 61 4 W4, Maurice Campian, microfilm no. C-6685," *ArchiviaNet: Western Land Grants (1870–1930)*, [Internet], (Ottawa: Library and Archives Canada), accessed 4 July 2003, available from http://www.archives.ca/02/020111_e.html
- ³³ Jack Danylchuk, "Sudden Void in Barrhead: Constituents Surprised, But Ken's Wife Likes the Timing," *Edmonton Journal*, 23 October 1994, p. B2.
- ³⁴ University of Alberta, *Alumni Directory 1996*, p. 184.
- ³⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, "Barrhead-Westlock: Hon. Ken Kowalski (PC), Speaker of the Legislative Assembly," in *Biographies of Members, Legislative Assembly of Alberta: 25th Legislature. December 2001* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2001), p. 10.
- ³⁶ Personal communication with Kowalski, 24 November 2003.



- ³⁷ Mike Sadava, "Speaker Kowalski Careful Reaching for his Buzzer: He Learned Caution as Reach for the Top Coach," *Edmonton Journal*, 18 June 2000, p. B2.
- ³⁸ Kowalski, Interview by LAO Staff, 15 August 2001.
- ³⁹ Ibid.
- ⁴⁰ Champion, "Ken Kowalski—Can We Talk?," p. 6.
- ⁴¹ Lamb, "Environment Minister Ken Kowalski: A Man in His Element," p. 8.
- ⁴² Ibid.
- ⁴³ Daphne Mitchell, "Tories Dominate North Central Alberta," *Barrhead Leader*, 30 November 2004, p. A3.
- ⁴⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, Alberta Official Song Committee Appointed, 9 October 2003, [News Release].
- ⁴⁵ Claudia Cattaneo, "Oldman Touted For Tourism," *Calgary Herald*, 12 March 1991, p. B10.
- ⁴⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard*, 21st Legislature, 2nd Session, 5 March 1987, p. 5.
- ⁴⁷ *Receipt of Hazardous Waste From Other Canadian Jurisdictions by the Alberta Special Waste Management System*, (Edmonton: Natural Resources Conservation Board, 1994), p. 4.
- ⁴⁸ Anthony Johnson, "Kowalski's Reign Over: Deputy Premier Offered New Job," *Calgary Herald*, 22 October 1994, p. A1.
- ⁴⁹ Kowalski, Interview by LAO Staff, 15 August 2001.
- ⁵⁰ *Oldman River Dam: Building a Future for Southern Alberta*, (Edmonton: Alberta Public Works, Supply and Services, 1992), p. xiv.
- ⁵¹ Ed Struzik, "Supreme Court Decision Caps 2 Decades of Acrimony over Dam," *Edmonton Journal*, 24 January 1992, p. A6; *Friends of the Oldman River Society v. Canada (Minister of Transport)*, [1992] 1 S.C.R. 3.
- ⁵² *Oldman River Dam: Building a Future for Southern Alberta*, p. 57.
- ⁵³ Don Martin, "Killer Ken Kowalski Defies Long-Range Predictability: His Fair, Balanced, and Patient Hand as Speaker Continues to Attract Rave Reviews from All Sides of the House," [Editorial], *Calgary Herald*, 19 December 1999, p. A15.
- ⁵⁴ *Oldman River Dam: Building a Future for Southern Alberta*, (Edmonton: Alberta Public Works, Supply and Services, 1992).
- ⁵⁵ Kowalski, Interview by LAO Staff, 15 August 2001.
- ⁵⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta*, 23rd Legislature, 1st Session, vol. CI, 3 November 1993, p. 206.
- ⁵⁷ Johnson, "Kowalski's Reign Over: Deputy Premier Offered New Job," p. A1.
- ⁵⁸ Ibid.
- ⁵⁹ Chuck Rusnell, "600 Friends Help Ken Kowalski Mark 20 Years as Provincial Politician: Speaker to Seek Sixth Term; Ends Rivalry with Klein," *Edmonton Journal*, 27 November 1999, p. B4.
- ⁶⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta*, 24th Legislature, 1st Session, vol. CV, 14 April 1997, p. 3.
- ⁶¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard*, 24th Legislature, 1st Session, 14 April 1997, p. 3.



⁶² Ibid., 14 April 1997, p. 4.

⁶³ Brian Laghi, "Ousted Alberta Minister Elected to Speaker's Post: Former Klein Rival 'Surprised' at Winning Ballot for Legislature Job," *Globe and Mail* (Toronto), 15 April 1997, p. A6.

⁶⁴ Kenneth Reginald Kowalski, et al., "The Impartiality of the Speakership: A Round Table," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 27, no. 2 (Summer 2004): p. 11.

⁶⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office 1997 Annual Report & 1997 Annual Report of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association, Alberta Branch* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 1998), p. 1.

⁶⁶ Steve Chase, "'Host With the Most:' Kowalski's Dinners Popular with MLAs," *Calgary Herald*, 18 July 1997, p. A5.

⁶⁷ Neil Waugh, "It's Time to Speak Up for Kowalski," [Editorial], *Edmonton Sun*, 1 July 1997, p. 11; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 24th Legislature, 1st Session*, 26 May 1997, pp. 770-776.

⁶⁸ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 24th Legislature, 1st Session*, 26 May 1997, p. 775.

⁶⁹ Don Martin, "Kinder, Gentler Kowalski Runs an Orderly House," [Editorial], *Calgary Herald*, 21 June 1997, p. J5.

⁷⁰ Don Martin, "Speaker Kowalski Keeps Legislative House in Order: Nevertheless, Involvement in West Edmonton Mall Financing by Then-Deputy Premier Kowalski Should Not be Forgotten," [Editorial], *Calgary Herald*, 10 December 1998, p. A21.

⁷¹ Martin, "Kinder, Gentler Kowalski Runs an Orderly House," p. J5; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 24th Legislature, 1st Session*, 14 April 1997, pp. 2-3.

⁷² Martin, "Kinder, Gentler Kowalski Runs an Orderly House," p. J5; Don Martin, "Kowalski Set Pride Aside to Seek Votes," [Editorial], *Calgary Herald*, 12 April 1997, p. C5.

⁷³ Kowalski, Interview by LAO Staff, 15 August 2001; Martin, "Kinder, Gentler Kowalski Runs an Orderly House," p. J5.

⁷⁴ Kowalski, et al., "The Impartiality of the Speakership: A Round Table," p. 10.

⁷⁵ Ibid.

⁷⁶ Ibid.

⁷⁷ Ibid. p. 11.

⁷⁸ Cécile F. Mactaggart to Kenneth R. Kowalski, [Letter], 22 October 2004.

⁷⁹ Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (PC): *MLA for Barrhead-Westlock*, [Internet].

⁸⁰ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office 1998 Annual Report & 1998 Annual Report of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association, Alberta Branch* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 1999), p. 34.

⁸¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *1997 Annual Report*, p. 1.

⁸² Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *1998 Annual Report*, p. 6.

⁸³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 24th Legislature, 4th Session*, 22 February 2000, p. 7; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective 26 February 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Standing Order 7(1).

⁸⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Presentation of the Black Rod to the Legislative Assembly of Alberta by Alberta-Northwest Territories Command, Royal Canadian Legion. Tuesday, January 27, 1998* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1998), pp. 3-4.



- ⁸⁵ Alberta. Legislative Assembly Office, *Legislative Assembly Office Annual Report 2000 & 2000 Annual Report of the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association—Alberta Branch* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly Office, 2001), p. 16.
- ⁸⁶ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 25th Legislature, 1st Session*, 9 April 2001, p. 1; Kowalski, Interview by LAO Staff, 15 August 2001.
- ⁸⁷ Kowalski, Interview by LAO Staff, 15 August 2001.
- ⁸⁸ Kenneth Reginald Kowalski, *Principles That Ken Governs Himself By*, Honourable Ken Kowalski, Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta: MLA for the Barrhead/Westlock Constituency, [Internet], (Barrhead: Barrhead/Westlock Progressive Conservative Association), accessed 13 January 2004, available from <http://www.telusplanet.net/public/barwest/principles.htm>
- ⁸⁹ Mark Lisac, "Expect the Unexpected with Speaker Kowalski: Tory Brass in Shock From Election," [Editorial], *Edmonton Journal*, 15 April 1997, p. A12.
- ⁹⁰ E-mail from Cheryl Scarlett, Director of Human Resource and Information Technology Services, Legislative Assembly Office, 14 January 2004.
- ⁹¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 24th Legislature, 4th Session*, 19 April 2000, p. 1120.
- ⁹² Hugh MacDonald, "Democracy Alberta-Style: The Erosion of a Parliament," *AlbertaViews: The Magazine About Alberta For Albertans* vol. 4, no. 2 (March/April 2001): p. 9.
- ⁹³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 24th Legislature, 4th Session*, 20 April 2000, p. 1168.
- ⁹⁴ "Kowalski Still Is a Tory MLA," [Editorial], *Edmonton Journal*, 30 April 2000, p. A10.
- ⁹⁵ Allyson Jeffs, "CBC Cameras Banned from Legislature," *Edmonton Journal*, 7 July 2000, p. A7.
- ⁹⁶ Ibid.
- ⁹⁷ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 25th Legislature, 1st Session*, 9 April 2001, pp. 1–2.
- ⁹⁸ Ibid., 9 April 2001, p. 1.
- ⁹⁹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 26th Legislature, 1st Session*, 1 March 2005, p. 1.
- ¹⁰⁰ Ibid.
- ¹⁰¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Alberta, 25th Legislature, 1st Session*, vol. CVIX, 28 May 2001, pp. 139–151; Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Hansard, 25th Legislature, 1st Session*, 28 May 2001, pp. 797–932. A conflict exists between the *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta*, which state that the Assembly was adjourned at 5:20 p.m., and *Alberta Hansard*, which states that it adjourned at 5:18 p.m.
- ¹⁰² Alberta. Legislative Assembly, His Royal Highness Prince Michael of Kent to Address the Alberta Legislature, 15 March 2002, [News Release].
- ¹⁰³ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 25th Legislature, 2nd Session*, 18 March 2002, p. 391–392.
- ¹⁰⁴ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 26th Legislature, 1st Session*, 5 May 2005, pp. 1301–1302.
- ¹⁰⁵ Alberta Centennial, Ready, Set, Celebrate! Celebration Program—September 1, 2004.
- ¹⁰⁶ Alberta, Legislative Assembly, *Alberta Hansard, 26th Legislature, 1st Session*, 24 May 2005, pp. 1617–1618.

- ¹⁰⁷ Ibid., p. 1617.
- ¹⁰⁸ Ibid., pp. 1617–1618.
- ¹⁰⁹ Daphne Mitchell, “Three-Way Battle for MLA Seat,” *Barrhead Leader*, 2 November 2004, p. A1.
- ¹¹⁰ [Orientation to New Members of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta], 30 November 2004, Notes by Legislature Library staff.
- ¹¹¹ Andre Piard, “Teacher Profile,” *ATA News* vol. 8, no. 7 (15 December 1973): p. 2.
- ¹¹² Ken Kowalski: Barrhead, ca. 1983, Biography.
- ¹¹³ *Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski (PC): MLA for Barrhead-Westlock*, [Internet].
- ¹¹⁴ Ibid.
- ¹¹⁵ “Kowalski to Receive UCC-APC Achievement Award,” *Barrhead Leader*, 4 August 1992, p. A17.
- ¹¹⁶ Piard, “Teacher Profile,” p. 2.
- ¹¹⁷ “Kowalski to Receive UCC-APC Achievement Award,” p. A17.
- ¹¹⁸ Fax from Marilyn Lapointe, The Chancellery of Honours, Government House, Ottawa, 13 August 2003.
- ¹¹⁹ Brian Bachynski, “Kowalski Honored by Alexis First Nation,” *Barrhead Leader*, 27 April 1993, p. A14.
- ¹²⁰ Rusnell, “600 Friends Help Ken Kowalski Mark 20 Years as Provincial Politician,” p. B4.
- ¹²¹ University of Alberta. Graduate Students’ Association, *GSA Award Recipients*, [Internet], (Edmonton: University of Alberta. Graduate Students’ Association, 2001), accessed 6 August 2004, available from <http://www.ualberta.ca/~gsa/Services/Awards/GSA%20Award%20Recipients%202004.pdf>
- ¹²² *Don’t Stop ... Thinking About Tomorrow*, 20 November 2004, 25th Anniversary Program, inside cover.
- ¹²³ Ibid., pp. 3–5.
- ¹²⁴ Lamb, “Environment Minister Ken Kowalski: A Man in His Element,” p. 8.
- ¹²⁵ David Bray, “Ken’s Big Comeback: House Vote Speaks Volumes of Tory’s Return to Favor,” *Edmonton Sun*, 15 April 1997, p. 4.
- ¹²⁶ Tom Arnold, “He’s Back ... And Nobody Seemed More Surprised than Kowalski Himself,” *Edmonton Journal*, 19 April 1997, p. H2.
- ¹²⁷ Martin, “Kowalski Set Pride Aside to Seek Votes,” p. C5.
- ¹²⁸ Steve Chase, “MLAs Elect Kowalski as Speaker,” *Calgary Herald*, 15 April 1997, p. A3.
- ¹²⁹ *Don’t Stop ... Thinking About Tomorrow*, p. 5.



a higher duty



APPENDICES

Appendices

A – Qualifications	459
B – Elections	461
C – Election Results	465
D – Party Affiliation	481
E – Nominations	483
F – Tenures	489
G – Maps of Constituency Areas of Speakers	491
H – Sessions of the Legislative Assembly	493
I – Officials by Legislature	505
J – Speakers' Ages	517
K – Cabinet and Legislative Positions	519
L – Years and Places of Birth	523
M – Educational Attainments	525
N – Occupations	527
O – Military Service	529
P – Poems in Honour of Speakers	531
Q – Maps	535
R – Glossary	539

Appendix A – Qualifications

The qualifications that one requires to be an effective Speaker are numerous and diverse. To fulfill the role, an individual should have a solid knowledge of the parliamentary system, be seen as an impartial judge (which is made difficult by the need to function in highly political situations) and be able to defuse tension by using humour or other means when emotions run high.¹ However, possession of these attributes alone does not qualify an individual for the position. Before any individual can be elected to the Chair by his or her colleagues in the Legislative Assembly, he or she must first be elected to represent one of Alberta's 83 constituencies.

In Alberta, the *Election Act* outlines eligibility requirements for candidates in provincial elections. It is not necessary for a candidate to reside in the electoral division in which he or she runs for election, but all candidates must be Canadian citizens, be at least 18 years of age on polling day and have been 'ordinarily resident' in Alberta for a minimum of six continuous months prior to polling day.² This Act also details the factors that disqualify an individual from running in a provincial election. For example, Members of the Senate or the House of Commons cannot run as candidates in a provincial election.³

To run in an election, candidates must submit to the Returning Officer proper documentation indicating their eligibility for election. If a candidate is representing a political party in the election, a Candidate's Nomination Endorsement Certificate, signed by a designated party representative, must also be supplied.⁴

After meeting all the qualifications to run for election, a candidate must win a plurality of the votes in his or her constituency in order to become a Member of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. It is only after receiving this endorsement from the electorate that an individual becomes eligible for election as Speaker.*

* Members who are Cabinet Ministers or caucus leaders are not eligible to be elected Speaker.

Notes

¹ John A. Fraser, *The House of Commons at Work* (Montreal: Les Éditions de la Chenelière Inc., 1993), p. 55.

² *Election Act*, R.S.A. 2000, c. E-1, s. 56 (a-c).

³ *Election Act*, R.S.A. 2000, c. E-1, ss. 56-58.

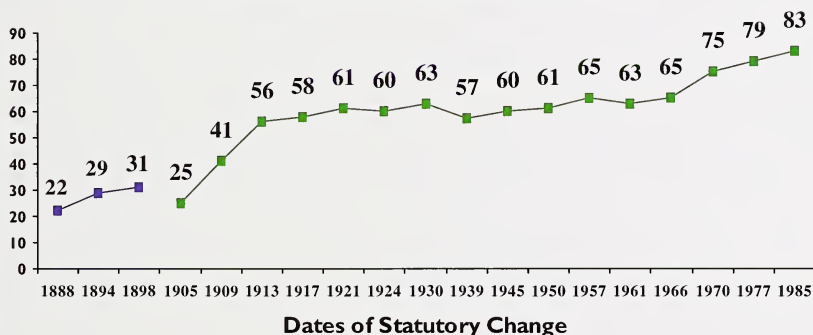
⁴ Alberta. Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, *A Guide for Candidates on the Election Act* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 2004), p. 4.



Appendix B – Elections

Reflecting population growth, the number of constituencies in Alberta has increased from 25 in 1906 to the current 83. Based primarily on population growth and distribution, the boundaries of these constituencies change after regular reviews. Since 1969, a five-member body, called the *Electoral Boundaries Commission*, has determined the location of electoral boundaries, using guidelines contained in the *Electoral Boundaries Commission Act*.¹

Figure 1. Number of Members in the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories (1888-1905) and Alberta (1905-2005)



Alberta uses the single-Member plurality electoral system and has done so since 1959.² Also known as the ‘first-past-the-post’ system, this method requires that the candidate receiving the greatest number of votes within a constituency be declared the winner even if that candidate has received less than half of the votes cast.³ Prior to the adoption of this electoral system, Albertans experimented with different electoral systems, including Members-at-large and two forms of single transferable voting.*

In 1917, during the First World War, the *Statutes of Alberta* were modified to allow for the election of two soldiers for the province at large, in addition to the single Member elected to serve each constituency.^{†4}

* At the time, this electoral approach was sometimes referred to as ‘proportional representation.’ John D. Hunt, “A Key to P.R.: Being an Explanation of the Transferable Ballot, and of Proportional Representation as adopted by The Alberta Election Act, with Full Directions for the Counting of the Ballots,” in *A Report on Alberta Elections 1905–1982* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1983), pp. 191–204; William Hurlbert, “Alberta’s Old Electoral System Was Just Fine: Single, Transferable Voting System Gave Better Effect to the Will of the Majority of Voters Than the Current System Does,” *Edmonton Journal*, 12 January 2005, p. A15.

† Charles S. Pingle, Speaker (1920–1921), was re-elected in 1917 under this amendment.



By 1921, the *Statutes of Alberta* no longer included provision for the election of Members-at-large, but the number of constituencies throughout the province had grown to 61.⁵ Each of these constituencies elected one Member to the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, except for the constituencies of Edmonton and Calgary, each of which returned five Members, and Medicine Hat, which returned two Members.⁶ In these multi-Member constituencies, each voter could cast as many votes as there were candidates.⁷ Medicine Hat was a multi-Member constituency for only the 1921 election, but the Edmonton and Calgary multi-Member constituencies continued to return between five and seven representatives each until 1956, when the electoral districts were divided into smaller single-Member constituencies.

The single transferable vote system was used from 1926 through 1955 during the period in which the Edmonton and Calgary constituencies returned multiple candidates to the Legislative Assembly.⁸ Under this electoral system, voters marked their ballots by writing '1' for their first choice, '2' for their second, and so on. Voters retained the option of voting for one, some or all of the candidates listed on the ballot. The votes were then tallied according to the first choice indicated on each ballot. The proportion of votes necessary to win a seat varied depending on the number of seats available. When five seats were available, then any candidate who obtained more than one sixth of the vote was assured a seat. When six seats were available, anything over one seventh of the vote was sufficient for a candidate to win, and so forth. After the results were tallied based on the first preference vote, any candidate who had received the required proportion of votes was deemed to have won a seat in the Legislative Assembly. At this point, the surplus votes of the winning candidates were redistributed among the remaining candidates according to the second choices marked on the ballots. Once the votes had been recounted and distributed proportionally, any remaining candidates who had now received the required proportion of the vote also won a seat in the Legislative Assembly. This process continued until the number of seats available in the constituency was filled.⁹ In the case of a tie, the candidate with the most first-preference votes won the seat.¹⁰

The Speakers who ran for election under the multi-Member single transferable vote system were Arthur J. Dixon and Gerard J. Amerongen. Dixon represented the Calgary constituency after winning the 1952 and 1955 elections. In 1955, Amerongen ran for election in the Edmonton constituency, but was unsuccessful.*

Between 1926 and 1959, other constituencies in Alberta (those outside of Edmonton and Calgary) used a preferential single-Member electoral system,¹¹ also known as the 'transferable ballot'.¹² This system, also referred to as the 'alternative-vote' system, allowed voters to rank the candidates on the ballot by preference.¹³ Using this system, the vote was tallied according to the first preference indicated on the ballot. If no candidate received an absolute majority, then the candidate with the fewest votes would be eliminated and all ballots for the eliminated candidate were redistributed according to the voter's second preference. This process was repeated as many

* Gerard J. Amerongen ran unsuccessfully in the provincial general elections of 1955, 1959, 1963, 1967 and 1986. He was successful in 1971 and was re-elected by large margins in the general elections of 1975, 1979 and 1982.



times as necessary until one candidate emerged with more than 50 per cent of the vote.¹⁴ Oran L. McPherson, George N. Johnston, N. Eldon Tanner and Peter Dawson were all elected to the Legislative Assembly of Alberta under this system.

General Elections and By-Elections Contested at the Territorial and Provincial Levels, 1888–2005

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Elections Contested</i>	<i>Elections Won</i>
<i>North-West Territories</i>		
Herbert C. Wilson	1	1
James H. Ross	5	5
John F. Betts	5	3
William Eakin	3	2
Archibald B. Gillis	3	3
<i>Alberta</i>		
Charles W. Fisher	4	4
Charles S. Pingle	5	4
Oran L. McPherson	4	3
George N. Johnston	4	3
N. Eldon Tanner	4	4
Peter Dawson	7	7
Arthur J. Dixon	8	6
Gerard J. Amerongen	9	4
David J. Carter	4	4
Stanley S. Schumacher	3	3
Kenneth R. Kowalski	8	8

Most elections contested: Gerard J. Amerongen (9)

Most elections won: Kenneth R. Kowalski (8)

More than half of the Speakers (9) won each election that they contested.

Two Speakers defeated former Speakers in elections. Peter Dawson defeated Oran L. McPherson in the constituency of Little Bow, on August 22, 1935. David J. Carter defeated Arthur J. Dixon in the constituency of Calgary-Millican, on March 14, 1979. Both McPherson and Dixon had served as Private Members in the previous Legislature.



Notes

¹ *Electoral Boundaries Commission Act*, R.S.A. 2000, c. E-3, ss. 2-3.

² The amendment Act came into force on May 9, 1959. *An Act to amend The Election Act*, S.A. 1957, c. 21; *Alberta Gazette*, vol. 55, no. 9, 15 May 1959, p. 785.

³ John McMenemy, *The Language of Canadian Politics: A Guide to Important Terms and Concepts*, 3rd ed. (Waterloo, ON: Wilfrid Laurier University Press, 2001), p. 112.

⁴ *Legislative Assembly Act*, S.A. 1909, c. 2, as am. by S.A. 1917, c. 38; *Alberta Military Representation Act*, S.A. 1917, c. 12.

⁵ *Legislative Assembly Act*, S.A. 1909, c. 2, as am. by S.A. 1921, c. 5, s. 36.

⁶ *Legislative Assembly Act*, S.A. 1909, c. 2, as am. by S.A. 1921, c. 5, s. 36.

⁷ Howard A. Scarrow, *Canada Votes* (New Orleans: Hauser Press, 1962), p. 222.

⁸ Dave Obee, "B.C. Recycles Alberta's Old Vote System: Mixed Vote Formula Had Been Found Wanting by Ernest Manning," *Edmonton Journal*, 30 December 2004, p. A16.

⁹ John D. Hunt, "A Key to P.R.: Being an Explanation of the Transferable Ballot, and of Proportional Representation as adopted by The Alberta Election Act, with Full Directions for the Counting of the Ballots," in *A Report on Alberta Elections, 1905-1982* (Edmonton: Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, 1983), p. 195.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*, p. 194.

¹¹ Rand Dyck, *Provincial Politics in Canada: Towards the Turn of the Century*, 3rd ed. (Scarborough, ON: Prentice-Hall Canada, 1996), p. 519.

¹² Obee, "B.C. Recycles Alberta's Old Vote System: Mixed Vote Formula Had Been Found Wanting by Ernest Manning," p. A16.

¹³ F. Leslie Seidle, *Electoral System Reform in Canada: Objectives, Advocacy and Implications for Governance* (Ottawa: Canadian Policy Research Networks, 2002), p. xlvii.

¹⁴ Brian O'Neal, *Electoral Systems*, Background Paper BP-334E (Ottawa: Library of Parliament, Research Branch, 1993), p. 4; Hunt, "A Key to P.R.," p. 193.



Appendix C – Election Results

Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, 1888–1905

No official election results are available for the North-West Territories. Results have been compiled from *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories*, the *Saskatchewan Executive and Legislative Directory*, newspaper reports, the *Canadian Parliamentary Companion* and the *Canadian Parliamentary Guide*. In the 1888 Territorial general election, in which polling occurred over the course of 10 days, the exact date on which the election occurred in the indicated constituency is provided in parentheses. Members of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories were considered non-partisan at the Territorial level, although individual Members did have party affiliations at the Dominion level.

Speakers are indicated in bold on a beige background. The formatting of their names has been altered as necessary from that used in the source in order to provide consistency. Successful candidates are indicated with “(E)” after their names.

Election Results for Herbert C. Wilson (Speaker 1888–1890)*

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
June 20–30, 1888 (June 30)	Edmonton (2 Members)	Herbert C. Wilson (E)	395
		Frank Oliver (E)	350
		Samuel Cunningham	319
		Daniel Maloney	150

Election Results for James H. Ross (Speaker 1891–1892, 1892–1894)†

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
June 20–30, 1888 (June 27)	Moose Jaw	James H. Ross (E)	161
		George Malcolm Annable	129
October 31, 1891	Moose Jaw	James H. Ross (E)	232
		John Gilbert Gordon	189
October 31, 1894	Moose Jaw	James H. Ross (E)	413
		Jonathan Edward Annable‡	330

* Herbert C. Wilson was first elected as a member of the North-West Council in 1885, prior to the creation of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories.

† Prior to the creation of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, James H. Ross was first elected as a member of the North-West Council in 1883, and was re-elected in 1885.

‡ Jonathan Edward Annable was George Malcolm Annable's brother. Alberta Genealogical Society, Edmonton Branch, *Index to the 1901 Census, District of Assiniboia West (No. 204)* (Edmonton: Alberta Genealogical Society, 2002), p. 4.



Election Results for James H. Ross (Speaker 1891–1892, 1892–1894) (Continued)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
October 26, 1897 (by-election)	Moose Jaw	James H. Ross (E)	Acclamation
November 4, 1898	Moose Jaw	James H. Ross (E)	Acclamation

Election Results for John F. Betts (Speaker 1895–1898)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
June 20–30, 1888 (June 30)	Prince Albert (2 Members)	William Plaxton (E)	383
		John F. Betts (E)	322
		Owen Edward Hughes	307
October 31, 1891	Cumberland	John F. Betts (E)	159
		Philip Turner	106
		William Plaxton	41
November 14, 1894	Prince Albert East	John F. Betts (E)	282
		James Taylor	210
November 4, 1898	Prince Albert East	Samuel McLeod (E)	315
		John F. Betts	279
May 21, 1902	Prince Albert	Thomas McKay (E)	359
		William Knox	263
		John F. Betts	149

Election Results for William Eakin (Speaker 1899–1902)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
June 20–30, 1888 (June 27)	Wallace	Joel Reaman (E)	188
		William Eakin	72
October 31, 1894	Saltcoats	William Eakin (E)	280
		Thomas Carleton	195
November 4, 1898	Saltcoats	William Eakin (E)	215
		James Nixon	203

Election Results for Archibald B. Gillis (Speaker 1903–1904)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
October 31, 1894	Whitewood	Archibald B. Gillis (E)	300
		W. C. Thorburn	281
November 4, 1898	Whitewood	Archibald B. Gillis (E)	Acclamation
May 21, 1902	Whitewood	Archibald B. Gillis (E)	Acclamation

Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1905–2004

Dates, spellings and figures are taken from *General Election Returns*. By-election results are taken from *A Report on Alberta Elections, 1905–1982*.^{*} In the event that there are any discrepancies between the results printed here and the figures from the Office of the Chief Electoral Officer, the latter should be considered authoritative.

Speakers are indicated in bold on a beige background. The formatting of their names has been altered as necessary from that used in the source in order to provide consistency. Successful candidates are indicated with “(E)” after their names. The following abbreviations are used to indicate party affiliations:

AA	Alberta Alliance
ARM	Alberta Reform Movement
Com	Communist
COR	Confederation of Regions
CCF	Cooperative Commonwealth Federation
Con	Conservative
Ind	Independent
Ind Lab	Independent Labour
Ind SC	Independent Social Credit
Lab	Labour
Lab Prog	Labour Progressive
Lib	Liberal
ND	New Democrat Party
PC	Progressive Conservative
RP	Representative Party
SC	Social Credit
UFA	United Farmers of Alberta
WCC	Western Canada Concept

^{*} *A Report on Alberta Elections, 1905–1982* is currently being revised and updated as part of this four-volume set.



Election Results for Charles W. Fisher (Speaker 1906–1919)*

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
November 9, 1905	Banff	Charles W. Fisher (E)	Lib	421
		R. G. Brett†	Con	363
March 22, 1909	Cochrane	Charles W. Fisher (E)	Lib	627
		R. G. Brett	Con	301
April 17, 1913	Cochrane	Charles W. Fisher (E)	Lib	475
		H. F. Jarrett	Con	380
June 7, 1917	Cochrane	Charles W. Fisher (E)	Lib	630
		H. E. G. H. Scholefield	Con	469

Election Results for Charles S. Pingle (Speaker 1920–1921)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>	
April 17, 1913	Redcliff	Charles S. Pingle (E)	Lib	645	
		H. S. Gerow	Con	428	
June 7, 1917	Redcliff	Charles S. Pingle (E)	Lib	Elected in accordance with Chapter 38 of the <i>Election Act</i>	
July 18, 1921	Redcliff	W. C. Smith (E)	UFA	1,950	
		Charles S. Pingle	Lib	1,387	
September 25, 1925 (by-election)	Medicine Hat	Charles S. Pingle (E)	Lib	1,616	
		W. E. McCombs	Lab	1,186	
		J. J. Hendrick	Con	988	
June 28, 1926	Medicine Hat	1st Count	Charles S. Pingle	Lib	1,574
			J. J. Hendricks	Con	1,279
			James Hole	Lab	718
		Last Count	Charles S. Pingle (E)	Lib	1,701
			J. J. Hendricks	Con	1,487

* Charles W. Fisher was first elected as a Member of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories for the constituency of Banff in a by-election held on February 4, 1903.

† The Hon. Dr. Robert G. Brett was Alberta's second Lieutenant Governor (1915–1925).



Election Results for Oran L. McPherson (Speaker 1922–1926)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
July 18, 1921	Little Bow	Oran L. McPherson (E)	UFA	1,554
		J. McNaughton	Lib	856
June 28, 1926	Little Bow	Oran L. McPherson (E)	UFA	1,367
		James McNaughton	Lib	556
		P. M. Patterson	Con	475
June 19, 1930	Little Bow	Oran L. McPherson (E)	UFA	Acclamation
August 22, 1935	Little Bow	Peter Dawson (E)	SC	2,322
		Oran L. McPherson	UFA	704
		L. H. Stack	Lib	474

Election Results for George N. Johnston (Speaker 1927–1935)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
July 18, 1921	Coronation	George N. Johnston (E)	UFA	3,736
		Dr. A. M. Day	Lib	960
June 28, 1926	Coronation	George N. Johnston (E)	UFA	2,387
		Arthur M. Day	Lib	945
		A. O. Thomas	Con	498
June 19, 1930	Coronation	George N. Johnston (E)	UFA	2,084
		Arthur M. Day	Ind	1,983
March 21, 1940	Acadia-Coronation	1st Count C. E. Gerhart	SC	2,163
		George N. Johnston	Ind	1,665
		Mrs. R. Johnston	CCF	559
		Last Count C. E. Gerhart (E)	SC	2,297
		George N. Johnston	Ind	1,963



Election Results for N. Eldon Tanner (Speaker 1936–1937)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
August 22, 1935	Cardston	N. Eldon Tanner (E)	SC	2,027
		G. L. Stringham	UFA	565
		D. O. Wight	Lib	471
March 21, 1940	Cardston	N. Eldon Tanner (E)	SC	2,160
		S. H. Nelson	Ind	1,808
August 8, 1944	Cardston	N. Eldon Tanner (E)	SC	2,104
		Wm. G. Matson	Ind	592
		Edward Leavitt	CCF	569
August 17, 1948	Cardston	N. Eldon Tanner (E)	SC	1,981
		Briant W. Stringam	Lib	944



Election Results for Peter Dawson (Speaker 1937–1963)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
August 22, 1935	Little Bow	Peter Dawson (E)	SC	2,322
		Oran L. McPherson	UFA	704
		L. H. Stack	Lib	474
March 21, 1940	Little Bow	Peter Dawson (E)	SC	2,162
		E. H. Griffin	Ind	2,034
August 8, 1944	Little Bow	Peter Dawson (E)	SC	1,958
		J. D. Hagerman	Ind	826
		Rudolph Kotkas	CCF	767
August 17, 1948	Little Bow	Peter Dawson (E)	SC	1,865
		George M. Carson	Ind	1,086
		John P. Griffin	CCF	435
August 5, 1952	Little Bow	Peter Dawson (E)	SC	2,668
		Maxwell R. Morrison	Lib	1,001
		David S. Smith	CCF	411
June 29, 1955	Little Bow	Peter Dawson (E)	SC	2,481
		Varno Westersund	Lib	1,359
		Norman Scotney	Con	510
June 18, 1959	Little Bow	Peter Dawson (E)	SC	2,939
		Bernard W. Tonken	PC	989
		Donald A. McNiven	Lib	603



Election Results for Arthur J. Dixon (Speaker 1963–1972)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>		<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
August 5, 1952	Calgary (6 Members)	1st Count	Mrs. Rose Wilkinson	SC	6,796
			Howard B. Macdonald	SC	4,214
			Fred C. Colborne	SC	3,974
			Paul Brecken	Con	3,126
			D. F. McIntosh	Ind Lab	2,927
			Thomas Glen	SC	2,820
			Hugh John MacDonald	Lib	2,711
			Arthur J. Dixon	SC	2,677
			Clifford Norman Clark	SC	2,390
			A. J. E. Liesemer	CCF	1,991
			Philip P. C. Haigh	Con	905
			Melvin E. Shannon	Lib	857
			John James Zubick	Con	806
			W. R. Irwin	Con	764
			Ronald M. Helmer	Con	670
			Robert T. Alderman	CCF	633
			Alberta Clark	Lib	563
			Collier Maberley	Lib	555
			W. Longridge	Lab	527
			George E. Ellinson	CCF	378
			H. J. Ryan	CCF	333
			Richard Thomson	Lib	313
			J. A. Murray Green	Lib	287
			Harold L. Livergant	CCF	243
			Ronald W. Stirling	CCF	213
		Last Count	Paul Brecken (E)	Con	6,269
			Mrs. Rose Wilkinson (E)	SC	5,967
			Arthur J. Dixon (E)	SC	5,966
			Fred C. Colborne (E)	SC	5,959
			Howard B. Macdonald (E)	SC	5,957
			Hugh John MacDonald (E)	Lib	5,216

Election Results for Arthur J. Dixon (Continued)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>		<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
June 29, 1955	Calgary (6 Members)	1st Count	Arthur Smith	Con	9,745
			H. J. MacDonald	Lib	7,501
			Fred Colborne	SC	5,470
			Paul Brecken	Con	5,034
			Mrs. Rose Wilkinson	SC	4,973
			Arthur J. Dixon	SC	4,566
			H. B. Macdonald	SC	4,423
			Grant MacEwan*	Lib	4,019
			V. A. Cooney	Lib	2,536
			Ian F. Smith	SC	2,290
			C. M. Willmott	SC	1,745
			E. R. A. Temple	SC	1,715
			G. E. Ellinson	CCF	1,277
			Mary Dover	Lib	1,201
			Harold Cush	Lib	1,065
			Collier Maberley	Lib	1,025
			Roy Devell	Con	927
			Herbert J. Ryan	CCF	648
			A. L. Roberts	Lab Prog	579
			P. P. C. Haigh	Con	577
			Arthur H. Wray	Ind	471
			K. A. Halliday	CCF	462
			Paul J. Katzalay	CCF	245
	Last Count		Arthur Smith (E)	Con	8,940
			Hugh J. MacDonald (E)	Lib	8,932
			Fred Colborne (E)	SC	8,931
			Mrs. Rose Wilkinson (E)	SC	8,930
			Grant MacEwan (E)	Lib	8,338
			Arthur J. Dixon (E)	SC	7,698

* The Hon. J. W. Grant MacEwan served as Alberta's ninth Lieutenant Governor (1966–1974).



Election Results for Arthur J. Dixon (Continued)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
June 18, 1959	Calgary-South East	Arthur J. Dixon (E)	SC	5,643
		Ernest Starr	PC	1,537
		P. Petrasuk	Lib	792
		G. Ellinson	CCF	437
June 17, 1963	Calgary-South	Arthur J. Dixon (E)	SC	5,661
		Howard G. Cook	Lib	2,529
		John N. Smith	ND	1,123
May 23, 1967	Calgary-South	Arthur J. Dixon (E)	SC	5,401
		Joe Clark*	PC	4,940
		Willis E. O'Leary	Lib	1,146
August 30, 1971	Calgary-Millican	Arthur J. Dixon (E)	SC	4,539
		Normie Kwong†	PC	2,973
		Clarence Lacombe	ND	1,543
		Carole Walter	Lib	153
March 26, 1975	Calgary-Millican	Tom Donnelly (E)	PC	4,978
		Arthur J. Dixon	SC	2,114
		Joseph Yanchula	ND	940
		Jodi Mahoney	Lib	512
		Mike Daniels	Com	43
		Roger Lavoie	Ind	21
March 14, 1979	Calgary-Millican	David J. Carter (E)	PC	4,034
		Arthur J. Dixon	SC	1,539
		Stan Johns	ND	595
		Bob Cox	Lib	331

* C. Joseph 'Joe' Clark served as Prime Minister from 1979 to 1980.

† The Hon. Norman L. Kwong was installed as Alberta's 16th Lieutenant Governor on January 20, 2005.

Election Results for Gerard J. Amerongen (Speaker 1972–1986)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>		<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
June 29, 1955	Edmonton (7 Members)	1st Count	Hon. E. C. Manning	SC	23,216
			James Harper Prowse	Lib	18,755
			Elmer E. Roper	CCF	4,444
			J. Percy Page*	Con	4,086
			Edgar Bailey	Lib	2,971
			Andre Dechene	Lib	2,877
			Abe Wm. Miller	Lib	2,787
			Anthony Hlynka	SC	1,896
			J. L. Payment	Lib	1,640
			H. E. Tanner	Lib	1,604
			Dr. J. D. Ross	SC	1,575
			Edgar H. Gerhart	SC	1,320
			Gifford Main	Con	1,064
			Wm. Harasym	Lab Prog	947
			Robert Atkin	CCF	940
			W. J. M. Henning	SC	785
			Gerard J. Amerongen	Con	692
			Cyril G. Havard	SC	602
			Mrs. C. M. Hattersley	SC	555
			Lois Grant	Lib	552
			R.F. Lambert	Con	548
			Floyd Johnson	CCF	458
			E.J. Mitchell	Con	405
			Mary Crawford	CCF	383
			Ivor G. Dent	CCF	328
			Mrs. J. A. L. Smith	Con	299
			Art Thornton	CCF	290
			Robert L. Brower	Con	221
			H. M. Smith	CCF	177
			C. E. Payne	Ind	127

* The Hon. J. Percy Page was Alberta's eighth Lieutenant Governor (1959–1966).



Election Results for Gerard J. Amerongen (Continued)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
		Last Count	Hon. E. C. Manning (E)	SC 9,569
			Abe Wm. Miller (E)	Lib 9,569
			J. Harper Prowse (E)	Lib 9,569
			H. E. Tanner (E)	Lib 9,569
			Dr. J. D. Ross (E)	SC 9,483
			J. Percy Page (E)	Con 9,224
			Edgar H. Gerhart (E)	SC 9,121
June 18, 1959	Edmonton-Centre	Ambrose Holowach (E)	SC	3,912
		Gerard J. Amerongen	PC	2,185
		Laurette Douglas	Lib	1,684
		Robert Atkin	CCF	589
June 17, 1963	Edmonton-Centre	Ambrose Holowach (E)	SC	3,378
		Gerard J. Amerongen	PC	1,492
		Joseph A. Tannous	Lib	1,219
		Alex Szechchina	ND	993
May 23, 1967	Edmonton-Jasper Place	Jack (J. W.) Horan (E)	SC	4,206
		Gerard J. Amerongen	PC	3,000
		Tom Hennessey	ND	2,210
		Barry Vogel	Lib	1,851
		Albert V. Bourcier	Ind SC	176
August 30, 1971	Edmonton-Meadowlark	Gerard J. Amerongen (E)	PC	6,371
		Alexander Romaniuk	SC	3,839
		Alan J. Idiens	ND	1,035
March 26, 1975	Edmonton-Meadowlark	Gerard J. Amerongen (E)	PC	6,715
		Harvey Tilden	ND	1,406
		Russ Forsythe	SC	1,093
		Vic Yanda	Lib	698
March 14, 1979	Edmonton-Meadowlark	Gerard J. Amerongen (E)	PC	7,075
		Jim Bell	ND	2,098
		Russ Forsythe	SC	1,237
		Ron Charko	Lib	904
		C. A. Doug Ringrose	Ind	448

Election Results for Gerard J. Amerongen (Continued)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
November 2, 1982	Edmonton-Meadowlark	Gerard J. Amerongen (E)	PC	10,817
		Robert Henderson	ND	4,590
		Al (Bud) Wilson	WCC	1,511
		N. A. Chaudhary	Lib	776
		Wm. (Bill) Dickson	Ind	423
		Andy H. Groenink	SC	345
May 8, 1986	Edmonton-Meadowlark	Grant Mitchell (E)	Lib	4,913
		Gerard J. Amerongen	PC	4,222
		Muriel Stanley-Venne	ND	2,135
		R. (Bob) Genis-Bell	RP	176
		Norm Kyle	WCC	90

Election Results for David J. Carter (Speaker 1986–1993)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
March 14, 1979	Calgary-Millican	David J. Carter (E)	PC	4,034
		Arthur J. Dixon	SC	1,539
		Stan Johns	ND	595
		Bob Cox	Lib	331
November 2, 1982	Calgary-Egmont	David J. Carter (E)	PC	10,331
		Richard A. Langen	WCC	1,174
		Leroy Thompson	ND	1,128
		Bernie Tanner	Lib	396
		Victor Lenko	ARM	158
May 8, 1986	Calgary-Egmont	David J. Carter (E)	PC	5,781
		Tom Chesterman	ND	1,740
		B.C. Tanner	Lib	1,102
March 20, 1989	Calgary-Egmont	David J. Carter (E)	PC	5,272
		Clive R. Mallory	Lib	2,907
		Vinay Dey	ND	1,864



Election Results for Stanley S. Schumacher (Speaker 1993–1997)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
May 8, 1986	Drumheller	Stanley S. Schumacher (E)	PC	4,906
		Norman A. Stanger	RP	1,729
		Sid Holt	ND	1,154
		Peter Hope	Ind	244
March 20, 1989	Drumheller	Stanley S. Schumacher (E)	PC	5,049
		Roger Nelson	Lib	1,800
		Sid Holt	ND	1,658
June 15, 1993	Drumheller	Stanley S. Schumacher (E)	PC	7,421
		Roger Nelson	Lib	2,457
		Steve Osborne	ND	1,463
		David McAndrews	COR	454



Election Results for Kenneth R. Kowalski (Speaker 1997–)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
November 21, 1979 (by-election)	Barrhead	Kenneth R. Kowalski (E)	PC	2,457
		N. Taylor	Lib	2,102
		D. Bouyea	SC	1,067
		A. Corbett	ND	723
November 2, 1982	Barrhead	Kenneth R. Kowalski (E)	PC	5,001
		Nick Taylor	Lib	3,331
		John Thomas Mitchell	WCC	633
		Harold Wharton	ND	478
		Shirley Bassani	SC	240
		Ernie Charman	ARM	39
May 8, 1986	Barrhead	Kenneth R. Kowalski (E)	PC	5,092
		Larry E. McConnell	ND	2,303
		Mary Lou Ehrenholz	Lib	637
		Herb Brent	Ind	539
		Ferne Nutt	RP	235
March 20, 1989	Barrhead	Kenneth R. Kowalski (E)	PC	5,294
		Harold Wharton	ND	1,673
		Dave Perrin	Lib	1,660
		J. Harvey Yuill	SC	578
June 15, 1993	Barrhead- Westlock	Kenneth R. Kowalski (E)	PC	6,312
		Dale Grieg	Lib	3,309
		Harold E. Wharton	ND	1,076
		Dale W. Harris	SC	561
		Adam Hauch	COR	143
		Leonard Stahl	Ind	67
March 11, 1997	Barrhead- Westlock	Kenneth R. Kowalski (E)	PC	6,195
		Dale Grieg	Lib	2,130
		J. Harvey Yuill	SC	1,244
		Joe Woytowich	ND	643



Election Results for Kenneth R. Kowalski (Continued)

<i>Date of Election</i>	<i>Constituency</i>	<i>Candidate</i>	<i>Party Affiliation</i>	<i>Votes Received</i>
March 12, 2001	Barrhead- Westlock	Kenneth R. Kowalski (E)	PC	7,183
		Jeff Willerton	SC	1,352
		Laurie Hodge	Lib	1,259
		Suzanne Forbes	ND	569
November 22, 2004	Barrhead- Morinville- Westlock	Kenneth R. Kowalski (E)	PC	7,066
		Alan Fiebach	Lib	2,310
		Peggy Kirkeby	ND	1,113
		Mike Radojcic	AA	1,020
		Carl Haugen	SC	407

Appendix D – Party Affiliation

Members of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories were considered non-partisan at the Territorial level, although the individual Members did have party affiliations at the Dominion level. The Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories alternated between those with Conservative and Liberal leanings. With the establishment of the Province and the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, elected Members had official party alignments and Speakers have, to date, always been elected from the caucus with the greatest number of Members in the Legislative Assembly. The 1997 election of the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski as Speaker brought to the Chair the fourth consecutive Speaker affiliated with the Progressive Conservative Association (the Progressive Conservative Party in Alberta).

Party Affiliation

North-West Territories

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Dominion Party Affiliation</i>
Herbert C. Wilson (1888–1890)	Conservative
James H. Ross (1891–1892, 1892–1894)	Liberal
John F. Betts (1895–1898)	Conservative
William Eakin (1899–1902)	Liberal
Archibald B. Gillis (1903–1904)	Conservative

Alberta

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Provincial Party Affiliation</i>
Charles W. Fisher (1906–1919)	Liberal
Charles S. Pingle (1920–1921)	Liberal
Oran L. McPherson (1922–1926)	United Farmers of Alberta
George N. Johnston (1927–1935)	United Farmers of Alberta
N. Eldon Tanner (1936–1937)	Social Credit
Peter Dawson (1937–1963)	Social Credit
Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972)	Social Credit
Gerard J. Amerongen (1972–1986)	Progressive Conservative
David J. Carter (1986–1993)	Progressive Conservative
Stanley S. Schumacher (1993–1997)	Progressive Conservative
Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–)	Progressive Conservative





North-West Territories

There were six elections for the position of Speaker in the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories. James H. Ross was the only Speaker to have been elected twice. The details of the nominations for the position of Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories are as follows:

Herbert C. Wilson

October 31, 1888

Nominated through a motion by Hugh St. Quentin Cayley, Member for Calgary.

Seconded by John F. Betts, Member for Prince Albert.

James H. Ross

December 10, 1891

Nominated through a motion by Frederick W. A. G. Haultain, Member for Macleod.

Seconded by James Clinkskill, Member for Battleford.

December 7, 1892

Nominated through a motion by Samuel S. Page, Member for Cannington.

Seconded by Charles A. Magrath, Member for Lethbridge.

John F. Betts

August 29, 1895

Nominated through a motion by Frederick W. A. G. Haultain, Member for Macleod.

Seconded by William Sutherland, Member for North Qu'Appelle and Deputy Speaker.

William Eakin

April 4, 1899

Nominated through a motion by Frederick W. A. G. Haultain, Member for Macleod and Premier.

Seconded by Dr. Robert G. Brett, Member for Banff.

Archibald B. Gillis

April 16, 1903

Nominated through a motion by Frederick W. A. G. Haultain, Member for Macleod and Premier.

Seconded by George H. V. Bulyea, Member for South Qu'Appelle and Commissioner of Public Works.

Alberta

To date, there have been 29 elections for the position of Speaker in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. Peter Dawson was elected to the position seven times. The details of the nominations of the Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta are as follows:



Charles W. Fisher

March 15, 1906

Nominated through a motion by Alexander C. Rutherford, Liberal Member for Strathcona and Premier.

Seconded by Charles W. Cross, Liberal Member for Edmonton and Attorney General.

February 10, 1910

Nominated through a motion by Alexander C. Rutherford, Liberal Member for Strathcona and Premier.

Seconded by Charles W. Cross, Liberal Member for Edmonton and Attorney General.

September 16, 1913

Nominated through a motion by Arthur L. Sifton, Liberal Member for Vermilion and Premier.

Seconded by Charles R. Mitchell, Liberal Member for Bow Valley and Minister of Public Works.

February 17, 1918

Nominated through a motion by Charles Stewart, Liberal Member for Sedgewick and Premier.

Seconded by Charles R. Mitchell, Liberal Member for Bow Valley and Provincial Treasurer.

Charles S. Pingle

February 17, 1920

Nominated through a motion by Charles Stewart, Liberal Member for Sedgewick and Premier.

Seconded by John R. Boyle, Liberal Member for Sturgeon and Attorney General.

Oran L. McPherson

February 2, 1922

Nominated through a motion by Herbert Greenfield, United Farmers of Alberta (UFA) Member for Peace River and Premier.

Seconded by John E. Brownlee, UFA Member for Ponoka and Attorney General.

George N. Johnston

February 10, 1927

Nominated through a motion by John E. Brownlee, UFA Member for Ponoka and Premier.

Seconded by Oran L. McPherson, UFA Member for Little Bow and Minister of Public Works.

January 29, 1931

Nominated through a motion by John E. Brownlee, UFA Member for Ponoka and Premier.

Seconded by Vernor W. Smith, UFA Member for Camrose and Minister of Railways and Telephones.

N. Eldon Tanner

February 6, 1936

Nominated through a motion by William Aberhart, Social Credit Member for Okotoks-High River and Premier.

Seconded by John W. Hugill, Social Credit Member for Calgary and Attorney General.

Peter Dawson

February 25, 1937

Nominated through a motion by William Aberhart, Social Credit Member for Okotoks-High River and Premier.

Seconded by John W. Hugill, Social Credit Member for Calgary and Attorney General.

February 20, 1941

Nominated through a motion by William Aberhart, Social Credit Member for Okotoks-High River and Premier.

Seconded by N. Eldon Tanner, Social Credit Member for Cardston and Minister of Lands and Mines.

February 22, 1945

Nominated through a motion by Ernest C. Manning, Social Credit Member for Edmonton and Premier.

Seconded by J. Percy Page, Independent Member for Edmonton and Leader of the Opposition.*

February 17, 1949†

Nominated through a motion by Ernest C. Manning, Social Credit Member for Edmonton and Premier.

Seconded by Howard B. Macdonald, Independent Member for Calgary.

February 19, 1953

Nominated through a motion by Ernest C. Manning, Social Credit Member for Edmonton and Premier.

Seconded by Dr. Wallace W. Cross, Social Credit Member for Hand Hills and Minister of Public Health.

August 17, 1955

Nominated through a motion by Ernest C. Manning, Social Credit Member for Edmonton and Premier.

Seconded by Dr. Wallace W. Cross, Social Credit Member for Hand Hills and Minister of Public Health.

* J. Percy Page ran as leader of a group of Independents. This was the first time a nomination was seconded by the Leader of the Opposition.

† In the general election of 1948, the Liberals and Cooperative Commonwealth Federation (CCF) each won two seats, with Independents and Independent Social Credit winning one seat each. No party was recognized as the Official Opposition. It was not until the end of the 11th Legislature, after the Liberals won a by-election in Grouard, that Premier Manning announced that Liberal Leader J. Harper Prowse would be recognized as Leader of the Opposition in the Fifth Session.



February 11, 1960

Nominated through a motion by Ernest C. Manning, Social Credit Member for Strathcona East and Premier.

Seconded by Alfred J. Hooke, Social Credit Member for Rocky Mountain House and Minister of Municipal Affairs.

Arthur J. Dixon

March 26, 1963

Nominated through a motion by Ernest C. Manning, Social Credit Member for Strathcona East and Premier.

Seconded by Alfred J. Hooke, Social Credit Member for Rocky Mountain House and Minister of Municipal Affairs.

February 13, 1964

Nominated through a motion by Ernest C. Manning, Social Credit Member for Strathcona East and Premier.

Seconded by Alfred J. Hooke, Social Credit Member for Rocky Mountain House and Minister of Municipal Affairs.

February 15, 1968

Nominated through a motion by Ernest C. Manning, Social Credit Member for Strathcona East and Premier.

Seconded by E. Peter Lougheed, Progressive Conservative Member for Calgary-West and Leader of the Opposition.

Gerard J. Amerongen

March 2, 1972

Nominated through a motion by E. Peter Lougheed, Progressive Conservative Member for Calgary-West and Premier.

Seconded by Harry E. Strom, Social Credit Member for Cypress and Leader of the Opposition.

May 15, 1975*

Nominated through a motion by James E. Miller, Progressive Conservative Member for Lloydminster.

Seconded by Fredrick T. Mandeville, Social Credit Member for Bow Valley-Empress.

May 15, 1979

Nominated through a motion by Dr. Kenneth R. H. Paproski, Progressive Conservative Member for Edmonton Kingsway.

Seconded by Fredrick T. Mandeville, Social Credit Member for Bow Valley-Empress.

* This was the first nomination by a Member who was not Premier.

March 10, 1983*

Nominated through a motion by Henry Kroeger, Progressive Conservative Member for Chinook.

Seconded by Alois P. Hiebert, Progressive Conservative Member for Edmonton Gold Bar.

David J. Carter

June 12, 1986

Nominated through a motion by Donald R. Getty, Progressive Conservative Member for Edmonton Whitemud and Premier.

Seconded by Raymond Martin, New Democrat Member for Edmonton Norwood and Leader of the Opposition.

June 1, 1989

Nominated through a motion by Donald R. Getty, Progressive Conservative Member for Edmonton Whitemud and Premier.

Seconded by Raymond Martin, New Democrat Member for Edmonton Norwood and Leader of the Opposition.

Stanley S. Schumacher

August 30, 1993†

Nominated through a motion by Kenneth R. Kowalski, Progressive Conservative Member for Barrhead and Minister of Economic Development and Tourism.

Kenneth R. Kowalski

April 14, 1997

Nominated through a motion by Carol L. Haley, Progressive Conservative Member for Airdrie-Rocky View.

April 9, 2001

Nominated through a motion by Carol L. Haley, Progressive Conservative Member for Airdrie-Rocky View.

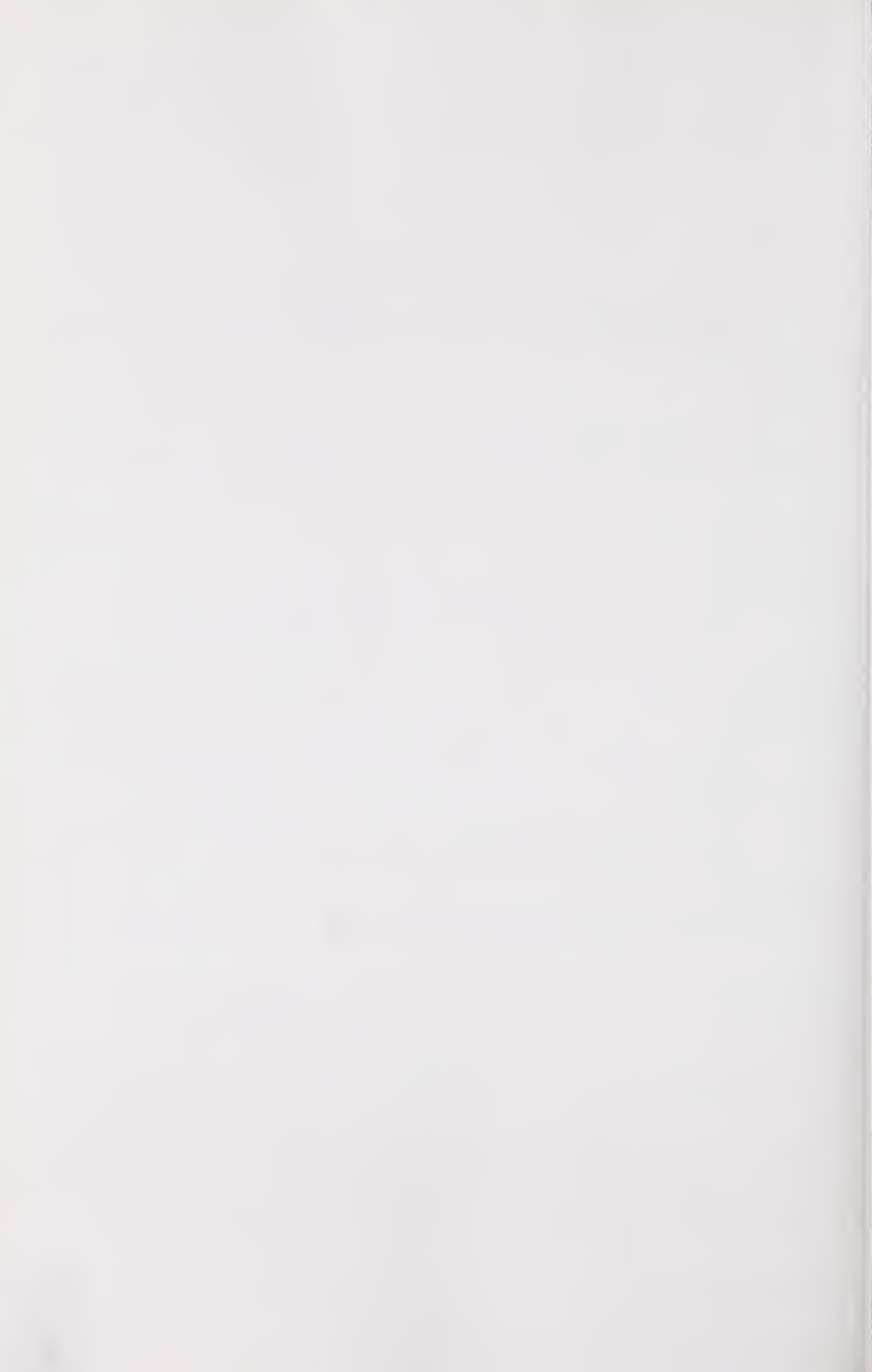
March 1, 2005

Nominated through a motion by Carol L. Haley, Progressive Conservative Member for Airdrie-Chestermere.

* This Legislature opened with an Opposition of four: two New Democrats and two Independents. At issue was the question of which group would be recognized by the Speaker as the Official Opposition.

† This was the first election by secret ballot of a Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. In this system, the nomination is not seconded. Instead, the Clerk of the Legislative Assembly asks the Member if he or she accepts the nomination. Alberta. Legislative Assembly, *Standing Orders of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Effective February 26, 2002, Amended April 7, 2003* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 2003), Schedule A.





Appendix F – Tenures

To date, the Alberta Speaker with the shortest tenure in the Chair is N. Eldon Tanner. After presiding over the Legislative Assembly for less than a year, Tanner resigned as Speaker to accept an appointment as the Minister of Lands and Mines. Peter Dawson, Tanner's successor, holds the record for the longest tenure as Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. After serving the Legislative Assembly for over 26 years, Dawson passed away while still in office. At the time of his death, Dawson had served the second-longest term as Speaker in the parliamentary history of the British Commonwealth.

Tenures – North-West Territories

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Dates of Tenure</i>	<i>Length of Service (Calendar Days)</i>	<i>Event Marking End of Service</i>
Herbert C. Wilson	October 31, 1888– November 29, 1890*	759	Prorogation
James H. Ross	December 10, 1891– August 30, 1892	264	Resignation
	December 7, 1892 – October 1, 1894	663	Dissolution
John F. Betts	August 29, 1895– October 13, 1898	1,141	Dissolution
William Eakin	April 4, 1899– April 26, 1902	1,117	Dissolution
Archibald B. Gillis	April 16, 1903– October 8, 1904†	541	Prorogation

* The date of prorogation used has been taken from the *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories*. We have been unable to determine the dissolution date as it is not available in the *Journals* or the *Gazette*.

† The date of prorogation used has been taken from the *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories*. The dissolution date is not available in the *Journals* or the *Gazette*. On August 31, 1905, the Government of the North-West Territories ceased to exist. North-West Territories. Council, *North-West Territories Gazette*, vol. 22, no. 17, 31 August 1905, p. 8; *North-west Territories Amendment Act*, S.C. 1905, c. 27, ss. 14–15.



Tenures – Alberta

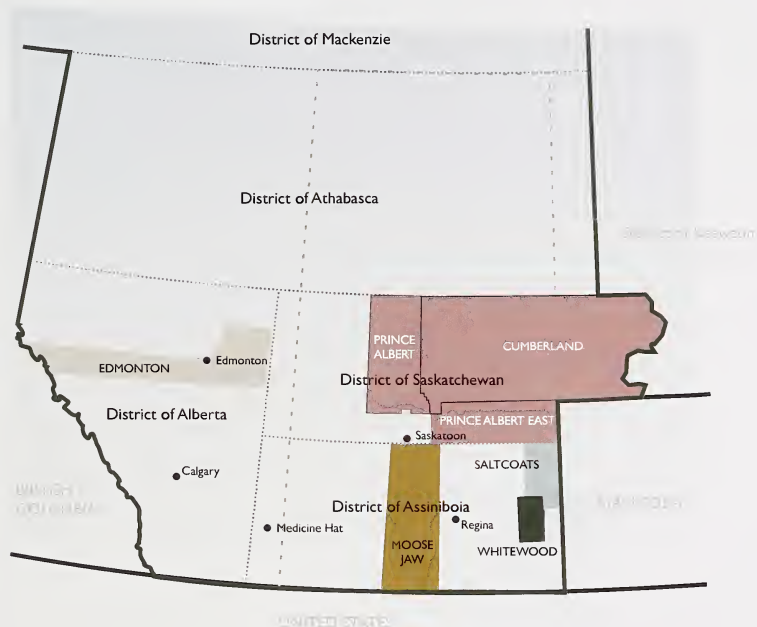
<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Dates of Tenure</i>	<i>Length of Service (Calendar Days)</i>	<i>Event Marking End of Service</i>
Charles W. Fisher	March 15, 1906– May 5, 1919	4,799	Died in Office
Charles S. Pingle	February 17, 1920– June 30, 1921	499	Dissolution
Oran L. McPherson	February 2, 1922– May 25, 1926	1,573	Dissolution
George N. Johnston	February 10, 1927– July 22, 1935	3,267	Dissolution
N. Eldon Tanner	February 6, 1936– January 4, 1937	333	Resignation [Appointed to Executive Council]
Peter Dawson	February 25, 1937– March 24, 1963	9,523	Died in Office
Arthur J. Dixon	March 26, 1963– March 1, 1972	3,263	Newly elected Progressive Conservative Government elected a member of their own caucus as Speaker
Gerard J. Amerongen	March 2, 1972– June 11, 1986	5,214	Defeated at provincial general election (May 8, 1986)
David J. Carter	June 12, 1986– August 29, 1993	2,635	Did not seek re-election as Member
Stanley S. Schumacher	August 30, 1993– April 13, 1997	1,322	Did not seek re-election as Member
Kenneth R. Kowalski	April 14, 1997–	2,969*	Speaker at time of publication

* As of May 31, 2005.



Appendix G – Maps of Constituency Areas of Speakers

North-West Territories 1888–1905



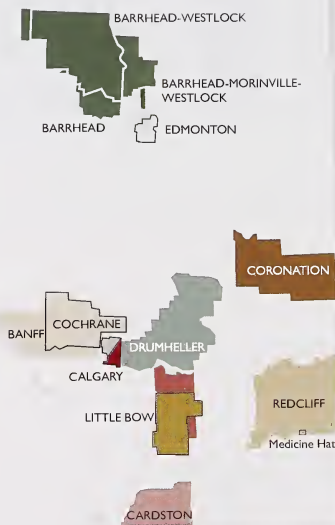
----- Boundaries of Alberta and Saskatchewan as drawn in 1905

..... Boundaries of Districts of Alberta, Assiniboia, Athabasca and Saskatchewan as drawn in 1895

- 
Herbert C. Wilson
 Speaker from 1888-1890
 1888-1891 EDMONTON
- 
James H. Ross
 Speaker from 1891-1892, 1892-1894
 1888-1901 MOOSE JAW
- 
John F. Betts
 Speaker from 1895-1898
 1888-1891 PRINCE ALBERT
 1891-1894 CUMBERLAND
 1894-1898 PRINCE ALBERT EAST
- 
William Eakin
 Speaker from 1899-1902
 1894-1902 SALT COATS
- 
Archibald B. Gillis
 Speaker from 1903-1904
 1894-1905 WHITEWOOD



Alberta 1905–2005



Charles W. Fisher
Speaker from 1906-1919
1905-1909 BANFF
1909-1919 COCHRANE

Charles S. Pingle
Speaker from 1920-1921
1913-1921 REDCLIFF
1925-1928 MEDICINE HAT

Oran L. McPherson
Speaker from 1922-1926
1921-1935 LITTLE BOW

George N. Johnston
Speaker from 1927-1935
1921-1935 CORONATION

N. Eldon Tanner
Speaker from 1936-1937
1935-1952 CARDSTON

Peter Dawson
Speaker from 1937-1963
1935-1963 LITTLE BOW

Arthur J. Dixon
Speaker from 1963-1972
1952-1959 CALGARY
1959-1963 CALGARY-SOUTH EAST
1963-1971 CALGARY-SOUTH
1971-1975 CALGARY-MILLCAN

Gerard J. Amerongen
Speaker from 1972-1986
1971-1986 EDMONTON-MEADOWLARK

David J. Carter
Speaker from 1986-1993
1979-1982 CALGARY-MILLCAN
1982-1993 CALGARY-EGMONT

Stanley S. Schumacher
Speaker from 1993-1997
1986-1997 DRUMHELLER

Kenneth R. Kowalski
Speaker from 1997-
1979-1993 BARRHEAD
1993-2004 BARRHEAD-WESTLOCK
2004- BARRHEAD-MORINVILLE-
WESTLOCK

Appendix H – Sessions of the Legislative Assembly

The number of sitting days in a particular Session of the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories and Alberta has been determined by defining the commencement date as the first day of sitting in which there has been a regular daily routine and the closing day as the day of prorogation or dissolution, whichever comes first. Since the institution of the secret ballot for the election of the Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta in 1997, the first date of the Legislature has not been counted as a sitting day because of the absence of the daily routine, although it is included in the official Session dates.

Sessions—North-West Territories

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
1st/1st	October 31, 1888– December 11, 1888	31	Not Available	December 11, 1888		Herbert C. Wilson
1st/2nd	October 16, 1889– November 22, 1889	31	Not Available	November 22, 1889		Herbert C. Wilson
1st/3rd	October 29, 1890– November 29, 1890	25	Not Available	November 29, 1890	No record	Herbert C. Wilson
2nd/1st	December 10, 1891– January 25, 1892	34	Not Available	January 25, 1892		James H. Ross
2nd/2nd	August 2, 1892– September 1, 1892	24	Not Available	September 1, 1892		James H. Ross
2nd/3rd	December 7, 1892– December 31, 1892	20	Not Available	December 31, 1892		James H. Ross
2nd/4th	August 17, 1893– September 16, 1893	24	Not Available	September 16, 1893		James H. Ross
2nd/5th	August 2, 1894– September 7, 1894	29	4,865	September 7, 1894	October 1, 1894	James H. Ross
3rd/1st	August 29, 1895– September 30, 1895	24	5,055	September 30, 1895		John F. Betts
3rd/2nd	September 29, 1896– October 30, 1896	24	4,105	October 30, 1896		John F. Betts
3rd/3rd	October 28, 1897– December 15, 1897	32	6,355	December 15, 1897		John F. Betts
3rd/4th	August 16, 1898– September 19, 1898	25	4,195	September 19, 1898	October 13, 1898	John F. Betts
4th/1st	April 4, 1899– April 29, 1899	21	3,770	April 29, 1899		William Eakin
4th/2nd	March 29, 1900– May 4, 1900	23	5,000	May 4, 1900		William Eakin



Sessions—North-West Territories (Continued)

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
4th/3rd	May 2, 1901– June 12, 1901	27	6,290	June 12, 1901		William Eakin
4th/4th	March 20, 1902– April 19, 1902	18	3,350	April 19, 1902	April 26, 1902	William Eakin
5th/1st	April 16, 1903– June 19, 1903	19	3,035	June 19, 1903		Archibald B. Gillis
5th/2nd	October 29, 1903– November 21, 1903	17	2,410	November 21, 1903		Archibald B. Gillis
5th/3rd	September 22, 1904– October 8, 1904	13	1,515	October 8, 1904	No record	Archibald B. Gillis

Sessions—Alberta

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
1st/1st	March 15, 1906– May 9, 1906	38	8,370	May 9, 1906		Charles W. Fisher
1st/2nd	January 24, 1907– March 15, 1907	35	4,895	March 15, 1907		Charles W. Fisher
1st/3rd	January 16, 1908– March 5, 1908	35	4,175	March 5, 1908		Charles W. Fisher
1st/4th	January 14, 1909– February 25, 1909	29	3,515	February 25, 1909	February 26, 1909	Charles W. Fisher
2nd/1st	February 10, 1910– May 26, 1910	29	4,670	May 26, 1910		Charles W. Fisher
2nd/2nd	November 10, 1910– December 16, 1910	26	5,525	December 16, 1910		Charles W. Fisher
2nd/3rd	November 30, 1911– February 16, 1912	35	9,350	February 16, 1912		Charles W. Fisher
2nd/4th	February 11, 1913– March 25, 1913	29	7,010	March 25, 1913	March 25, 1913	Charles W. Fisher
3rd/1st	September 16, 1913– October 25, 1913	30	9,145	October 25, 1913		Charles W. Fisher



Sessions—Alberta (Continued)

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Total Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
3rd/2nd	October 7, 1914– October 22, 1914	10	2,040	October 22, 1914		Charles W. Fisher
3rd/3rd	February 25, 1915– April 17, 1915	34	6,650	April 17, 1915		Charles W. Fisher
3rd/4th	February 24, 1916– April 19, 1916	40	8,505	April 19, 1916		Charles W. Fisher
3rd/5th	February 6, 1917– April 5, 1917	42	7,545	April 5, 1917	May 14, 1917	Charles W. Fisher
4th/1st	February 7, 1918– April 13, 1918	36	8,400	April 13, 1918		Charles W. Fisher
4th/2nd	February 4, 1919– April 17, 1919	54	12,280	April 17, 1919		Charles W. Fisher
4th/3rd	February 17, 1920– April 10, 1920	41	10,705	April 10, 1920		Charles S. Pingle
4th/4th	February 15, 1921– April 19, 1921	48	12,646	April 19, 1921	June 23, 1921	Charles S. Pingle
5th/1st	February 2, 1922– March 28, 1922	40	8,455	March 28, 1922		Oran L. McPherson
5th/2nd	July 25, 1922– July 31, 1922	6	1,185	July 31, 1922		Oran L. McPherson
5th/3rd	January 23, 1923– April 21, 1923	64	13,980	April 21, 1923		Oran L. McPherson
5th/4th	January 28, 1924– April 12, 1924	57	14,155	April 12, 1924		Oran L. McPherson
5th/5th	February 19, 1925– August 6, 1925 Sittings:	41	10,565	August 6, 1925		Oran L. McPherson
	February 19– April 10	37				
	August 3–6	4				
5th/6th	February 11, 1926– May 22, 1926 Sittings:	42	9,595	May 22, 1926	May 25, 1926	Oran L. McPherson
	February 11– April 8	39				
	May 20–22	3				



Sessions—Alberta (Continued)

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Total Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
6th/1th	February 10, 1927– April 2, 1927	37	9,500	April 2, 1927		George N. Johnston
6th/2nd	February 2, 1928– March 21, 1928	35	8,580	March 21, 1928		George N. Johnston
6th/3rd	January 31, 1929– March 20, 1929	34	8,015	March 20, 1929		George N. Johnston
6th/4th	January 30, 1930– April 3, 1930 Sittings:	38	8,290	April 3, 1930	May 10, 1930	George N. Johnston
	January 30– March 21	36				
	April 2–3	2				
7th/1st	January 29, 1931– March 28, 1931	43	10,175	March 28, 1931		George N. Johnston
7th/2nd	February 4, 1932– April 6, 1932	44	11,255	April 6, 1932		George N. Johnston
7th/3rd	February 9, 1933– April 11, 1933	43	10,760	April 11, 1933		George N. Johnston
7th/4th	February 8, 1934– April 16, 1934	47	12,665	April 16, 1934		George N. Johnston
7th/5th	February 7, 1935– April 23, 1935	52	13,880	April 23, 1935	July 22, 1935	George N. Johnston
8th/1st	February 6, 1936– April 7, 1936	40	6,630	April 7, 1936		N. Eldon Tanner
8th/2nd	August 25, 1936– September 1, 1936	6	1,120	September 1, 1936		N. Eldon Tanner
8th/3rd	February 25, 1937– June 17, 1937	35	6,090	June 17, 1937		Peter Dawson
8th/4th	August 3, 1937– August 6, 1937	4	730	August 6, 1937		Peter Dawson
8th/5th	September 24, 1937– October 5, 1937	8	1,965	October 5, 1937		Peter Dawson
8th/6th	February 10, 1938– April 8, 1938	41	7,570	April 8, 1938		Peter Dawson
8th/7th	November 15, 1938– November 22, 1938	6	805	November 22, 1938		Peter Dawson



Sessions—Alberta (Continued)

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Total Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
8th/8th	February 9, 1939– April 3, 1939	37	7,150	April 3, 1939		Peter Dawson
8th/9th	February 8, 1940– February 16, 1940	7	2,010	February 16, 1940	February 16, 1940	Peter Dawson
9th/1st	February 20, 1941– April 8, 1941	32	6,650	April 8, 1941		Peter Dawson
9th/2nd	January 29, 1942– March 19, 1942	35	6,485	March 19, 1942		Peter Dawson
9th/3rd	February 18, 1943– March 30, 1943	28	5,670	March 30, 1943		Peter Dawson
9th/4th	February 10, 1944– March 24, 1944	31	6,620	March 24, 1944	July 7, 1944	Peter Dawson
10th/1st	February 22, 1945– April 6, 1945	29	5,715	April 6, 1945		Peter Dawson
10th/2nd	July 24, 1945– July 26, 1945	3	330	July 26, 1945		Peter Dawson
10th/3rd	February 14, 1946– March 27, 1946	29	5,140	March 27, 1946		Peter Dawson
10th/4th	February 20, 1947– March 31, 1947	28	5,120	March 31, 1947		Peter Dawson
10th/5th	February 19, 1948– March 31, 1948	28	4,705	March 31, 1948	July 16, 1948	Peter Dawson
11th/1st	February 17, 1949– March 29, 1949	27	4,915	March 29, 1949		Peter Dawson
11th/2nd	July 4, 1949– July 7, 1949	4	860	July 7, 1949		Peter Dawson
11th/3rd	February 23, 1950– April 5, 1950	30	5,850	April 5, 1950		Peter Dawson
11th/4th	February 22, 1951– April 7, 1951	31	5,665	April 7, 1951		Peter Dawson
11th/5th	February 21, 1952– April 10, 1952	35	8,695	April 10, 1952	July 3, 1952	Peter Dawson
12th/1st	February 19, 1953– April 2, 1953	31	5,840	April 2, 1953		Peter Dawson
12th/2nd	February 18, 1954– April 8, 1954	36	6,932	April 8, 1954		Peter Dawson



Sessions—Alberta (Continued)

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Total Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
12th/3rd	February 17, 1955– May 12, 1955	38	6,930	May 12, 1955	May 12, 1955	Peter Dawson
13th/1st	August 17, 1955– August 25, 1955	7	1,285	August 25, 1955		Peter Dawson
13th/2nd	February 9, 1956– March 29, 1956	34	8,048	March 29, 1956		Peter Dawson
13th/3rd	February 14, 1957– April 11, 1957	41	9,063	April 11, 1957		Peter Dawson
13th/4th	February 20, 1958– April 14, 1958	34	7,997	April 14, 1958		Peter Dawson
13th/5th	February 5, 1959– April 7, 1959	42	9,995	April 7, 1959	May 9, 1959	Peter Dawson
14th/1st	February 11, 1960– April 11, 1960	43	7,194	April 11, 1960		Peter Dawson
14th/2nd	February 16, 1961– April 12, 1961	38	7,160	April 12, 1961		Peter Dawson
14th/3rd	November 28, 1961– November 29, 1961	2	210	November 29, 1961		Peter Dawson
14th/4th	February 15, 1962– April 5, 1962	36	7,033	April 5, 1962		Peter Dawson
14th/5th	February 14, 1963– March 29, 1963	31	6,060	March 29, 1963	May 9, 1963	Peter Dawson/ Arthur J. Dixon
15th/1st	February 13, 1964– April 15, 1964	39	6,834	April 15, 1964		Arthur J. Dixon
15th/2nd	February 18, 1965– April 12, 1965	38	7,678	April 12, 1965		Arthur J. Dixon
15th/3rd	February 17, 1966– April 18, 1966	41	8,402	April 18, 1966		Arthur J. Dixon
15th/4th	November 16, 1966– November 17, 1966	2	240	November 17, 1966		Arthur J. Dixon
15th/5th	February 9, 1967– April 11, 1967	41	8,158	April 11, 1967	April 14, 1967	Arthur J. Dixon
16th/1st	February 15, 1968– May 2, 1968	54	13,762	May 2, 1968		Arthur J. Dixon
16th/2nd	February 13, 1969– May 7, 1969	58	12,504	May 7, 1969		Arthur J. Dixon

Sessions—Alberta (Continued)

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Total Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
16th/3rd	January 29, 1970– April 15, 1970	49	11,742	April 15, 1970		Arthur J. Dixon
16th/4th	February 11, 1971– April 27, 1971	52	11,796	April 27, 1971	July 22, 1971	Arthur J. Dixon
17th/1st	March 2, 1972– November 22, 1972 Sittings: March 2– June 2 October 25– November 22	60 20	21,373	November 22, 1972		Gerard J. Amerongen
17th/2nd	February 15, 1973– December 14, 1973 Sittings: February 15– May 10 October 10– 30 December 3–14	57 15 10	20,434	December 14, 1973		Gerard J. Amerongen
17th/3rd	March 7, 1974– November 6, 1974 Sittings: March 7– June 6 October 23– November 6	71 11	17,142	November 6, 1974		Gerard J. Amerongen
17th/4th	January 23, 1975– February 14, 1975	17	3,741	February 14, 1975	February 14, 1975	Gerard J. Amerongen
18th/1st	May 15, 1975– December 15, 1975 Sittings: May 15– June 25 November 12– December 15	29 20	10,784	December 15, 1975		Gerard J. Amerongen



Sessions—Alberta (Continued)

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Total Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
18th/2nd	March 4, 1976– November 4, 1976 Sittings: March 4– May 19 October 13– November 4	68 51 17	14,598	November 4, 1976		Gerard J. Amerongen
18th/3rd	February 24, 1977– November 10, 1977 Sittings: February 24–May 18 October 12– November 10	78 56 22	16,376	November 10, 1977		Gerard J. Amerongen
18th/4th	March 2, 1978– November 3, 1978 Sittings: March 2– May 16 October 11– November 3	67 49 18	13,594	November 3, 1978	February 14, 1979	Gerard J. Amerongen
19th/1st	May 24, 1979– November 16, 1979 Sittings: May 24–July 4 October 10– November 16	56 29 27	10,815	November 16, 1979		Gerard J. Amerongen
19th/2nd	March 20, 1980– March 30, 1981 Sittings: March 20– May 22 October 20, 1980– March 30, 1981	70 42 28	15,597	March 30, 1981		Gerard J. Amerongen
19th/3rd	April 2, 1981– March 1, 1982 Sittings: April 2–June 2 October 14, 1981– March 1, 1982	85 40 45	20,517	March 1, 1982		Gerard J. Amerongen



Sessions—Alberta (Continued)

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Total Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
19th/4th	March 4, 1982– May 4, 1982	39	8,207	May 4, 1982	October 5, 1982	Gerard J. Amerongen
20th/1st	March 10, 1983– March 2, 1984 Sittings: March 10– June 6 October 19, 1983 March 2, 1984	78 54 24	16,849	March 2, 1984		Gerard J. Amerongen
20th/2nd	March 15, 1984– March 13, 1985 Sittings: March 15– May 31 October 17– November 13 March 13	64 48 15 1	13,736	March 13, 1985		Gerard J. Amerongen
20th/3rd	March 14, 1985– April 2, 1986	51	11,726	April 2, 1986		Gerard J. Amerongen
20th/4th	April 3, 1986– April 10, 1986	6	1,217	April 10, 1986	April 10, 1986	Gerard J. Amerongen
21st/1st	June 12, 1986– September 18, 1986	63	15,563	March 4, 1987		David J. Carter
21st/2nd	March 5, 1987– March 16, 1988 Sittings: March 5– June 17 November 23– December 10	81 67 14	18,867	March 16, 1988		David J. Carter
21st/3rd	March 17, 1988– July 6, 1988	72	18,464	February 16, 1989		David J. Carter
21st/4th	February 17, 1989	1	71	February 17, 1989	February 20, 1989	David J. Carter
22nd/1st	June 1, 1989– August 18, 1989	48	12,749	March 7, 1990		David J. Carter



Sessions—Alberta (Continued)

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Total Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
22nd/2nd	March 8, 1990– March 13, 1991 Sittings: March 8–July 5 November 26– December 14	90 75 15	23,589	March 13, 1991		David J. Carter
22nd/3rd	March 14, 1991– June 25, 1991	62	16,333	March 18, 1992		David J. Carter
22nd/4th	March 19, 1992– May 18, 1993 Sittings: March 19– July 2 September 21– September 22 January 25– February 12 April 21– May 17	99 63 2 15 19	23,242	No record	May 18, 1993	David J. Carter
23rd/1st	August 30, 1993– November 9, 1993	39	13,009	February 9, 1994		Stanley S. Schumacher
23rd/2nd	February 10, 1994– February 12, 1995 Sittings: February 10–June 1 October 18– November 10	73 58 15	26,070	February 12, 1995		Stanley S. Schumacher
23rd/3rd	February 13, 1995– February 12, 1996 Sittings: February 13– May 16 October 11– November 1	60 48 12	19,590	February 12, 1996		Stanley S. Schumacher

Sessions—Alberta (Continued)

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Total Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
23rd/4th	February 13, 1996– February 9, 1997 Sittings: February 13– May 23 August 14–27	61 53 8	21,987	February 9, 1997		Stanley S. Schumacher
23rd/5th	February 10, 1997– February 11, 1997	2	250	February 11, 1997	February 11, 1997	Stanley S. Schumacher
24th/1st	April 14, 1997– January 26, 1998 Sittings: April 14– June 16 December 8–10	38 35 3	13,781	January 26, 1998		Kenneth R. Kowalski
24th/2nd	January 27, 1998– February 15, 1999 Sittings: January 27– April 29 November 16–December 8	63 49 14	22,307	February 15, 1999		Kenneth R. Kowalski
24th/3rd	February 16, 1999– February 16, 2000 Sittings: February 16–May 18 November 17–December 8	62 49 13	22,696	February 16, 2000		Kenneth R. Kowalski
24th/4th	February 17, 2000– February 11, 2001 Sittings: February 17–May 25 November 14–28	56 47 9	20,682	February 11, 2001		Kenneth R. Kowalski
24th/5th	February 12, 2001	1	65	No record	February 12, 2001	Kenneth R. Kowalski



Sessions—Alberta (Continued)

<i>Legislature/ Session</i>	<i>Session Dates</i>	<i>Total Sitting Days</i>	<i>Total Sitting Minutes</i>	<i>Prorogation Date</i>	<i>Dissolution Date</i>	<i>Speaker</i>
25th/1st	April 9, 2001– February 25, 2002* Sittings: April 9–May 31 November 13–29	36 25 11	12,403	February 25, 2002		Kenneth R. Kowalski
25th/2nd	February 26, 2002– February 17, 2003 Sittings: February 26–May 14 November 19– December 14	47 37 10	15,418	February 17, 2003		Kenneth R. Kowalski
25th/3rd	February 18, 2003– February 16, 2004 Sittings: February 18– May 15 November 18– December 3	56 46 10	19,231	February 16, 2004		Kenneth R. Kowalski
25th/4th	February 17, 2004– October 24, 2004	43	12,246	No record	October 25, 2004	Kenneth R. Kowalski
26th/1st	March 1, 2005– May 24, 2005	42	13,394			Kenneth R. Kowalski

Alberta:

Longest Continuous Sitting: 75 days (22nd Legislature, Second Session)

Fewest Sessions in a Legislature: 3 (12th Legislature)

Greatest Number of Sessions in a Legislature: 9 (Eighth Legislature)

* Please note that the title pages for the *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta* for the first three Sessions of the 25th Legislature show the end of the Session as the last sitting day rather than the date of prorogation.

Appendix I – Officials by Legislature

Records for Table Officers and other officials of the Legislature are incomplete, especially in the North-West Territories and in the early days in Alberta, and have been compiled from various sources such as the *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories*, *Journals of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta*, *North-West Territories Gazette*, *Alberta Gazette*, Orders in Council, the *Canadian Parliamentary Guide* and the *Canadian Parliamentary Companion*, as well as from records from the Provincial Archives of Alberta, news releases and newspaper accounts. In some cases, it was not possible to verify full names, proper titles or exact dates of service using primary sources.

Officials—North-West Territories

First Legislature (October 31, 1888 – November 29, 1890)

Lieutenant Governor	Joseph Royal
Speaker	Dr. Herbert C. Wilson
Deputy Speaker	John G. Turriff
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Robert B. Gordon
Legal Experts of the Legislative Assembly	Lt. Col. Hugh Richardson, Lt. Col. James F. Macleod, Charles B. Rouleau

Second Legislature (December 10, 1891 – September 7, 1894)

Lieutenant Governor	Joseph Royal, Charles H. Mackintosh
Speaker	James H. Ross
Deputy Speaker	William Sutherland
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Robert B. Gordon

Third Legislature (August 29, 1895 – September 19, 1898)

Lieutenant Governor	Charles H. Mackintosh, Malcolm C. Cameron
Premier	Frederick W. A. G. Haultain
Speaker	John E. Betts
Deputy Speaker	William Sutherland, Samuel S. Page
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Robert B. Gordon
Clerk of the Executive Council*	John A. Reid

* While not a Legislative Assembly position, this position is included here because for a period of time both this and the position of Clerk of the Legislative Assembly were filled by one individual.



Officials—North-West Territories (Continued)

Fourth Legislature (April 4, 1899 – April 19, 1902)

Lieutenant Governor	Amédée E. M. Forget
Premier	Frederick W. A. G. Haultain
Speaker	William Eakin
Deputy Speaker	Archibald B. Gillis
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Robert B. Gordon, Samuel S. Page
Clerk of the Executive Council	John A. Reid

Fifth Legislature (April 16, 1903 – October 8, 1904)

Lieutenant Governor	Amédée E. M. Forget
Premier	Frederick W. A. G. Haultain
Speaker	Archibald B. Gillis
Deputy Speaker	Alexander C. Rutherford
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Samuel S. Page
Clerk of the Executive Council	John A. Reid

Officials—Alberta

First Legislature (March 15, 1906 – February 25, 1909)

Lieutenant Governor	George H. V. Bulyea
Premier	Alexander C. Rutherford
Speaker	Charles W. Fisher
Deputy Speaker	John R. Boyle
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	John R. Cowell
Clerk Assistant	James A. Ross
Sergeant-at-Arms	Francis E. Bradley
Law Clerk*	John K. MacDonald, G.B. Henwood
Clerk of the Executive Council	Murdoch J. Macleod
Provincial Librarian	William A. Buchanan, John Blue

* The position of Law Clerk evolved over time. The position was defined by legislation for the first time in *The Statutes Law Amendment Act* of 1921, although the *Standing Orders* mention the position of Law Clerk in its very first (1906) edition. *The Statutes Law Amendment Act*, S.A. 1921, c. 5, s. 36; Alberta. Legislative Assembly. *Rules, Orders and Forms of Proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, Adopted by the House, March 1906* (Edmonton: Jas. E. Richards, 1906), Standing Order 49.

Officials—Alberta (Continued)

Second Legislature (February 10, 1910 – March 25, 1913)

Lieutenant Governor	George H. V. Bulyea
Premier	Alexander C. Rutherford, Arthur L. Sifton
Speaker	Charles W. Fisher
Deputy Speaker	John A. Simpson
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	John R. Cowell
Clerk Assistant	James A. Ross, J. Knowles
Sergeant-at-Arms	Francis E. Bradley, C. F. Brandt
Law Clerk	G. B. Henwood
Clerk of the Executive Council	Murdoch J. Macleod, Donald Baker
Provincial Librarian	John Blue

Third Legislature (September 16, 1913 – April 5, 1917)

Lieutenant Governor	George H. V. Bulyea, Dr. Robert G. Brett
Premier	Arthur L. Sifton
Speaker	Charles W. Fisher
Deputy Speaker	Joseph E. Stauffer, George P. Smith
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	John R. Cowell
Clerk Assistant*	J. Knowles, Robert A. Andison
Sergeant-at-Arms	C. F. Brandt, Joseph W. D. Turner
Law Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	John D. Hunt
Clerk of the Executive Council	Donald Baker, John D. Hunt
Provincial Librarian	John Blue

Fourth Legislature (February 7, 1918 – April 19, 1921)

Lieutenant Governor	Dr. Robert G. Brett
Premier	Charles Stewart
Speaker	Charles W. Fisher, Charles S. Pingle
Deputy Speaker	Martin Woolf
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	John R. Cowell
Clerk Assistant	Robert A. Andison
Sergeant-at-Arms	Joseph W. D. Turner
Law Clerk	John D. Hunt
Clerk of the Executive Council	John D. Hunt
Provincial Librarian	John Blue

* H. Baker may have also served as Clerk Assistant in this Legislature in 1915 and 1917.



Officials—Alberta (Continued)

Fifth Legislature (February 2, 1922 – May 22, 1926)

Lieutenant Governor	Dr. Robert G. Brett, Dr. William Egbert
Premier	Herbert Greenfield, John E. Brownlee
Speaker	Oran L. McPherson
Deputy Speaker	Charles M. McKeen
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	John R. Cowell, Robert A. Andison
Clerk Assistant	Robert A. Andison, B. M. Graves
Sergeant-at-Arms	Joseph W. D. Turner
Law Clerk	John D. Hunt
Clerk of the Executive Council	John D. Hunt
Provincial Librarian	John A. Jaffary

Sixth Legislature (February 10, 1927 – April 3, 1930)

Lieutenant Governor	Dr. William Egbert
Premier	John E. Brownlee
Speaker	George N. Johnston
Deputy Speaker	Charles M. McKeen
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Robert A. Andison
Clerk Assistant	B. M. Graves, J. Thomson
Sergeant-at-Arms	Joseph W. D. Turner
Law Clerk	John D. Hunt
Clerk of the Executive Council	John D. Hunt
Provincial Librarian	John A. Jaffary

*Seventh Legislature (January 29, 1931 – April 23, 1935)**

Lieutenant Governor	Dr. William Egbert, William L. Walsh
Premier	John E. Brownlee, Richard G. Reid
Speaker	George N. Johnston
Deputy Speaker	Charles M. McKeen
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Robert A. Andison
Clerk Assistant	J. Thomson
Sergeant-at-Arms	Joseph W. D. Turner
Law Clerk	John D. Hunt
Clerk of the Executive Council	John D. Hunt

* During the Depression years from 1930 to 1940, there was no Provincial Librarian officially appointed.



Officials—Alberta (*Continued*)

Eighth Legislature (February 6, 1936 – February 16, 1940)

Lieutenant Governor	William L. Walsh, Col. Philip C. H. Primrose, John C. Bowen
Premier	William Aberhart
Speaker	N. Eldon Tanner, Peter Dawson
Deputy Speaker	Joseph L. P. Maynard, Roy C. Taylor
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Robert A. Andison
Clerk Assistant	J. Thomson, Raymond A. Crevolin
Sergeant-at-Arms	Herbert S. Newby
Law Clerk*	Richard A. Smith
Clerk of the Executive Council	Robert A. Andison

Ninth Legislature (February 20, 1941 – March 24, 1944)

Lieutenant Governor	John C. Bowen
Premier	William Aberhart, Ernest C. Manning
Speaker	Peter Dawson
Deputy Speaker	Roy C. Taylor, Alfred J. Hooke, James Hartley
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Robert A. Andison
Clerk Assistant	J. Thomson
Sergeant-at-Arms	Neil MacLean
Law Clerk	Richard A. Smith, William S. Gray
Clerk of the Executive Council	Robert A. Andison
Provincial Librarian	Edith H. Gostick

* Order in Council 108/36 designated that effective January 1, 1936, the Offices of Law Clerk and Legislative Counsel should be held by the same person.



Officials—Alberta (Continued)

10th Legislature (February 22, 1945 – March 31, 1948)

Lieutenant Governor	John C. Bowen
Premier	Ernest C. Manning
Speaker	Peter Dawson
Deputy Speaker	James Hartley
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Robert A. Andison
Clerk Assistant	J. Thomson, Raymond A. Crevolin
Sergeant-at-Arms	Neil MacLean
Law Clerk	William S. Gray, Kenneth A. McKenzie
Clerk of the Executive Council	Robert A. Andison
Provincial Librarian	Edith H. Gostick

11th Legislature (February 17, 1949 – April 10, 1952)

Lieutenant Governor	John C. Bowen, John J. Bowlen
Premier	Ernest C. Manning
Speaker	Peter Dawson
Deputy Speaker	James Hartley
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Robert A. Andison
Clerk Assistant	J. Thomson, Raymond A. Crevolin, John H. Holloway
Sergeant-at-Arms	Neil MacLean
Law Clerk	Kenneth A. McKenzie, James W. Ryan
Clerk of the Executive Council	Robert A. Andison
Provincial Librarian	Edith H. Gostick

12th Legislature (February 19, 1953 – May 12, 1955)

Lieutenant Governor	John J. Bowlen
Premier	Ernest C. Manning
Speaker	Peter Dawson
Deputy Speaker	James Hartley
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Robert A. Andison
Clerk Assistant	Raymond A. Crevolin, John H. Holloway
Sergeant-at-Arms	Neil MacLean
Law Clerk	James W. Ryan
Clerk of the Executive Council	Robert A. Andison
Provincial Librarian	Edith H. Gostick



Officials—Alberta (Continued)

13th Legislature (August 17, 1955 – April 7, 1959)

Lieutenant Governor	John J. Bowlen
Premier	Ernest C. Manning
Speaker	Peter Dawson
Deputy Speaker	Arthur J. Dixon
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Raymond A. Crevolin
Sergeant-at-Arms	James A. Reed
Law Clerk	James W. Ryan
Clerk of the Executive Council	Raymond A. Crevolin
Provincial Librarian	Edith H. Gostick

14th Legislature (February 11, 1960 – March 29, 1963)

Lieutenant Governor	J. Percy Page
Premier	Ernest C. Manning
Speaker	Peter Dawson, Arthur J. Dixon
Deputy Speaker	Arthur J. Dixon, Earl M. Hardy
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Raymond A. Crevolin
Sergeant-at-Arms	James A. Reed
Law Clerk	James W. Ryan, William E. Wood
Clerk of the Executive Council	Raymond A. Crevolin
Provincial Librarian	Eric J. Holmgren

15th Legislature (February 13, 1964 – April 11, 1967)

Lieutenant Governor	J. Percy Page, J. W. Grant MacEwan
Premier	Ernest C. Manning
Speaker	Arthur J. Dixon
Deputy Speaker	Ashley H. C. Cooper
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Raymond A. Crevolin, William H. MacDonald
Clerk Assistant	William H. MacDonald
Sergeant-at-Arms	James A. Reed
Law Clerk	William E. Wood
Clerk of the Executive Council	Raymond A. Crevolin, William H. MacDonald
Provincial Librarian	Eric J. Holmgren



Officials—Alberta (Continued)

16th Legislature (February 15, 1968 – April 27, 1971)

Lieutenant Governor	J. W. Grant MacEwan
Premier	Ernest C. Manning, Harry E. Strom
Speaker	Arthur J. Dixon
Deputy Speaker	Ashley H. C. Cooper
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	William H. Macdonald
Clerk Assistant	Warren C. Graves
Sergeant-at-Arms	James A. Reed
Law Clerk	William E. Wood
Clerk of the Executive Council	William H. Macdonald
Provincial Librarian	Eric J. Holmgren

17th Legislature (March 2, 1972 – February 14, 1975)

Lieutenant Governor	J. W. Grant MacEwan, Ralph G. Steinhauer
Premier	E. Peter Lougheed
Speaker	Gerard J. Amerongen
Deputy Speaker	W. Bill Diachuk
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	William H. MacDonald
Clerk Assistant	Warren C. Graves, Alexander Small
Sergeant-at-Arms	James A. Reed
Law Clerk*	Glendon W. Acorn, Michael W. J. Clegg
Clerk of the Executive Council	William H. MacDonald, E. M. 'Ted' Mills†
Legislature Librarian	Eric J. Holmgren, D. Blake McDougall

* The positions of Law Clerk and Legislative Counsel were held by two individuals as of 1975 at the time of Michael W. J. Clegg's employment as Law Clerk. Glendon W. Acorn continued as Legislative Counsel.

† E. M. 'Ted' Mills became Clerk of the Executive Council in 1973, after which William H. MacDonald no longer served concurrently as Clerk of the Legislative Assembly and as Clerk of the Executive Council. As this position is a Government rather than a Legislative one, it is not included in the remainder of the chart.



Officials—Alberta (Continued)

18th Legislature (May 15, 1975 – November 3, 1978)

Lieutenant Governor	Ralph G. Steinhauer
Premier	E. Peter Lougheed
Speaker	Gerard J. Amerongen
Deputy Speaker	Dr. Donald J. McCrimmon
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	William H. MacDonald, Bohdan J. D. Stefaniuk
Clerk Assistant	Alexander Small, Douglas J. Blain
Sergeant-at-Arms	James A. Reed, Grant E. Salmon
Law Clerk and Counsel to the Assembly	Michael W. J. Clegg
Legislature Librarian	D. Blake McDougall

19th Legislature (May 24, 1979 – May 4, 1982)

Lieutenant Governor	Ralph G. Steinhauer, Frank C. Lynch-Staunton
Premier	E. Peter Lougheed
Speaker	Gerard J. Amerongen
Deputy Speaker	Frank P. Appleby
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Bohdan J. D. Stefaniuk
Clerk Assistant	Douglas J. Blain
Sergeant-at-Arms	Grant E. Salmon, Oscar J. Lacombe
Law Clerk and Counsel to the Assembly	Michael W. J. Clegg
Legislature Librarian	D. Blake McDougall

20th Legislature (March 10, 1983 – April 10, 1986)

Lieutenant Governor	Frank C. Lynch-Staunton, W. Helen Hunley
Premier	E. Peter Lougheed, Donald R. Getty
Speaker	Gerard J. Amerongen
Deputy Speaker	Frank P. Appleby
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Bohdan J. D. Stefaniuk
Clerk Assistant	Douglas J. Blain, Robert D. Bubba
Sergeant-at-Arms	Oscar J. Lacombe
Associate Sergeant-at-Arms	Allen E. Gowler
Parliamentary Counsel	Michael W. J. Clegg
Legislature Librarian	D. Blake McDougall



Officials—Alberta (Continued)

21st Legislature (June 12, 1986 – February 17, 1989)

Lieutenant Governor	W. Helen Hunley
Premier	Donald R. Getty
Speaker	David J. Carter
Deputy Speaker	John A. Gogo
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Bohdan J. D. Stefaniuk, Karen M. South (acting), Dr. W. J. David McNeil
Clerk Assistant	Robert D. Bubba, Karen M. South
Assistant Tabling Clerk	L. J. Empson
Sergeant-at-Arms	Oscar J. Lacombe
Associate Sergeant-at-Arms	Allen E. Gowler
Parliamentary Counsel	Michael W. J. Clegg, Michael P. Ritter
Legislature Librarian	D. Blake McDougall*

22nd Legislature (June 1, 1989 – May 18, 1993)

Lieutenant Governor	W. Helen Hunley, T. Gordon Towers
Premier	Donald R. Getty, Ralph P. Klein
Speaker	David J. Carter
Deputy Speaker	Stanley S. Schumacher
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Dr. W. J. David McNeil
Clerk Assistant	Karen M. South, Louise J. Kamuchik
Sergeant-at-Arms	Oscar J. Lacombe
Associate Sergeant-at-Arms	Allen E. Gowler
Parliamentary Counsel	Michael W. J. Clegg, Michael P. Ritter, Franklin J. Work
Legislature Librarian	D. Blake McDougall

* From 1987 until his retirement in 1993, D. Blake McDougall also served in the role of Assistant Deputy Minister. This position existed only within this time frame.



Officials—Alberta (Continued)

23rd Legislature (August 30, 1993 – February 11, 1997)

Lieutenant Governor	T. Gordon Towers, H. A. 'Bud' Olson
Premier	Ralph P. Klein
Speaker	Stanley S. Schumacher
Deputy Speaker	Donald Tannas
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Dr. W. J. David McNeil
Clerk Assistant	Louise J. Kamuchik
Sergeant-at-Arms	Brian G. Hodgson
Associate Sergeant-at-Arms	Allen E. Gowler
Parliamentary Counsel	Franklin J. Work, Robert H. Reynolds, Earl Evaniew, Shannon Dean
Legislature Librarian	Lorne R. Buhr

24th Legislature (April 14, 1997 – February 12, 2001)

Lieutenant Governor	H. A. 'Bud' Olson, Lois E. Hole
Premier	Ralph P. Klein
Speaker	Kenneth R. Kowalski
Deputy Speaker	Donald Tannas
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Dr. W. J. David McNeil
Clerk Assistant	Louise J. Kamuchik
Procedural Clerk	Micheline S. Gravel
Sergeant-at-Arms	Brian G. Hodgson
Associate Sergeant-at-Arms	Allen E. Gowler, William C. Semple, J. Edward Richard
Parliamentary Counsel	Robert H. Reynolds, Shannon Dean
Legislature Librarian	Lorne R. Buhr, Sandra E. Perry



Officials—Alberta (*Continued*)

25th Legislature (April 9, 2001 – October 25, 2004)

Lieutenant Governor	Lois E. Hole
Premier	Ralph P. Klein
Speaker	Kenneth R. Kowalski
Deputy Speaker	Donald Tannas
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Dr. W. J. David McNeil
Clerk Assistant and Clerk of Committees	Louise J. Kamuchik
Clerk of Journals/Table Research	Micheline S. Gravel
Sergeant-at-Arms	Brian G. Hodgson
Associate Sergeant-at-Arms	William C. Semple, J. Edward Richard
Parliamentary Counsel	Robert H. Reynolds, Shannon Dean
Legislature Librarian	Sandra E. Perry

26th Legislature (March 1, 2005–)

Lieutenant Governor	Norman L. Kwong
Premier	Ralph P. Klein
Speaker	Kenneth R. Kowalski
Deputy Speaker	Richard Marz
Clerk of the Legislative Assembly	Dr. W. J. David McNeil
Clerk Assistant	Louise J. Kamuchik
Clerk of Journals/Table Research	Micheline S. Orydzuk
Sergeant-at-Arms	Brian G. Hodgson
Associate Sergeant-at-Arms	William C. Semple, J. Edward Richard
Parliamentary Counsel	Robert H. Reynolds, Shannon Dean
Legislature Librarian	Sandra E. Perry



Appendix J – Speakers' Ages

In the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories, Herbert C. Wilson, at age 28, was the youngest Member to take the Chair, and William Eakin, at age 70, was the oldest. The average age at election of the Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories from 1888 to 1905 was 43 years, one month.

In the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, the youngest Member to take the Chair was Oran L. McPherson, at age 35, and Stanley S. Schumacher, at age 60, was the oldest. To date, the average age at election of the Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of the Alberta from 1905 to 2005 is 45 years, 10 months.

The average age at election of Speakers of the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories and Alberta from 1888 to 2005 is 45 years, 0 months.

Speakers' Ages—North-West Territories

Speaker	Date of Birth	Election as Speaker			End of Tenure as Speaker		
		Date of First Election	Age at Election	Rank, Youngest to Oldest (of 16)	End Date	Age at End of Tenure	Rank, Youngest to Oldest (of 15)
Herbert C. Wilson	December 7, 1859	October 31, 1888	28 years, 10 months, 24 days	1	November 29, 1890	30 years, 11 months, 22 days	1
James H. Ross	May 12, 1856	December 10, 1891	35 years, 6 months, 28 days	2	October 1, 1894	38 years, 4 months, 19 days	2
John E. Betts	October 9, 1854	August 29, 1895	40 years, 10 months, 20 days	8	October 13, 1898	44 years, 0 months, 4 days	7
William Eakin	June 14, 1828	April 4, 1899	70 years, 9 months, 21 days	16	April 26, 1902	73 years, 10 months, 12 days	15
Archibald B. Gillis	January 28, 1864	April 16, 1903	39 years, 2 months, 19 days	5	October 8, 1904	40 years, 8 months, 10 days	5



Speakers' Ages—Alberta

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Date of Birth</i>	<i>Election as Speaker</i>			<i>End of Tenure as Speaker</i>		
		<i>Date of First Election</i>	<i>Age at Election</i>	<i>Rank, Youngest to Oldest (of 16)</i>	<i>End Date</i>	<i>Age at End of Tenure</i>	<i>Rank, Youngest to Oldest (of 15)</i>
Charles W. Fisher	August 4, 1866	March 15, 1906	39 years, 7 months, 11 days	7	May 5, 1919	52 years, 9 months, 1 day	10
Charles S. Pingle	October 16, 1880	February 17, 1920	39 years, 4 months, 1 day	6	June 30, 1921	40 years, 8 months, 14 days	6
Oran L. McPherson	April 12, 1886	February 2, 1922	35 years, 9 months, 21 days	3	May 25, 1926	40 years, 1 months, 13 days	4
George N. Johnston	September 13, 1884	February 10, 1927	42 years, 4 months, 28 days	9	July 22, 1935	50 years, 10 months, 9 days	8
N. Eldon Tanner	May 9, 1898	February 6, 1936	37 years, 8 months, 28 days	4	January 4, 1937	38 years, 7 months, 26 days	3
Peter Dawson	April 11, 1892	February 25, 1937	44 years, 10 months, 14 days	11	March 24, 1963	70 years, 11 months, 13 days	13
Arthur J. Dixon	December 1, 1919	March 26, 1963	43 years, 3 months, 25 days	10	March 1, 1972	52 years, 3 months, 0 days	9
Gerard J. Amerongen	July 18, 1914	March 2, 1972	57 years, 7 months, 15 days	14	June 11, 1986	71 years, 10 months, 23 days	14
David J. Carter	April 6, 1934	June 12, 1986	52 years, 2 months, 6 days	13	August 29, 1993	59 years, 4 months, 23 days	11
Stanley S. Schumacher	June 12, 1933	August 30, 1993	60 years, 2 months, 18 days	15	April 13, 1997	63 years, 10 months, 1 day	12
Kenneth R. Kowalski	September 27, 1945	April 14, 1997	51 years, 6 months, 17 days	12	Not Applicable		



Appendix K – Cabinet and Legislative Positions

The Cabinet includes the Premier and the heads of government ministries. Due to the partisan nature of Cabinet positions, and the impropriety of the Speaker participating in debates, it would not be appropriate for a Speaker to maintain a Cabinet portfolio.

Most Speakers in Canada and its provinces take the Chair having had fewer than 10 years of experience in the House.¹ Oran L. McPherson, N. Eldon Tanner and Gerard J. Amerongen were elected to the Chair having had no prior experience as Members. Only three Speakers had experience as Deputy Speaker before taking on the responsibilities of the Chair (Archibald B. Gillis, Arthur J. Dixon and Stanley S. Schumacher). Herbert C. Wilson,* Charles W. Fisher† and Gerard J. Amerongen held the Speakership during their entire tenures as Members of the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories or Alberta.

Throughout Canada, most Members take the Chair with no Cabinet experience.² One exception to this trend is the current Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski, who already had extensive service in Cabinet prior to his election to the Speaker's Chair. Two of Alberta's Speakers retired from the Chair, but continued their public service as Cabinet Ministers, a fairly common practice for Speakers throughout the Canadian provinces.³

Cabinet and Legislative Positions—North-West Territories

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Position</i>	<i>Years</i>
James H. Ross‡ (1891–1892, 1892–1894)	Member of Executive Committee	1895–1897
	Member of Executive Council:	1897–1901
	Commissioner of Agriculture	1897–1899
	Commissioner of Public Works	1897–1901
	Territorial Treasurer	1897–1899
	Territorial Secretary	1899–1901
John F. Betts (1895–1898)	Member of Advisory Council	1889, 1890–1891
Archibald B. Gillis (1903–1904)	Deputy Speaker	1899–1902

* Wilson was a member of the North-West Council prior to the existence of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories.

† Fisher was a Member of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories before the Province of Alberta was created.

‡ Ross was a member of the North-West Council prior to the creation of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories.



Cabinet and Legislative Positions—Alberta

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Position</i>	<i>Years</i>
Oran L. McPherson (1922–1926)	Minister of Public Works	1926–1934
N. Eldon Tanner (1936–1937)	Minister of Lands and Mines	1937–1949
	Minister of Lands and Forests	1949–1952
	Minister of Mines and Minerals	1949–1952
Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972)	Deputy Speaker	1955–1963
Stanley S. Schumacher (1993–1997)	Deputy Speaker	1989–1993



Cabinet and Legislative Positions—Alberta (Continued)

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Position</i>	<i>Years</i>
Kenneth R. Kowalski (1997–)	Minister of the Environment	1986–1988
	Minister Responsible for Public Safety Services	1986–1988, 1989–1991
	Minister of Career Development and Employment	1988–1989
	Minister Responsible for Lotteries and Financial Assistance to Major Exhibitions and Fairs	1988–1992
	Minister of Public Works, Supply and Services	1989–1993
	Minister Responsible for Alberta Gaming Commission	1991–1993 and 1994
	Deputy Premier	1992–1994
	Minister Responsible for ACCESS Corporation	1992–1993
	Minister Responsible for Alberta Racing Commission	1992–1993 and 1994
	Minister Responsible for Lotteries and Gaming	1992–1993
	Minister Responsible for Public Affairs Bureau	1992–1993
	Minister Responsible for Wild Rose Foundation	1992–1993
	Government House Leader	1993
	Minister of Economic Development and Tourism	1993–1994
	Minister Responsible for International Trade Offices	1993–1994
	Minister Responsible for Lotteries	1993–1994
	Minister Responsible for Technology, Research and Telecommunications	1993–1994

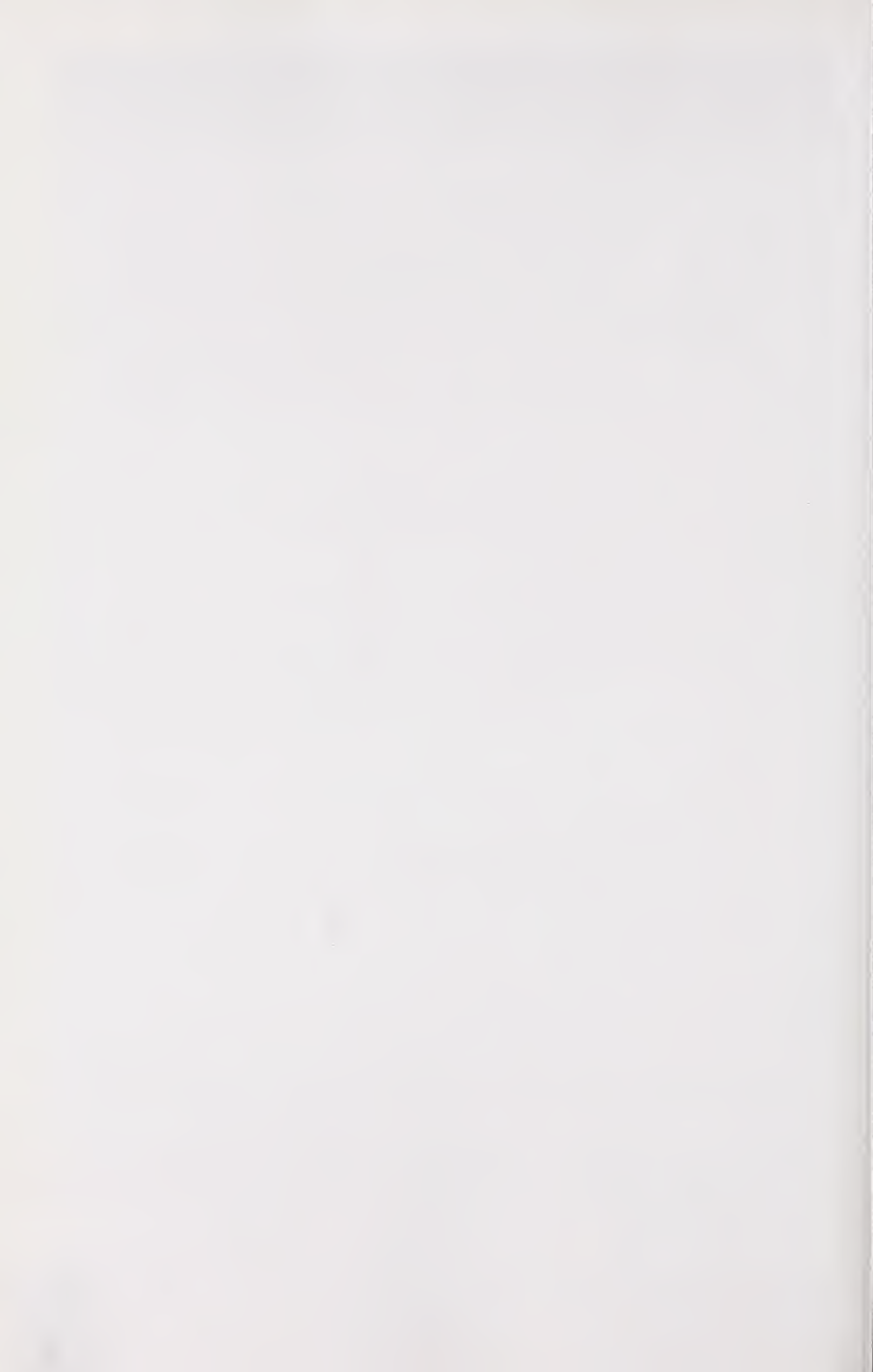
Notes

¹ Robert J. Fleming and J. Thomas Mitchinson, "The Speakership in Canada," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 6, no. 1 (Spring 1983): p. 21.

² *Ibid.*

³ Philip Laundy, *The Office of Speaker* (London: Cassell, 1964), p. 137.





Appendix L – Years and Places of Birth

The first Speaker of the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories and Alberta to have been born in Canada was Herbert C. Wilson and the first Speaker to have been born in Alberta was Stanley S. Schumacher. There were 12 Speakers who were born in Canada:

- Six in Ontario: Wilson, Ross, Betts, Eakin, Fisher and Johnston
- Two in Manitoba: Pingle and Amerongen
- Two in Alberta: Schumacher and Kowalski
- One in Saskatchewan: Carter
- One in Nova Scotia: Gillis

Two Speakers were born in the United States: Oran L. McPherson and N. Eldon Tanner; and two were born in the United Kingdom: Peter Dawson and Arthur J. Dixon.

Years and Places of Birth—North-West Territories

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Year of Birth</i>	<i>Place of Birth</i>
Herbert C. Wilson	1859	Picton, in Hallowell Township, Prince Edward County, Canada West (Ontario)
James H. Ross	1856	London, Middlesex County, Canada West
John F. Betts	1854	Frankford, in Sidney Township, Hastings County, Canada West
William Eakin	1828	Near Crosby's Corners (now Cashel), in Markham Township, York County, Upper Canada (Ontario)
Archibald B. Gillis	1864	Near village of Whycocomagh, Inverness County, Cape Breton, Nova Scotia



Years and Places of Birth—Alberta

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Year of Birth</i>	<i>Place of Birth</i>
Charles W. Fisher	1866	Near Hyde Park Corners, London Township, Middlesex County, Canada West
Charles S. Pingle	1880	Near Morris, Provencher District, Manitoba
Oran L. McPherson	1886	Kingman, Kansas, USA
George N. Johnston	1884	Wingham, Turnberry Township, Huron County, Ontario
N. Eldon Tanner	1898	Salt Lake City, Utah, USA
Peter Dawson	1892	Slateford, County of Ayrshire, Scotland
Arthur J. Dixon	1919	Windlestone, County of Durham, England
Gerard J. Amerongen	1914	Winnipeg, Manitoba
David J. Carter	1934	Moose Jaw, Saskatchewan
Stanley S. Schumacher	1933	Hanna, Alberta
Kenneth R. Kowalski	1945	Bonnyville, Alberta



Appendix M – Educational Attainments

The educational attainments of the Speakers reflect the reality of the times in which the Speakers grew up and the locations in which they lived.

Educational Attainments

Speaker

Education Attained

North-West Territories

Herbert C. Wilson	Public and high schools, Picton, Ontario Upper Canada College, Toronto, Ontario Graduated, Ontario College of Pharmacy, Toronto Bachelor of Medicine, Doctorate of Medicine, Trinity Medical College, Toronto
James H. Ross	Grammar and high school, London, Ontario
John F. Betts	Public school, Newburg, Ontario Albert College, Belleville, Ontario
William Eakin	'Common school' in the local community, Crosby's Corners (now Cashel), Upper Canada (Ontario) Apprenticed in cabinet-making and carriage building, Toronto, Canada West (Ontario)
Archibald B. Gillis	Public school, Whycomomagh, Nova Scotia

Alberta

Charles W. Fisher	Public school, Hyde Park, Ontario 'Higher school,' London, Ontario
Charles S. Pingle	Winnipeg Public School, Winnipeg, Manitoba Apprenticed with Bole Drug Company, Regina, Saskatchewan North-West Territories Pharmaceutical Exams
Oran L. McPherson	Public school, Macoupin County, Illinois, USA Shurtleff College and Academy, Upper Alton, Illinois Studies in agriculture (incomplete), University of Illinois
George N. Johnston	Wingham Public School, Wingham, Ontario London Collegiate Institute, London, Ontario Teacher education, Model School, Listowel, Ontario Regina Normal School, Regina, Saskatchewan



Educational Attainments (Continued)

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Education Attained</i>
	<i>Alberta (Continued)</i>
N. Eldon Tanner	Public school, Aetna, Alberta Grade 11, Knight Academy, Raymond, Alberta Calgary Normal School, Calgary, Alberta Grade 12, Cardston, Alberta Courses in education, University of Alberta, Edmonton, Alberta Courses in education, University of Utah, Salt Lake City, Utah, USA
Peter Dawson	Public school and Carrick Academy, Ayrshire, Scotland Apprenticed as a butcher, Ayrshire Graduated in arts and theology, Robertson College/St. Stephen's College, Edmonton, Alberta
Arthur J. Dixon	Primary school, Durham, England Grades 2 through 9, Okotoks Public Schools, Okotoks, Alberta High school correspondence courses
Gerard J. Amerongen	Public school, Saskatchewan St. Joseph's High School, Edmonton, Alberta Conjoint Bachelor of Arts and Bachelor of Laws, University of Alberta, Edmonton
David J. Carter	Elementary schools, Saskatchewan Alexandra Composite High School, Medicine Hat, Alberta Bachelor of Arts, University of Manitoba, Winnipeg, Manitoba Licentiate in Theology, St. John's College, Winnipeg Bachelor of Sacred Theology, Anglican Theological College of British Columbia, Vancouver, British Columbia Completed coursework towards a Master of Sacred Theology degree, Vancouver School of Theology, Vancouver Honourary Doctor of Divinity degree, St. John's College, Winnipeg
Stanley S. Schumacher	Elementary school, Dorothy, Alberta High school, Drumheller, Alberta Conjoint Bachelor of Commerce and Bachelor of Laws, University of British Columbia, Vancouver, British Columbia
Kenneth R. Kowalski	Notre Dame Elementary School and École Notre Dame High School, Bonnyville, Alberta Bachelor of Arts, University of Alberta, Edmonton, Alberta Professional Diploma After Degree (Education), University of Alberta, Edmonton Master of Arts degree in History, University of Alberta, Edmonton



Appendix N – Occupations

The Speakers of the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories and Alberta have come from various occupational backgrounds, and, upon retiring from the Assembly, many Speakers have returned to careers built prior to their legislative service. The range of careers held by Speakers of the North-West Territories and Alberta is comparable to those of Speakers across Canada. A study of Canadian Speakers, conducted in 1982, indicates that the range of experience represented in the Chair at that time were: a clergyman, a journalist, an optician, an instrument technician, a school principal, a mining explorer, three lawyers (including Gerard J. Amerongen), three small businessmen and a former aide to a Cabinet Minister.¹

There was a time when the position of the Speaker was not a full-time occupation,* therefore Speakers would remain engaged in business opportunities and/or other employment while occupying the Chair in the Legislative Assembly. With the growth of the Speaker's role and the expansion of its administrative responsibilities, Speakers encountered significant difficulties in attempting to pursue a private career while fulfilling the obligations of the Chair.² Gerard J. Amerongen was the last Speaker to maintain a private career at the same time as serving as Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

Three Speakers obtained parliamentary experience at the federal level during their careers: James H. Ross, Archibald B. Gillis and Stanley S. Schumacher.

Four Speakers obtained experience as elected officials at the municipal level during their careers: Herbert C. Wilson, John F. Betts, William Eakin and Charles S. Pingle.

Occupations—North-West Territories

Herbert C. Wilson	Physician, Mayor
James H. Ross	Rancher, Member of Parliament, Senator
John F. Betts	Merchant, Councillor, Acting Mayor
William Eakin	Farmer, Manufacturer, Councillor, Reeve, Warden
Archibald B. Gillis	Farmer, Businessman, Senator

* Most Members held other employment while serving in the Legislative Assembly.



Occupations—Alberta

Charles W. Fisher	Farmer, Merchant, Postmaster
Charles S. Pingle	Pharmacist, Businessman, Farmer, Alderman
Oran L. McPherson	Farmer
George N. Johnston	Farmer, Teacher
N. Eldon Tanner	Teacher, Merchant/Businessman, Church Official*
Peter Dawson	Clergyman†
Arthur J. Dixon	Real Estate Agent, Businessman
Gerard J. Amerongen	Lawyer
David J. Carter	Clergyman, Author
Stanley S. Schumacher	Lawyer, Member of Parliament
Kenneth R. Kowalski	Teacher, Civil Servant, Deputy Minister

* N. Eldon Tanner was a leader in the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints.

† Peter Dawson was a clergyman for most of his life, but did spend a small amount of time as a butcher prior to his college studies.

Notes

¹ Robert J. Fleming and J. Thomas Mitchinson, "The Speakership in Canada," *Canadian Parliamentary Review* vol. 6, no. 1 (Spring 1983): p. 21.

² *Ibid.*, pp. 21-22.

Appendix O – Military Service

The rotunda of the Legislature Building features a number of regimental flags and rolls of honour. These flags commemorate the sacrifice and heroism of Alberta public servants and officials, including several Speakers, who performed military service.¹ As members of military units, some Speakers have seen active service while others have played a role in the reserves. Archibald G. Gillis and Charles S. Pingle are the only Speakers of the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories and Alberta to have seen wartime service outside of Canada, Pingle having been stationed in France, and Gillis having led troops to England and France, during the First World War. Arthur J. Dixon and Gerard J. Amerongen were active in the military during the Second World War, but served in Canada. In addition, Amerongen was an instructor in the Canadian Officers' Training Corps (COTC). Stanley S. Schumacher served in Germany after the Second World War.

Military Service

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Organization</i>	<i>Rank Attained</i>	<i>Years of Service</i>
<i>North-West Territories</i>			
John F. Betts	Member of 'local corps' during the 1885 Riel Rebellion	Not available	1885
William Eakin	12th York Battalion of Infantry	Ensign	1866–1872
Archibald B. Gillis	217th Overseas Battalion	Lieutenant Colonel	1916–1917
	Eastern Saskatchewan Infantry Battalion	Honourary Lieutenant Colonel	Appointed 1923
<i>Alberta</i>			
Charles W. Fisher	15th Light Horse, Canadian Militia	Major	1905–1908
Charles S. Pingle	21st Alberta Hussars, Canadian Militia	Honourary Captain	1909–1914
	3rd Canadian Mounted Rifles, Canadian Expeditionary Force	Captain	1915–1916
Arthur J. Dixon	Royal Canadian Air Force	Sergeant	1940–1946
Gerard J. Amerongen	Canadian Officers' Training Corps		1939–1944
	Canadian Army	Lieutenant	1944–1946



Military Service (Continued)

<i>Speaker</i>	<i>Organization</i>	<i>Rank Attained</i>	<i>Years of Service</i>
<i>Alberta (Continued)</i>			
David J. Carter	Royal Canadian Navy Reserve	Sub-Lieutenant	1960
	Royal Canadian Navy Reserve	Chaplain	1964–1968
Stanley S. Schumacher	Canadian Officers' Training Corps		1954–1958
	Royal Canadian Armoured Corps	2nd Lieutenant	1957–1962

Notes

¹ Alberta. Legislative Assembly, The Regimental Colours, Fact Sheet (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, n.d.).



Appendix P – Poems in Honour of Speakers

The following poems, which honour Speakers of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, were found during the course of the research for this book. Others may exist, but have not been preserved in archival files.

Charles S. Pingle (1920–1921)

The following tribute was written after Charles S. Pingle passed away in 1928, and was published in the *Medicine Hat Daily News*.

In Loving Memory of C. S. Pingle¹

*Born of the West, and to the West
His life was freely given,
The building of a better West
Consistently has striven.*

*The druggist of his early years
Continued to the end,
But many enterprises felt
His master touch extend.*

*Old Timers know in Medicine Hat,
The interest he has shown
In Council work, in Board of Trade,
His judgment clear was known.*

*The district felt his sympathy,
As broader grew his view,
In Legislative halls his voice
Upheld the right he knew.*

*As Speaker of Alberta's House,
Ability most rare,
Each side of politics admit
His rulings always fair.*

*His keenness for clean sport was
shown
In athletic meets,
His hunting and curling powers,
Admittedly were feats.*

*By constant work and daily acts,
And friendship's kindly smile,
He crept into our hearts to stay,
To know him was worth while.*

*Some knew him in the Rotary Club,
Some Pythian friendships ran,
While others felt his Mason's grip
All knew him for a man.*

*We loved him for his friendly ways,
His smile, it reached our heart,
His wisdom and his sage advice
Now makes it hard to part.*

*Farewell, dear friend, farewell at last,
On earth no more to mingle,
In memory green, we're richer men
For knowing Charlie Pingle.*

— One of Charlie's Many Admirers

Arthur J. Dixon (1963–1972)

The following poem was written on the occasion of the official unveiling of Arthur J. Dixon's portrait in the Legislature Building. It was written by Edgar W. Hinman, Member for Cardston and former Provincial Treasurer.

A Public 'Angin'

*Today were the day they 'anged Dixon
'Twere not because 'ed done wrong
'E were nothing at all like ol' Nixon
But a jolly fine chap all along.*

*'T'was 'is picture of course they were 'angin
Up 'igh in the parliament 'all
And 'e looked proper 'ansom – real bangin
Lookin down from 'is place on the wall.*

*'T'was all because 'ed bin speaker
For quite a great number of years
When times in Alberta were bleaker
With a bit more of blood, sweat, and tears.*

*'E sat every day in 'is fine 'igh-backed chair
Alookin sedate and benign
'Is decisions of course just 'ad to be fair
Of petulance never a sign*

*'T'were a real borrin job on occasions
On others excitin and rare
But our Arthur by gentle persuasion
Kept order and peace with a flare.*

*A lookin real grand in 'is three-cornered 'at
And 'is black robe all flowin' and free
'Is collar adorned wi a short white cravat
'Is striped trousers bagged at the knee*

*'E were a remarkable speaker
Who earned an 'igh place in our 'earts
'Ed never permit any streaker
Displayin unmentionable parts*

*And if t'were a point of order
On which 'e were called for a rule
'Ed send note to his clerk and recorder
Who'd studied Beauchesne while at school*

*If ever there rose a commotion
One side callin t'other bad names
'E quickly dispelled any notion
'Ed let the heat burst into flames*

*So we all find 'im very deservin
Of 'avin 'is face in a frame
And no one wants any reservin
Of honour or thankin or fame*

*Then 'ere's a toast to our matee
A wish for a long 'appy life
May 'e stick around 'ere till 'e's eighty
And join in the fun and the strife.*

Stanley S. Schumacher (1993–1997)

The following poem was written by Frank J. Work, Parliamentary Counsel, and presented on the occasion of Stanley S. Schumacher's retirement.

*The Procession of Speaker Schumacher*³ (With apologies to Alfred, Lord Tennyson)

*Half a league, half a league,
Half a league onward.
All to the chamber green
Moved the procession.*

*Forward the Speaker.
"Move to the Chair" he said.*

*Into the chamber green,
Moved the procession.*

*Forward the Speaker.
Was there a Table Officer dismayed?
Not, though the Speaker knew
Some Member would blunder.*

*Theirs not to reason why,
Theirs not to make reply,
Theirs but to do or die
At the feet of their Speaker.*

*Into the Chamber green,
Moved the procession.*

*Government to the right of him.
Opposition to the left of him.
Grimming broadly,
Moving deliberately.*

*Stormed at with points of order.
Boldly he strode and well.
Into the Chamber of green.*

*Into the parliament,
Moved the procession.*

*Flashed he that grin so broad
Flashed it as he turned and stood
Quieting those assembled there.
Controlling the Chamber while
The press gallery wondered.
Plunged into the raucous din,
Question Period will now begin.*

*Government and Opposition
Silenced by the Speaker's stand,
Calmed as he raised his hands,
Chastened as he grinned and said
"Honourable Members".*

*Heckling to the right of him,
Jeering to the left of him,
With cameras rolling,
Volleyed and thundered.*

*He is patience personified,
He would let them say "He lied",
He would fly the Union Jack,
He would send the Charter back,
But he would preside with grace and tact,
Would Speaker Schumacher.*

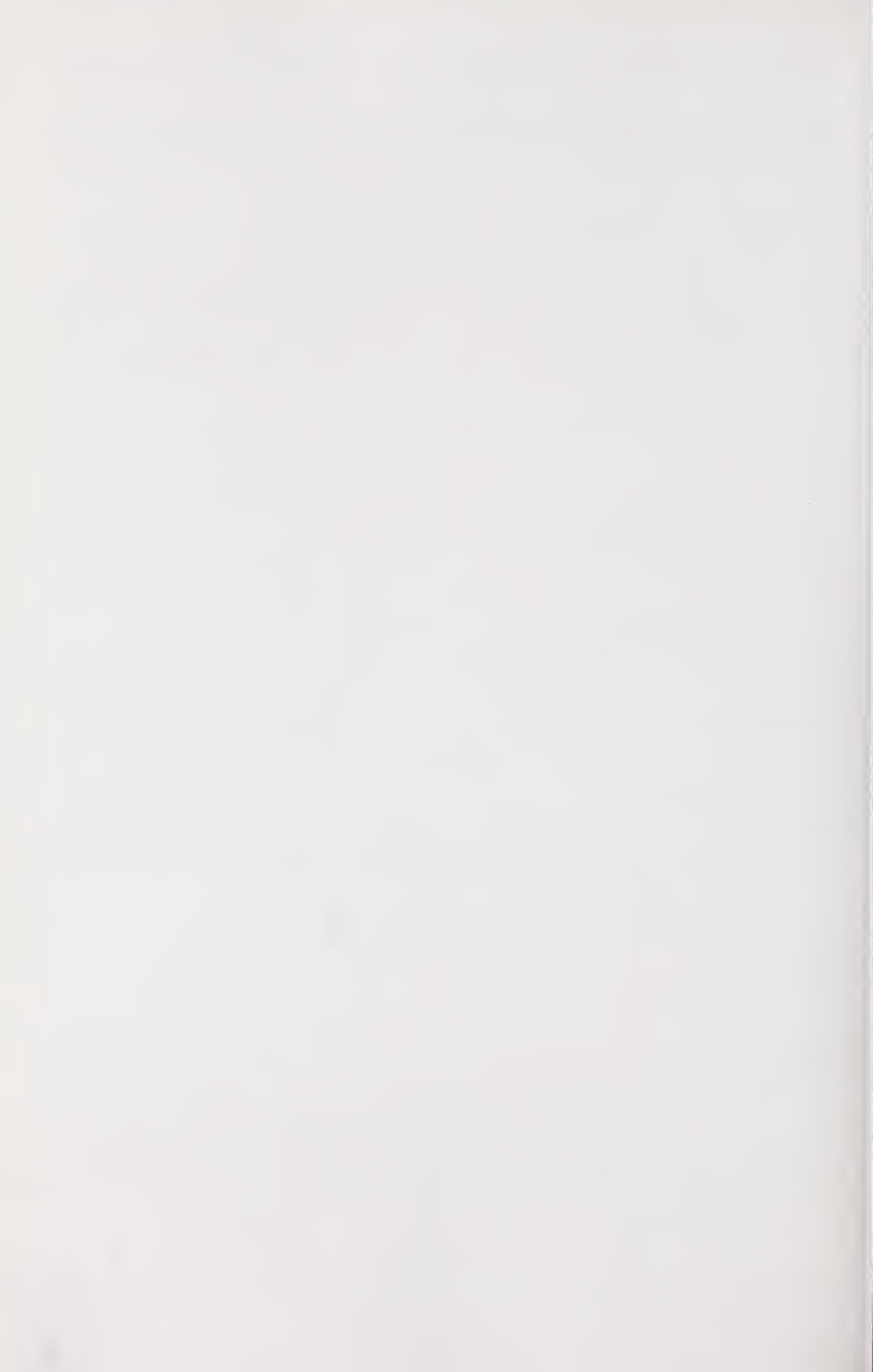
*When can his glory fade?
O the wise rulings he made.
All the Members marvelled.
Honour the life he's led.
Honour the man he is
Noble Stanley Schumacher.*

Notes

¹ "In Loving Memory of C. S. Pingle," [Poem], *Medicine Hat Daily News*, 14 January 1928, p. 4.

² Laurie Mackay, *Order in the House: A Historical Account of Two Past Speakers of the Alberta Legislature* (Edmonton: Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 1992), p. 14.

³ Frank Work, "The Procession of Speaker Schumacher," 3 April 1997, [Poem].



Appendix Q – Maps

The following is a series of maps that displays some of the proposals for the delineation of the North-West Territories into provinces. These proposals developed over time throughout the late-19th and early-20th centuries. Many, however, were developed from 1897 to 1905, which was a period of rapid settlement and a time during which Territorial leaders vigorously advocated the attainment of provincial status for residents of the North-West Territories.

Note that the lighter area represents the lands currently occupied by the Provinces of Alberta and Saskatchewan.



1. The 'Calgary' Proposal

This proposal was sponsored by the Calgary City Council and advocated the creation of one new province out of the Districts of Alberta and Athabasca and of parts of the Districts of Assiniboia and Saskatchewan. Manitoba was to annex the eastern reaches of the latter two Districts. Under this proposal, Regina was to become part of Manitoba thereby greatly increasing Calgary's chances of becoming the capital of the new province.

2. The Haultain Proposal: The Province of 'Buffalo'

In 1900, Frederick W.A.G. Haultain, Premier of the North-West Territories, put forth a proposal for one new western province, called Buffalo. The province was to include all of the modern-day provinces of Alberta and Saskatchewan south of the 57th parallel.

While Haultain was adamant that the new province reflect the governmental and geographical unity of the Territories, the federal Liberal Government of Sir Wilfrid Laurier feared that the establishment of one large province would upset the balance amongst existing provinces. For this and other reasons, the Laurier Government rejected Haultain's proposal.





3. The First Four-Province Proposal

Raised in the mid-1870s, this proposal was based on initial plans to build the prairie portion of the transcontinental Canadian Pacific Railway (CPR) through Saskatoon and Edmonton. The scheme became less practical, however, once the rail line was constructed through the southern prairies during the early 1880s. In this proposal, the northern portion of the current area of the Province of Saskatchewan was to remain part of the North-West Territories.

4. The Second Four-Province Proposal

A variation of an earlier four-province plan (see '3.'), this proposal adjusted the configurations of the proposed provinces to accommodate the building of the Canadian Pacific Railway (CPR) through the southern prairies. Portions of the northern area of the current provinces of Saskatchewan and Alberta were to remain part of the North-West Territories.



5. The Three-Province Plan

Recommended by a group of citizens from Prince Albert, this proposal envisaged three large provinces, occupying the entire area of the current provinces of Alberta and Saskatchewan. Not surprisingly, Prince Albert was the leading town in one of the provinces, which would make it the prime contender to become the capital of that province.

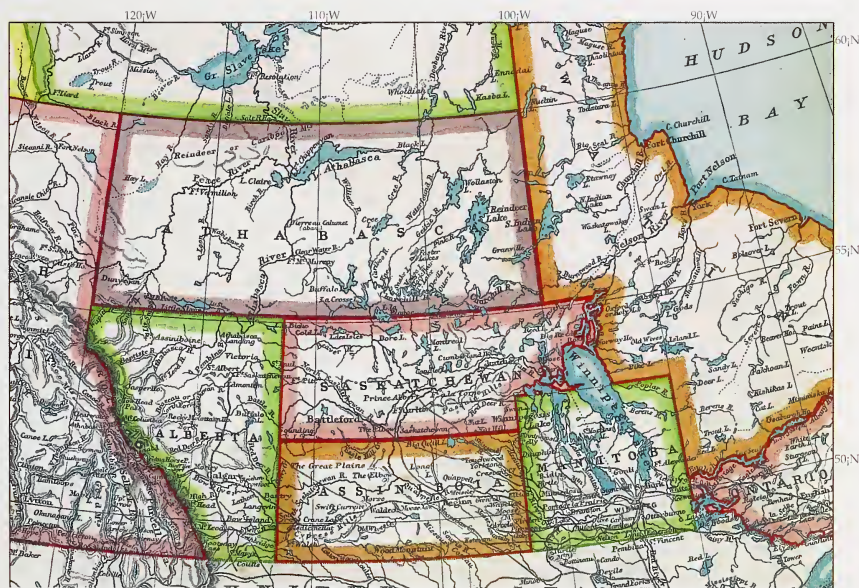


6. The Rejected Two-Province Plan

This proposal advocated the division of a large part of the North-West Territories into north and south portions. Dividing the proposed provinces along the 52nd parallel, the plan was based on the geographical differences of the northern and southern prairies: the north, with its rolling parkland and abundant supply of water, was regarded as most suitable for mixed farming; while the south, with its grasslands, was considered better suited to ranching. The fact that Edmonton and Calgary would become lead contenders for provincial capitals in their respective provinces also played a large role in the conceptualization of this scheme.

In 1905, before the granting of provincial autonomy (in September), four of the Provisional Districts (Alberta, Assiniboia, Athabasca and Saskatchewan) of the North-West Territories occupied what would become the Provinces of Alberta and Saskatchewan.

The North-West Territories, 1895–1905





The Legislative Assembly of Alberta's *Dictionary of Parliamentary Terms* and other parliamentary glossaries have been consulted for these definitions. For additional information, readers should refer to the *Dictionary of Parliamentary Terms* online at <http://www.assembly.ab.ca/visitor/parlterms.htm>

Adjournment

An adjournment ends a sitting without nullifying any pending proceedings.

Advisory Council

Established in 1888 in the North-West Territories, the Advisory Council was a four-member body that was selected by the Lieutenant Governor to advise on financial matters only and was confined to management of the general revenue fund (local revenues).

Alberta Act

Assented to July 20, 1905, the *Act to establish the Province of Alberta and provide for the Government of the Province of Alberta* came into force on September 1, 1905. The short title of this Act is the *Alberta Act*.

Alberta Gazette

The *Alberta Gazette* is a government publication that contains official lists of appointments and promotions. See also *Gazetted*.

Alberta Hansard

Alberta Hansard is the verbatim proceedings of the Legislative Assembly of Alberta. Transcription of the proceedings officially began in 1972. See also *Hansard*.

Backbenchers

See Private Members.

British North America Act, 1867

The *British North America Act, 1867* is commonly abbreviated to the *BNA Act, 1867*. See *Constitution Act, 1867*.

Cabinet

The Cabinet includes the Premier and all Government Ministers. It is also known as the 'Executive Council.'

Casting vote

This is the vote, held by the Speaker, that is used when necessary to break a tie. The Speaker does not normally vote in the Legislative Assembly, but will do so in the case of a tie.

Caucus

Caucus refers to each single party grouping in the Legislative Assembly, and to the private meetings held by the elected Members of any one party.



Chamber

The Chamber is the room in which the Legislative Assembly conducts its business.

Closure motion

A closure motion is a motion to limit debate. It prevents further adjournment of debate on a motion or stage of a bill, and requires one day's notice. In Alberta, time allocation has replaced this measure.

Committee of Supply

This Committee comprises all Members of the Legislative Assembly and is responsible for reviewing the Government's budget estimates. The Speaker moves from the Chair to the Table as the Chair of Committees (Deputy Speaker) chairs the *Committee of Supply*.

Committee of the Whole

This Committee comprises all Members of the Legislative Assembly sitting in the Chamber as a committee. Presided over by Chair of Committees (Deputy Speaker) rather than by the Speaker, the Committee meets after second reading and before third reading and studies appropriation bills and any other matters referred to it by the Assembly.

Constituency

A constituency is the geographic area that a Member represents. It is also known as an electoral district. All residents in these districts are known as constituents.

Constitution Act, 1867

This was originally called the *British North America Act, 1867*, a statute of the Parliament of the United Kingdom that helped to govern the newly created Dominion of Canada, which included Ontario, Quebec, Nova Scotia and New Brunswick.

Constitution Act, 1982

This is an amendment to the *British North America Act, 1867*. It also changed the name of the *British North America Act, 1867* to the *Constitution Act, 1867*. Major components include the *Charter of Rights and Freedoms*, increased Aboriginal rights and the introduction of a constitutional amendment procedure that allows Canada to change its own constitution and political institutions without having to receive consent from the Parliament of the United Kingdom.

Daily Routine

The Daily Routine is the ordinary daily business of the House that is dealt with at the beginning of each sitting day. Members bring a variety of basic matters, such as the introduction of visitors, presenting petitions, notices of motion, tabling of returns and reports, and so on, to the attention of the Legislative Assembly.

Dissolution

Occurring prior to a general election, dissolution is an act by the Lieutenant Governor that ends a Legislature. Dissolution usually takes place on the advice of the Premier, but also occurs automatically at the end of a Legislature's maximum term. Currently in Alberta, after the dissolution of a Legislature, the Speaker continues to hold office for administrative purposes until the Members of the Legislative Assembly elect a Speaker at the beginning of the next Legislature. See also Prorogation.

Division

A division is the process by which Members separate into two groups to establish a record of a vote in the Legislative Assembly.

Dominion of Canada

Dominion of Canada is the official title of Canada as referred to in the *Constitution Act, 1867* and the *Constitution Act, 1982*.

Election

An election is the process of holding a vote to select a representative for a geographically defined area. In Alberta, the individual with the most votes in a given constituency is elected and becomes a Member of the Legislative Assembly. The party with the most elected representatives forms the Government.

Executive Committee

The Executive Committee was created in 1891 by an ordinance passed by the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories. Consisting of four members appointed by the Lieutenant Governor, it was superceded by the Executive Council.

Executive Council

An amendment to the *North-West Territories Act* in 1897 provided for an Executive Council whose members would be chosen by the Lieutenant Governor, and whose status and tenure would conform to the well-understood principles of responsible government. It was preceded by the Executive Committee.

Currently, the Executive Council is the executive branch of government, consisting of the Premier and all Cabinet Ministers. See also Cabinet.

Filibuster

A filibuster is a prolonged debate by the Opposition to delay the passage of a Government Bill.

Gazetted

Appointments published in the *Alberta Gazette* are said to have been 'gazetted.' See also *Alberta Gazette*.

Government

In parliamentary terms, the Premier and Cabinet Ministers make up the Government. This group must maintain the support of a majority of the Members in the Legislative Assembly to remain in power.



Hansard

Named for the family who first began printing an official record of the debates of the British Parliament during the 19th century, *Hansard* is a verbatim transcript of the debates of a legislature or parliament, subject to editorial guidelines, which is published daily while Parliament is in Session. See also *Alberta Hansard*.

House

This is a term that can be used informally to refer to the Chamber or to the Legislative Assembly.

Journals

The *Journals* are the official record of a Session. Unlike the verbatim transcripts provided by *Hansard*, the *Journals* are compiled from the *Votes and Proceedings* of the Session and include only an outline of events and of decisions made.

Legislative Assembly

The group of representatives elected to create laws for the province is known collectively as the Legislative Assembly. Also known informally as the 'House' or the 'Assembly.'

Legislative Assembly Office (LAO)

Officially formed in 1983 with the passing of the *Legislative Assembly Act*, the Legislative Assembly Office (LAO) is made up of various branches that, under the control of the Speaker and the direction of the Clerk, support the needs of the Members in their role as elected representatives. The LAO is a non-partisan organization and is not a government department.

Legislature

A Legislature consists of the Lieutenant Governor and all elected Members of the Legislative Assembly. Each general election results in a new Legislature.

Lieutenant Governor

The Lieutenant Governor [pronounced Lef-tenant Governor] is the Queen's representative in Alberta and is appointed by the Governor General of Canada, on the advice of the Prime Minister, for a five-year term. The Lieutenant Governor delivers the Speech from the Throne, grants Royal Assent to bills, and approves orders-in-council.

Lieutenant Governor in Council

The Lieutenant Governor in Council consists of the Lieutenant Governor and members of the Executive Council. The Lieutenant Governor acting on the advice of, or by and with the advice and consent of, or in conjunction with the Executive Council is known as the Lieutenant Governor in Council.

Mace

The Mace is the ceremonial staff carried into the Legislative Assembly by the Sergeant-at-Arms at the beginning of each sitting day. It is the symbol of the authority of the Legislative Assembly to make laws on behalf of the people. The Legislative Assembly cannot sit without a Mace.



Member

A Member is an individual, elected by the people in a particular constituency, to represent them in the Legislative Assembly.

Memorial

Historically, a memorial was an informal diplomatic paper put before a legislative body. It generally took the form of a petition or a statement of facts.

Minister

Appointed by the Premier, a Minister is a member of Cabinet who is usually the head of a government department. A Minister without Portfolio is not attached to a specific government department.

MLA

A common abbreviation for Member of the Legislative Assembly. See Member.

MP

A common abbreviation for Member of Parliament in the House of Commons of Canada. See also Parliament.

Naming a Member

This is a disciplinary measure used at the discretion of the Speaker. To maintain order in the Legislative Assembly, the Speaker may refer to a disruptive Member by his or her personal name and suspend the Member, usually for the remainder of the sitting day.

Non-partisan

To be non-partisan is to be free from bias or party affiliation. See also Partisan.

Official Opposition

The official term for the Official Opposition is “Her Majesty’s Loyal Opposition.” It comprises all Members of the second largest party in the Legislative Assembly.

Opposition

The Opposition comprises all Members of the Legislative Assembly that do not belong to the governing party. The role of the Opposition is to analyze and debate the Government’s policies and legislation, and to suggest alternatives.

Order in Council

In the provincial context, an Order in Council is the executive instrument of the Lieutenant Governor in Council. As a form of subordinate legislation, it usually deals with a particular issue such as appointments to office.

Order Paper

An Order Paper is a list of the Legislative Assembly’s items of business. It is like an agenda for a meeting, although all items on the Order Paper are not necessarily covered on any given day.



Orders of the Day

Orders of the Day are the items of business on the agenda that occur after the Daily Routine.

Page

Pages are high school students hired to assist all Members during sittings and to deliver messages and materials within the Chamber and to offices throughout the Parliamentary Precincts. Currently in Alberta, the Sergeant-at-Arms is in charge of the Page program.

Parliament

In Canada, the federal Parliament consists of the Crown, the House of Commons and the Senate. Parliament is the institution in which new laws are debated and agreed upon. The name 'parliament' comes from the French word *parler* which means to speak. Parliament should not be confused with the Government, although members of the Government are usually Members of Parliament. Another responsibility of Parliament is to scrutinize what the Government does.

Parliamentary Precincts

Generally, the precincts are the premises where Members conduct their parliamentary work and which are under the control of the Speaker.

Parliamentary procedure

These are the rules and traditions for conducting the business of the Legislative Assembly. See also Standing Orders.

Partisan

To be partisan is to favour one party over others. See also Non-partisan.

Point of Order

A Point of Order may be raised by a Member to draw the Speaker's attention to an alleged breach of the rules and procedures of the House.

Point of Privilege

A Point of Privilege may be raised in the Legislative Assembly if a Member feels his or her privileges are not being respected or if another Member has abused a privilege.

Political Party

A political party is an organized group of individuals that shares a similar political ideology and goals.

Portfolio

A portfolio is the government department or responsibilities of a Cabinet Member.

Premier

The Premier is the leader of the party holding the most seats in a provincial Legislative Assembly.



Prima facie

This is a Latin phrase meaning 'on the face of it' or 'at first sight.'

Private Members

Private Members are all Members of the Legislative Assembly who are not members of the Executive Council and do not hold specific positions within the Legislative Assembly such as Speaker, Deputy Speaker or caucus leaders. They are also known colloquially as 'backbenchers.'

Prorogation

Prorogation ends a Session and closes all pending business, including committee work. Currently in Alberta, after the prorogation of a Session, the Speaker continues to hold office for administrative purposes. See also Dissolution.

Question Period

This is the time period in a sitting day during which Members may question Cabinet Ministers on current matters related to the Minister's portfolio. The Speaker is responsible for determining who may speak and ensuring that time restrictions, and other procedural rules, are adhered to during this time. Currently in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 50 minutes are allotted for the daily Question Period.

Quorum

Quorum refers to the number of Members of the Legislative Assembly that must be present in order for business to proceed. Currently in the Legislative Assembly of Alberta, 20 Members constitute a quorum.

Resolution

When a motion passes, it becomes a resolution of the Legislative Assembly. A resolution reflects the intention or opinion of the House.

Responsible government

Responsible government is a form of government in which the Cabinet acts as the executive and makes decisions for which it is held responsible by the Legislative Assembly.

Routine

See Daily Routine.

Session

This is a series of meetings of the Legislative Assembly. Each Session is opened by Royal Proclamation and closed by prorogation.

Sitting

Sitting is used to refer to the daily meetings of the Legislative Assembly. Also, a Session is separated into spring and fall meeting periods, with each period being referred to as a sitting.



Special Committees

These are committees that are appointed by the Legislative Assembly to deal with unique problems that will occur only once or on a very occasional basis.

Standing Committees

These are committees appointed by the Legislative Assembly to deal with various matters of business that recur on a regular basis.

Standing Orders

These are written rules adopted by the House to govern the conduct of Legislative Assembly business.

Stranger

A stranger is any person within the Parliamentary Precincts who is neither a Member nor an officer of the Legislative Assembly.

Substantive motion

A substantive motion expresses a decision of the Legislative Assembly; it is an independent motion that is complete in itself.

Time allocation

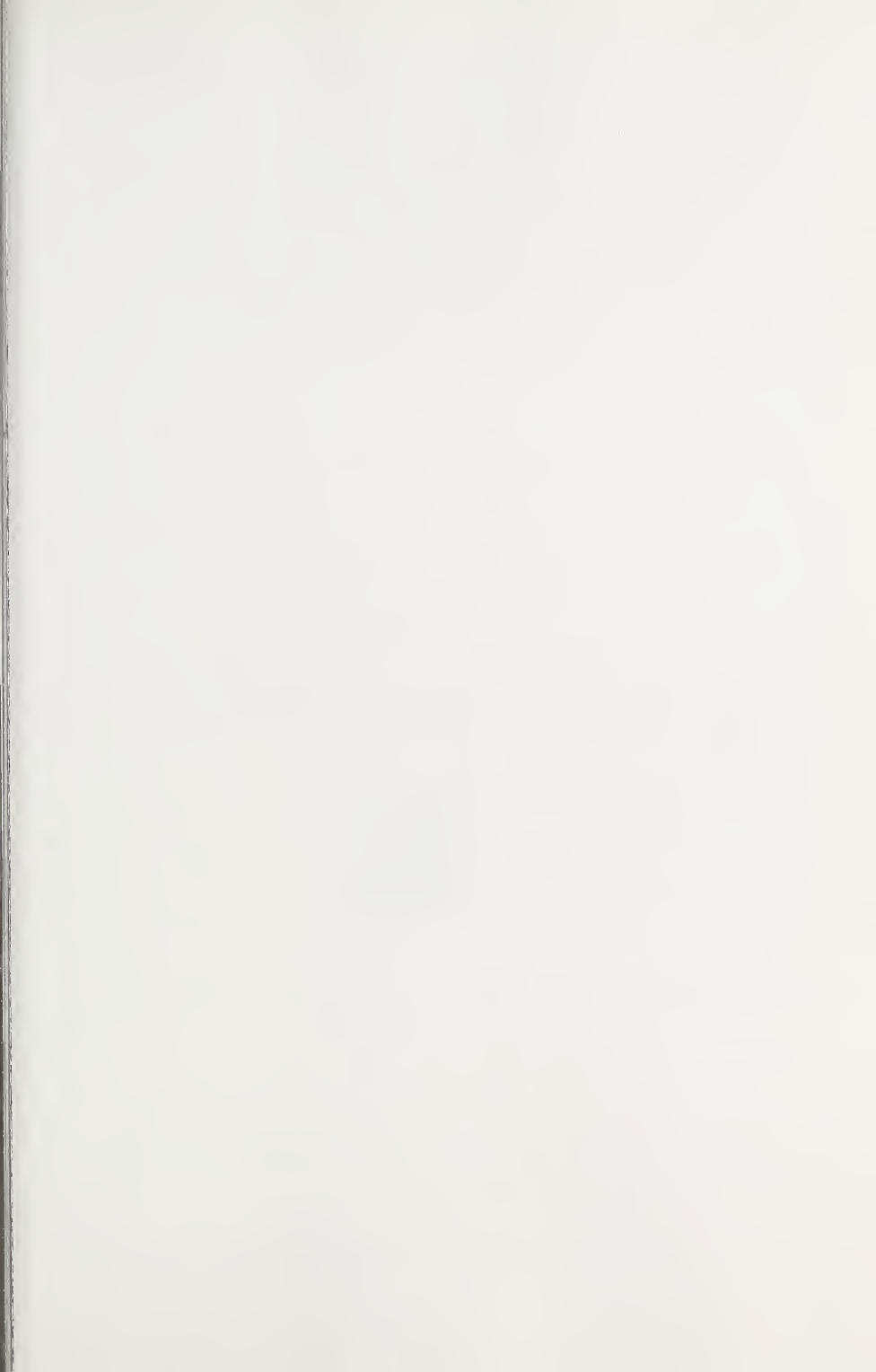
Time allocation is a measure that limits the time available for debate on a bill. In Alberta, time allocation has replaced closure.

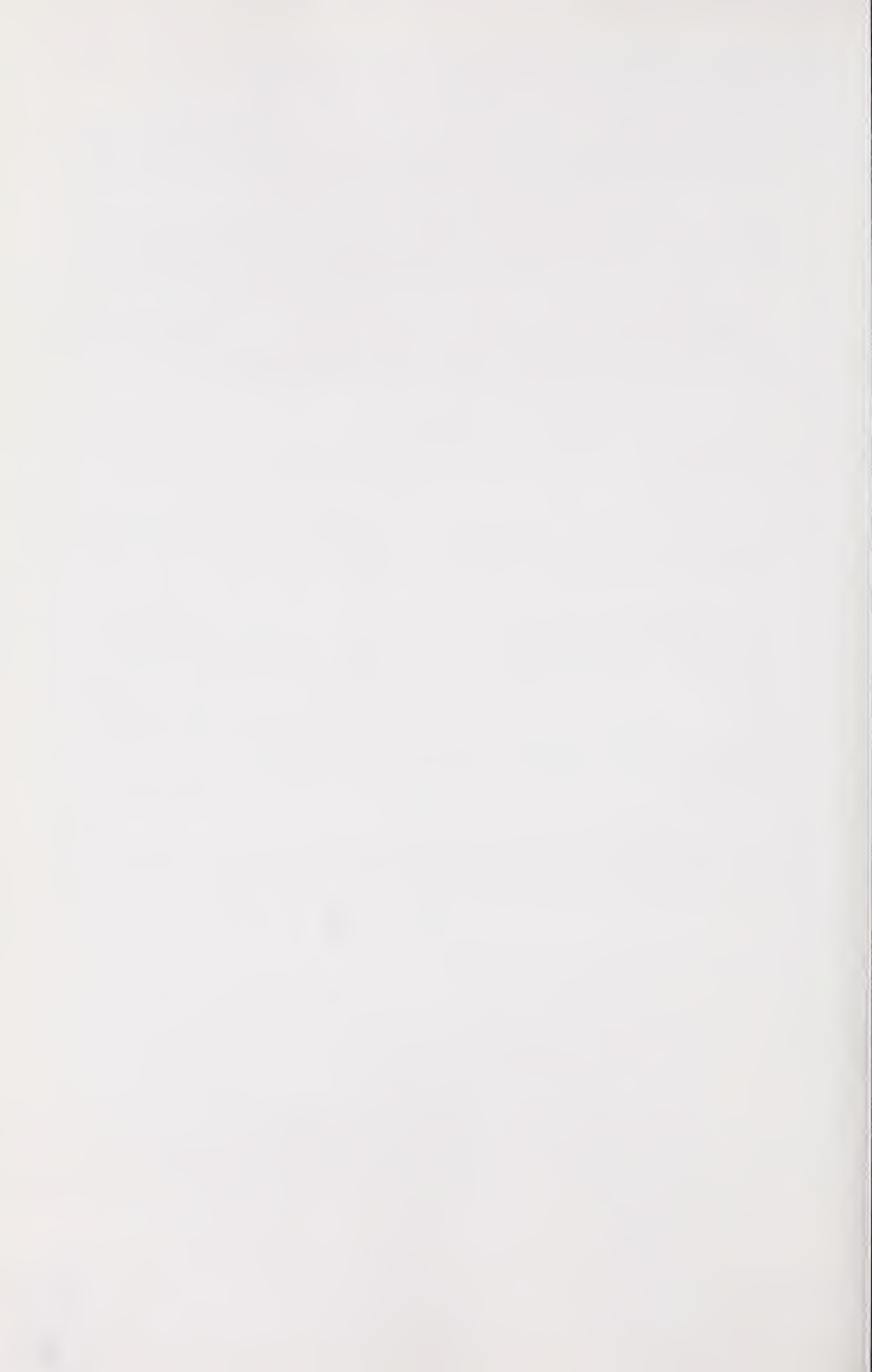
Ultra vires

A Latin phrase that literally means “beyond the powers” and which declares a statute to be outside of the powers of a legislative body to enact, as delineated, in the Canadian context, by the *Constitution Act*.

Whip

The Whip is the Member who keeps members of his or her caucus informed about Legislative Assembly business and ensures the attendance of as many Members as possible in the House or in committee, especially when a vote is to take place.





a higher duty



PHOTOGRAPH CREDITS



Photograph Credits

There are three groupings of photographs displayed in this volume. The first is composed of photos embedded within the text of the background, biography and appendices sections. What follows is a list of these photos, which contains a brief description and a credit for each image.

Background

- Page 8:** Opening of the First Legislature of the Province of Alberta. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (B6667).
- Page 9:** Legislative Assembly of Alberta, McKay Avenue School. Photo courtesy of Glenbow Archives (NA-2883-20).
- Page 19:** Princess Margaret visits Legislature Library, with Speaker G.J. Amerongen in attendance. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.
- Page 26:** Clerk of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories S.S. Page. Photo courtesy of Saskatchewan Archives Board (R-B3061).
- Page 27:** Speaker P. Dawson with Clerk R.A. Crevolin. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (PA779.3).
- Page 34:** Sergeant-at-Arms N. MacLean with Alberta's first Mace. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (PA1627/1).
- Page 35:** Sergeant-at-Arms J.A. Reed with Alberta's new Mace. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (PA3657).
- Page 42:** The Chair of the first Speaker of the North-West Territories. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.
- Page 45:** Unveiling of the canopy of the Speaker's Chair. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.
- Page 55:** Robing of Speaker A.J. Dixon. Photo courtesy of A.J. Dixon.
- Page 63:** Authorities. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.
- Page 71:** Speaker K.R. Kowalski presides over 25th Legislature. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.
- Page 86:** *Alberta Hansard*. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.
- Page 94:** Radio broadcast of Speech from the Throne. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (PA2378/2).
- Page 96:** Television cameras broadcast the Opening of the 17th Legislature. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (J797/5).
- Page 108:** 'Paper shower' from Press Gallery. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (J340).
- Page 109:** Press Gallery (March 1972). Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (J799/1).
- Page 115:** Prince Michael of Kent addresses Legislative Assembly. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.
- Page 119:** The Speaker's tricorne hat. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.
- Page 120:** Speaker P. Dawson wearing traditional Speaker's apparel. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (PA779.2).
- Page 125:** Sergeant-at-Arms J.A. Reed carrying the Mace, leading Speaker G.J. Amerongen in procession. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (J829).
- Page 136:** Speaker K.R. Kowalski with Ambassador of the Republic of Korea, His Excellency Ki Ho Chang. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.



Page 141: Speaker C.W. Fisher in the Chair with portraits at far right. Photo courtesy of Glenbow Archives (NA-1328-66041)

Page 142: The unveiling of the portrait of Speaker A.J. Dixon. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (J1263).

Page 142: The unveiling of the portrait of Speaker S.S. Schumacher. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta (photo by Ken Chow).

Page 147: CPA dinner in rotunda of Legislature Building. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (J602).

Page 153: Government House at Battleford, North-West Territories. Photo courtesy of Saskatchewan Archives Board (R-A2287).

Page 161: Members of the North-West Council outside Council Chamber. Photo courtesy of Saskatchewan Archives Board (R-B4).

Page 164: Interior of the old North-West Territories Assembly Hall. Photo courtesy of Saskatchewan Archives Board (R-A46).

Page 166: Three-province proposal. Image courtesy of *Canadian Geographic*.

Page 167: The newly constructed Legislature Building. Photo courtesy of Glenbow Archives (NC-6-234).

Speakers' Biographies

Page 185: Tom Stevens, Alex Taylor, Dr. H.C. Wilson. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (Acc.70.218, item.48)

Page 205: North-West Council Chamber, 1884, including J.H. Ross. Photo courtesy of Saskatchewan Archives Board (R-B490).

Page 223: Surviving Members of Prince Albert's First Council, including J.F. Betts. Photo courtesy of Prince Albert Historical Society.

Page 238: W. Eakin in retirement. Photo courtesy of Saskatchewan Archives Board (R-A9435).

Page 249: A.B. Gillis in First World War uniform. Photo courtesy of Donna Mort.

Page 269: C.W. Fisher with son. Photo courtesy of Glenbow Archives (NA-1417-1).

Page 283: Soldier Members of Alberta Legislature, including C.S. Pingle. Photo courtesy of Glenbow Archives (NC-6-3143).

Page 299: O.L. McPherson in Speaker's robes, Legislature Building. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

Page 315: UFA Members-elect, including G.N. Johnston, in front of Lougheed Building. Photo courtesy of Glenbow Archives (NA-2204-4).

Page 333: Dedication of Boy Scouts' Hall, with N.E. Tanner. Photo courtesy of Glenbow Archives (NA-4132-1).

Page 353: P. Dawson in the Speaker's Suite. Photo courtesy of David Dawson.

Page 370: Jasper Place group visits Speaker A.J. Dixon. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (PA5136).

Page 387: Speaker G.J. Amerongen with Pages and Sergeant-at-Arms. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

Page 410: D.J. Carter, Anglican Dean of the Cathedral Church of the Redeemer. Photo courtesy of Glenbow Archives (NA-2864-26908)

Page 427: Speakers S.S. Schumacher, D.J. Carter, G.J. Amerongen and A.J. Dixon.
Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

Page 446: Hon. K.R. Kowalski assisting a student. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

Page 448: Hon. K.R. Kowalski welcomes Queen Elizabeth II. Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta (photo by Epic Photography Inc.).

Appendices

Pages 535-537: Proposed delineations of the North-West Territories into provinces.
Images courtesy of *Canadian Geographic*.

Page 537: The North-West Territories, 1895-1905. Image courtesy of *Historical Atlas of Canada: Canada's History Illustrated with Original Maps* (Douglas & McIntyre, 2002).

Official Portraits

The image that appears on the second page of each biography is a photograph of the official portrait of that Speaker, which hangs in the Legislature Building. Jason Statler of Statler Studios photographed the official portraits of the Speakers of the Legislative Assemblies of the North-West Territories and Alberta, which are exhibited on the fourth floor of the Legislature Building. The official portrait of the current Speaker, the Hon. Kenneth R. Kowalski, is not yet on display and hence a photograph, taken by Clif Chapman Photography, has been used in this volume.

Chapter Title Page and Footer Images

A photograph of the Speaker's Chair appears on the chapter title pages of the background sections, while the dome of the Legislature Building is displayed in the footer of the background sections and the appendices. In the biographies of H. C. Wilson through A. B. Gillis, the chapter title pages contain photographs of the Speakers, while the footer on the left-hand page is a map of the Provisional Districts of the North-West Territories.

The following photos are shown in the footer of the right-hand page of these biographies:

Wilson – This photo is a section of the first Speaker's Chair that was presented to Wilson at the conclusion of his tenure as Speaker. The Chair was kept in the Wilson home until 1945, at which time it was donated to the Province of Alberta.

Ross – This image shows a section of the title page of the *North-West Territories Gazette*. The *North-West Territories Gazette* was where proclamations and communications with the Dominion Government were published. Ross' continued efforts to

promote responsible government in the North-West Territories are documented in the *Gazette*.

Betts – Betts' commitment to the system of governance of the North-West Territories is represented by a close-up of a portion of the Territorial Government Buildings located at Regina.



Eakin – This photo is a section of the Chair used by Eakin during his tenure as Speaker. The Chair was donated to the Saltcoats Canadian Legion by Thomas MacNutt, the first Speaker of the Legislative Assembly of Saskatchewan (1906-1908). The Chair is currently housed in the Saltcoats Museum.

Gillis – The image displayed here is an interior photo of the Chamber of the Legislative Assembly of the North-West Territories. The most significant issue during Gillis' term as Speaker was the achievement of provincial status for the North-West Territories, and the Chamber frequently rang with debate on this issue from 1902 until the end of Session in 1904.

The following list indicates credits for the title-page photographs:

Page 179 (Wilson) – Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (B8558). (Photograph has been cropped.)

Page 199 (Ross) – Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (A3843). (Photograph has been cropped.)

Page 215 (Betts) – Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (A3822). (Photograph has been cropped.)

Page 231 (Eakin) – Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (A3836). (Photograph has been altered from the original.)

Page 245 (Gillis) – Photo courtesy of Saskatchewan Archives Board (R-B3867 — detail).

The biographies from C. W. Fisher to N. E. Tanner display an image of the first Mace of the Legislative Assembly of the Alberta in the footer located on the left-hand page. In the biographies from P. Dawson onward, the footer image is the current Mace.

The following photos appear in the footer on the right-hand page:

Fisher – This is a photo of the Mace on the Table at the Thistle Rink, at which the First Session of the First Legislature was held on March 15, 1906. Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (B6667). (Photograph cropped, and altered from original.)

Pingle – This image displays the Standard of the South Alberta Regiment, which hangs in the rotunda of the Legislature Building. Pingle served with the 21st Alberta Hussars, which contributed volunteers to the 3rd Regiment, Canadian Mounted Rifles. This regiment is connected with the South Alberta Light Horse and to the South Alberta Regiment.

McPherson – This is a photo of the floor of the Chamber. About the time McPherson first served as Speaker, the floor of the Chamber was renovated to furnish a long bench, located behind the Government Members, on which Deputy Ministers sat when they were required for consultation during meetings of the *Committee of the Whole*. The desk that ran along in front of this bench provided a separation that technically kept this seating from being on the floor of the House.

Johnston – This image is a close-up of the shelves in the Legislature Library. Johnston recalled coming upon George Hoadley, Minister of Agriculture and Member for Okotoks, in the Legislature Library one Sunday looking through the dictionary, attempting to locate a word that would ‘call a man a liar’ but would not be declared unparliamentary by Johnston. Johnston advised Hoadley that he would not find such a word in the dictionary.

Tanner – This photograph shows part of the interior of the Speaker's Suite. When Tanner was elected Speaker, he would spend hours in the Speaker's Suite studying parliamentary procedure.

Dawson – A portion of the rotunda and its fountain is pictured here. To commemorate the 1959 visit of Queen Elizabeth II and Prince Philip to Edmonton during Dawson's tenure, a permanent fountain was installed in the rotunda of the Legislature Building.

Dixon – This is a photograph of earphones used by technicians during broadcasting. The broadcasting of the proceedings of the

Legislative Assembly came about during Dixon's tenure as Speaker.

Amerongen – Pictured here are the main doors of the Chamber. Amerongen changed the Speaker's Procession so that its participants entered through the main doors of the Chamber rather than through a side door.

Carter – The Alberta Coat of Arms is displayed in this photograph. As part of the renovations undertaken in 1987, Carter had the Alberta Coat of Arms placed over the main door to the Chamber.

Schumacher – A photo of the Union Jack is pictured here. In December 1995, Schumacher arranged to have the Union Jack, national flag of the United Kingdom and symbol of Canada's allegiance to the Crown, fly from the roof of the Alberta Legislature Building.

Kowalski – The clock located in the Chamber is shown here. Kowalski presided over the Legislative Assembly of Alberta's longest sitting day to date on May 28–29, 2001.

The list that follows contains credits for the title-page photographs, located in the biographies from Fisher to Kowalski:

Page 261 (Fisher) – Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (A2676). (Photograph cropped, and altered from original.)

Page 279 (Pingle) – Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (A2667). (Photograph cropped, and altered from original.)

Page 293 (McPherson) – Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

Page 311 (Johnston): Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (A3598). (Photograph cropped, and altered from original.)

Page 325 (Tanner) – Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (A2880). (Photograph cropped, and altered from original.)

Page 343 (Dawson) – Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (BL2643.2). (Photograph cropped, and altered from original.)

Page 363 (Dixon) – Photo courtesy of Provincial Archives of Alberta (PA3719). (Photograph cropped, and altered from original.)

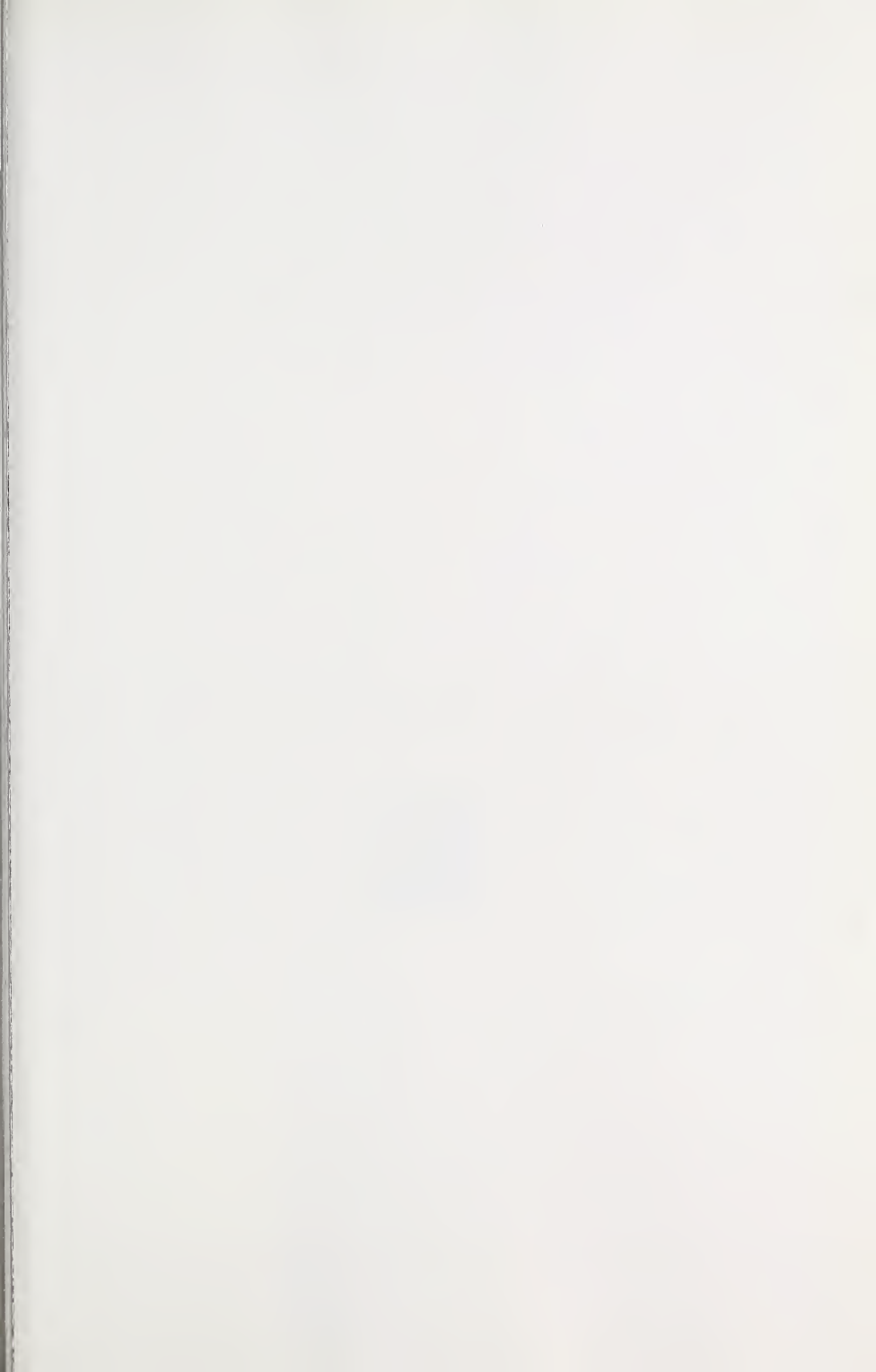
Page 379 (Amerongen) – Photo collection: Legislative Assembly of Alberta (photo by Public Affairs Bureau Staff).

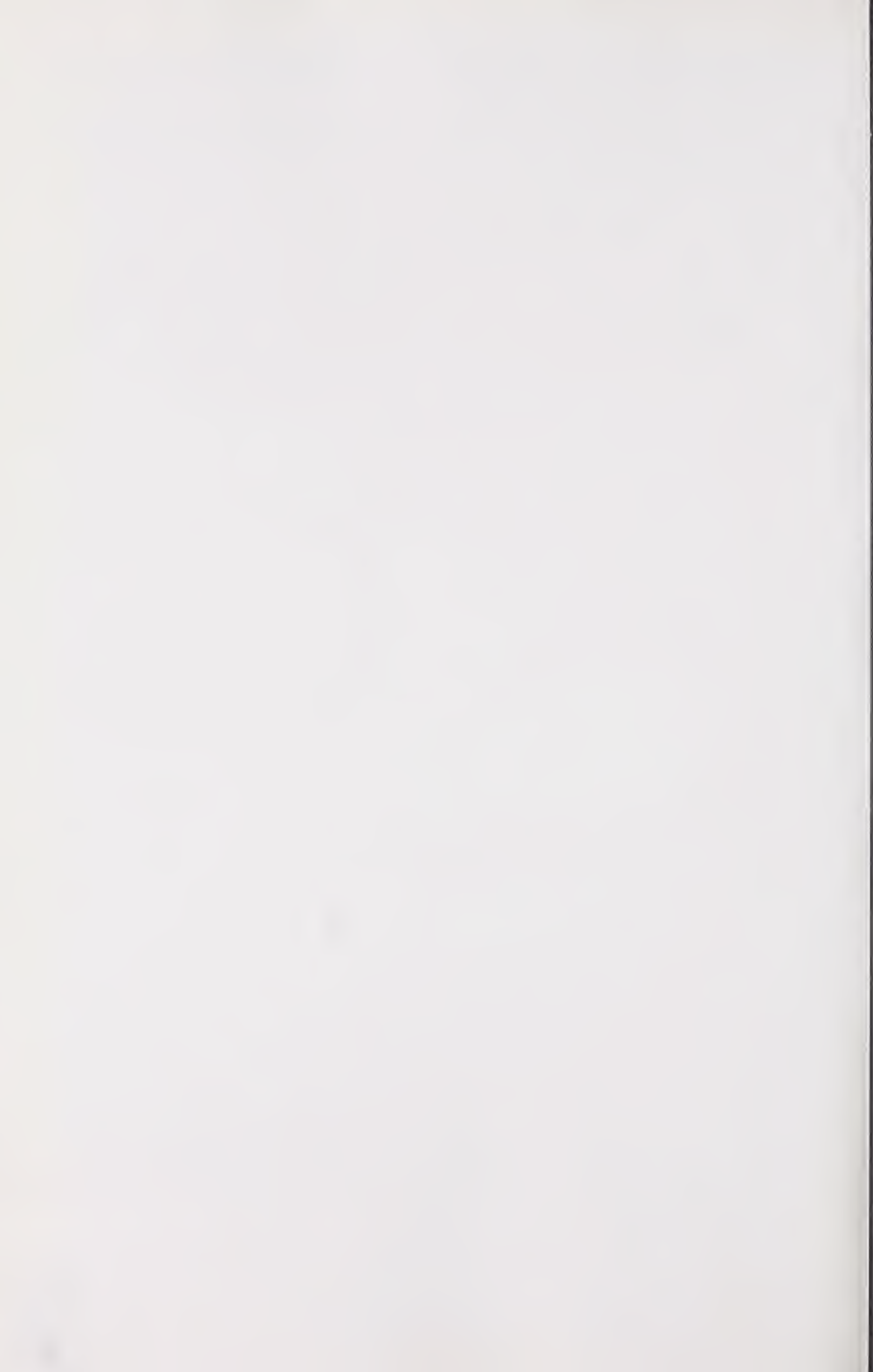


Page 399 (Carter) – Photo collection:
Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

Page 421 (Schumacher) – Photo collection:
Legislative Assembly of Alberta.

Page 437 (Kowalski) – Photo collection:
Legislative Assembly of Alberta (photo by
Clif Chapman Photography).





a higher duty



INDEX

PERSONAL NAME INDEX

The Appendices are not indexed. Names appearing in photo captions are indicated in *italics*.

A

Abbot, Charles106, 141
 Aberhart, William
 108fn2, 115, 319, 327, 329, 329fn1, 330, 331, 345, 348,
 349, 349fn2, 353, 366, 371, 372
 Acorn, Glendon388fn3
 Addington, Henry141
 Aitken, W.T.35
 Alice, Princess, Countess of Athlone353
 Amerongen, Elizabeth H.383, 391
 Amerongen, Elizabeth383
 Amerongen, Friedrich K.J.381fn3
Amerongen, Gerard J.
 8, 16, 16fn1, 19, 44, 45, 62, 72fn1, 79, 95, 95fn1, 109,
 125, 130, 142, 143, 285fn1, 299fn1, 320, 371, 372,
 372fn1, 379–398, 381fn3, 405, 406, 427
 Amerongen, Helen383
 Amerongen, Henry J.381fn3
 Amerongen, John383
 Amerongen, Karl A.J.381fn3
 Amerongen, Leo J.381fn3
 Amerongen, Margaret383
 Amerongen, Margaret M.J.381fn3
 Amerongen, Maria F.381, 382
 Amerongen, Mary383
 Amerongen, Maximilian381fn3
 Amerongen, Michael383
 Amerongen, Monica383
 Amerongen, Peter383
 Amerongen, Werner W.J.381fn3
 Anderson, William234
 Andison, Robert A.25, 26, 28, 330

Andison, Robert A. (Mrs.)348
 Annable, Jonathan E.205
 Archer, Violet410
 Archibald, Adams G.158
 Arthur of Connaught, Prince268
 Arthur, Prince, Duke of Connaught and Strathearn
 270, 270fn3
 Ashton, John G.73fn3

B

Baker, Perren E.44
 Bannatyne, Andrew G.B.158fn2
 Barrett, Pamela407, 408
 Barrowman, Robert303
 Barry, Charles41fn1, 103fn2, 135fn1
 Beaton, Jack329
 Beauchesne, Arthur64
 Beaudoin, Louis-René135
 Bedford, Spencer A.185
 Bennett, Richard B.167, 267, 367, 382
 Berczy, William281
 Betts, Caroline M.217, 217fn1
 Betts, George217fn1
 Betts, James217fn1
 Betts, John217fn1
Betts, John F.
 141, 143, 163fn1, 181fn1, 186, 215–229, 285fn1
 Betts, Lorenzo A.217
 Betts, Mary E.218
 Betts, William217fn1
 Biggar, Charles181

Biggar, Eliza M. See Wilson, Eliza M.
 Biggar, James L. 181
 Black, Donald A. 282
 Blain, Lawrence B. 35
 Blue, John 106
 Borden, Frederick 264
 Bosley, John W. 52
 Boudreau, Lucien 271fn1
 Bourinot, John G. 63, 64
 Bowen, John C. 109, 299, 334
 Bowlen, John J. 355fn1
 Boyd, Alfred 158fn2
 Boyle, A. 218
 Boyle, John R. 273fn1, 284, 298, 299
 Boyle, Margaret 218
 Boyle, Mary E. See Betts, Mary E.
 Boyle, R. 218
 Boyle, Robert 218
 Bréland, Pascal 158fn2
 Brett, Robert G.
 182, 187, 189, 219, 219fn1, 220, 224, 237, 267,
 267fn1, 268, 272, 284fn2
 Brodie, Ian H. 424
 Brodie, Virginia M. See Schumacher, Virginia M.
 Brown, Don 109, 350, 350fn4, 408fn1
 Brown, Samuel 297fn3
 Brown, Sara E. See Tanner, Sara E.
 Brownlee, John E.
 281, 295, 297, 300, 301, 301fn2, 313, 315, 316,
 316fn1, 317, 318
 Bruseker, Frank 428
 Buchanan, William A. 286, 286fn1
 Buck, Walter A. 389, 390
 Buller, Robert L. 265
 Bulyea, George H.V. 168, 206, 250, 264, 270
 Bundschuh, Maria 382

Butler, Helen F. 383
 Butterworth, Rufus E. 34

C

Cambridge, Alexander A.F.W.A.G., Earl of Athlone 353
 Cameron, Malcolm C. 159fn3, 161, 217, 233, 247
 Campbell, Charles E. 302
 Campeau, Jean-Paul 440
 Campeau, Jeannine L. See Kowalski, Jeannine L.
 Card, Charles O. 328fn2
 Carling, Frederick 264
 Carling, John 264, 264fn4
 Caron, Joseph P.R.A. 264, 264fn3
 Carter, Anne 401
Carter, David J.
 15, 44, 45, 73fn2, 95fn1, 96, 105fn1, 109, 120, 125, 143,
 302fn1, 347fn2, 371, 399–419, 427
 Carter, John W. 401
 Carter, Mabel L. 401, 402
 Carter, Patricia 401
 Cartier, George-Étienne 156
 Carver, Leslie 265
 Cayley, Hugh St. Quentin 186, 203, 204, 204fn1, 221
 Chachula, Marjanna See Kowalski, Mary
 Chachula, Stanislaw 440
 Chang, Ki Ho 136
 Chant, William N. 349
 Charles I, King 33, 33fn3, 33fn4, 33fn5, 51fn2
 Charles II, King 154
 Charles, Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall
 388, 388fn1
 Chartrand, Maria 440
 Chisolm, Caroline M. See Betts, Caroline M.
 Christie, William J. 158fn2
 Chun, Chan 45



Clark, C. Joseph367, 384, 423, 425
 Clark, Robert C.428
 Clarke, Henry J.158fn2
 Clarke, Joseph A.302, 318
 Clarke, Lawrence160
 Clegg, M. Glen443
 Clegg, Michael WJ.388, 388fn4, 389
 Clinkskill, James203, 221
 Cloutier, Maurice Gaston388
 Cobbett, William85
 Cockroft, Charles C.349
 Colborne, Fred369
 Colley, Louisa M.See Wilson, Louisa M.
 Corcoran, Edna M.366
 Cossar, Jean35
 Cowell, John R.28, 268, 298
 Crawford, Neil S.389fn1
 Crevolin, Raymond A.A.26, 27, 28, 28fn2, 354, 368
 Cromwell, Oliver33, 33fn5, 51
 Cross, Charles W.267, 273fn1

D

Dand, Jane A.365
 Dand, John365
 Davidson, Eliza J.See McPherson, Eliza J.
 Davidson, William M.272
 Dawson, Agnes345fn5
 Dawson, Alexander345fn5
 Dawson, Christina345fn5
 Dawson, David G.347, 349, 355
 Dawson, Earland M.347, 349
 Dawson, George249
 Dawson, Hildegard C.44, 346, 347, 348, 353, 355
 Dawson, Hugh345fn5

Dawson, James345fn5, 346
 Dawson, James M.345fn5
 Dawson, Jane Sr.345
 Dawson, Jane Jr.345, 345fn5
 Dawson, John345
Dawson, Peter
 17, 27, 35, 42, 44, 94, 109, 120, 143, 272fn1, 302,
 343–361, 368, 371fn1, 401, 404fn1, 407fn1, 408fn1
 Dawson, Simon J.156fn2
 Dawson, Stewart345fn5
 Dawson, William345fn5
 Day, Arthur M.317
 Day, Stockwell B.410
 Dean, Shannon445
 Decore, Laurence407, 426, 427
 Deeley, Esther A.402
 de la Mare, Peter5, 5fn1, 5fn3, 5fn4
 de Melton, Robert25
 de Monfort, Peter5, 5fn1
 Dempsey, Hugh A.44
 de Rosenroll, Anthony S.268fn1
 DeVeber, Leverett G.268fn1
 Dewdney, Edgar159fn3, 181, 201, 235
 Diana, Princess of Wales388, 388fn1
 Dickens, Charles410
 Dickens, Francis J.410
 Dickie, William D.369, 385
 Dickson, R. Gary73fn1
 Diefenbaker, John G.320, 440
Dixon, Arthur J.
 9fn2, 15, 44, 55, 93, 135, 142, 143, 247fn2, 302fn1,
 347fn2, 363–378, 391, 404, 406, 423fn1, 427
 Dixon, Donald A.366
 Dixon, Dorothea J.366, 367
 Dixon, George365fn2
 Dixon, John W.365



Dixon, John N.365fn2
 Dixon, Margaret365fn2
 Dixon, Margaret A.365, 366
 Dixon, Marguerite367
 Dixon, Mary365fn2
 Dixon, Phoebe365fn2
 Dixon, Samuel365f2
 Dixon, Thomas E.366
 Donahoe, Arthur R.70, 95
 Donnelly, Thomas C.371, 404fn1
 Douglas, Clifford H.108fn2, 115fn2, 330, 330fn2
 Doxey, Roy328
 Dubuc, Joseph158fn2
 Duggan, David M.318, 318fn1
 Duke of NewcastleSee Pelham-Clinton, Henry F.

E

Eakin, David233fn2
 Eakin, Edna J.234
 Eakin, Elizabeth (Speaker's mother)233
 Eakin, Elizabeth (Speaker's daughter)234
 Eakin, George233, 233fn2
 Eakin, Gordon H.234
 Eakin, Jane233fn2
 Eakin, John233fn2
 Eakin, Joseph S.233fn2, 234
 Eakin, Margaret Sr.234, 238
 Eakin, Margaret Jr.234, 235, 238
 Eakin, Nella234
 Eakin, Otelia234
 Eakin, Samuel B.233
Eakin, William
 42, 141, 141, 141fn1, 143, 163fn1, 231–244, 250, 281
 Earl of AthloneSee Cambridge, Alexander A.F.W.A.G.

Earl of MintoSee Elliot, Gilbert J.M.K.
 Earnshaw, Anthony35
 Edward the Confessor, King69, 69fn1
 Edward VI, King41, 103, 135fn1
 Edward VII, King270
 Edward VIII, King, Duke of Windsor35, 35fn1, 35fn2
 Edwards, Jim93fn2
 Egbert, William286, 300, 301, 316
 Elizabeth the Queen Mother, Duchess of York, Queen Elizabeth44, 319fn1, 331, 353, 353fn2, 388
 Elizabeth II, Queen
 35, 35fn3, 116, 353, 373, 387, 448, 448
 Elliot, Gilbert J.M.K., 4th Earl of Minto251
 Erskine May, Thomas64, 69
 Evans, Dorothea J.See Dixon, Dorothea J.
 Evans, Thomas M.366

F

Farmer, Cora L.See McPherson, Cora L.
 Farmer, Elmer L.296
 Farmer, Lucille296fn2
 Fetherstonhaugh, Elizabeth H.
 See Amerongen, Elizabeth H.
 Fetherstonhaugh, William S.383
 Finlay, William T.268fn1
 Fisher, Beatrice D.264fn1
 Fisher, Charles B.265, 269, 271
Fisher, Charles W.
 43, 44, 61, 107, 141, 141fn1, 142, 143, 168, 251,
 261–278, 284, 345fn4, 354fn2, 381fn2
 Fisher, Elizabeth263, 264
 Fisher, Elizabeth N.264
 Fisher, Elizabeth T.263fn2
 Fisher, George D.263, 263fn2
 Fisher, George L.186
 Fisher, Gordon T.265



Fisher, Helen A.	265
Fisher, H. Marjorie	43, 264, 265, 265fn2, 272
Fisher, James	263, 264
Fisher, James T.	263, 263fn2
Fisher, Jessie D.	263fn2
Fisher, John	263fn2, 263fn3
Fisher, John P.	263fn2
Fisher, John W.	265
Fisher, Marjorie L.	265
Fisher, Mary J.	263fn2
Fisher, Muriel E.	265
Fisher, Richard J.	265
Fisher, Robert G.	263, 263fn2, 265
Fisher, Thomas S.	264fn1, 265fn1, 272
Fisher, William D.	263fn2
Forget, Amédée E.M.	28, 28fn1, 159fn3, 159fn4, 168, 182, 201, 206, 217, 233, 247, 251, 263
Fraser, Alistair	202
Fraser, John A.	52
Fraser, William	158fn2
Frazer, Clarke	313
Furse, Peter	202

G

Garipey, Wilfrid	109, 109fn1, 284
George V, King	35, 270, 299
George VI, King, Duke of York	35, 35fn2, 44, 252, 319fn1, 331, 353, 353fn2
Gerhart, Clarence E.	319, 319fn2
Gerhart, Edgar H.	351
Getty, Donald R.	93, 370, 381, 401, 404, 411, 423, 439, 449
Gibb, Isabelle E.	328

Gillis, Archibald B.	141, 143, 163fn1, 245-257, 365fn1, 423fn1
----------------------------------	---

Gillis, Christy	247fn4
Gillis, Donald M.	247
Gillis, Dorothy	247fn4
Gillis, Florah	247fn4
Gillis, John	247fn4
Gillis, Jonathon	247, 247fn4
Gillis, Malcolm	247fn4, 248, 248fn1
Gillis, Margaret	247fn4
Gillis, Margaret A.	248, 252, 252fn1
Gillis, Mary	247
Gillis, Murdoch (Speaker's grandfather)	247
Gillis, Murdoch (Speaker's brother)	247fn4
Gillis, Peter	247, 247fn4
Gillis, Samuel	247fn4
Girard, Marc A.	158fn2
Giroux, Leonidas A.	330, 330fn1
Gladman, George	156fn2
Glendinning, Wilhelmina	282
Gordon, M.R.	301
Gordon, Robert B.	28, 28fn1, 204
Gordon, Judith D.	445
Gostick, Edith H.	348, 348fn1
Grandin, Bishop Vital-Justin	188
Green, Elenor	See Johnston, Elenor
Greenfield, Herbert	109, 295, 297, 298, 300, 313, 315, 316, 316fn1, 348fn2
Greenway, Thomas	236
Gwynne, Richard	218

H

Haggerman, Jack	93fn2
Haley, Carol L.	443, 447, 449
Hallonquist, Johannes	346, 346fn2

Hallonquist, Hildegard C.	See Dawson, Hildegard C.	
Hamilton, Robert	158fn2	
Hamilton, Z.M.	252	
Hansard, Thomas C.	85	
Hansell, Ernest G.	347fn1	
Hansen, James	329fn2	
Hansen, Rick	115	
Hardy, Charles W.	265	
Harrison, Roy A.	35	
Hartley, James	351	
Hathern, Christina G.	See Ross, Christina G.	
Haultain, Frederick W.A.G.		
163, 163fn2, 164, 164fn1, 164fn3, 165, 166fn1, 167, 168,		
168fn1, 187, 201, 203, 204, 205, 208, 217, 219, 219fn1,		
220, 220fn2, 221, 221fn1, 222, 223, 233, 236, 236fn1,		
237, 237fn1, 247, 249, 250, 251, 263, 266		
Havelock, Jonathan N.	443	
Hawkes, John	248fn1	
Hays, Daniel P.	449	
Henderson, James D.	370	
Henry III, King	5fn1	
Hewes, Elizabeth J.	426, 443	
Hiebert, Alois P.	386	
Hind, Henry Y.	156, 156fn2	
Hindsley, Norman	44, 319	
Hinman, Edgar W.	373	
Hoadley, George	85, 93, 316	
Hodgson, Brian G.	96fn2	
Hodgkinson, Marguerite	See Dixon, Marguerite	
Hooke, Alfred J.	55, 332, 349, 351, 368	
Horner, Hugh M.	370, 441	
Howe, C.D.	335	
Howson, William R.	300, 317, 318, 318fn1	
Hubie, Thomas	281fn2	
Hugill, John W.	330, 348, 349	
Hungerford, Thomas	5, 5fn4, 25	
Hunley, W. Helen	406	
Hunter, Alexander	234	
Hunter, Lucy	234	
Hunter, Margaret	See Eakin, Margaret	
Hyndman, Louis D.	94, 385	
Hyndman, Robert	143	
Insinger, Fredrik R.	204, 221	
Isley, Ernie	449	
Ives, William C.	301fn2	
Jacques, Wayne	73fn1	
Jalbert, René	388	
Jelly, David F.	219	
Jensen, Willard	329	
John of Gaunt	5fn4	
Johnson, Francis G.	158fn1	
Johnson, James	265fn1	
Johnston, Ada C.	314, 319	
Johnston, Amelia E.	313fn1	
Johnston, Catherine	313fn1	
Johnston, Elenor	313	
Johnston, George N.		
44, 119fn1, 143, 300, 302, 311–324, 353		
Johnston, Harry	314	
Johnston, Henrietta	313fn1	
Johnston, Isabella	313fn1	
Johnston, Margaret	313fn1, 314	
Johnston, Ogle R.	313fn1, 314	
Johnston, Richard P.	313fn1	
Johnston, Rosanna	313fn1	
Johnston, William G.	285	



Johnston, William J.	313fn1, 314
Johnston, William M.	313
Jones, Walter S.K.	352

K

Kamuchik, Louise J.	445
Keith, Homer P.	302
Kelly, Grant	44
Kim, Tag	142, 143, 300, 449
King, William L.M.	135, 135fn2
Kirby, W.J. Cameron	425
Klein, Colleen E.	428
Klein, Ralph P.	401, 423, 427, 428, 439, 443, 448, 449, 450
Knowles, William E.	208
Knudson, Gladys G.	See Schumacher, Gladys G.
Knudson, Paul P.C.	424
Koecke, Maria	233
Kowalski, Connie	439fn2
Kowalski, Jeannine	440
Kowalski, Kenneth R.	16, 44, 54, 71, 97, 110, 115, 119, 130, 135, 136, 136, 141, 142, 143, 148, 149, 345fn3, 426, 427fn3, 437–455
Kowalski, Linda	439fn2
Kowalski, Lori Ann	440
Kowalski, Mary	439, 440
Kowalski, Michael P.	440
Kowalski, Paul	439, 440
Kowalski, Paula	439fn2
Kowalski, Peter	439
Kowalski, Richard	439fn2
Kowalski, Wayne	439fn2
Kroeger, Henry	386

L

Lacombe, Father Albert	182
Lacombe, Oscar J.	387, 405, 406, 408
Laing, Marie	407
Laird, David	159, 159fn3, 206fn1
Lambert, Marcel J.A.	141
Lamont, George B.	248
Lamont, Joseph L.	249, 252fn1
Lamont, Margaret	248
Lamont, Margaret A.	See Gillis, Margaret A.
Langevin, Archbishop Adélaré	109
Larson, Hanna C.	346
Laundy, Philip A C.	387
Laurier, Wilfrid	164, 166, 205, 207, 207fn1, 222, 237fn1, 250fn2, 251, 264fn2, 266, 266fn1, 267
Learoyd, Doug	116, 447
Leduc, Father Hippolyte	189fn1
Lee, Arthur B.	182
Lee, Emily C.	See Wilson, Emily C.
Lee, Joseph	182
Leitch, C. Mervin	389
Lenthall, William	51, 55
Lieberman, Sam	116, 447
Lindop, Stu	116, 447
Long, Victor A.	141, 143
Longman, O.S.	44, 44fn1
Lougheed, E. Peter	45, 365, 368, 370, 371, 372, 381, 384, 385, 388, 389, 401, 439, 449
Low, Solon E.	329fn2
Ludwig, Albert W.	385
Lymburn, J. F.	302
Lynch-Staunton, Frank C.	406

- MacAdams, Roberta C. 271, 271fn3, 283
- MacArthur, James 218
- Macdonald, John A. 160, 181, 264fn3
- MacDonald, Hugh F. 446
- MacDonald, Hugh J. 348, 352
- MacDonald, William H. 25, 26, 28, 368
- MacEwan, J.W. Grant 86, 352, 355fn1, 356
- Mackenzie, Alexander 159
- Mackenzie, William L. 233
- Mackintosh, Charles H. 159fn3, 201, 217, 233, 247
- Mackintosh, John 319
- McLean, N. 34
- Macleod, James F. 159fn4
- MacMillan, A.D. 301fn2
- MacMillan, Vivian 301fn2
- MacNutt, Thomas 43, 168, 233fn1, 238
- Macpherson, David L. 161
- Mactaggart, Cécile F. 444n2
- Mactaggart, Sandy 444n2
- Magrath, Charles A. 205
- Maguire, Thomas H. 224
- Mandeville, Frederick T. 386
- Manning, Ernest C. 55, 108fn2, 327, 331, 345, 348, 353, 355, 365, 367, 368
- Margaret, Princess 19, 387
- Margriet, Princess of the Netherlands 387
- Marleau, Robert 61fn1, 64
- Marshall, Duncan M. 272
- Martin, Don 444, 449
- Martin, Raymond 389, 390, 404
- Mattern, Helen G. See McPherson, Helen G.
- Mawson, Margaret A. See Dixon, Margaret A.
- Mawson, Samuel 365, 365fn3
- McCauley, Matthew 268fn1
- McClellan, Shirley 429
- McDougall, Ada C. See Johnston, Ada C.
- McDougall, D.B. 19
- McDougall, John A. 188
- McDougall, Norma 19
- McDougall, Peter 314
- McDougall, Violet 314, 314fn2
- McDougall, William 156, 157
- McFetridge, George 319
- McGillivray, Alexander A. 316, 317
- McInnes, Hermon L. 183, 189
- McKay, Barbara E. See Ross, Barbara E.
- McKay, John 202
- McKay, Mary 202
- McKay, Noel 370
- McKay, Thomas 218, 223
- McKeen, Charles M. 302, 318
- McKenna, James A.J. 206fn1
- McKinney, Louise C. 271fn3
- McLean, Archibald J. 272
- McLeay, Jean See Pingle, Jean
- McLeay, Robert 282
- McLeod, Samuel 223
- McMurray, Jane See Dawson, Jane
- McNaughton, James 297
- McNeil, W.J. David 19, 26, 28, 426fn1, 449
- McPherson, Cora L. 296, 296fn2
- McPherson, Coran L. 296
- McPherson, Donald K. 296
- McPherson, Edwin 295fn3, 296, 296fn2
- McPherson, Eliza J. 295
- McPherson, Eugene L. 296
- McPherson, Everett 295fn3, 296



Pingle, George W.	281fn2	Robertson, Ellen	314
Pingle, Georgina	281, 281fn1, 282	Robinson, John L.	109, 350
Pingle, Gustavus	281fn2	Roblin, Rodmond	382
Pingle, Jean	282, 286	Rogers, Edith B.	348
Pingle, Joachim	233, 281	Roper, Elmer E.	355
Pingle, Robert W.	282, 283	Ross, Alexander	201fn1
Pingle, Warren H. Sr.	281, 281fn1	Ross, Alexander (Member for Calgary [1917–1926]) ..	300, 300fn3
Pingle, Warren H. Jr.	281fn2	Ross, Barbara E. Sr.	202, 206
Piquette, Leo	406	Ross, Barbara E. Jr.	202
Plumb, Josiah B.	161	Ross, Charles	351
Pollard, John G.	314, 314fn2	Ross, Charles C.	331, 349
Potter, Kay	143	Ross, Christina G. (Speaker's mother)	201
Powell, Charles B.	264	Ross, Christina G. (Speaker's sister)	201fn1
Powell, H. Marjorie	See Fisher, H. Marjorie	Ross, Christina G. (Speaker's daughter)	202
Powell, Israel W.	265	Ross, Elizabeth	201fn1
Powell, Walker	264, 265	Ross, Henrietta	201fn1, 207
Primrose, Philip C.H.	355fn1	Ross, Frederick	201fn1
Procter, Arthur T.	252	Ross, J. Donovan	354
Prowse, J. Harper	34fn2, 350, 351	Ross, James H.	141, 143, 163fn1, 164, 184–185, 186, 199–214, 221, 221fn1, 222, 236, 247fn3, 249, 295fn1
Pugin, Auguste W.N.	41, 41fn1	Ross, James H. Jr.	202
Pym, John	33, 33fn4	Ross, Jane G.	202
R		Ross, John E. Sr.	201
Reaman, Joel	204, 221	Ross, John E. Jr.	201fn1
Reed, Hayter	185	Ross, John G.	202
Reed, James A.	35, 125, 368	Ross, Mary H.	202, 207
Reid, Richard G.	313, 319	Ross, William G.	208
Rhodes, Howard	329	Ross, William Graeme	201fn1, 207
Richard I, King	33, 33fn2	Ross, William M.	202, 206
Richardson, Benjamin P.	219	Rostad, Ken	73fn2
Richardson, Hugh	159fn4	Rothwell, Betty	142fn1
Richardson, Louisa H.	182	Rous, Francis	51
Riel, Louis	161, 162, 162fn1		
Roberts, William	407		

Royal, Joseph	159fn3, 181, 186, 187, 201, 203, 204, 205, 217, 219, 220, 221
Rupert, Prince	154
Russell, David	372fn1, 391
Ruste, Henry A.	351
Rutherford, Alexander C.	34, 61, 167, 168, 263, 264, 267, 268fn1, 270
Ryan, Matthew	159fn4
Sandercock, Willard R.	425
Sauvé, Jeanne-Mathilde	42fn1
Schreyer, Edward R.	147, 402fn2
Schumacher, David B.	425
Schumacher, Gladys G.	423, 424
Schumacher, John	423
Schumacher, Louis P.	423, 424
Schumacher, Mabel J.	423
Schumacher, Mary J.	423
Schumacher, Sandra C.	425
Schumacher, Stanley S.	17, 54, 73fn1, 73fn2, 142, 143, 144, 247fn2, 365fn1, 407, 421–436, 447
Schumacher, Virginia M.	424
Schultz, John C.	158fn2, 158fn3
Scott, Richard W.	251
Scott, T. Walter	168
Searle, David H.	251fn1
Secord, John	219
Seymour, John	25
Shaw, Joseph T.	286, 286fn3
Shearer, Elana L.	424
Sheward, George	402
Sheward, Mabel L.	See Carter, Mabel L.
Sifton, Arthur L.	263, 266, 266fn2, 267fn1, 271, 281
Sifton, Clifford	164, 167, 237fn1
Sigurdson, Tom	408
Simcoe, John G.	233
Simpson, John A.	268fn1
Sindlinger, Thomas L.	389
Smith, Arthur L.	367
Smith, Donald A.	158fn2
Smith, Vernor W.	317
Smith, William C.	285
Skippon, Elizabeth N.	See Fisher, Elizabeth N.
Snedker, James E.P.	233fn1
South, Karen M.	28
Spackman, Grant	329
Speaker, Raymond A.	372, 389, 390
Stanfield, Robert L.	352, 423
Stanley, Frederick A., Baron Stanley of Preston	220
Stefaniuk, Bohdan J.D.	25, 28
Steinhauer, Ralph G.	387
Steinhauer, Elizabeth F.M.	387
Stelling, Thomas	388
Steuart, David	283
Steuart, Georgina	See Pingle, Georgina
Steuart, Peter	282
Stevens, Tom	185
Stewart, Charles	85, 263, 281, 284
Stewart, John S.	284, 297, 298, 348fn2
Stewart, Winnifred	115fn1
Stockdale, John J.	69, 70, 85
Strom, Harry E.	365, 384
Struthers, Robert	202
Sutherland, Hector	202, 202fn1
Sutherland, John	202fn1
Sutherland, William	204, 204fn1, 219fn1, 221



Taché, Archbishop Alexandre-Antoinin 158fn3
 Taets von Amerongen, Joost 381
 Taets von Amerongen, Maximilian E.W. 381, 382
 Tannas, Donald 443
 Tanner, Beth (Speaker's sister) 327fn1
 Tanner, Beth (Speaker's daughter) 329
 Tanner, Evelyn E. 327fn1
 Tanner, Helen 329
 Tanner, Hugh H. 327fn1
 Tanner, Isabelle 329, 334
 Tanner, James L. 327fn1
 Tanner, Leroy B. 327fn1
 Tanner, Lucy L. 327fn1
Tanner, N. Eldon 44, 119fn1, 143, 325–342, 351
 Tanner, Nathan W. 327, 327fn2, 328
 Tanner, Ruth M. 328
 Tanner, Sara 328
 Tanner, Sara E. 327, 327fn2
 Tanner, Sara I. 328, 330, 335
 Tanner, William I. 327fn1
 Tanner, Zola 329
 Taylor, Alex 185
 Taylor, Gordon E. 426
 Taylor, Nicholas W. 407, 441
 Thompson, John S.D. 220
 Thomson, Levi 251
 Thorburn, Elizabeth See Fisher, Elizabeth
 Tupper, Charles 182
 Turcotte, Joseph-Edouard 141
 Turgeon, James G. 298

Uogintas, Titas 45

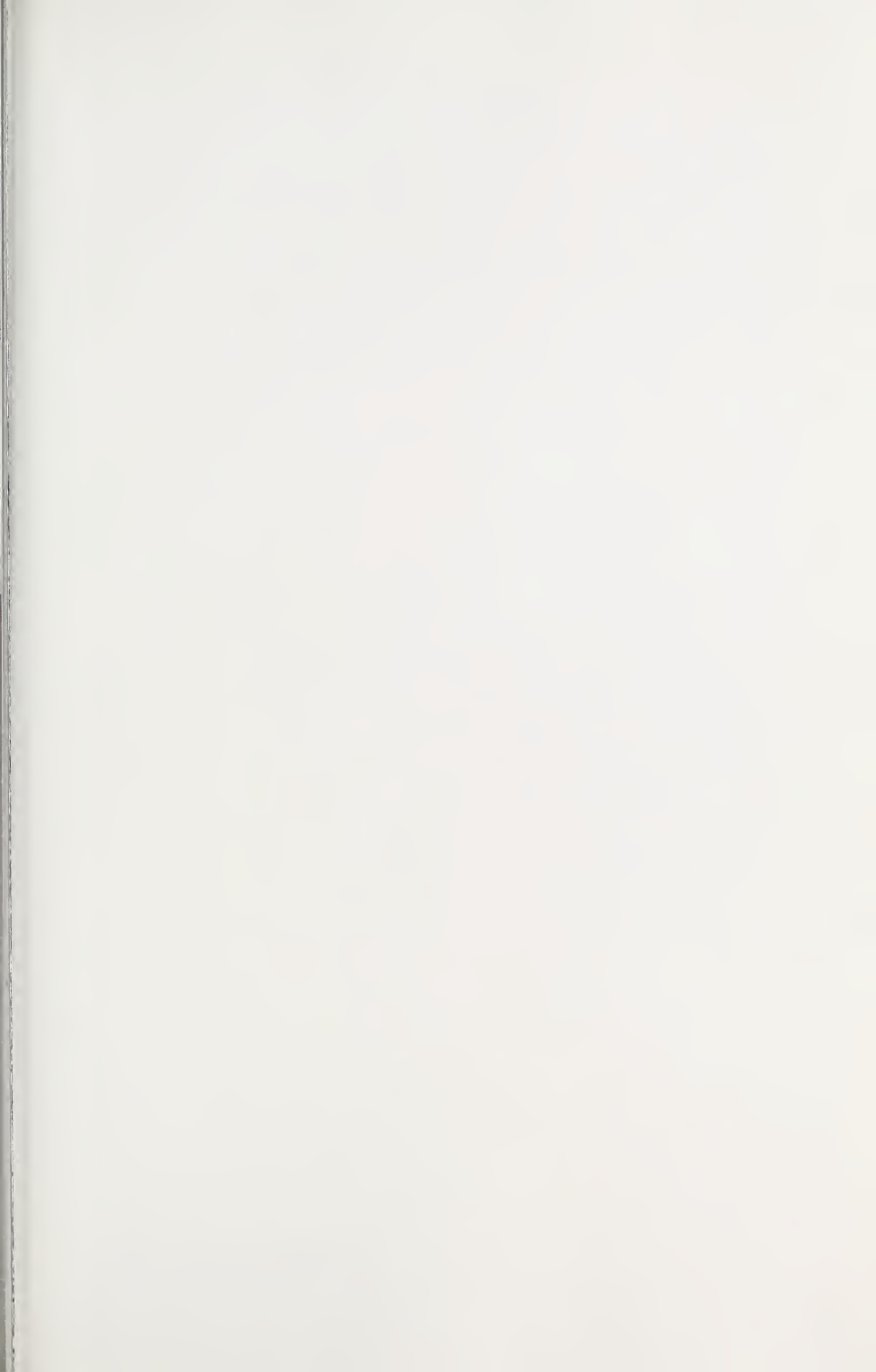
Van Den Hoogen, Dick 143
 Van Imshoot, Paul 45
 Victoria, Queen 42, 235fn2

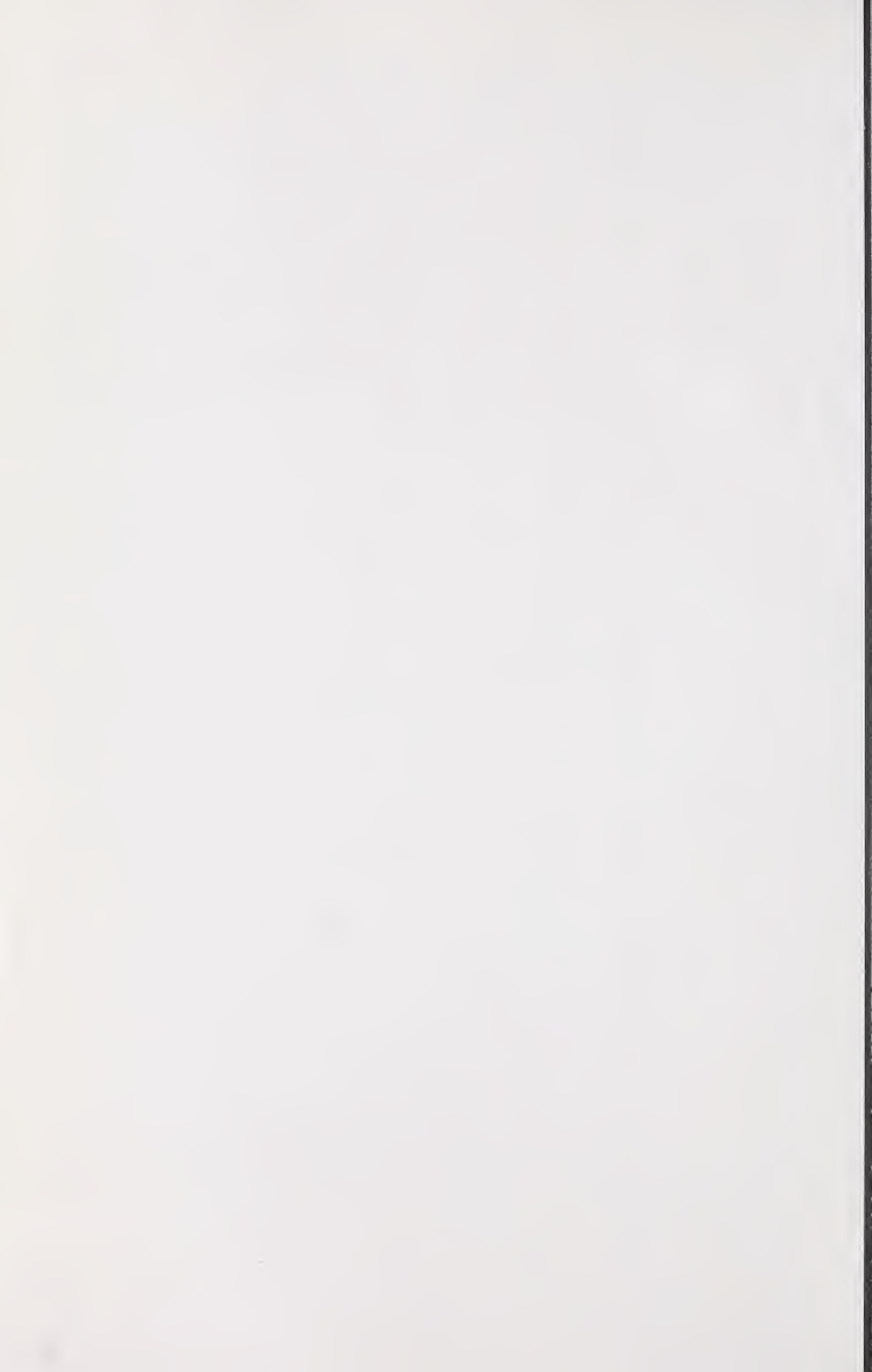
W
 Waas, Heinrich 382
 Waas, Maria F. See Amerongen, Maria F.
 Wager, C.C. 318
 Walker, Clifford 328
 Walker, Frank 273n1
 Wallace, George C. 381fn1
 Walsh, James M. 223
 Watkins, Ernest S. 335
 Webster, George H. 320
 Weir, James 73fn3
 West, Mary 424
 White, Colin 265
 White, Frederick D. 168
 White, Kristina F. 440
 Wight, Hans E. 329fn2
 Williams, Lowell 329
 Wilson, Charles A. 183
 Wilson, Charles S. 181
 Wilson, Eliza M. 181
 Wilson, Emily C. 182, 187, 190
Wilson, Herbert C.
 42, 42, 119fn1, 141, 143, 163, 163fn1, 179–197, 203,
 203fn1, 295fn1, 295fn2
 Wilson, Jessie M. 181fn2
 Wilson, Louisa E. 181fn3
 Wilson, Louisa M. 181
 Wilson, Marjorie 183
 Wilson, Mary C. 181fn2

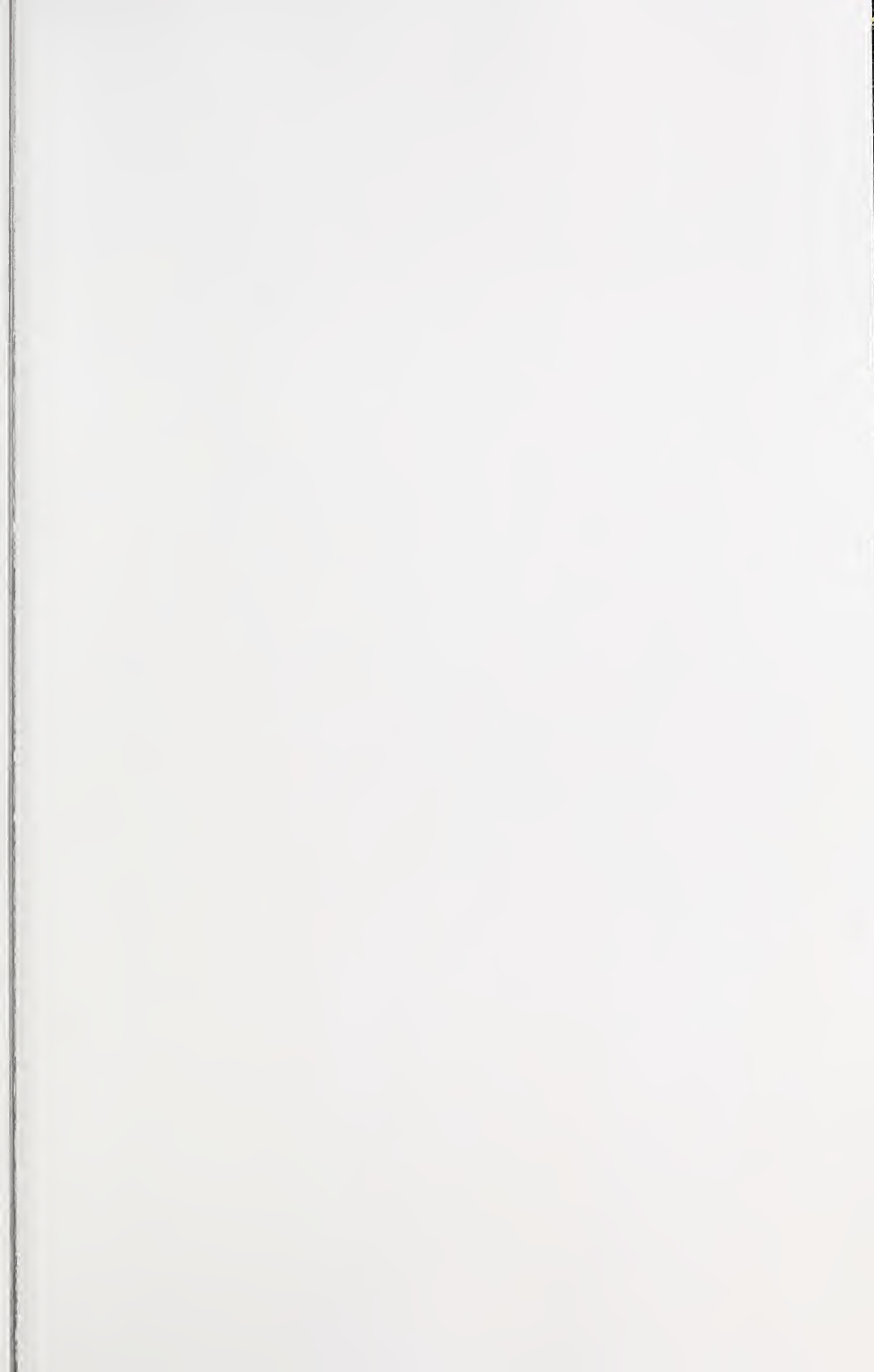
Wilson, Stewart C.	181
Wilson, Violet H.	42, 183, 187
Wingblade, John A.	354, 355
Wohlfarth, Harry	142, 142fn1, 142fn2, 300
Wood, Henry W.	315, 315fn2
Wood, Lorne	202
Woolf, John W.	268fn1
Wooliams, Eldon M.	425
Work, Frank J.	430
Wray, Arthur	80fn1, 348, 351, 407fn1
Wren, Christopher	103

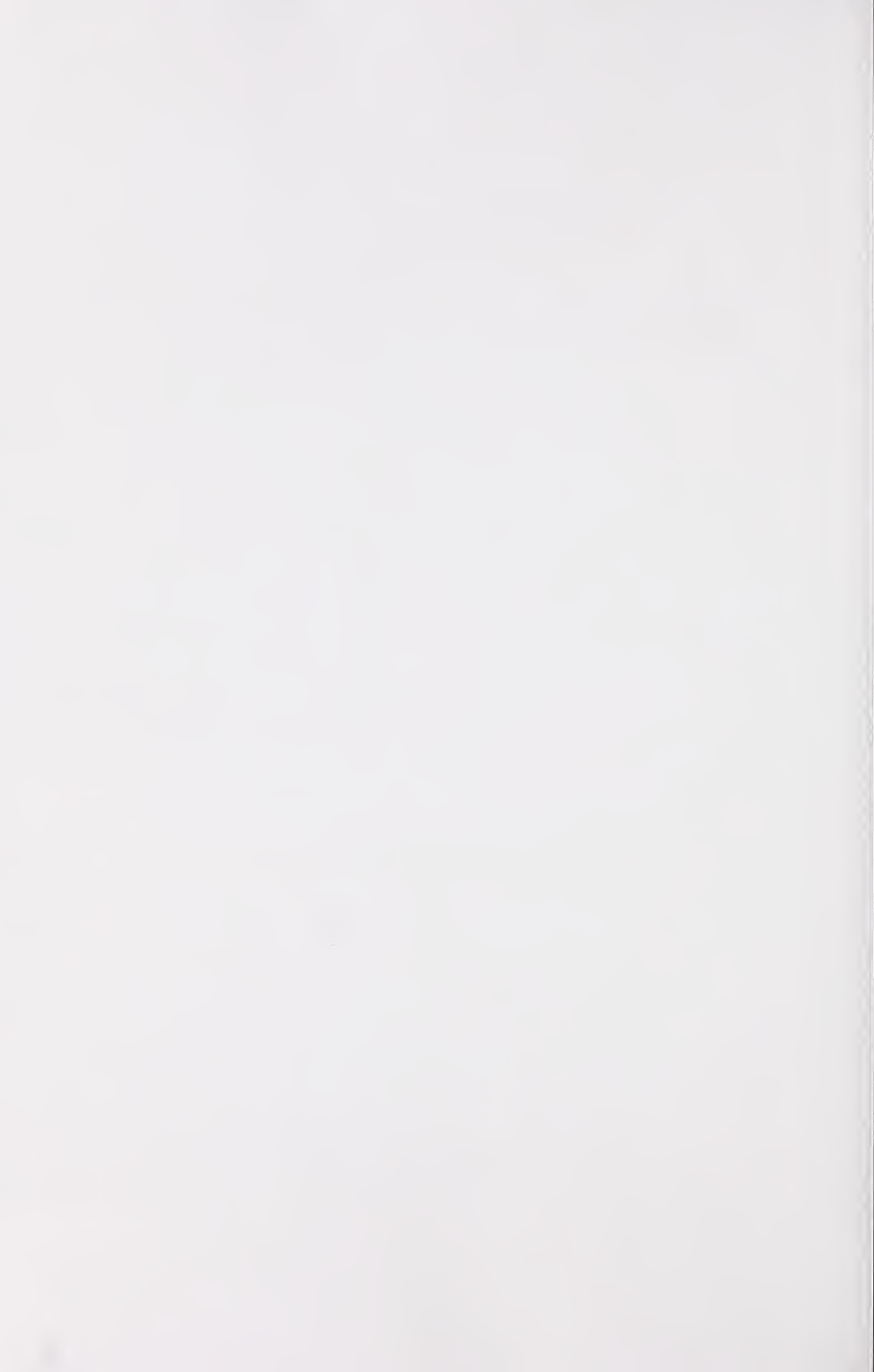
Zarusky, Steve	407
Zwozdesky, Gene	443, 444













Library and Archives Canada
Bibliothèque et Archives Canada



3 3286 53215937 9

